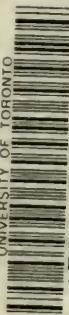
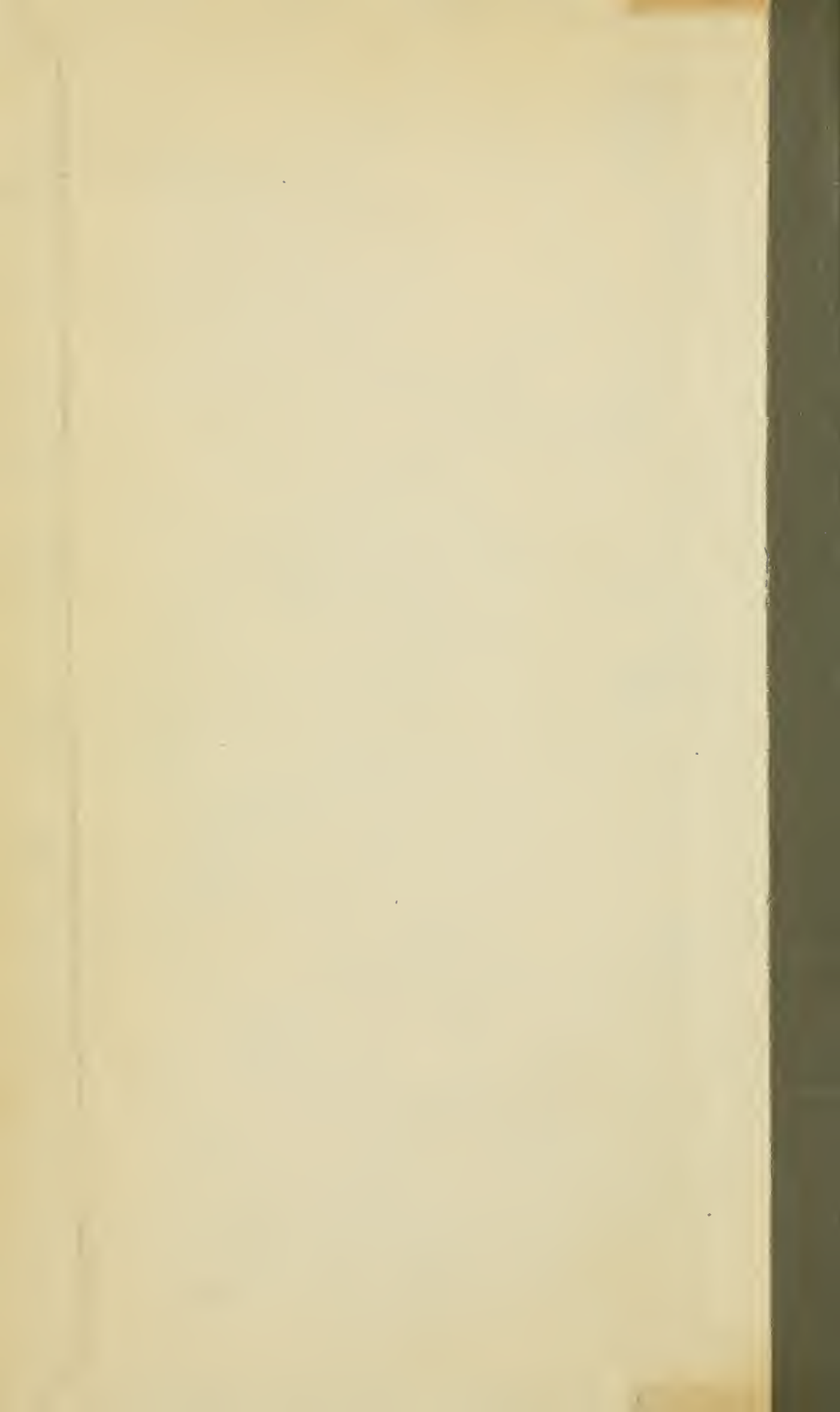


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 00273762 5









Old English Homilies.

**Agents for the sale of the Early English Text Society's Publications.**

EDINBURGH: T. G. STEVENSON, 22, South Frederick Street.

GLASGOW: OGLE & Co., 1, Royal Exchange Square.

BERLIN: ASHER & Co., Unter den Linden, 20.

NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & Co.

PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & Co.

17  
[Publications]: Original Series  
n. 29, 34  
Old English Homilies

and

Homiletic Treatises

(Sawles Warde, and þe Wohunge of Ure Lauerd :  
Ureisuns of Ure Louerd and of Ure Lefdi, &c.)

of the

Twelfth and Thirteenth Centuries

EDITED FROM MSS. IN THE BRITISH MUSEUM, LAMBETH,  
AND BODLEIAN LIBRARIES;

WITH INTRODUCTION, TRANSLATION, AND NOTES,

BY

RICHARD MORRIS,

*Author of 'Specimens of Early English,'  
Editor of Hampole's 'Pricke of Conscience,' 'Early English Alliterative Poems,'  
'The Story of Genesis and Exodus,' 'The Ayenbite of Inneht,' &c.  
Member of the Council of the Philological Society.*

FIRST SERIES.

38029  
6/11/96.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,  
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 60, PATERNOSTER ROW.

PR  
1119  
A2  
no 28

275 34

OXFORD:

BY T. COMBE, M. A., E. B. GARDNER, E. P. HALL, AND H. LATHAM, M. A.,

PRINTERS TO THE UNIVERSITY.

## PREFACE.

---

THE present volume does not consist of a continuous series of Homilies, as was originally intended, but is merely a bundle of fragments and smaller treatises arranged in the order in which the editor was fortunate enough to meet with them. He, therefore, does not think it necessary to offer any apology to the reader for presenting them in their apparently unconnected form, since all the pieces are of great philological value, and many of them are not wanting in literary merit. The contents of the Lambeth MS. 487 occupy the first and most important place in this series, and form no inconsiderable part of the whole work. They are, however, only a portion of a much larger and probably complete collection of Homilies compiled, as we shall presently see, from various sources of an earlier date than the MS. that contains them.<sup>1</sup>

The Homilies are immediately followed in the MS. by a portion of an old English poem<sup>2</sup> known as "A Moral Ode" (pp. 158-183), copies of which are by no means uncommon in our ancient MSS. It was first printed by Hickes in his "Thesaurus," vol. i. p. 222, from one of the Digby MSS., and Mr. Furnivall afterwards edited an excellent version of it in his "Early English Poems" (Philo-

<sup>1</sup> See p. xi.

<sup>2</sup> The handwriting of this poem is of the same date as the Homilies (before A.D. 1200).

logical Society's Transactions, 1858) from the Egerton MS. 613, which I found very serviceable in completing the Lambeth text and correcting, in the translation, the scribal blunders that it contains.<sup>1</sup>

The "Moral Ode" is an excellent sermon in verse, remarkably free from mediæval superstitions. In its admonitions and warnings it administers sharp reproof to greedy niggards and oppressors of the poor, and gives wholesome advice to "rich men and poor." It exhorts all men to grow in love as well as in years, to think of the future (pp. 159, 160), and to lay up treasure in heaven by performing deeds of mercy here on earth. All men may purchase heaven—the poor man with his penny and the rich man with his pound (p. 163). At the Day of Doom every man will be his own accuser, for there is no greater witness than a man's own heart. We should repent while we have health and strength, for it is too late to cry for mercy when Death is at the door. Nor will it avail us to loathe evil deeds when we have no longer the will or power to do them. Mercy is offered alike to all who sincerely repent (p. 167), but all wrongdoers who will not amend their evil ways shall go into hell's abyss for ever; Christ will never again break the gates of hell to unloose their bonds (p. 170). Hell is a horrible place of torment, where the uncharitable suffer the extremes of hunger and thirst (p. 173); where vow-breakers, traitors, thieves, drunkards, unjust judges, unfaithful stewards, and adulterers are tortured in turn by fire and frost (pp. 173–175); and where slanderers, envious, and proud men are torn and fretted by adders, snakes, and ferrets. There shall they see Satan and "Belzebub the old" (p. 177). The sum of human duty consists in "two loves"—love to God and to man (p. 179). We must forsake the broad way (that is, our own will) which leads to hell, and choose the narrow

<sup>1</sup> In the Appendix the reader will find that portion of the "Moral Ode" from the Egerton MS. not included in our text. I am inclined to think that all the existing copies of this Ode are taken from an older (Saxon-English) version, which may perhaps turn up hereafter.



and green way (along the high cliffs) which leads to heaven, where there are no earthly luxuries, but where the sight of God alone constitutes the eternal life, bliss, and rest of His saints (p. 181). There they shall learn and know more of God's might and mercy than they did while on earth; as in a book they shall see all that they were here ignorant of. No one is able to describe the greatness of heavenly bliss, but may God grant that we may come to that bliss when our souls are released from these mortal bonds (p. 183).

Next follows the little devotional piece (pp. 182-189) entitled "On Ureisun of ure Louerde," which is unfortunately imperfect. It is written in a smaller and later hand than the Homilies, and was probably added to fill up the spare folios of the manuscript. Had this "Orison" been complete, our "Old English Homilies" would, in all probability, have terminated at this point, and the reader would have been deprived of the interesting and valuable treatises that now follow it.

On looking, however, over Cotton MS. Nero A xiv., a somewhat later but un mutilated copy of the "Orison" was found, under the title of "On Wel Swuðe God Ureisun of God Almihti" (pp. 200-203); together with "On God Ureisun of Ure Lefdi" (pp. 190-199), "On Lofsong of Ure Lefdi"<sup>1</sup> (pp. 204-207), "On Lofsong of Ure Louerde" (pp. 208-216), and "þe Lesse Crede" (pp. 216, 217), all of which are now for the first time printed. These bear a striking resemblance in their philological peculiarities to the "Ancren Riwe" (which was edited from this MS. for the Camden Society by the Rev. R. Morton, B.D., in 1853), and are excellent specimens of the Hail Maries, Psalms, and Orisons alluded to in that work (p. 44), of which shorter examples occur in the first part, treating of Divine Service (pp. 38-42).

The "Ureisun of Ure Lefdi" (pp. 190-199) is a rhyming poem of about 170 lines. Towards the end the *singer* expresses a hope that

<sup>1</sup> An imperfect copy of this piece is in Royal MS. 17 A 27, entitled "þe Oreisun of Sainte Marie." As the fragment is not a long one it is printed in the Appendix.

her friends will be all the better for having heard her *English lay* (p. 199), which seems originally to have been composed (? in Latin) by some monk (p. 199, l. 169), who, perhaps, was the *John* alluded to in Royal MS. 17 A 27, and at p. 267 of the present work.<sup>1</sup> The "lay" is really deserving of its name, and contains evident proof that the writer or translator was a skilful master of his native tongue. In describing the joys which the Virgin Mary has prepared for her friends, the poet says that the golden bowl shall be mixed for them from which shall be poured out eternal life and angelic pleasures (p. 193).

The pieces just mentioned are followed in the text by three Homilies and a fragment of a fourth (pp. 216-245), from Cotton MS. Vespasian A 22, which have been added on account of the additional illustrations they afford of the grammatical peculiarities in the Homilies from the Lambeth MS.

"De Initio Creature" (pp. 216-231) is transliterated and slightly abridged from Ælfric's homily entitled "Sermo de Initio Creaturæ, ad Populum, quando volueris."<sup>2</sup> The first twelve lines of preface to the homily in our text are not Ælfric's, but have been added by the compiler, and form a short but excellent introduction to what follows.

"An Bispel" (pp. 230-241), as I have called the next sermon, and "Induite vos armaturam Dei" (pp. 240-243), which is a discourse on Ephesians vi. 11, are not found, so far as we know, in Ælfric's edited or unedited works, nor are they at all in his style, though by no means inferior to anything that he has written. A very favourable instance occurs in the "Bispel," p. 233, where, after describing God as our *father*, whose earth produces for us corn and cattle, whose sun gives us light and life, whose water produces drink and fishes, and whose fire serves manifold purposes, the homilist asks, "May we, think ye, call him at all our *mother*? Yea, we may. What doth the mother to her child? First she

<sup>1</sup> See description of "Soules Warde," p. ix.

<sup>2</sup> See Ælfric's Homilies, vol. i. Pt. 1. p. 8, edited by Thorpe for the Ælfric Society.

cheers and gladdens it by the light, and afterwards puts her arm under it, or covers his head that he may enjoy a quiet sleep. This does the Lord of you all. He rejoices us with the daylight, and sends us to sleep by means of the dark night." But the night is created for another reason—to fix some limits to the insatiable greed of those who are never weary in heaping up worldly wealth.

The homily commencing "*Erant appropinquantes*" (pp. 242–245) is a mere fragment, containing only the text of a discourse, which, if complete, would probably be found to be identical with Ælfrie's sermon rubricated *Dominica iiii. post Pentecosten*.<sup>1</sup>

"Soules Warde" (pp. 244–267), the next on our list, is from the Bodleian MS. 34, and has been ascribed to the author of the "Ancren Riwe," "Hali Meidenhad,"<sup>2</sup> and the smaller treatises (pp. 182–217) already noticed.<sup>3</sup> Copies of "Sawles Warde" are found in the Royal MS. 17 A 27 and the Cotton MS. Titus D 18, but without any title. The Bodleian version is certainly the oldest, though slightly imperfect, and is here for the first time printed, the missing portions being supplied from the Royal MS. 17 A 27. A fourteenth-century version of this interesting discourse may be seen in the Early English Text Society's edition of the "Ayenbite of Inwyt" (pp. 263–269).

The last, but by no means the least important or interesting, of our homiletic treatises is "þe Wohunge of Ure Lauerd" (pp. 268–287), from the Cotton MS. Titus D 18, which also contains versions of the "Ancren Riwe," "Sawles Warde," and "Hali Meidenhad."<sup>4</sup> From internal evidence I am convinced that "The

<sup>1</sup> See Thorpe's edition of Ælfrie's Homilies, vol. i. Pt. IV. p. 338.

<sup>2</sup> See "Hali Meidenhad," ed. Cockayne, E. E. T. S. 1866.

<sup>3</sup> For the accuracy of the text I have relied upon the fidelity of the transcript and collations furnished me by Mr. G. Parker, Rose Hill, Oxford. The marginal readings are from Royal MS. 17 A 27; and in the notes will be found some collations from Cotton MS. Titus D 18.

<sup>4</sup> A better copy of this homily than that printed for the E. E. T. S., as shewn by the marginal readings in the Society's edition, is contained in the Bodleian MS. 34.

Wooing," in its *original* form, was by the same author as the "Ancren Riwe," &c. ; but as now presented to us by the scribe of the Titus MS., it abounds in dialectical peculiarities,<sup>1</sup> which are altogether foreign to the compositions, already alluded to, in Bodleian MS. 34, Royal MS. 17 A 27, and Nero A xiv.

"The Wooing of our Lord" is evidently a lengthy, but by no means uninteresting, paraphrase of a portion of the Seventh Part of the "Ancren Riwe" treating of Love (pp. 397-401), in which the wooing of Christ is distinctly mentioned. The Spouse is either Holy Church or the pure soul, which Christ is said to woo in the following terms :—"If it (love) is to be given, where couldst thou bestow it better than upon me? Am I not the *fairest* thing? Am I not the *richest* king? Am I not of the *noblest* birth? Am I not the *wisest* of men? Am I not the most *courteous* of men? Am I not the most *liberal* of men? Am I not of all things the *sweetest* and most *gentle*? Thus thou mayest find in me all the reasons for which love ought to be given." (Ancren Riwe, pp. 398, 399.) In our treatise Christ is wooed in almost the same terms :—"Ah! who may not love thee, lovely Jesu? For within thee alone are all the things united that ever may make any man worthy of love towards another." (p. 268.) "Thou then with thy *beauty*, thou with thy *riches*, thou with thy *liberality*, thou with *wit* and *wisdom*, thou with thy *might* and *strength*, thou with *nobleness* of birth and graciousness (or courteousness), thou with *meekness*, *mildness*, and *great gentleness*, thou with *kinship*, thou with all the things that one may purchase love with, hast bought my love." (p. 274.)

Having thus briefly enumerated the several items of the present volume, I must now return to the Homilies from the Lambeth MS. Though now for the first time printed, they have not been altogether unknown to students of our early literature. Hickes has very minutely and accurately described them, and Sir F. Madden, in his valuable preface to "Lazamon's Brut" (p. v.), has

<sup>1</sup> A summary of these peculiarities is given in the Grammatical Introduction.

sufficiently recognised their philological importance; but it has never, I believe, been previously pointed out that these Homilies are a compilation from older documents of the eleventh century.

This view was suggested by the evident proofs of transliteration which occur in many of the Homilies, the very blunders of the scribe leading me in the first instance to suspect what I afterwards found to be the fact.

These errors of transcription are of two kinds. The first involves the assumption that the scribe in copying from MSS. in the Saxon character mistook the stroke of the letter *p* (*r*) for a part of an *m* or *n*. Thus we find *bem* for *beþm* (p. 11); *iemedede* for *ieþneþe* (p. 93); *denað* for *ðeþnað* (p. 101). The second blunder is just the reverse of this, for the copyist has read *p* for *n* or *m*, so that we can have no difficulty in understanding such errors as *þurȝ* (or *þurȝ*) for *þinȝ*; and *siriæt* (or *ȝiriæt*) for *smæt* (or *ȝmæt*), which occurs no less than three times on the same page. But the proof of this theory was furnished by Homilies IX. and X., which are beyond a doubt *transliterations* (with here and there traces of translation or the substitution of a word more familiar to the scribe than that in the original copy) of two of Ælfric's Homilies bearing the same titles.<sup>1</sup>

As instances of what I have called *translation* are by no means difficult to point out with the originals before us, the reader may not be displeased by having the following examples selected for him from the tenth homily:—*rixað* (rule, reign) for *onwiunað*; *unmete* (excessive) for *ormete*; *more* (root) for *wyrtruma*; *fikenunge* (deceit) for *licetunge* (p. 103); *mihtan* (virtues) for *mæġna*; *ouercumen* for *ouerswiðan*; *to his bord ne sitte* for *ne ġereordige*; *wisdom* for *ȝesceade* (discretion); *sterke* (harsh) for *reþan*; *hihȝen* (hasten) for *efstan* (p. 105); *slauðe* (sloth) for *asolcennysse*; *herynge* (praise) for *hlisan*;

<sup>1</sup> For the original of IX. see Thorpe's edition of Ælfric, vol. i. Pt. I., and for that of X. see Appendix to the present volume. I am indebted for the A. S. text to the kindness of the Rev. W. M. Snell, who copied and collated it from a MS. in Corpus Christi College, Cambridge. Unfortunately my texts and translations were in print before I saw the earlier versions, and I have not therefore derived as much help from them as I might otherwise have done.



*trewscipe* (religion) for *eawfestnysse* (p. 107); *þe þe* for *se þe*; *bihovige* (behave) for *gedafenige*; *efre* (ever) for *symble*; *þeof* (thief) for *sceaða* (p. 109); *buten clenesse* for *unsydeful* (unchaste) (p. 111); *wohze* (wrong) for *riccetera* (violence); *heordom* for *forliger*; *unriht-wise* for *arlease*; *unlazeliche* for *uneawfestlice* (p. 115); *unrihtwisra dedan* for *þwyrlicra dæda*; *uuel* for *sceððig* (p. 117).

Of the remaining Homilies I have not been successful in finding the original texts from which they were copied.<sup>1</sup>

In the Sermon for the Fifth Sunday in Lent (pp. 121, 122) the compiler has very ingeniously inserted a long passage from Ælfrie's homily for Palm Sunday. (See Notes at the end of the present volume, pp. 317, 318.)

But what strikes one very clearly is that the first six Homilies (pp. 1-71) are by one and the same author. This, I think, is evident from the use of the curious word *witicrist* (or *witecrist*), "By Christ!" or "So help me Christ!" and the frequent employment of the phrases "dear men," "good men," "dear brethren and sisters," which do not occur in the later discourses. These six Homilies have really but one theme, and that is *skrift*, which, as explained by the author, is to renounce the devil, to repent of sin, and to determine to lead a better life for the future. These points are by no means unskillfully handled, and the author, whoever he may have been, stands before us in these discourses as a plain but earnest and outspoken instructor of the "lewd." His familiar mode of address and homely illustrations, as well as his frequent appeal to his flock as "dear men," "good men," &c., must have done much to secure him attentive listeners to the end of the sermon. The preacher is thoroughly practical in the lessons which he draws from the life and teaching of Christ. Thus in the sermon for Palm Sunday he reminds his hearers that though Jesus might have ridden upon a rich steed, a palfrey, or a mule, he did not even ride on the big ass, but upon the little foal, setting them an example of

<sup>1</sup> The Trinity Coll. MS. contains Homilies XIII. (De Sancto Laurentio), XV., XVI. and XVII. (De Sancto Jacobo).

humility which the more prosperous among them would do well to imitate, by not allowing themselves to be puffed up with their riches, by being thankful to God, and by relieving the necessities of the destitute (p. 5). He bids his hearers observe how much more strictly the Jews keep their Saturday, wherever they may be, than do Christians their Sunday (p. 8). The severity of the Old Law is mitigated by the New Dispensation, so that there is now no more need to atone for sin by penalties, for Christ is satisfied with shrifts, fasting, church-going, and other good works. It is no good, however, to offer prayers or sing masses for the soul of the proud and unrepentant sinner, for "how should other men's good deeds profit him who in this life never took thought of any good thing? Who is he that may water the horse that refuses to drink?" (p. 8.) The sinner is declared to be utterly lost in the abyss of hell if he thinks of delaying repentance and of continuing in his sins until he is older or becomes sick (p. 23). He who promises God and his confessor to forsake his misdeeds and is shriven thereof, but still continues to commit the same sins, is no better than the hound that "now vomits and afterwards eats it," and becomes thereby much fouler than he previously was (p. 24). Some go to shrift in order to be like other people, or because they would not like to be turned away from the Lord's table on Easter Sunday; but they had far better stop away, for, under these circumstances, there is more harm in going than in abstaining. Though they receive the housel, or sacrament, it will not benefit them in the least, for so soon as the priest shall put the hallowed bread between their lips an angel will come and take it away with him towards heaven's kingdom, and instead thereof there will remain a live coal that will utterly consume them (p. 26). He who has wrongfully taken possession of another man's property, must not fancy that confession and fasting, unaccompanied by restitution, will avail him anything. Numbers will joyfully go to confession and cry *peccavi*, and will willingly listen to the penance that is enjoined; but let the priest bid them give back their unrighteous gains, and

they are no longer patient hearers, but will answer in "fox-like," glozing words, "We have nought thereof, we have spent it all." "This will not do," says the priest, "you must take of your own goods and make restitution." The covetous sinner may perhaps reply that he does not know where to find those whom he has wronged, that they are either dead or have left the neighbourhood, so that he cannot find them. The priest will still exhort him to make amends, and bid him go to the district where the theft was committed and expend a sum equivalent to the value of the goods taken, in almsgiving or in the repairing of bridges and churches (p. 30). The increase of sin causes the death of the soul, and because she is unable to endure all the sins a man putteth upon her, therefore does she leave the body (p. 34). The priest cannot forgive any man his sins, nor even his own; all he can do is to teach the sinner how he may obtain forgiveness from God and have Christ's friendship through repentance and confession, which is the second baptism that every sincere Christian must undergo (p. 36).

The fourth homily, "*In Diebus Dominicis*" (pp. 40-47), contains the curious legend<sup>1</sup> of St. Paul's and St. Michael's descent into hell, and how they obtained for the damned one day's rest in the week until Doomsday. They saw among other horrible sights a bishop who in this life was more given to oppress his underlings than to sing psalms or to do other good deeds (p. 42). The Sunday has three estimable privileges: on earth, men and women rest from their daily toil; in heaven, the angels rest longer than they do on any other day; and, in hell, the wretched souls do not undergo their accustomed torments (pp. 44-46).

In the fifth homily, which is a very curious discourse on Jeremiah, we find the fable of the young crab and its mother (p. 50). The preacher compares slanderers and detractors to spotted adders; rich men who misuse their wealth are likened to black toads that cannot moderately eat their fill lest the earth on which they sit should play them false; yellow frogs are apt emblems of

<sup>1</sup> Audelay, the Shropshire poet, tells this in English verse in MS. Douce.



those women who wear saffron-coloured clothes and who powder their faces with blanchet to made themselves fair and seductive to the opposite sex. Such as these are the devil's mouse-trap, and their outer adornments are "the treacherous cheese" whereby many a mouse is enticed into the trap. Their cosmetic is the devil's soap, and their mirror is the devil's hiding-place. "Wherefore, good men," says the preacher, "for God's sake keep yourselves from the devil's mouse-trap, and see that ye be not the spotted adders, nor the black toads, nor the yellow frogs (p. 52).

There is much that is interesting in the rest of the Homilies (as for instance in the eighth discourse, p. 78) and the other devotional treatises in this volume; but, in the words of our homilist, it behoveth the reader "*breke þas word: also me brekeð þe nute for to habbene þene curnel*" (p. 79), which he will have no difficulty in doing with the help of the translation (rough as it is) which accompanies the old English text throughout. The critical reader is referred to the Notes and Emendations at the end of the work. The Glossarial Index will form part of the second series,—which will contain a collection of Homilies from MS. B. 14. 52 in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge.

In conclusion, I have the pleasant duty of acknowledging the kindness of his Grace the Archbishop of Canterbury for the long and undisturbed possession of his manuscript from the Lambeth Library, which, always being at hand, has enabled me to produce a faithful copy of the original. My thanks are also due to my friend Mr. Skeat for some useful suggestions while the work was passing through the press.

R. M.



## GRAMMATICAL INTRODUCTION.

---

‘THE language of Lazamon belongs to that transition period in which the groundwork of Anglo-Saxon phraseology and grammar still existed, although gradually yielding to the influence of the popular forms of speech. We find in it, as in the later portion of the Saxon Chronicle, marked indications of a tendency to adopt those terminations and sounds which characterize a language in a state of change.’ These remarks, by the editor of Lazamon’s Brut, apply with even greater propriety to the language of the present Homilies (pp. 1-183, 216-245), and in fact to most of our English documents of the twelfth century. In the Brut we have the plainest evidence of an earlier transition stage (which I have elsewhere described as a period of great grammatical change and confusion), wherein the older inflexions co-existed along with their more modern varieties, thus indisputably proving that the former did not go out of use without a struggle for existence, and showing also that this secondary or less inflexional (*not* non-inflexional) stage of the language was brought about very gradually by changes that continued in operation throughout the greater part of the twelfth century.<sup>1</sup> Lazamon’s work belongs to the first half of the thirteenth century, and represents the commencement of a new period, in which we plainly perceive that the language is gradually settling down after a long elemental war in which certain forms maintained their position to the exclusion of all others; and we therefore find, as we might expect, a greater

<sup>1</sup> We may divide the documents of this period into two classes. In the *first*, belonging to the first half of the twelfth century, the older forms predominate; in the *second*, belonging to the latter half of the twelfth century, the modern forms predominate.

uniformity in its employment of grammatical inflexions, than in the literature of the twelfth century, together with a further simplification of syntactical structure; and for the next century and a half, as far as the *Southern* dialect is concerned, there is scarcely any fresh change of importance in the *grammar*, although the *vocabulary* exhibits the influence of the new element introduced by the Norman Conquest.

But our Homilies illustrate the earlier transitional period, which, as we have seen, is characterized by a want of uniformity, and enable us to trace with some minuteness the various changes that took place during the latter half of the twelfth century. Here, perhaps, for the first time we find the provincial, or, as Sir F. Madden terms them, the *popular* elements, cropping up, many of which, at a later period, became the established forms.<sup>1</sup>

The appearance of these modern elements,—such as *u* for *i*; *v* for *f*; *ham* for *heom* (them); *es, his, is*, for *hi, heo* (her, them); *ha* for *he, hi, heo* (he, she, them); imperfect participles in *-inde* (for *-ende*) and infinitives in *-ie* (not very numerous as yet),—together with the uniform employment of verbal plurals in *-eth*, mark a *Southern* dialect; but the reader must bear in mind that the criteria of this dialect, as they are preserved for us in the records of the fourteenth century, cannot be rigorously applied to the literary remains of the twelfth, on account of that admixture of forms before alluded to, and because many of the grammatical elements did not become recognised as dialectical varieties until after this transitional period.

Comparing the present Homilies with Ælfrie's, we find the following noteworthy points of difference:—(1) A simplification of the vowel-endings by the change of final *-a, -o, -u*, into *-e*.<sup>2</sup> (2) A tendency to drop a final *n* in nouns, verbs, adverbs and prepositions ending in *-en* (or *-an*). (3) A tendency to add a euphonic *n* to the final *e* of the genitive singular of feminine nouns of the complex order, of the dative singular of complex nouns, of the plural of nouns (complex order) and of adverbs and prepositions. This *nunnation*, as it has been called, is very common in Lazamon, who probably carried this novelty to its utmost limits. At a later period we find it in the East-Midland dialect.<sup>3</sup> (4) The softening of *c* (initial and final) into *ch*, as *child* for *cild*;

<sup>1</sup> This is seen by comparing these Homilies and Lazamon's Brut with the Ayenbite of Inwyrt, A.D. 1340, and Trevisa's translation of Higden's Polychronicon.

<sup>2</sup> The suffixes *-an, -on, -um, -as, -ath*, became *-en, -es, -eth*.

<sup>3</sup> See Preface to Genesis and Exodus.

*ich* for *ic*; *-lic*, *-lice*, for *-lich*, *-liche* (in adjectives and adverbs): but the initial *sc* is not yet softened into *sch*. (5) The softening of *g* (medial and final) into *i* or *y*, as *fein* for *fiegen*, etc. (6) The breaking up of the simple or *n* declension of nouns.<sup>1</sup> (7) The plurals of the complex order of nouns originally terminating in *-a*, *-o*, *-u*, become (1st) *-e*, and (2nd) *-en*. (8) The genitive plural *-ena* becomes *-ene* (occasionally *-en* or *-an*). (9) The substitution of *-ene* for *-e* (representing an older *-a*) in the genitive plural of complex nouns. (10) The dative plural *-um* (in nouns and adjectives) becomes 1st *-an*, 2nd *-en*, 3rd *-e*. (11) Adjectives of the definite declension undergo changes similar to those in the *n* declension of nouns, the great tendency being to substitute a final *e* for an original *-a* or *-an*. (12) The *-re* of the genitive and dative case singular (feminine) of the indefinite declension frequently becomes *-e*; so in the genitive and dative feminine of the indefinite article we find *ane* for *anre*.<sup>2</sup> (13) The definite article *se*, *seo*, *þæt* becomes *þe*, *þeo* (*þo*), *þat* (*þet*).<sup>3</sup> (14) A tendency to employ *þe* for *se* and *seo*, *þeo* (but not for *þat*). (15) The genitive singular *þæs* (of the) becomes *þes* (occasionally *þas*). (16) A tendency to change the dative *þam* into 1st *þan*, 2nd *þa*. (17) The accusative *þone* becomes *þane* or *þene* (occasionally *þanne*); and *þe* is used after all prepositions. (18) The nominative plural *þa* (or *þo*) occasionally becomes *þe*. (19) The dative plural *þam* frequently becomes *þan*. (20) The pronominal forms undergo a change of form, as *ich*, *ih*, for *ic* (I);<sup>4</sup> *heom*, *ham*, for *him* (them); *heo* for *hi* (they); *heore*, *hare*, for *hira*, *heora* (them). (21) New pronominal forms make their appearance, as *his* (*is*), I; *ha*, he, she, they, them; *his*, *es*, *is*, her (acc.), them. (22) A tendency to use the dative instead of the accusative, as *him* for *hine*; and *hwam* for *hwæne*.<sup>5</sup> (23) The future tense of verbs is frequently formed by the aid of *sceal* and *wile*. (24) The infinitive mood occasionally takes *to* before it. (25) The gerundial infinitive ends in *-ene* instead of *-enne* or *-anne*; sometimes the dative *-e* is dropped, and it has the same form as the ordinary infinitive in *-en*. (26) The imperfect participle in *-inde* often replaces

<sup>1</sup> In these Homilies we find *four* varieties of this declension; in Lazamon's Brut there are *two*, with traces of a *third*.

<sup>2</sup> We also find *alla*, *alle*, for *alra*, *alre*.

<sup>3</sup> In the older Homilies *se*, *si*, *þæt* still keep their ground. The form *ðe* and *ðio* occur in the Northumbrian Gospels of the Saxon period.

<sup>4</sup> *Ic*, as well as the other varieties, occurs in the present Homilies.

<sup>5</sup> We find *hwan* (in later Eng. *wan*) which seems to be another form of the dative, just as *þan* = *þam*.

the older form in *-ende*, and is occasionally confounded with the gerundial infinitive in *-ene*. (27) The prefix *ge-* of the perfect participle for the most part becomes *i-* or *y-*. (28) *n* falls off from infinitives and perfect participles. (29) Lengthened forms are often used for contracted ones in the 2nd and 3rd persons singular present indicative. (30) Some verbs of the strong conjugation adopt the inflexions of weak verbs. (31) Adverbs exhibit a tendency to add *s* to a final *e* in conformity with genitival forms. (32) *n* often falls off from adverbial forms in *-en* or *-an*. (33) Prepositions govern special cases, as in the older period, but the *government* is rather variable, so that many govern an accusative that formerly took the dative only.

## NOUNS.

1. **Gender.**—The gender of nouns is in nearly every instance the same as in the oldest or Saxon stage of the language.

2. **Declension.**—Nouns may be arranged in the four following Divisions :—

### DIVISION I.

Nouns of the simple or *n* declension, containing masculine, feminine, and neuter substantives in *e* (some few masculines in *-a*), and forming their plurals by *-en* (*-an*, *-e*) originally in *-an*.

### DIVISION II.

*Class i.* Nouns of the feminine gender ending in a consonant, and forming the plural by *-e* (*-a*), *-en* (*-an*), originally in *-a*.

*Class ii.* Nouns of the feminine gender ending in *-e* (originally in *u* or *o*), and forming the plural by *-e* (*-a*, *-en*), originally in *-a*.

### DIVISION III.

*Class i.* Nouns of the masculine gender which end in a vowel or consonant, and form their plurals by *-es* (*-as*).

*Class ii.* Nouns of the masculine gender, for the most part terminating in *-c* (including nouns in *-er*), and forming the plural by *-e* (*-en*, *-an*), originally in *-u* (*-a*).



## DIVISION IV.

*Class i.* Nouns of the neuter gender ending in a consonant, and having the singular and plural alike.

*Class ii.* Nouns of the neuter gender ending in a vowel or a consonant, and forming the plural by *-e* (*-en*), originally in *-u*.

3. The *dative singular* of all nouns of Divisions II, III, and IV ends in *-e* (occasionally in *-en*); the *dative plural* of *all* declensions terminates in *-e*, *-en*, or *-an* (occasionally in *-um*).

## DIVISION I.

4. In this declension no less than four varieties of the singular may be distinguished, all arising out of the Saxon English form.

The *first* form is identical with the oldest English form.

The *second* form drops *-n* in all the oblique cases.

The *third* form has *-en* in all the oblique cases (of masc. and fem. nouns).

The *fourth* form has *-e* in *all* cases.

The *plural* is quite as varied.

The *first* form (i.) is identical with the Saxon English declension; and (ii.) has *-an* in *all* cases.

The *second* form drops *-n* in all the oblique cases.

The *third* form has *-en* in all cases, but *-ene* as well as *-en* in genitive plural.

The *fourth* form has *-e* in all cases.

5. It is of course difficult, within the limits of a few pages, to collect examples of *all* these forms, and therefore in the reconstruction of the varieties of this declension I have often supplied the missing links from other works with similar grammatical peculiarities, viz.—

1. Hatton Gospels (St. Matthew, ed. Kemble); 2. Peri Didaxeon (in vol. iii. of Cockayne's Saxon Leechdoms); 3. Rule of St. Benet (Cotton MS. Jul.).

6. In Lazamon's Brut the *fourth* variety in the singular and the *third* in the plural seem to be the established form, which prevailed until merged into *Class i*, Division III, which was the ancient model of our modern declension of nouns.

7. Masculine and neuter nouns were perhaps the first to adopt the inflexions of the modern form; but we have only one example of this

change in these Homilies (at p. 77), where *likames* (cp. *ures lichomes*, 127) occurs for *licam-e* (= *licam-en* = *licam-an*).

8. Feminine nouns of this declension, in a later stage of the language, became merged into the feminines of Division II, forming the genitive singular in *-e* and the plural in *-en*.

Examples of the first declension, *tima* (masc.), time; *heorte* (fem.), heart; *eare* (neut.), ear:—

| SINGULAR. |  |                              |   |                              |
|-----------|--|------------------------------|---|------------------------------|
|           | Form I.  | Form II.                     | Form III.   | Form IV.                     |
| Nom.      | Tim-a,<br>Heort-e, <sup>1</sup><br>Ear-e,            | Tim-e,<br>Heort-e,<br>Ear-e, | Tim-e,<br>Heort-e,<br>Ear-e,                      | Tim-e.<br>Heort-e.<br>Ear-e. |
| Gen.      | Tim-an,  | Tim-a,                       | Tim-en,   | Tim-e.                       |
| Dat.      | Heort-an,  | Heort-a                      | Heort-en,   | Heort-e.                     |
|           | Ear-an,  | Ear-a,                       | Ear-en,   | Ear-e.                       |
| Acc.      | Tim-an,<br>Heort-an,<br>Ear-e,                       | Tim-a,<br>Heort-a,<br>Ear-e, | Tim-en,<br>Heort-en,<br>Ear-e,                    | Tim-e.<br>Heort-e.<br>Ear-e. |
| PLURAL.   |  |                              |   |                              |
| Nom.      | Tim-an,  | Tim-a,                       | Tim-en,   | Tim-e.                       |
| Acc.      | Heort-an,  | Heort-a,                     | Heort-en,   | Heort-e.                     |
|           | Ear-an,  | Ear-a,                       | Ear-en,   | Ear-e.                       |
| Gen.      | Tim-ena (-an),<br>Heort-ena (-an),<br>Ear-ena (-an), | Tim-a,<br>Heort-a,<br>Ear-a, | Tim-ene (en),<br>Heort-ene (en),<br>Ear-cne (en), | Tim-e.<br>Heort-e.<br>Ear-e. |
| Dat.      | Tim-um (-an),<br>Heort-um (-an),<br>Ear-um (-an),    | Tim-a,<br>Heort-a,<br>Ear-a, | Tim-en,<br>Heort-en,<br>Ear-en,                   | Tim-e.<br>Heort-e.<br>Ear-e. |

#### ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE FIRST FORM.

##### A. From the present Homilies.

(i.) *Singular*.—*þe witeȝa* het 7; *steorfa* seal hene 13; *he doð swa þe swica* 25; *þe witega eweð* 117; *þet is aȝensclȝa* 103; *þe alweldenda dema* 105; *God bið his ifulsta* 113; *þe witega seið* 113; *euð his noma* 115; *ȝif his willa nere* 121; *ure wiðerwinna* 127; *þa bicom godes grama* 219—(nom.).

<sup>1</sup> Occasionally feminines end in *-a* in the nom. sing.; cp. *þa heorta*, *Peri Didaxeon* 120; *hearta* ðin, *Lindisfarne Gospels*, Matt. vi. 21.



þes *witezan* cwide 91; þes *witegan* muð 91; þes *duſian* boſme 105; to þan *witegan* 117; onʒen godes *iwillan* 93; to *salm-wurhtan* 97; er *timan* 103; on his *welan* 105; er *mettiman* 115; to his *willan* 119; to þan *lichoman* 119; on þiſſe *timan* 119, 121; on godes *willan* 123; þene *ileafan* 107; þen nam he *andan* 223; heo geſtild *groman* 111 (masc.); on *eorðan* 11, 13, 97; on heore *heortan* 101; of *eorðan* 221; of his *ſidan* 223—(fem.). mid *tirwan* 225, probably neuter (gen. dat. and acc.).

(ii.) *Plural*.—þet beoð þes monnes *eʒan* 23; weren ſeofen *cluster-lokan* 43; blawende *beman* 87; *heortan* 95; in heore *heortan* 101; þine *welan* forrotiað 111; biwerian *widewan* 115; his *eʒan* bunden 121; ablende heore *heortan* 121; of ure *heortan* 127; þet beoþ ure *eʒan* and ure *earan* 127—(nom. acc. and dat. case).

*gromena* 103; *heoranna* 103; *welena* 111—(gen. case).

## B. From the Gospel of St. Matthew.

(i.) *Singular*.—The nominative in *-a* (masc.) is very frequently employed, ſo that a few examples will ſuffice to ſhow that the older form was preſerved along with the other varieties:—of þe forðgeð ſe *heretoga* ii. 6; all þin *lichoma* fare v. 30; ſe *witega* xv. 7; gang þu *succa* on bæc iv. 10; þes *hlisa* ſprang ix. 26—(nom. case).

þas *bredguman* cnihtes ix. 15; þam *deman* v. 25; on *naman* x. 42, xviii. 5; þurh þanne *witegan* i. 22, ii. 5, iv. 14; we geſeagen his *ſteorran* ii. 2; oner þanne *muðan* xvi. 5 (masc.); *eorðan* ſalt, v. 13; heofenes and *eorðan* xi. 25; *heortan* willan xii. 34; *eorðan* *heortan* xii. 40; on *eorðan* vi. 10, ix. 6; on *heortan* xi. 29; heo *eorðan* agunnen v. 4—(gen. dat. and acc. cases).

(ii.) *Plural*.—cleopede þa *tungel-witegan* ii. 7; þa *tungel-witegan* geſeagen ii. 10; fram þam *tungel-witegan* ii. 16; hyo chtaþ þa *witegan* v. 12; ealle *witegan* xi. 13; ſe þe *earan* hæbbe xi. 15; to þam *eorðtilian* xxi. 34; *ſteorran* falleð xxiv. 29; mid *beman* xxiv. 29—(nom. acc. and dat. cases).

*sander-halgena* iii. 7; *næddrena* iii. 7; *sunder-halgane* v. 20; *witegena* x. 41; an þære *witegan* xvi. 14—(gen. case).

## C. From Peri Didaxeon.

(i.) *Singular*.—The nom. in *-a* is very common:—*aſſan* tord 98; heofenes ʒ *eorðan* 84; on *anwilitan* 84; innan þære *blædran* 82; of anne *cuppan* 92; æt þære *heortan* 106; of *eorðan* 118—(gen. dat. and acc. cases).

(ii.) *Plural*.—*ædran* 120, 138; *sa* (þa) *earan* 94, 98; of þan *eaƷean* 96; on *ædran* 138—(nom. acc. and dat. cases).  
*eagen* 96; *sildane* 126—(gen.).

D. In the Rule of St. Benet the first form is the one most frequently employed.

*witogan* boc 79a; on *halƷenan* messedaƷum 79b—(gen. pl.).

## ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE SECOND FORM.

### A. From the Homilies.

(i.) *Singular*.—to *tima* 9; aƷein þine *nexta* 13; wið þine *eƷen nexta* 17; mon scal his *euen nexta* beodan 13; nane oðre *assa* 5; uppon þa *assa* 5; heo unbunden þa *assa* 5; þurh þe *witega* 71; nenne *lichama* 219; God sette him *nama* 221; nam þe fole *anda* 229; mid þan *lichama* 229—(dat. and acc. cases).

þa *assa* fole; þa *assa* fet 3—(gen. case).

(ii.) *Plural*.—þa *witega* 7; þa *morðsclaƷa* 29; ic welle Ʒeuan *wela* 13; heore *licoma* todelden 131—(nom. and acc. case).

### B. From the Gospel of St. Matthew.

(i.) *Singular*.—þurh Jeremie þanne *witega* ii. 23; þurh ysia þanne *witega* iii. 3; for ænne *witega* xxi. 26; lædde hire *fola* xxi. 7—(acc. case).

(ii.) *Plural*.—eale Ʒe *næddra* xxiii. 33 (voc.).

### C. From Peri Didaxon.

(i.) *Singular*.—on þan *lichoma* 82, 140; under þara *tunga* 102; on ana *panna* 108; *hnecca* 108; on *æddra* 112; on *heorta* 120; oppan þara *eorða* 104; on *lichama* 142—(dat. and acc. cases).

(ii.) *Plural*.—*lippa* 100; *tunga* 100; *æddra* 120, 138, 140; *sida* 128; *eara* 88—(nom. and acc. case).

## ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE THIRD FORM.

### A. From the Homilies.

(i.) *Singular*.—on *culfren* heowe 95; an *edren* hiwe 225 (gen. case); to his *willen* 89; on *culfren* 95; bodian þa soðen *ileafen* 97; þa nam he *mulcene gramen* 223—(acc. case).

(ii.) *Plural*.—þet beoð þes monnes earen 23; þe fifte . . . *neddren* 43; heore e3en weren 43; þer wunieð inne fa3e *neddren* 3eluwe *froggen* and *crabben* 51; heo beoð *monsla3en* 53; þos blaca *tadden* bitacneð 53; *wurhten* were 93; *steorren* sculen 143—(nom. case).

mid þine e3en 33; tuneð his eren 49; mid furen *tungen* 89, 93; to *irefen* 115; tel þeo *steorren* 133; ine þe monnes e3en 153; Adam ham alle *namen* gesceop 221—(dat. and acc. cases).

*welene* 33 (gen.).

#### B. From the Gospel of St. Matthew.

(i.) *Singular*.—huse þas *reofelen* xxvi. 6 (gen. case); beo þu onbu-gende þine *wiðer-winnen* v. 25; sylst þu him *neddren* vii. 10; on þinen *namen* vii. 22; on eowren *heorten* ix. 4; for minen *namen* x. 22; owre *lichamen* of sleað x. 28; þe maig sawle and *lichamen* fordon x. 28; on hire *folen* xviii. 2, xxi. 2; þurh þone *witegen* xxvii. 35—(dat. and acc. cases).

(ii.) *Plural*.—þa coman þa *tungel-witegen* ii. 1, xii. 2; his mete was *gerstapen* iii. 4; ðis sende soðlice þare twelf apostle *namen* x. 2; beoð . . . gleawe swa *neddren* . . . bylewhitte swa *culfren* x. 16—(nom. case).

fram þam *tungel-witegen* ii. 16; on eowre *eagen* xxi. 42; on eowren *heorten* ix. 4; ætran heore *eagen* ix. 29; gelædde to *demen* x. 18; heo heore *eagen* upahofen xvii. 8; ofslagen þa *witegen* xxiii. 31; on eowre *eagen*, xxi. 42—(dat. and acc. cases).

*neddrene* cynrin xii. 34; *witegene* byregene xxiii. 29; *britsene* xiv. 20—(gen. case).

#### C. From Peri Didaxeon.

(i.) *Singular*.—of þan earen 90; on an *crocen* 92—(dat. and acc.).

(ii.) *Plural*.—þa eazēn 98 (nom. case).

to þan earen 92; to þan eazēn 96; eazēn 94, 96, 98—(dat. and acc. cases).

eazēne 94; eazēn 98—(gen.).

#### D. From the Rule of St. Benet.

(i.) *Singular*.—on *tymen* 75 b; on *chyrchen* 106 b; þane *licamen* 114 a; on rihtne *tymen* 130 b; inne þære *cyrecen*; to *cyricen* 125 b—(dat. and acc. cases).

(ii.) *Plural*.—of þare *wite3en* bocan 77 a (gen. case).

## ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE FOURTH FORM.

## A. From the Homilies.

(i.) *Singular*.—þe *licome* luuað 19; þe oðer *witege* seið; þa *bicom* his *licome* 47; þet is heore beire *wille* 99, 219; 3if his *wille* were 129; se *time* com 227—(nom. case).

*licome* unhele 7; *licome* lust 11, 19, 21 (gen. case, masc.).

*asse* fole 5; *fule* *heorte* wil 9; *chirche* *bisocne* 45; *eorðe* þrelles 47; *chirche* *dure* 73; *orthe* *scrud* 79; *culfre* *onlicnesse* 95; *culfre* *liche* 141; *eorðe* *brihtnesse* 217—(gen. case, fem.).

*godne* *ileafe* 5; þene *wreche* *licome* 19, 21; *minne* *licome* 35; on *nome* 5; mid þe *licome* 21, 29; in his *licome* 27; of þon *licome* 35; þene *nome* 83; mid *onde* 83; to ane *gode* *witege* 97—(acc. and dat. cases, masc.).

heo *nomen* þe *asse* 3; 3e *findeð* ane *asse* 3; we *habbeð* nu *chirche* 9; mid *godere* *heorte* 3, 11, 23, 25; for halie *chirche* 17; to *chirche* 23, 31; alle *hefden* ane *heorte* 91; on *culfre* 97; buuen *eorðe* 139; wip þe *neddre* 151; he halt *eorðe* 219; of *eorðe*; to *eorðe* 223; lenð us his *eorðe* 233—(dat. and acc. cases, fem.).

(ii.) *Plural*.—þas *faze* *neddre* *bitacneð* 53; beo noht þe *foaze* *neddre* ne þe *blake* *tadde*, ne þe 3elewe *frogge* 353—(nom.).

to brekene þa *erming* *licome* 43; þa *sunder-halze* 245; mid *beme* 143—(dat. and acc. cases).

## B. From the Gospel of St. Matthew.

(i.) *Singular*.—se *steorre* ii. 7; se *deme* v. 25; *wiðer-winne* v. 25; eall þin *lichame* syo v. 29; sye þin *name* vi. 9; min *cnape* viii. 8; *time* is xiv. 15; *gewurðe* þin ge *wille* vi. 10; se *witege* xxiv. 15—(nom. case).

þas *witege* xvi. 16 (gen. masc.); *eorðe* *sterunge* xxiv. 7 (gen. fem.).

þanne *steorre* ii. 10; *nemneð* his *name* i. 23, 25; on þinen *name* vii. 22; on his *name* xii. 21; for ænne *witege* xiii. 6; þurh þanne *witege* xxvii. 9; *nomen* his *lichame* xiv. 12; of þare *heorte* xv. 18—(dat. and acc. cases).

(ii.) *Plural*.—No examples.

## C. From Peri Didaxon.

(i.) *Singular*.—on þara *bladre* 84; ane *panne* 90, 106, 116; under þare *tunge* 100; on *panne* 124; in þare *panne* 126; of þare *bladre* 138; his *tunge* 140—(dat. and acc. cases).

(ii.) *Plural*.—on *eare* 88 ; inna þa *eare* 94.

#### D. From the Rule of St. Benet.

(i.) *Singular*.—on hyre *herte* 74 a ; mit þam *wytage* 74 a ; wið-teo heora *lichame* 111 a ; on *name* 120 b ; to *cyrce* 109 b ; on *time* 76 a, 111 a, 123 b ; of *ande* 132 b—(dat. and acc. cases).

(ii.) *Plural*.—mine *lippe* 99 b.

In the Homilies we meet with such a form as *e3en-e* dative plural, which is probably an attempt to form a new dative case from the nominative plural.

In Peri Didaxeon we have *lungone*, *lungane* 118, 138, 140, 142 ; and in Lazamon's Brut examples of this formation are very common.

#### DIVISION II.—Class i.

|      | SING.         | PLURAL.                 |
|------|---------------|-------------------------|
| Nom. | Hond,         | Hond-en (-e, -an, -a).  |
| Gen. | Hond-e (-en), | Hond-e (-ene, -en, -a). |
| Dat. | Hond-e,       | Hond-en (-e, -an).      |
| Acc. | Hond-e,       | Hond-en (-e, -an, -a).  |

Some nouns, like *stefen* (*stefn*), voice ; *sawel* (*saul*, *sawl*), soul ; *synn*, take an -e in the nominative singular, as *stefne*, *saule*, *sunne*.

To this declension belong *dun* (hill), *frofer* (comfort), *gled* (live coal), *helle*, *mihte*, *miseded*, *pin* (pain), *tid* (time), *swingle* (scourge), *woruld* (world), *3itsunge* (covetousness), and all nouns in -ing, -ung, and -ness.

#### EXAMPLES.

##### A. From the Homilies.

*mild heortnesse* 15, 19 ; *saule bihofðe* 19 ; *helle grund* 19, 21 ; *helle pine* 49 ; *saule bihoue* 85 ; *worldde sarinesse* 103 ; *hehte lure* 103 ; *rode tacne* 121—(gen. sing.).

*sunnen* 35, 37, 51 ; *saulen* 39, 41, 105, 117 ; *gleden* 43 ; *pinen* 43 ; *wunden* 79 ; *spechen* 93 ; *mihten* 107 ; *roden* 147 ; *hondan* 23, 91, 101 ; *pinan* 43 ; *sunnan* 91, 95, 103 ; *ehtan*, *iselhðan* 105 ; *sorinessen* 105 ; *misedede* 19 ; *saule* 37 ; *mihte* 75 ; *sunne* 11, 37, 91 ; *sarinesse* 103 ; *honde* 109 ; *tide* 89 ; *sunna* 97—(nom. and acc. pl.).

*sunna* 37 ; *sunnen* 97 ; *mihta* 101—(gen. pl.).

*honden* 41 ; *sunnen* 51 ; *deden* 57 ; *wunden* 75 ; *spechen* 89, 93 ; *sunnen* 103 ; *sunnan* 99 ; *dedan* 99 ; *saule* 41 ; *sunne* 35—(dat. pl.).

In 'þeosternesse *hellen*,' p. 61, we have an instance of a genitive singular in *-en* instead of *-e*.

B. In the Gospel of St. Matthew (Hatton MS.) we have instances of nominative and accusative plurals in *-e*, *-en*, *-an* (as well as the older form *-a*), and dative plurals in *-e*, *-en*, *-an*:<sup>1</sup>—

*cneornysse* i. 17; *mihte* vii. 22; *adle* viii. 17; *hande* xvii. 22, xxvii. 24; *handen* xv. 2; *gemyndstowe* xxiii. 29; *synnen* ix. 5, ix. 6; *bytten* ix. 17; *synnan* iii. 6, vi. 14; *synna* vi. 15, ix. 5; *stowe* x. 43; *stowen* xvii. 4; *kaigen* xvi. 19; *byrðene* xx. 12—(nom. and acc. pl.).

*hande* iv. 6, xv. 20; *synnen* i. 21; *tyden* v. 21; *adlen* iv. 20—(dat. pl.).

*tide* xvi. 3 (gen. pl.).

C. In Peri Didaxeon we find:—

*beane* 84; *adle* 94; *beanen* 86; *handan* 112, 114; *breosta* 142; *wunda* 86, 134; *handa* 112, 134; *wurtan* 90, 114, 134; *wyrta* 118; *beana* 108—(nom. and acc. pl.).

*breosten* 84, 116; *wyrta* 134; *breostan* 124, 128; *handa* 112; *handan* 134; *handum* 112—(dat. pl.).

D. In the Rule of St. Benet we have *synnan* 79 b (acc. pl.).

#### DIVISION II.—Class ii.

|      | SING.  | PLURAL.           |
|------|--------|-------------------|
| Nom. | la3-e, | la3-e (-en, -a).  |
| Gen. | la3-e, | la3-ene (-e).     |
| Dat. | la3-e, | la3-en (-an, -e). |
| Acc. | la3-e, | la3-e (en).       |

*Niht* makes the plural *niht*; *boc* has *bec* for its plural (p. 101) as in Saxon English.

A. As examples of the plural forms belonging to this declension we have the following in our Homilies:—*la3e*, *la3en* 15, 85; *duren* 87 (nom. pl.); *3efan* 99; *boken* 113 (dat. pl.).

B. In the Gospel of St. Matthew we find *burga*, *burgun*, *burgen* as the plural of *burh* x. 23, xi. 20, xiv. 15.

*burgun*, *burgen* xi. 1, xiv. 13 (dat. pl.).

C. In Peri Didaxeon we have *syna* and *synan*, 88, 110, as the nom. plural of *syn* (or *synu*) a sinew.

<sup>1</sup> The dative in *-um* also occurs.



DIVISION III.—*Class i.*

|      | SING.    | PLURAL.                 |
|------|----------|-------------------------|
| Nom. | king,    | king-es (-as).          |
| Gen. | king-es, | king-e (-ene, -a, -an). |
| Dat. | king-e,  | king-en (-e, -an, -um). |

A. The following examples illustrate some varieties of the plural number in the Homilies :—

*daȝes* ii. 1349; *westmas* 13; *weies* 49; *wurmes* 51; *domas*<sup>1</sup> 35; *eontas* 93; *apostlas* 93; *monslehtas* 103; *westmas* 109; *ƿeowas* 119; *fuzelas, fiscas* 129—(nom. and acc. cases).

*westme* 13; *kinge* 33; *daȝa* 87; *eldra* 123; *apostlan* 91, 93; *eontan* 93; *ȝeran* 131; *munechene* 93; *clerkene* 133—(gen. case).

*daȝen* 11, 119; *apostlen* 133; *apostlan* 91; *weran* 119; *apostlum* 91, 93—(dat. case).

*Fa* makes the plural *fan* (foes) 87, 143.

B. The Gospel of St. Matthew supplies us with the following varieties of the plural :—

*ealdres* ii. 4 (nom. case).

*writere* v. 20; *gaste* x. 1; *apostle* x. 2; *hlafe* xv. 34, xvi. 10; *fisca* xv. 34; *weran* xiv. 21; *ealdran* xv. 2; *hlafen* xvi. 10—(gen. case).

*ealdran* ii. 6; *daȝen* ii. 1, iii. 1; *stanen* iii. 9; *wæstman* vii. 16, ix. 20; *wulfen* x. 16; *kyngen* x. 18—(dat. case).

C. In *Peri Didaxeon* we find :—

*dæges* 84; *næglas* 114—(nom. and acc. pl.).

*dægen* 84 (dat. pl.).

DIVISION III.—*Class ii.*

|               | SING.          | PLURAL.                             |
|---------------|----------------|-------------------------------------|
| Nom. and Acc. | sun-e, broȝer, | sun-e (sun-es), broȝr-e (-en, -an). |
| Gen.          | sun-e, broȝer, | sun-e, broȝr-e (-ene, -en).         |
| Dat.          | sun-e, broȝer, | sun-en, broȝr-en (-e, -an).         |

*Fader* (*feder*) makes gen. sing. *federes*, *feder*; pl. *federes*.

A. Examples of the plural forms :—

*broȝre* 5; *sustre* 5, 23; *childre* 73; *children* 7; *breȝren* 11; *ibroȝran* 125; *sustren* 157; *feond* 7; *deofles* 87—(nom. and acc. cases).

<sup>1</sup> *mid* seems to govern the accusative as well as the dative.

*feonda* 33; *monna* 91, 93; *childre*<sup>1</sup> 7; *toþen* 33; *mannen* 99—(gen. case).

*feonden* 7; *deoflan* 3; *foten*, *fotan* 87, 91, 129—(dat. case).

B. Examples of the plural from the Gospel of St. Matthew :—

*gebroðre* v. 47, xii. 47, 48, xxiii. 8; *deofle* viii. 31; ix. 34; *swustre* xiii. 56; *gebroðren* iv. 18; *broðren* xx. 24; *gebroðra* xii. 46; *broðra* xiii. 55; *sunen* xxi. 37—(nom. and acc. cases).

*manna* iv. 19; *deofla* ix. 34; *feonda* xiii. 25; *toþene* vii. 12; *chyldren* xxi. 16; *deofle* xii. 24; *toþe* xiii. 42, xxii. 13; *manne* xvii. 22; *fuderen* xxxiii. 30; *mannen* xxiii. 14—(gen. case).

*mannen* v. 16, xix. 26; *mannan* vi. 14; *fotan* vii. 6; *foten* x. 14; *broðren* xxv. 40—(dat. case).

*sunes*, *sunas*, as the plural of *sune*, occurs in ch. xx. 21, xxi. 28.

C. Examples of the plural from Peri Didaxeon :—

*ægeran* 106; *ægru* 136; *ægere* 134—(nom. and acc. cases).

*toþan* 102; fram þa *toþa* 104; þan *manna* 126; *foten* 132; *fotum* 134—(dat.).

D. Examples of the plural from the Rule of St. Benet :—

*swustra* 88 b, 90 a; *swustre* 75 b, 90 a, 91 b, 92 a, 96 b, 98 a, 109 a, 125 b, 127 b; *swustren* 75 b, 102 a; *3eswustren* 102 a; *swustran* 119 b—(nom. and acc. cases).

*sustrene* 88 b; *3eswustra* 91 a; *3eswustre* 97 a, 106 a, 132 a (gen. case); *3eswustren* 97 b, 198 a; *3eswustre* 88 b, 100 b, 111 b, 133 b; *3eswustrum* 93 b—(dat. case).

#### DIVISION IV.—Class i.

|               | SING.    | PLURAL.                 |
|---------------|----------|-------------------------|
| Nom. and Acc. | word,    | word, word-es (-as).    |
| Gen.          | word-es, | word-e (-ene, -en, -a). |
| Dat.          | word-e,  | word-en (-e, -an).      |

To this declension belong *bearn*, *bern*, child; *deor*, animal; *hors*, horse; *lomb*, lamb; *scep*, sheep; *þing*; *wif*, wife, woman; *weorc*, work.

The tendency to adopt even more modern forms is seen in such forms as *huses*, *wifes* 49; 'on *weorcas*,' 107, 'for *werkes*,' 145.

<sup>1</sup> There is good evidence for believing that in addition to the simple forms *child*, *egg*, *lomb*, there existed also corresponding stems in -er, as *childer*, *egger*, *lomber*.



A. In the Gospel of St. Matthew we have :—

*sceapene* vii. 15 ; *pinge* vi. 32 ; *bearne* xx. 20—*banen* xxiii. 27 ; *swina* viii. 31 ; *beornan* hlaf xv. 26 ; *wifen*, xi. 11—(gen. pl.) ; *wifen* xv. 38 ; *sceapen* xv. 24—(dat. pl.).

B. *pinge*, *worde* 111 a (gen. pl.) occur in the Rule of St. Benet.

C. *pingas* (acc. pl.), *Peri Didaxeon* 140.

#### DIVISION IV.—Class ii.

|               | SING.         | PLURAL.  |
|---------------|---------------|--|
| Nom. and Acc. | treow (treo), | treow-e <sup>1</sup> (-en, -a, -u <sup>1</sup> , -es <sup>2</sup> ). |
| Gen.          | treow-es,     | treow-e (ene, -an).  |
| Dat.          | treow-e,      | treow-en (-e, -an).  |

A. Examples of the plural forms in the Homilies :—

*ibede* 7 ; *breode* 11 ; *bebode*, *ibode* 11, 13 ; *treowe* 5, 155 ; *3eade* 127 ; *ibeden* 55 ; *biboden* 99 ; *3eten* 141, 153 ; *limen*, *leoman* 103, 109 ; *bibodan* 119 ; *tacne*, *tacna* 91 ; *biboda* 119 ; *twigga* 5 ; *nutenu* 129—(nom. and acc. cases).

*limen* 23 ; *biboden* 95 ; *iwedan* 109 ; *twige* 149 ; *wepne* 155—(dat. case).

B. Examples of the plural from the Gospel of St. Matthew :—

*lendene* iii. 4 ; *fate* xii. 29, xiii. 48 ; *wundre* vii. 22, xiv. 2 ; *tacne* xvi. 3 ; *gate* xvi. 18 ; *chikene* xxiii. 37 ; *ticcene* xxv. 33 ; *eorde* xxvi. 53 ; *flþera* xxiii. 37 ; *mere-groten* vii. 6 ; *leoht-faten* xxv. 1, 3—(nom. and acc. cases).

*treowe* iii. 10 ; *lime* v. 29 ; *lina* v. 30 ; *treowa* xxi. 8—(gen. case).  
*gemceren* ii. 16 ; *beboden* v. 19 ; *ticchenan* xxv. 32—(dat. case).

C. In the Rule of St. Benet we have the following plurals :—

*fata*, *fate*, *futan*, 93 b, 96 b, 97 a (nom. and acc. cases).

D. In *Peri Didaxeon* we find the following plural forms :—

*tacnu* 88 ; *cyrnlu* 134 ; *cyrnles* 134 ; *lime* 120—(nom. and acc. cases).  
*cicene*, *cicena*, 118, 122, 124 (gen. case).

1. The foregoing divisions show us that the tendency of nouns *feminine* of Div. I. Classes i. and ii., of masculine substantives of Div. III. Class ii., and of neuters of Div. IV. Class ii., is to change the older vowel endings (-a, -u, -o) first into -e and then into -en.

<sup>1</sup> In Saxon English the plural endings were -o, -a, -u.

<sup>2</sup> Plurals in -es occasionally occur, as *wederes*, p. 13. (See *wederes* in Sax. Chron. ed. Earle, p. 229.)

2. The older forms of brothers, sisters—*brothres, sustres*—would lead us to suppose that the *s* was a later addition to the plural suffix *-e*, so that *brothres, sustres* are not equivalent to *brotheres, susteres*, but = *brothr-e-s, sustr-e-s*.

This addition of an *s* to a final *e* was very common in the Early English period, so that we find, even in the same work, such forms as the following, which have been rather perplexing to our English grammarians:—*en-e, en-e-s* (once), *neod-e, neod-e-s* (needs), *heonn-e, heonn-e-s* (hence), *twi-e, twi-e-s* (twice), *thri-e, thri-e-s* (thrice).

3. The genitive plural *-ene* and *-e* maintained their ground for some time; the former however, occasionally contracted to *-en*, was the last to go out of use.

4. We find no examples as yet of genitive plurals in *-es*.

### ADJECTIVES.

The adjective, as in Anglo-Saxon and modern German, has a Definite and an Indefinite form, the former being used when it is preceded by the definite article, a demonstrative or a possessive pronoun<sup>1</sup>, and the latter in all other cases.

#### I. THE DEFINITE FORM.

The nominative masculine singular has two forms in *-a* and *-e*, of which the latter is the more commonly used. The oblique cases of masculines and feminines have *four* varieties, corresponding very closely to the first or *n* declension of nouns.

| SINGULAR. |            |         |         |
|-----------|------------|---------|---------|
|           | Masc.      | Fem.    | Neut.   |
| Nom.      | 1. god-a,  | god-e,  | god-e.  |
|           | 2. god-e,  | god-e,  | god-e.  |
| Gen.      | 1. god-an, | god-an, | god-an. |
|           | 2. god-a,  | god-a,  | god-a.  |
| Dat.      | 3. god-en, | god-en, | god-en. |
|           | 4. god-e,  | god-e,  | god-e.  |
| Acc.      | 1. god-an, | god-an, | god-e.  |
|           | 2. god-a,  | god-a,  | god-e.  |
|           | 3. god-en, | god-en, | god-e.  |
|           | 4. god-e,  | god-e,  | god-e.  |

<sup>1</sup> Adjectives qualifying nouns in the vocative case usually take the definite form, as in Saxon English.

## PLURAL.

Masc. Fem. Neut.

|      |   |             |
|------|---|-------------|
| Nom. | { | 1. god-an.  |
|      |   | 2. god-a.   |
| Acc. | { | 3. god-en.  |
|      |   | 4. god-e.   |
| Gen. | { | 1. god-ena. |
|      |   | 2. god-ene. |
|      |   | 3. god-en.  |
|      |   | 4. god-e.   |
| Dat. | { | 1. god-an.  |
|      |   | 2. god-a.   |
|      |   | 3. god-en.  |
|      |   | 4. god-e.   |

## EXAMPLES OF THE FIRST FORM.

## A. From the Homilies.

þe *halia* gast 89; þe *helia* gast 93, 97; þe *almihtiza* 97; þe *alweld-enda dema* 105; þe *wisa* mon 107—(nom. sing.).

þes *halzan* gastes 31fe 99; þes *halzan* gastes isundinge 99; þere *halzan* þremnesse 101; to þere *upplikan* riche 41; on þam *ealdan* pentecoste 89; of þam *halzan* gaste 99, 101; to þan *almihtizan* gode 111; þene *halian* gaste 91—(gen. dat. and acc. sing.).

þa *mildheortan* 109; þa *modian* 111; þa *drorizan* 95; þas *lenan* world-þing 105; þa *mildan* 113—(nom. and acc. pl.).

on ure *god-an* weorcan 107; bi þan *gastliche wrecchan* 113—(dat. pl.).

## B. From the Gospel of St. Matthew.

The nominative singular in *-a* occurs frequently along with the form in *-e*, even in the same verse.

þu *god-e* þeow and *getreowa* xxv. 23; þu *efela* þeow and *slawe* xxv. 6 (nom.); þan *towearðan* eorre iii. 7; on þa *halgan* ceastre iv. 5; þonne *unnyttan* þeowan xxv. 30—(acc. and dat. sing.).

þas *halgan* gastes xii. 31—(gen. sing.).

þa *mildheortan* v. 7; þa *godan* v. 45; þa *untruman* xiv. 14; þa *fermestan* xxiii. 6; eale ge *blindan* xxiii. 17—(nom. and acc. pl.).

## C. From Peri Didaxeon.

se *ruwa* gealla ; se *swerta* gealle 82 ; se *yfela* wæta 130—(nom. sing.).

of þan *swertan* wætan 94 ; of þare *drizan* hætan 96 ; on þan *wynstran* earne ; to þan *scearpan* bane 124—(dat. and acc. sing.).

to þan *menniscan* topan 102 ; of þan *scearpan* banum 138—(dat. pl.).

D. In the Rule of St. Benet the forms in *-a*, *-an*, &c., are of more frequent occurrence than the other varieties.

## EXAMPLES OF THE SECOND FORM.

A. From the Homilies.<sup>1</sup>

þe *wrecche* mon 27 ; þe *halie* gast 53 ; þe *zelowe* clath 53—(nom. sing.).

on þere *ilca* nihte 87 ; of þam *halia* gast 97 ; þene *halia* gast 97 ; imong þan *muchela* wisdoma 125 ; to þe *halza* gast 101 ; on þa *halza* preomnesse for 99 ; ƿa *reða* dome 15 ; þes *halza* gastes to cume 101 ; of þan *herda* flinke 129—(gen. dat. and acc. sing.).

þos *blaca* tadden 53 ; þa *isibsumma* 113—(nom. pl.).

## B. From the Gospel of St. Matthew.

For examples of the nominative singular, see quotation above from xxv. 6.

þa *rihtwisa* xiii. 43 ; swa beoð þa *fyrrestan* ytemeste 7 þa *ytemesta* fyrresta xx. 16—(nom. pl.).

mid hera *brada* *handen* xxvi. 67 (dat. pl.).

## C. From Peri Didaxeon.

þa *awerzedu* alle 94 ; þa *yfela* wæta 130—(nom. and acc. pl.).

## D. From the Rule of St. Benet.

ƿeond þa *sylfa* tida 84 a (acc. pl.).

## EXAMPLES OF THE THIRD FORM.

## A. From the Homilies.

þes *halzen* gastes to cume 99 ; to þan *ilearfullen* hirede 89 ; þene *heouenlichen* eþel 113—(gen. dat. and acc. sing.).

<sup>1</sup> In the Homilies the nominative masculine in *-e* is by far the most common.

þa *iudeiscen* men 89 ; þa *untrummen* 91 ; þa *synfullen* 95 ; þa *soðen* ileafen 97—(nom. and acc. pl.).

þan *sunfullen* 95 (dat. pl.).

#### B. From the Gospel of St. Matthew.

þam *wisen* were vii. 24 ; þan *desien* men vii. 26 ; to þam *lamen* ix. 2 ; on þare *towearðen* xii. 32 ; on þinen *swiðren* xx. 21 ; *enne lamen* ix. 2 ; þane *strangen* xii. 29—(dat. and acc. sing.).

þa *goden* xiii. 48 ; ofer þa *yfelen* v. 45 ; eale 3e *desigen* xxiii. 17—(nom. and acc. pl.).

#### C. From the Rule of St. Benet.

þære *halgen* cyrican 89 a ; þes *arfesten* 7 þes *mildheorten* 90 b ; þære *regollicen* styre 110 a' ; þæs *halzen* gastes 111 a ; þære *stiðesten* discepline 117 a ; þæs *awyriðeden* gastes 131 a ; þæs *halizen* reoðeles 132 a—(gen. sing.).

of þære *ealden* ȝecyrdnesse 76 b ; of þære *ealden* æ 137 b—(dat. sing.).

þære *e3fullen* cwede 89 a (acc. sing.).

þa *unstrangen* sy 130 b (nom. pl.).

þurh þa *halgen* fæderes 125 b (acc. pl.).

#### D. From Peri Didaxeon.

on þan *manniscen* lichama 82 (dat. sing.).

### EXAMPLES OF THE FOURTH FORM.

#### A. From the Homilies.

þes *halie* gast 93 ; þes *halȝe* gastes 99—(gen. sing.).

fram þam *halie* hesterdei 87 ; on þere *alde* laȝe 87 ; on þere *ilke* nihte 87—(dat. sing.).

þa *rede* se 87 ; þa *alde* æ 87 ; þurh þe *halie* fullht 87 ; þane *unrihtwise* mon 117—(acc. sing.).

þas *faze* neddre 53 ; þes *riche* men 53—(nom. pl.).

bi þan *gastliche* wrecchan 113—(dat. pl.).

#### B. From the Gospel of St. Matthew.

þanne *ytemeste* ferþyng v. 26 ; þanne *strange* wind xiv. 30 ; þanne æreste fisc xvii. 27 ; on mine *swiðre* xx. 23 ; on his *nywe* berienne xxvii. 60—(dat. and acc. sing.).

þa *gastlice* þearfan v. 3 ; þa *sibsume* v. 9 ; þa *unclæne* gastes viii. 16 ; þa *fermeste* xxiii. 6 ; þa *blinde* ix. 28 ; þa *manfulle* xiii. 38 ; þa *blinde* 7 þa *healte* xxi. 14—(nom. and acc. pl.).

wa eow *blindle* xxiii. 16, 19, 24—(dat. pl.).

C. From the Rule of St. Benet.

pare *halize* þreomnesse 75 b; þere *regollice* stere 115 b—(gen. sing.).  
to þan *egfulle* godes dome 74 a; of þare *nywe* æ 75 b; of þære *niwe*  
æ 137 b; on *halize* þeudome; of þam *yldeste* 117 b—(dat. sing.).  
þa *cræftize* menn 118 a; þa *ylðre* swustre 127 b—(nom. pl.).  
þa *yngre* swustre 127 b—(acc. pl.).  
mid hyre *yfele* dedan 91 a; þam *seoce* 93 a—(dat. pl.)

D. From Peri Didaxeon.

on þan *middemyste* ædra 112; of þare *mycle* hætan 128; of þan  
*scearpe* bane 140—(dat. sing.).

þa *yfele* wæta 130; þe *ealde* læces 130, 138—(nom. pl.)

In Peri Didaxeon we have the indefinite instead of the definite form  
in 'þæs *seocys* mannes eare' 88; 'þæs *yfeles* wætan' 130.

## II. THE INDEFINITE FORM.

### SINGULAR.

|      | Masc.     | Fem.                    | Neut.   |
|------|-----------|-------------------------|---------|
| Nom. | God,      | God,                    | God.    |
| Gen. | God-es,   | God-re, God-ere, God-e, | God-es. |
| Dat. | { God-e,  | God-re,                 | God-e.  |
|      | { God-en, | God-ere,                | God-en. |
|      | { God-um, | God-e,                  | God-um. |
| Acc. | God-ne,   | God-e,                  | God.    |

### PLURAL.

#### Masc. Fem. and Neut.

|               |                                 |
|---------------|---------------------------------|
| Nom. and Acc. | God-e.                          |
| Gen.          | God-re, God-ere, God-e, God-ra. |
| Dat.          | God-e, God-en, God-an, God-um.  |

### ILLUSTRATIONS.

*godes* cunnes 5; *alles* þinges 7, 13; *nanes* godes 9; *mennisses*  
*metes* 11; þines drihtenes 11, 37; *oðres* monnes 13, 29; þines  
*eorðliches* louerdas 21; *anes* eorðliches monnes 33; *sunfulles* monnes,  
*alles* cunnes 79, 95; *liuindes* godes 83; *elches* monnes 99; *monies*



cunnes 103; *enies monnes* 121; *alles ileffulles moncunnes* 121; ures lichomes 127; *liuizendes godes* 131—(gen. sing. masc. and neuter).

of *elchan* hiwscipe 87; *ewilcum* 93; *uwilchen* 97; on *elche* huse 87; to *ane gode* witege 97—(dat. sing. masc. and neut.).

*godne* ileafe 5; *elcne* herm 13; *muchelne* teone 15; *uwilcne* mon 17; hine *seolfne* 17, 95; wið *operne* 19; *swilcne* lauerd 21; *godne* red 71; *glesne* ehþurl 83; *haline* 99; *sarine*, *blindne*, *unhalne* 111; *minne* gast 113; on *erne* marȝen 115; *snoterne* 117—(acc. sing. masc.).

mid *godere* heorte 3; under *mire* onwalde 13; mid *muchele* blisse 13; for *halie* chirche 17; mid *gode* heorte 23; *pire* sunne 25; of *pire* misdede 33; mid *mildere* steuene 45; mid *edmode* heorte 71; mid *muchlere* blisse 87; *godere* hele 57; of *elchere* þeode 89; mid *nane* laðnesse 95; on *muchelere* sarinesse 101; of *nane* lichamliche pinunge 97; of *elchere* wohnesse 103; on *soðre* annesse 99; to *elchere* duȝeðe 103; on *gastlichere* blisse 105; in *eche* pine 143; mid *worldliche* ehte 149—(dat. sing. fem.).

feole *oðre* *godere* werke 9; *alra* kinge king 33; *alra* swiðest 33; *alre* welene mest 33; *alra* lengest 49; summe *pine* sunna 37; *alla* sunfulle<sup>1</sup> 51; *lefulle* monne lauerd 77; *godra* gaste 97; heore *beire*, heore *beira* 99; *alre* sunnen 97; *unrihtwisra* 117; *þinra* welena 111; *alle* sunfulle monne leddre 149—(gen. pl.<sup>2</sup>).

mid *mislichen* spechen 89; mid *førene* tungen 93; to *ateliche* deoflan 103; bi *oðran* rihtwise 105; mid *irenen* neilen 121; *oðran* þingan 125; us *allen* 125; of *twam* þingen 135—(dat. pl.).

The indefinite article follows the indefinite declension:—

|      | Masc.                          | Fem.             |
|------|--------------------------------|------------------|
| Nom. | an,                            | are.             |
| Gen. | anes,                          | are, ane (anre). |
| Dat. | ane,                           | are, ane (anre). |
| Acc. | anne, enne, }<br>(an, neuter). | ane.             |

We find *n* dropping off occasionally before neuter nouns; as, *a* lutel ater 23; *a* scep 121.

<sup>1</sup> In the text *of* has been inserted before *alla* by the scribe.

<sup>2</sup> In the older Homilies, pp. 216–245, we find forms in *-ra* and *-re*; cp. *alra* 217, 219, *alre* 231, *beire* 219.



## COMPARISON.

The comparative degree of adjectives ends in *-re* (of adverbs in *-er*), the superlative in *-este* (of adverbs in *-est*) ; ep. *fulre* 25 ; *deoppre* 49 ; *softeste*, *wunsumeste* 35.

## IRREGULAR FORMS.

|               |             |             |
|---------------|-------------|-------------|
| ald,          | eldre,      | eldeste.    |
| god,          | bet, betre, | beste.      |
| lang,         | leng,-      | lengeste.   |
| lute, luttle, | lesse,      | leste.      |
| strang,       | strengre,   | strengeste. |

## DEMONSTRATIVES.

(i.) Definite Article—þe, þeo, þat.<sup>1</sup>

## SINGULAR.

|      | Masc.  | Fem.                  | Neut.                      |
|------|--|-----------------------|----------------------------|
| Nom. | þe,  | þa, þo, þeo, þe,      | þat, þet.                  |
| Gen. | þes, þas,  | þare, þere, þer, þar, | þes, þas.                  |
| Dat. | { þam, þan,<br>þon, þa, }  | þere, þer,            | þam, þan, þon, þa.         |
| Ace. | { þene, þane,<br>þone, þen,<br>þenne,<br>þanne, þe, <sup>2</sup> } | þa, þo, þeo, þe,      | þet, þat, þe. <sup>2</sup> |

## PLURAL.

Masc. Fem. and Neut.

Nom. and Acc. þa, þe, þeo, þo.

Gen. þere, þera.

Dat. þam, þan, þon.

<sup>1</sup> In the older Homilies, pp. 216-245, we have still kept up forms in *s*, as *se* (masc.), *ei*, for *seo* (fem.). The earliest use of *ðe*, *ðio* occurs in the Northumbrian Gospels (tenth century).

<sup>2</sup> This form (þe) occurs most frequently after prepositions, and may be considered as an *objective* case. The same usage is found in the latter part of the Saxon Chronicle (ed. Earle): ep. mid þe cyng 256 ; of þe temple 257 ; on þe circe 263 ; o þe land 262 ; of þe castles 262. Of an *indeclinable* þe, said to be in use in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, see Cockayne's remarks, in *St. Marherete*, p. 85, on Sir F. Madden's assertion.

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

*þes* flesces 9; *þes* deofles 17; *þas* fulhtes beðe 23; *þas* kinges hus 51; *þes* . . . monnes 95; *þes* . . . godes 123—(gen. sing. masc.).

*þam* deofle 37; et *þan* est 3ete 5; to *þam* setteresdei 9; to *þan* sinagoge 9; on *þam* laze,<sup>1</sup> on *þan* laze 9; to *þan* preoste 17; to *þan* blisse<sup>1</sup> 11; of *þam* oðer 23; from *þan* helle and fram *þan* pine<sup>1</sup> 25 et *þam* fulltbeda 37; biforen *þam* ilke stude 43; mid *þan* fedre 47; efter *þan* . . . word 75; of *þan* . . . atter 75; of *þan* gast 81; of *þan* folche 87; fram *þan* estertid 87; on *þam* pentecoste 89; of *þen* hali gast 81; *þon* monne, *þon* deofle 15; of *þon* licome 35; on *þon* deie 41, 91; for *þon* eie 97; of *þa* fredome 41; uppon *þa* chese 53; to *þa* deðe 121; for *þa* reða dome 15<sup>2</sup>—(dat. sing. masc. and neut.).

in *þane* castel 3; *þane* weye 5; o3ein *þene* castel 5; þurh *þene* gast 7; *þenne* sunnedei 11; *þene* mon 31; *þene* gnast 81; *þene* nome 83; on *þene* helend 77; *þene* mon 113; *þene* stan 141; *þone* deð 109—(acc. masc.).

inne *þe* weye 3, 5; on *þe* godspel 5; mid *þe* licome 21; þurh *þe* lust 11; in *þe* castel 23; mid *þe* feder 41; mid *þe* sune 41; mid *þe* halie gast 41; bi *þe* hefede 41; in *þe* putte 49; in *þe* uenne 49; mid *þe* wetere 51; mid *þe* streme 51; þurh *þe* . . . smel 53; of *þe* chese 53; for *þe* lune 65; þurh *þe* witega 71; ine *þe* . . . godspel 73; ine *þe* sune 77; bi *þe* weye 77; i *þe* wetere 79; i *þe* lufte 79; of *þe* . . . fure 81; þurh *þe* glesne elþurl 83; to *þe* . . . gast 101; of *þe* sede 133; anuppe *þe* stane 133; bi *þe* weie 133; þurh *þe* treo 129; to *þe* sede 135—(acc. masc. and neut.). This modern form occasionally occurs after a transitive verb, as *piuen þe licome* 21; *habbeþ þe nome* 53.

*þe* chirche 9; *þe* boc 21; *þe* sunne 77; *þe* mihte 105; *þe* clenesse 111; *þeo* eorðe 53; *þeo* e 89; *þeo* heorte 109; *þa* assa 9; *þa* saule 35; *þa* boc 37; *þa* sunne 39; *þa* clennesses 111; *þa* tunge 109—(nom. sing. fem.).

et *þan* est 3ete *þere* burh 5; *þere* saule 19, 35; *þer* orþe 79; *þer* saule bihove 85—(gen. sing. fem.).

toward *þare* burh 3; to *þere* dune 3; of *þere* burh 3; in *þere* strete 7; mid *þere* [la3e] 9; for *þere* saule 9; to *þer* ilke chirche 31; in *þere* sunne 33; bi *þer* heorte 41; in *þere* þruh 51; in *þare* þruh 51; in *þere* sea 51; into *þare* eche pine 53; in *þere* eorðe 53; into *þer*

<sup>1</sup> In A. S. *la3e*, *blisse*, *helle* and *pine* were feminine.

<sup>2</sup> Cp. on *þa* heafedan (on the head), Peri Didaxeon, p. 100.

strong pine 53 ; to *þere* saule 63 ; of *þere* mihte 79 ; of *þere* wunde 83 ; on *þere* laze 87 ; on *þere* nihte 87 ; of *þere* se 87 ; on *þare* se 89 ; under *þere* e 89 ; on *þere* boc 89 ; wiðinne *þere* buruh 89 ; mid *þere* annesse 93 ; to *þare* blisse 99 ; on *þere* . . . weorlde 135 ; mid *þere* elmesse 137—(dat. sing. fem.).

*þe* chirche 9 ; *þa* blisse 7 ; *þa* wrake 9 ; *þa* sunne 21 ; *þa* godnesse, *þe* elmesse, *þa* dedbote 23 ; *þeo* deopnesse 49 ; *þa* welle 41 ; *þa* se 87 ; on *þa* þreomnesse 99 ; *þeo* elmesse 135 ; *þe* sunne 143—(acc. sing. fem.).

ouer al *þe* burh 3 ; uppon *þa* fole 3 ; ouer *þe* chirche 7 ; on *þa* laze 9 ; into *þe* þeosternesne 61 ; et *þe* dure 73 ; ine *þe* rode 147—(acc. sing. fem.).

*þa* apostles 3 ; *þa* men 27 ; bi *þa* honden 41 ; *þa* wepne 83 ; ouer *þa* apostles 93 ; *þeo* men 31 ; *ðeo* sterren 133 ; *þo* engles 63 ; *þe* saulen 41 ; *þe* rapes 47, 51 ; *þe* ureisuns 51 ; *þe* apostles 89—(nom. and acc. pl.).

uppon *þe* . . . treowe 5 ; bi *þe* eȝen 41 ; of *þe* sunnen 51 ; ine *þe* eȝen, ine *þe* eren 153 ; mid *þe* eȝen 157—(acc. pl.).

imundie *þera* appostlene lare 89 ; *þere* apostlan 91 ; þurh *þere* apostlene muðe 133 ; et *þere* apostlan fotan 101 ; þurh *þere* clerkene muðe 133 ; on *ðere* monne heorte 135 ; *þere* heðene monnan heortan 95—(gen. pl.).

of *þan* flocc manna 3 ; for *þan* deofflan 27 ; et *þon* monnen 29 ; uppon *þan* treon 41 ; of *þon* . . . heðene 87 ; to *þan* apostlan 91 ; *þam* apostlam 91 ; of *þon* apostlum 93 ; bufan *þam* apostlas 95—(dat. pl.).

(ii.) *Þes*, *þeos*, *þis* (this).

SINGULAR.

|      | Masc.                                     | Fem.   | Neut.          |
|------|---|--|----------------|
| Nom. | <i>þes</i> ,                              | <i>þeos</i> , <i>þos</i> , <i>þas</i> ,                      | <i>þis</i> .   |
| Gen. | <i>þises</i> ,                            | <i>þisse</i> , <i>þissere</i> , <i>þisser</i> , <sup>2</sup> | <i>þises</i> . |
| Dat. | <i>þisse</i> , <sup>1</sup> <i>þese</i> , | <i>þisse</i> , <i>þissere</i> , <i>þisser</i> ,              | <i>þisse</i> . |
| Acc. | <i>þisne</i> , <i>þesne</i> ,             | <i>þeos</i> , <i>þas</i> ,                                   | <i>þis</i> .   |

PLURAL.

Masc. Fem. Neut.

|      |  |
|------|--|
| Nom. | <i>þas</i> , <i>þeos</i> , <i>þes</i> , <i>þis</i> .         |
| Gen. | <i>þisse</i> , <i>þissere</i> .                              |
| Dat. | <i>þis-an</i> , <i>þis-en</i> , <i>þise</i> , <i>þisse</i> . |
| Acc. | <i>þas</i> , <i>þeos</i> , <i>þes</i> .                      |

<sup>1</sup> For *þise* = *þis-en* = *þis-un*.

<sup>2</sup> *ðisser* occurs in the N. Gospels, John xx. 30.

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

*þes* put 49; *þes* mon 79, 81; *þes* wreche 81; *þes* prest 81; *þes* diakne 81; *þes* dei 87—(nom. sing. masc.).

*ðisses* deiðes 97—(gen. sing. masc.).

in *þisse* putte 51; of *þisse* mon 81; on *þisse* deie 89—(dat. sing. masc.). (If ‘*bi þis mon*,’ p. 83, be not an error of the scribe for ‘*bi þisse mon*,’ we have an instance of the modern form of ‘this’; cp. *þis* putte 51).

*þisne* lofsong 5; *þesne*, mon 27; *þesne* red 63—(acc. sing. masc.).

*þeos* world is 7; *nis þas* weorlð 35; *þeos* ehte turneð 53; *þeos* tide is 89; *þos* godnesse mihte 81; *þos* world wende 81; *þas* wrake is 15—(nom. sing. fem.).

*þisse* worlðes 35; *þisse* worlde sarinesse 103; *þissere* sterke worlde 105—(gen. fem.).

on *þissere* tid 91; efter *þissere* bisnunge 93; inne *þisse* laze 9; on *þisse* worlde 33, 89; mid *þisse* fluhte 81—(dat. sing. fem.).

*luneð þas* muchele prude 49; he erest astalde *þeos* worlð 19—(acc. fem.).

*þas* dazes beð 11; weren *þas* preo laze 11; *þas* lazen weren 15; hwet boð *þas* þeues 79; *þeos* weorð 47; *þeos* men doð 49; *þeos* wimmen beoð 53; *þos* men habbeð 53; *þos* word 65; *þos* blaca tadden bitacneð *þes* riche men 53—(nom. pl.).

on *þisse* dazen 11; of *þisse* limen 23; of *þisse* þinge 37, 73; to *þissan* . . . 3euan 99—(dat. pl.).

ne forswerie þre *þas* bebode 13; *þas* ruperes and *þas* reueres and *þas* þeues þu aȝest luanan 15; breke *þas* word 79; of *þas* pinen 43; to *þeos* weordes—(acc. pl.).

*þes* is used pronominally, as *þes* mihte speken 83.

## PRONOUNS.

1. The hard and soft (the ancient and modern) forms of the 1st person are seen in *ic* and *ich*, of which another variety is *ih*.

*Ic* occasionally coalesces with *meȝ* and *mot*, as *mahtic* 31, *mostic* 35.

2. The 1st and 2nd persons have a *dual* number, as *wit*, we two; *ȝit*, ye two.

3. Some new forms begin to make their appearance, as *his*, I (l. 223, p. 173); *ha*, she, her, they, them; *hes*, them; *es*, *is*, *his*, her.

4. When the pronouns are used reflectively they are put in the dative case.

5. *Seolf* (self) is often added to the reflective pronoun, as 'Ic me *seolf*,' = I myself. The reflective pronoun is sometimes omitted, as 'Ic *seolf*,' = I (my)self.

*Self* is usually declined like the indefinite adjective; but we find *seolfe* or *seolue* as well as *seolfne* in the accusative, while the dative singular and plural -um dwindles down to -an or -en, -e. Cp. hine *seolfne*, hine *seolue* 25; hine *seolfe* 29; mīde gode *seoluan* 107; to him *seoluen*, mid him *seolue* 61; cow *seluen* 35; on us *sehuan* 123.

The **Personal Pronouns** are :—

## SINGULAR.

| 1st Pers.         | 2nd Pers. | 3rd Pers.  |                                  |       |
|-------------------|-----------|------------|----------------------------------|-------|
|                   |           | Masc.      | Fem.                             | Neut. |
| Nom. Ic, ich, ih, | þu.       | he.        | heo, hi, ha,                     | hit.  |
| Gen. min,         | þin.      | his,       | hire, here,                      | his.  |
| Dat. me,          | þe.       | him,       | hire,                            | him.  |
| Acc. me,          | þe.       | hine, him, | { heo, hi, ha, }<br>{ es, his, } | hit.  |

| Dual.         |             | Plural. |                  | Plural.                                    |  |
|---------------|-------------|---------|------------------|--|--|
|               |             |         |                  | Masc. Fem. and Neut.                       |  |
| Nom. wit,     | we.         | 3it,    | 3e. <sup>1</sup> | hi, heo, ha.                               |  |
| Gen.          | ure.        |         | eower, euwer.    | heore, hore, here.                         |  |
| Dat.          | us.         |         | eow.             | hem, heom, ham.                            |  |
| Acc. unc, us. | hinc (inc), | eow.    |                  | hi, heo, hes, heom, ham, ha <sup>2</sup> . |  |

The **Possessive Pronouns** are formed from the genitive case, those of the 1st and 2nd persons being declined like adjectives of the indefinite declension, while those of the third are indeclinable.

*Mi* and *þi* are occasionally found for *min* and *þin*.

The **Relative Pronouns** are—*þeðe* (= A.S. *seðe*), *þe*, and *þet* (or *þat*).

*þet* has often the force of our compound relative *what*:—'he wule herkien *þet* þe preost him leið on' 31.

The **Interrogative Pronouns** are *hwa* (who); *hwet* (*hwat*); *hwile* (which); *hweðer* (which of two, whether).

<sup>1</sup> In the older Homilies, pp. 216-245, we have *3ie* = ye; *3iure* = your; *3iu* = you.

<sup>2</sup> In some of the Midland dialects we find *hise* as the plural of *his*.

|      | Masc. and Fem.    | Neut.        |
|------|-------------------|--------------|
| Nom. | hwa,              | hwet (hwat). |
| Gen. | hwas,             | hwas.        |
| Dat. | hwem, hwam, hwan, | hwem, hwam.  |
| Acc. | hwem, hwam, hwan, | hwet (hwat). |

The **Indefinite Pronouns** are *me* (= A.S. *man*, one ; cp. Ger. *man*, Fr. *on*), and *hwa*, who (cp. 'as *who* says'), as in the phrase '*ʒif hwa is*,' = if *any one* is, 9.

## VERBS.

**Voice.**—The verbs *beon*, *em*, and *weorðan* are employed along with the perfect (or past) participle to form the passive voice.

**Mood.**—There are four moods distinguished by inflection; namely, the Subjunctive, Imperative, Infinitive, and Indicative.

**SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.**—The present subjunctive has frequently the force of the imperative. Cp. '*hwa efre þenne ilokie*,' = let each one then observe, 47 ; *herien* we = let us praise ; *lurian* we = let us love, 123.

**IMPERATIVE MOOD.**—Strong verbs have no inflexion in the 2nd person imperative, unless the root ends in a double consonant, which then takes a final *-e*.

Weak verbs have the 2nd person singular in *-e* if the infinitive ends in *-ien*, *-ie*,<sup>1</sup> or if the base terminates in a double consonant.

The plural imper. ends in *-eð* (*-að*, *-et*), or in *-e* when the pronoun *follows* the verb.

**INFINITIVE MOOD.**—The infinitive mood ends for the most part in *-en* or *-an* ; as, *milcian*, *werian*, *luran* 15 ; *þenchen* 15 ; *lokien* 17. Sometimes the *n* is dropped, as *fere* 5, *hene* 13, *wundie* 15, *sawe*<sup>2</sup> 133.

<sup>1</sup> In Saxon English the 2nd imp. sing. of verbs in *-ian* terminated in *-a*, of which we have an example in the present Homilies, cp. *esca*, p. 35.

<sup>2</sup> In the older Homilies we find an infinitive in *-a*, *habba*, 221 : cp. '*sile him drinca*,' Peri Didaxeon, p. 128 ; '*seel he habba*,' p. 116. In the Northumbrian Gospels we find infinitives in *-a* and *-e* : cp. *gefraigne*, John xvi. 19 ; *wyrce*, John xv. 5.



The gerundial or dative infinitive usually adds *-e* to the ordinary infinitive, as *hetiene* 17; but we have many instances of the older and fuller form, as *wurchenne* 117.

It sometimes takes the form of the ordinary infinitive; as, he him 3eſð lutel to *etene* and lesse to *drinke* 147; þet is to *understandan* 127.<sup>1</sup>

We find it taking the participial inflexion *-inde*, as 'to *swimminde*,' for 'to *swimmene*,' 51; to *teoliende*, = to *teoliene*, 133.<sup>2</sup>

PARTICIPLES.—1. The imperfect (or present participle) ends in *-ende* (the older form), or in *-inde* (the modern form).<sup>3</sup> The earliest instance of participles in *-inde* occurs in *Peri Didaxeon*, p. 84.

2. The perfect (or past) has the prefix *i-* (occasionally *3e-* or *hi-*), except in verbs commencing with the following prefixes: *a-*, *at-* (*et-*), *bi-* (*be-*), *for-* (*uor-*), *of-*, *to-*, *un-*, *wiþ-*.

The perfect participles of strong verbs end in *-en*. (Occasionally the *n* is dropped, as in *Lazamon's Brut*. Cp. *inume* 140; *ifalle* 149; *unſerfonge* 149; *purhstonge* 151).

The perfect participles of weak verbs terminate in *-ed*, *-d*, *-t*.

INDICATIVE MOOD.—The present tense has often the force of the future. *Shall* (*ſcal*) is not always a sign of the future tense, but must often be rendered *must*, *ought*, *should*.

1. *Present Tense*.—The 1st pers. sing. ends in *-e*, the 2nd in *-est* (*-aſt*), 3rd in *-eð* (*-að*, *-et*). The plural 1st, 2nd, 3rd ends in *-eð* (*-að*, *-et*), or in *-e* when the pronoun follows the verbs.

Verbs ending in *-d* or *-t* have *-t* for *-deð* or *-teð*, as *biſt*, bids, asks; *fret*, eats; *haſt*, commands; *halt*, holds.

2. *Past Tense*.—A past emphatic is sometimes formed by *gan*, *gon* = did.

The past tense 1st and 3rd sing. of weak verbs terminate in *-ede* (*-ade*, *-ode*), *-de*, *-te*. Strong verbs form the past tense by change of the root vowel.

The 2nd pers. sing. of weak verbs ends in *-est*. In strong verbs the inflexion is *-e*.

<sup>1</sup> In the Lindisfarne Gospels we find *losige* = *losanne*, Mark i. 24.

<sup>2</sup> This corruption is very common in the Northumbrian Gospels.

<sup>3</sup> In the fourteenth century participles in *-inde* are a very good mark of a Southern dialect.



The plural ends in *-en* (*-un*). Some strong verbs have a change of vowel in the preterite plural, as—

|            |       |          |          |
|------------|-------|----------|----------|
| Past sing. | band, | past pl. | bunden.  |
| „ „        | sang, | „ „      | sungen.  |
| „ „        | swam, | „ „      | swummen. |

The following is a list of the strong forms in the present Homilies, pp. 1-183, 216-245:—

| Present Tense.         | Past Tense.                           | Past Plural.                         | Perfect Participle.                             |
|------------------------|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|---|
| bere,                  | ber 39, 131,                          | . . . .                              | i-boren 7, 33.                                  |
| a-belȝe,               | abelh 111.                            | . . . .                              | . . . .   |
| berȝe,                 | . . . .                               | . . . .                              | i-borȝen 171, 169.                              |
| bete,                  | beot 121.                             | . . . .                              | . . . .   |
| i-bide, }<br>bidde, }  | i-bad 35.<br>bed 85,                  | . . . .<br>. . . .                   | . . . .<br>i-beden 45.                          |
| binde,                 | bond 79,                              | bunden 121,                          | { i-bunden 7.<br>ȝe-bunden 3.<br>i-bunde 69.    |
| blawe,                 | { blou 75.                            | . . . .                              | . . . .   |
| a-blawe,               | { a-bleow 99.                         | . . . .                              | . . . .   |
|                        | { a-bleu.                             | . . . .                              | . . . .   |
| a-brede,               | a-breað 219, 235,                     | . . . .                              | a-broden 239.                                   |
| breke,                 | brec 19, 79,                          | . . . .                              | i-broken 83.                                    |
| buȝe, }<br>a-buȝe, }   | . . . .<br>{ a-beh 45.<br>a-beah 227. | buȝen 91, 223.<br>. . . .<br>. . . . | . . . .<br>. . . .<br>. . . .                   |
| ceose, }<br>a-ceose, } | { iches 97.<br>ȝecas 235,             | . . . .<br>. . . .                   | i-coren 45, 55.                                 |
|                        | a-ceas 229,                           | . . . .                              | i-core 71.                                      |
| to-chine,              | to-chan 141.                          | . . . .                              | . . . .   |
| cnaue,                 | . . . .                               | . . . .                              | i-cnawen 137, 169.                              |
| cume,                  | com 5,                                | . . . .                              | i-cumen 119.                                    |
| cweðe,                 | cweð 3,                               | . . . .                              | { i-queðen 161,<br>i-cwede 269.<br>icweðen 103. |
| delve,                 | . . . .                               | . . . .                              | i-dolven 49.                                    |
| dreoȝe,                | . . . .                               | . . . .                              | idreȝen 51.                                     |

| Present Tense. | Past Tense.   | Past Plural.  | Perfect Participle.              |
|----------------|---|---------------|----------------------------------|
| ete,           | { et 231.<br>æat 233.<br>æt. }                                  | . . . .       | . . . .                          |
| falle,         | { feol 61, 79.<br>feoll 93.<br>fol 223.<br>uol 61.<br>bi-fel. } | . . . .       | . . . .                          |
| bi-falle,      | . . . .   | . . . .       | bi-falle 149.                    |
| fare,          | . . . .   | . . . .       | for-faren 141.                   |
| for-fare,      | . . . .   | . . . .       |                                  |
| finde,         | fond 139, 141,  | . . . .       | { i-funden 35.<br>i-funde 69.    |
| fleo3e,        | { fleh 81,<br>uleh 79, }  | flu3en 129.   | . . . .                          |
| fo,            |   | . . . .       | . . . .                          |
| bi-fo,         | ifeng 77,   | . . . .       | bi-fongen 151.                   |
| under-fo,      | underfeng 73 91,  | . . . .       | underfonge 149.                  |
| 3elde,         | . . . .   | . . . .       | unfor-3olden 41.                 |
| bi-3ete,       | . . . .   | . . . .       | bi-3eten 29, 35.                 |
| a3ife,         | . . . .   | . . . .       | a-3even 31.                      |
| 3ife,          | { gef 17, 75,<br>3iaf 223, }                                    | . . . .       | { i-3even 83.<br>i-3efen 79.     |
| for-3ife,      | . . . .   | . . . .       | for-3euen 37.                    |
| bi-ginne,      | bi-gon 43,  | on-gunnen 89, | bi-gunne 77.                     |
| glide,         | glad 91.  | . . . .       | . . . .                          |
| halde,         | heold 9,  | . . . .       | { i-halden 87.<br>3e-halden 229. |
| a-hange,       | . . . .   | . . . .       | a-honge 41.                      |
| a-ho.          | . . . .   | . . . .       | . . . .                          |
| hate,          | het 5, 97, heht 11,   | . . . .       | { i-haten, i-hate 3,<br>49, 97.  |
| a-hebbe,       | ahef 113.   | . . . .       | . . . .                          |
| for-hele,      | . . . .   | . . . .       | for-holen 165.                   |
| helpe,         | help 79,  | . . . .       | i-holpen 81.                     |
| legge,         | lei 33, 81.   | . . . .       | . . . .                          |
| leo3e,         | . . . .   | . . . .       | i-lo3en 91.                      |

| Present Tense. | Past Tense.  | Past Plural.       | Perfect Participle.  |
|----------------|--|--------------------|--|
| for-loose,     | . . . .  | for-luren 93, 129, | { for-lore 71.<br>for-loren 21.                              |
| for-lete,      | for-let 15,  | . . . .            | for-leten 151.   |
| loce, }        | . . . .  | . . . .            | i-loken 141.   |
| be-loce, }     | be-leac 225,   | . . . .            | be-locen 231.  |
| limpe, }       | . . . .  | . . . .            | i-lumpen 93.   |
| be-limpe, }    | be-lamp 219.   | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| nime,          | { nom 31,<br>3e-nam 223,                                     | . . . .            | i-numen 29, 33.<br>i-nume 149.                               |
| ride,          | rad 3.   | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| a-rise,        | aras 123,  | . . . .            | a-risen 141.   |
| sawe,          | { sow 161,<br>seow 133, }                                    | . . . .            | 3e-sawen 241.  |
| scape, }       | { scop 165,<br>i-scope 77, 129,<br>3escop 219,<br>3esceop, } | . . . .            | { i-sceapen 219.<br>3e-sceapen 219.                          |
| gescape, }     | . . . .  | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| scine,         | scean 43.  | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| scife,         | . . . .  | scriven 25,        | i-scrifen 27.  |
| scufe,         | . . . .  | . . . .            | i-scouen 129.  |
| seo,           | seh 123,   | . . . .            | i-se3en 87, 93.  |
| singe,         | . . . .  | sungen 7, 57.      | . . . .  |
| si3e,          | seh 121.   | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| sitte,         | set 5.   | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| sle,           | slo3 39.   | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| slepe,         | slep 223.  | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| smite,         | smat 141.  | . . . .            | . . . .  |
| speke,         | { spec 73,<br>spek, }  | . . . .            | i-speken 51.   |
| springe, }     | . . . .  | sprungen 141,      | i-sprunge 171.   |
| a-springe, }   | a-sprang 227,  | . . . .            | i-sprungen.  |
| stele,         | . . . .  | . . . .            | i-stolen 31.   |
| sterve,        | . . . .  | sturfe 233.        | . . . .  |
| stinge, }      | . . . .  | . . . .            | i-stungen 121.   |
| purh-stinge, } | . . . .  | . . . .            | { purh-stongen 121,<br>purh-stunge 149.<br>purh-stungen 147. |

| Present Tense. | Past Tense.      | Past Plural.   | Perfect Participle. |
|----------------|------------------|----------------|---------------------|
| stize, }       | . . . .          | stizen 5, 115. | . . . .             |
| a-stize. }     | { asteh 17.      | . . . .        | . . . .             |
|                | { astah 91, 229. | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| stonde,        | stod 47,         | . . . .        | i-stonde 47.        |
| swelte,        | swealt 225.      | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| for swelze,    | for-swealh 123.  | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| swice, }       | . . . .          | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| be-swice, }    | . . . .          | . . . .        | be-swicen 229.      |
| ge-swice, }    | ge-sweac 223,    | i-swicon 227.  | . . . .             |
| swimme,        | swam 51,         | swummen 129.   | . . . .             |
| a-swinde,      | a-swond 133.     | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| teo, }         | teh 129,         | . . . .        | i-tozen 31.         |
| bi-teo, }      | . . . .          | . . . .        | bi-tozen 31, 107.   |
| þeo,           | . . . .          | . . . .        | { i-þungen 107.     |
| þresche,       | . . . .          | . . . .        | { i-þozen 107.      |
|                |                  |                | i-þorschen 85.      |
| wasche, }      | { wesch 79,      | . . . .        | 3e-wasse 239.       |
|                | { wosch 157, }   | . . . .        |                     |
| a-wasche, }    | . . . .          | . . . .        | { a-wesscen 37.     |
|                |                  |                | { un-iwasse 237.    |
| weaxe,         | wex 241,         | . . . .        | 3e-waxen 13.        |
| wepe,          | { weop 43.       | . . . .        | . . . .             |
|                | { wop 157.       | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| weorpe,        | { werp 129.      | . . . .        | . . . .             |
|                | { warp 41,       | . . . .        | i-warpen 143.       |
| bi-winde,      | . . . .          | . . . .        | bi-wunden 51.       |
| bi-winne,      | bi-won 41.       | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| ge-wite,       | i-wat 93.        | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| write, }       | wrat 13, 75,     | writen 75,     | 3e-writen 11.       |
| a-write, }     | a-wrat 87,       | . . . .        | i-writen 11.        |
| i-wriðe,       | i-wrað 123.      | . . . .        | . . . .             |
| yrne, }        | . . . .          | urnen 3.       | . . . .             |
| eorne, }       |                  |                |                     |

Negative Forms :—*nam*, am not ; *nis*, is not ; *nes*, was not ; *nefde*, had not ; *nulle*, will not ; *nalde*, would not ; *nuten*, know not ; *nast*, knowest not ; *nusten*, knew not.

## ANOMALOUS VERBS.

Indic. pres. sing. *ah*, *a3*, ought ; 2nd, *a3e*, *a3est* ; 3rd, *ah* ; pl. *a3en*.  
Past *ahte*.

Inf. *beon*, be.—Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *beo* ; 3rd, *bið* ; pl. 1st, 2nd, 3rd, *beoð*. p. p. *ibeon*, *ibon*.

Inf. *cunnen*, be able.—Indic. pres. sing. 3rd, *con* ; pl. *cunnen*. Past sing. *cwðe* ; pl. *cwðen*. p. p. *icwð*.

Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *der*, dare ; 2nd, *derst* ; 3rd, *der*. Past sing. *durst*, pl. *dursten*.

Inf. *don*, do ; ger. *donne*. — Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *do* ; 2nd, *dest* ; 3rd, *deð* ; pl. *doð*. Past sing. *dede*, *dide*, *dude* ; pl. *duden*. p. p. *idon*.

Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *em* ; 2nd, *ert*, *eart* ; 3rd, *is*. Past sing. *wes*, pl. *weren*.

Inf. *gan*, *gon*.—Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *go* ; 2nd, *gest*, *gast* ; 3rd, *gað*, *geð* ; pl. *goð*. Past sing. *eode*, pl. *eoden*. Imp. *goð*. p. p. *igon*.

Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *mei*, may ; 2nd, *miht*, *maht*, *meht* ; 3rd, *mei* ; pl. *mazen*, *muzen*. Past sing. 1st and 3rd, *mahte*, *mehte*, *mihte* ; 2nd, *mihtest*, *mahtest*.

Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *mot*, must, may ; 2nd, *most* ; 3rd, *mot* ; pl. *moten*. Past sing. *moste*, *muste*.

Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *scal*, *sceal* ; 2nd, *scalt*, *scealt* ; pl. 1st, *sculen*, *sceolen*, *scule*. Past sing. 1st and 3rd, *sculde*, *sceolde*, *scolde* ; 2nd, *scoldest* ; pl. *scolden*, *sculden*, *scolde*.

Indic. pres. sing. 3rd, *perf*, need ; pret. *perfte*.

Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *wat* ; 2nd, *wast* ; 3rd, *wat* ; pl. *witen*. Past, *wuste*.

Indic. pres. sing. 1st, *wille*, *wulle* ; 2nd, *wult*, *wilt* ; 3rd, *wile*, *wule* ; pl. *wulleð*. Past sing. *walde*.

## ADVERBS.

1. Adverbs are formed from adjectives by the suffix *-e*, as *soð*, true ; *soðe*, truly.

Adverbs in *-lice* or *-liche* are formed from adjectives in *-lic* or *-lich*. Occasionally *-luket* is found in the comparative and *-lukest* in the superlative degree.

2. The suffix *-um* is for the most part attenuated to *-e*, as *selde* = seldom, and *hwile* = formerly, whilom ; *ane*, alone ; *forðe*, even.

3. In *Lazamon's Brut* a final *n* is often added to adverbs in *e*,

as *ino3en* = *ino3e*, enough. We have examples of this in *heren*, here, 29; and *twi3en*, twice, 37.

4. To adverbs in *-en* (*-on*) an *e* is sometimes added, as *heonen-e*, hence.

5. Of adverbs in *-es* (genitival) we find *alles*, altogether, 103; *deies* and *nihtes*, by day and by night, 7; *cuces*, *lives*, alive, 225; *ponkes*, freely, willingly, 21; *unponkes*, unwillingly, 17; *unwaldes*, accidentally, 23.

The following, although in *-es*, are from older forms in *-e*, as *alrihtes*, 133; *perihtes*, immediately, forthwith, 33; *alunges*, altogether, 31; *enes*, once; *anundes*, anent, 55; *togederes*, together, 81; *upwardes* 59; *twies* 227.

6. Compound adverbs are formed by the prefix *on-*, *an-*, or *a-*, as *on-imis*, amiss; *on-ende*, lastly; *abac*, *adun*, *ariht*, *anon*; *mid*, as *mid iwisse*, with certainty, certainly.

7. *A þet*, *for-to*, until, 23, 119, are used instead of the older *oð-þæt*.

8. *Wet* or *wat* 11 is used for 'while,' 'as long as:' cp. *huet*, until, in *Ayenbite of Inwyt*, p. 52, l. 13.

9. *Swa* and *alswa* become *se*, *alse* (whence by dropping of *l* our *as*, O. E. *ase*).

10. *þes* is used before comparatives, as *þes þe mare* 5.

## PREPOSITIONS.

1. In the present Homilies prepositions have the same government as in the earliest stage of the language: cp. *in þane castel* 3; *o3ein þene castel* 7; *þurh þene halie gast* 7; *wið oðerne* 19; *uppon þa assa* 5; *3eond þa eorðe* 91; *of þere burh* 5; *toward þare burh* 3; *for þere saule* 9; *et þan 3ete* 5; *mid þere e* 9.

2. Prepositions that formerly ended in *-an*, now terminate in *-an*, *-a*, *-en* or *-e*; as, *biforan* 15, 89, 111; *byfan* 95; *innan* 27, 43; *bitwihan* 37; *wiðinna* 43; *wiðinnan* 95; *butan* 95, 101; *anuppon* 42; *abuten* 11, 43; *biuoren* 5; *wiðinnen* 25, 41; *bi-efen* 39; *bitwenen* 41; *etforen* 41; *bihinden* 53; *buten* 89; *buuen*, *binopen*, 165; *abute* 23; *inne* 27; *bute* 43; *anuppe* 133; *bitwene* 65, 141; *wiðute* 83; *wiðinne* 89.

3. *Betweox* becomes *bitwuxe* 105, *bitwixen* 115, *bitwixan* 25, *bitwuxan* 91.

4. *Oþe*, *iþe*, occurs for *on þe*, *in þe*, 79, 85.
5. *þurh* and *þuruh*, through and thorough, 99.

## CONJUNCTIONS.

We have many of the older forms still in use ; as, *eðer 3e . . . 3e* = both . . . and, 23 ; *nouðer . . . ne* = neither . . . nor, 9 ; *swa . . . swa* = so . . . as, 31. (Cp. *alse . . . alse* ; *alse . . . se* ; *swa . . . alse* ; *alswa . . . se* ; *swa . . . se*, 15, 49, 51, 153, 159).

*hwat . . . hwat* = both . . . and, 145 ; *oðer . . . oðer* = or . . . or ; *ne . . . ne* = nor . . . nor ; *þa hweþer*, nevertheless, 37 ; *nopheles*, nonetheless, 23 ; *þe*, or, 149 ; *þe*, than, 133 ; *to-hwon*, *for-hwon*, *forhwet*, wherefore, 81, 85, 165 ; *for-ði*, because ; *for-hwi*, wherefore ; *swilce*, as if, 41 ; *wip-þet*, provided, 3.

*Ac* often becomes *ah* ; while *þah*, *þeh*, though, becomes *þach*, *þech*.

ON SOME PECULIARITIES OF 'PE WOHUNG OF  
URE LAUERD<sup>1</sup>.'

As I have already stated, there are some grammatical peculiarities in the *Wohung* and the other treatises contained in the Cotton MS. Titus D 18, which we do not find in the oldest MSS. of the *Ancren Riwe* ; or, in other words, there is an intrusive element that has been introduced by the transcriber of the Cotton MS., and which furnishes, as one might expect, some clue to the dialect in which the treatise is written.

In the *Ancren Riwe* the plurals of the present indicative end in *-eth* ; but in the *Wohung* we have, in addition, plurals in *-en*, pointing to a *Midland* dialect ; as *winnen* 273, *singen*, *fihten*, 275, *reden* 277, *hauen* 281, *driuen*, *habben*, *eken*, *leden*, 283.

In the *Ancren Riwe* the inflexions of the *present singular* are 2nd *-est*, 3rd *-eth* ; but in the *Wohung* we have frequently 2nd *-es*, 3rd *-es* :—*ne wrekes tu þe nawt . . . bote longe abides*, &c., 275 ; *þi derue deað o rode telles riht in al mi luue, calenges al mi heorte*, 275.

<sup>1</sup> pp. 268–287.



These forms, taken with the plurals in *-en*, indicate a *West Midland* dialect.

In the Preface to Alliterative Poems I have shown that the West Midland dialect terminated the *2nd pers. sing. past indic. of weak verbs* in *-es* instead of *-est* (the Northumbrian dialect drops the inflexion), and of this we have numerous examples :—‘*Pu makes al þis werld and dides hit under mine fet and makedes me lauedi,*’ &c. 271.

Like the fourteenth-century compositions in this dialect the *Wohung* has numerous Northern forms :—

1. Strong verbs drop all inflexion in the *2nd pers. past indic.* : *pu com me to helpe, feng to fihte*, p. 277. (See Preface to Genesis and Exodus.)

2. Imperfect (or present) participles end in *-ande* ; see p. 277.

3. The prefix *i-* is dropped in the perfect (or past) participle ; see p. 285.

4. *I* occurs frequently for *ich*, p. 269 ; *þai, tai* for *heo* (they) ; see p. 283.

5. Adjectives and adverbs end in *-li* and *like*, see pp. 269, 273, 279, 283. (See Preface to Genesis and Exodus.)

6. In the *Wohung* we find *fra*, from, p. 271 ; and in other parts of the Titus MS. D 18 we find *hethen, thethen* = hence, thence, &c.

THE DECLENSIONS OF NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES IN  
THE LINDISFARNE AND RUSHWORTH GOSPELS  
COMPARED WITH THOSE IN THE  
PRESENT HOMILIES.

I. The **Simple** or **n Declension**. (p. xxi.)

1. In our Homilies we find oblique cases in *-a* and *-e* caused by the falling away of *n* from older forms, in *-an*, *-en*.

This change commenced before 1150, and we find traces of it in the Lindisfarne and Rushworth Gospels, as well as in the latter part of the Saxon Chronicle.

2. Instead of *-a*, *-e* the Northumbrian Gospels substitute *-o* *-u*.<sup>1</sup>
3. In the present Homilies we have only *one* example of the substitution of the genitival *-es* for *-a*, *-e* (= *-an*, *-en*), in *lichomes*, a noun of the masculine gender; but in the Northumbrian Gospels *-es* frequently replaces the genitive suffixes *-a*, *-e* in nouns of all genders.
4. No examples of plurals in *-es* for *-a*, *-e* (*-an*, *-en*) occur in our Homilies, but here again the Northumbrian Gospels and the latter part of the Saxon Chronicle exhibit a tendency to adopt the inflexion of masculine nouns of the complex order in preference to the ordinary form of the *n* declension.
5. The following table may be compared with that on p. xxii. of the present work :—

SINGULAR.

Masc. Fem. and Neut.

|      | FIRST FORM.                                     | SECOND FORM.               |
|------|---|----------------------------|
| Nom. | <i>-a</i> , <i>-o</i> , <i>-u</i> , <i>-e</i> , | <i>-e</i> .                |
| Gen. | <i>-a</i> , <i>-o</i> , <i>-u</i> , <i>-e</i> , | <i>-es</i> ( <i>-as</i> ). |
| Dat. | <i>-a</i> , <i>-o</i> , <i>-u</i> , <i>-e</i> , | <i>-e</i> .                |
| Acc. | <i>-a</i> , <i>-o</i> , <i>-u</i> , <i>-e</i> , | <i>-e</i> .                |

<sup>1</sup> This substitution is found in adjectives, verbs, and adverbs.

## PLURAL.

Masc. Fem. and Neut.

|      | FIRST FORM.     | SECOND FORM. |
|------|-----------------|--------------|
| Nom. | -a, -o, -u, -e, | -es (-as).   |
| Gen. | -ana, -a.       | ..           |
| Dat. | -a, -o, -u, -e, | -e.          |
| Acc. | -a, -o, -u, -e, | -es (as).    |

## EXAMPLES OF THE FIRST FORM.

## (i.) SINGULAR.

*Nom.*—*sterra* Matt. ii. 9 ; *lichoma* Matt. v. 29 ; *willo* Matt. vi. 10 ;  
*geleaho* Matt. ix. 22 ; *ego* Matt. xviii. 9 ; *eorðo* Matt. v. 18 ;  
*eorðu* Matt. ii. 6 ; *witge* Matt. xiii. 57.

*Gen.*—*lichoma* Matt. vi. 25 ; *geleafa* (L. and R.) Matt. viii. 26 ;  
*hearta* Matt. xii. 34 ; *witgo* Matt. xii. 39, Luke xvi. 16, xi.  
29 ; *eorðo* Matt. xii. 42, xvii. 25 ; *witgu* (R.) Matt. v. 13,  
x. 41 ; *eorðu* Pref. to Matt. (ed. Kemble) p. 14, Matt. v. 13 ;  
*eorðe* (R.) Matt. xii. 40, 42.

*Dat.*—*hearta* Matt. v. 28, xii. 40 ; *noma* Matt. vii. 22 ; *eorða* (R.)  
John vi. 21 ; *ego* Matt. vii. 5 ; *witgo* Matt. xxiv. 15 ; *eorðu*  
John xxi. 8, Matt. (R.) ii. 20 ; *eorðe* John vi. 21, Matt. xii.  
15 ; *fole* John xii. 15 ; *ege* (R.) Matt. vii. 5 ; *cirice* Matt. xiii.  
17 ; *heorte* (R.) Matt. xii. 30, 33.

*Acc.*—*noma* Matt. i. 25 ; *steorra* Matt. ii. 2 ; *neddra* (R.) Matt.  
vii. 10 ; *lichoma* Matt. x. 28 ; *cirica* Matt. xviii. 17, Luke vii.  
5 ; *fofa* (R.) Mark xi. 4, 5, 7 ; *witgo* Matt. ii. 5, iii. 3 ; *eorðo*  
Matt. v. 4, x. 29 ; *oxo* Luke xv. 23 ; *witgu* (R.) Matt. ii. 5,  
iii. 2, viii. 17, x. 41 ; *eorðu* (R.) Matt. v. 4 ; *culfre*, *culfræ*  
Matt. iii. 16 ; *witge* Matt. ii. 17, x. 41, xiv. 5 ; *eorðe* Matt.  
ii. 20 ; *neddre* Matt. vii. 10.

## (ii.) PLURAL.

*Nom. and Acc.*—*witga* Matt. ii. 23, xxi. 26 ; *noma* Matt. x. 2,  
xxiii. 23 ; *nedra* (R.) x. 16 ; *culfra* (R.) x. 16, xxi. 12 ;  
*heorta* (R.) Mark vi. 52 ; *witgo* Matt. v. 12, xiii. 7 ; *ego* Matt.  
ix. 29, 30 ; *nedro* Matt. x. 16, Mark xvi. 18 ; *sido* Mark i. 6,

Matt. iii. 4 ; *witgu* (R.) Matt. ii. 23, xiii. 17 ; *culfre* Matt. x. 16, John (R.) ii. 13 ; *witge* Luke xiii. 34.

*Dat.*—*heorta* (*heorto*) Mark ii. 8, iv. 15 ; *witgo* Luke xxiv. 44 ; *eare* Luke xii. 2.

*Gen.*—*nedrana* Matt. xii. 34 ; *witgana* Luke xi. 50 ; *weala* (and *wealana*) Mark iv. 9 ; *cirica* Pref. to Matt. (ed. Kemble) p. 9.

## EXAMPLES OF THE SECOND FORM.

### (i.) SINGULAR.

*Gen.*—*sterres* Matt. xii. 7 ; *eorðes* Matt. v. 13, xii. 40 ; *brydgumes* Matt. ix. 15 ; *witges* Matt. x. 41, Luke iv. 17 ; *heartes* Matt. xix. 8, Luke xvi. 14 ; *tunges* Mark vii. 35 ; *lichomes*, *lichomæs* John i. 13, ii. 21 ; *lichomas* Matt. xiii. 2, Pref. to Matt. p. 15 ; *geleafas* Luke xii. 29.

### (ii.) PLURAL.

*Nom. and Acc.*—*stearras* Matt. xxiv. 29, Mark xiii. 25 ; *culfras* Mark xi. 15, Luke ii. 24 ; *witgas* Matt. vii. 12.

In the Saxon Chronicle (ed. Earle) we find *nadres*, p. 262 ; *sterres* 260 ; *swikes* 261.

## II. Feminine Nouns (Complex Order).

### DIVISION II.—Classes i. and ii. (xxvii.)

The genitive singular of feminine nouns of the complex order in our Homilies terminates in *-e*, but in the Lindisfarne Gospels we often find *-es*, as *æhtnisses* Pref. to Matt. p. 14 ; *witigunges* *ibid.* p. 18 ; *hreonisses* Mark i. 4 ; *nedles* Mark x. 25 ; *saules* Matt. vi. 25, Mark viii. 36 ; *costunges* Mark xiii. 19 ; *helles* Matt. xvi. 18.<sup>1</sup>

The plural (nom. and acc.) of these nouns in our Homilies ends in *-e* (*-a*), but in the Lindisfarne Gospels *-as* (*-es*) occurs frequently instead of the older forms ; ep. *burgas* Matt. ix. 34, Mark v. 13 (R.) ; *ebolusungas* Mark iii. 28 ; *lustgiornisses* Mark iv. 19 ; *smeaungas* Luke xi. 17.

<sup>1</sup> The Rushworth text has the ordinary suffix *-e* in all these examples.

In the Saxon Chronicle (ed. Earle) we find *pinas* p. 262 ; *sinnes* p. 263.

### III. Neuter Nouns (Complex Order).

#### DIVISION I.—Class i. (p. xxx.)

In our Homilies this class of nouns has either *no* inflexion in the plural, as in Saxon English (singular *hus*, plural *hus*), or forms the plural in *-es*, as singular *wif*, plural *wifes*.

In Gothic we find plural forms in *-a*, as *worda*, &c., which are certainly older than the O.E. forms *word*, &c.

In the Lindisfarne Gospels we find traces of the older form in the following examples :—*worda*, *wordo* Mark xiii. 31, Luke i. 65, xxi. 3 ; *husa*, *huso* Mark x. 30, Luke xvi. 19 ; *þingo* Mark v. 26, x. 32 ; *londo* Mark x. 29 ; *hnetta*, *netto* Mark i. 16, 19 ; *wifo* Mark xv. 40 ; *cildo* Luke xviii. 15 ; *suino* Luke xv. 15 ; *scipo* Mark xiv. 27.

A few nouns of this class form the plural in *-es* (*-as*), as *cildes*, *cillas*, Pref. to Matt. p. 14.<sup>1</sup>

Neuters belonging to Class ii. (p. xxxi.) in our Homilies form the plural in (1) *-e*, *-a*, *-en*, (2) *-es* ; in the Northumbrian Gospels we find plurals in (1) *-a*, *-o*, (2) *-es* (*-as*) :—*fato* Mark iii. 27 ; *tacnas* Pref. to Matt. p. ii. ; *seutlas* Mark xi. 15, Luke xx. 46 ; *nestas* and *nesto* Matt. viii. 20.

### IV. Masculine Nouns (Complex Order).

#### DIVISION III.—Class ii. (p. xxix.)

In the Northumbrian Gospels we find an occasional plural in *-es* (*-as*) instead of a vowel-ending, as *diobles* Matt. iv. 24 ; *diablas* Mark i. 34, 39 ; *freondas* Luke vii. 6 ; *fiondas* Matt. v. 44.

Stems in *r* frequently remain uninflected in the plural, as *broðer* Matt. iv. 21, xii. 45, 46 ; *broðor* Luke xiv. 12, 26, xvi. 28 ; *swoester*, *swester* (L. and R.) Matt. xiii. 56 ; Luke xiv. 26 (R.) ; *lombor* (R.) Luke x. 3 (L. has *lombro*).

In the genitive singular the *r* stems for the most part, in the oldest period of the language, remained uninflected, but in the Northumbrian

<sup>1</sup> *husas*, *huses* occurs in Saxon Chronicle (ed. Earle), p. 246.

Gospels we find the genitive in *-es*, as *broðres* Matt. xiv. 3; *fadores* Matt. xxvi. 29; *modres* Matt. xix. 12.

In the Northumbrian Psalms we have *calfur* as a genitive singular—‘in gelienisse *calfur*’ = in similitudinem *vituli* (Ps. cv. 20): this form demands a nominative singular in *-er*, and I have no doubt that in the Northumbrian dialect *lomber*<sup>1</sup> (*lombor*), *cilder*, *cegger*, *calfer* were treated as stems in *-er*, the *r* being no part of the plural inflexion.

The chief points to be noticed in the declension of nouns in the Northumbrian Gospels are (1) a tendency (earlier than is generally supposed) to adopt a uniform inflexion for the genitive case singular and for the plural of nouns (nom. and acc. cases) in conformity with modern usage; (2) the loss of plurals in *-n*; (3) a tendency to adopt the suffix *-ana* as the genitive plural for all nouns. Cp. *treuana* Matt. iii. 9; *Ʒeafuna* Mark xi. 17; *fiscana* Luke v. 9; *toƷana* Luke xiii. 28.

## ADJECTIVES.

1. The *definite* form of the Adjective conforms very closely to the *n* declension of nouns: cp. se *blinde* Matt. x. 51, Mark x. 50; Ʒæs *heista* Mark v. 7, Luke viii. 28; Ʒæs *blinda* (R.) Mark viii. 23; Ʒæs *heiste* Luke vi. 35; Ʒone *blinde* Mark x. 49; Ʒone *stronga* Matt. xii. 29; Ʒone *blindu* (R.) Mark x. 49; Ʒone *blinda* Luke vi. 39; Ʒone *neesta* Mark xii. 31, Ʒone *nestu* (R.); Ʒæm *nira* Luke v. 36; Ʒæm *unclæne* Luke viii. 29; Ʒara *neowe* gewitnisse Matt. xxvi. 28; in Ʒa *nesto* lond Mark i. 38; Ʒa *ældesto* Mark xi. 27; Ʒa *forma* Matt. xxiii. 6; la *blindo* Matt. xxiii. 19; Ʒa *cerestu* Matt. xx. 10 (R.); in Ʒa *eco* huso Luke xvi. 9.

We have instances of the indefinite instead of the definite in Matt. viii. 23, Ʒæs *blindes*; Ʒæm *lætmostum* wið Ʒæm *forðmæstum* Matt. xx. 8, Mark viii. 23.

2. In the indefinite declension the dative singular masculine *-um* frequently becomes *-e*, as ‘in gast *unclæne*’ = in gaste *unclænium* (R.) Mark v. 2; and Ʒisse, *-a* is often put for Ʒisum. (See Lindisfarne Gospels, ed Waring, p. cxxiii.)

<sup>1</sup> *lomber*, a lamb, occurs in the Exeter Book.

In the dative feminine, as in our Homilies, the *-r* often falls away, as *stefne micla* Luke viii. 28, Luke xix. 37 ; *stefne miclo* Mark iv. 7 ; *mid micelo fyrhto* Mark iv. 41.

3. In the nominative and accusative plural we find *-o*, *-e*, as *dumbo*, *blindo*, *healto*, *unhale*, Matt. xv. 30.

4. Occasionally we get a plural in *-s*, as *tuoega blindas* for *twægen blinde*, Pref. to Matt. p. 18, Matt. xx. 29.

I take the present opportunity of calling the attention of Members of the Early English Text Society to a convenient little treatise on Early English Dialects, entitled 'Some Notes on the leading Grammatical Characteristics of the principal Early English Dialects,' by Wm. T. P. Sturzen-Becker, Ph.D. The author has done me the honour to adopt my classification and to accept my statements on all points of dialectical differences, but has added nothing to our previous knowledge of the subject. The little work, however, will be found useful on account of its arrangement and numerous illustrations.



# INDEX.

|                                    | PAGE |
|------------------------------------|------|
| PREFACE . . . . .                  | v    |
| GRAMMATICAL INTRODUCTION . . . . . | xvii |
| CORRECTIONS . . . . .              | xli  |

## HOMILIES :—

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| I. IN DOMINICA PALMARUM . . . . .                     | 3   |
| II. HIC DICENDUM EST DE QUADRAGESIMA . . . . .        | 11  |
| III. DOMINICA PRIMA IN QUADRAGESIMA . . . . .         | 25  |
| IV. IN DIEBUS DOMINICIS . . . . .                     | 41  |
| V. HIC DICENDUM EST DE PROPHETA . . . . .             | 47  |
| VI. PATER NOSTER . . . . .                            | 55  |
| VII. CREDO . . . . .                                  | 73  |
| VIII. DE NATALE DOMINI . . . . .                      | 79  |
| IX. IN DIE PENTECOSTEN . . . . .                      | 87  |
| X. DE OCTO VICIIS & DE DUODECIM ABUSIUIS HUIUS SECULI | 101 |
| XI. DOMINICA V. QUADRAGESIMÆ . . . . .                | 119 |
| XII. DOMINICA SECUNDA POST PASCHA . . . . .           | 125 |
| XIII. SERMO IN EPIST. 2 AD CORINTH. IX. 6 . . . . .   | 131 |
| XIV. IN DIE DOMINICA . . . . .                        | 139 |
| XV. SERMO IN MARCUM VIII. 34 . . . . .                | 145 |
| XVI. ESTOTE FORTES IN BELLO . . . . .                 | 151 |
| XVII. SERMO IN PS. CXXVI. 6 . . . . .                 | 155 |
| XVIII. POEMA MORALE . . . . .                         | 159 |
| XIX. ON UREISUN OF OURE LOUERDE . . . . .             | 183 |
| XX. ON GOD UREISUN OF URE LEFDI . . . . .             | 191 |
| XXI. þIS IS ON WEL SWUÐE GOD UREISUN OF GOD ALMIHTI . | 200 |

|  | PAGE           |
|--|----------------|
| ✓ XXII. ON LOFSONG OF URE LEFDI . . . . .                | 205            |
| ✓ XXIII. ON LOFSONG OF URE LOUERDE . . . . .             | 209            |
| þE LESSE CREDE . . . . .                                 | <del>217</del> |
| XXIV. DE INITIO CREATURE. . . . .                        | ib.            |
| XXV. AN BISPEL . . . . .                                 | 231            |
| XXVI. INDUITE UOS ARMATURA DEI . . . . .                 | 241            |
| XXVII. DOMINICA IIII. POST PENTECOSTEN . . . . .         | 243            |
| XXVIII. HER BIGINE <sup>x</sup> : SAWLES WARDE . . . . . | 245            |
| XXIX. HER BIGINNES þE WOHUNGE OF URE LAUERD . . . . .    | 269            |
| APPENDIX I. A MORAL ODE . . . . .                        | 288            |
| II. DE OCTO UTILIS. ET DE DUODECIM ABUSIUIS. GRADUS      | 293            |
| III. ROYAL MS. 17 A 27, FOL. 70 . . . . .                | 305            |
| NOTES AND EMENDATIONS . . . . .                          | 306            |

## CORRECTIONS IN THE TEXT.

- P. 21. l. 6. *For swielne read swilne.*  
P. 85. l. 29. *For ut read us.*  
P. 129. l. 3. *For at read al.*  
P. 247. side-note 3. *For murȝ read nurȝ.*  
„ side-note 13. *Dele hom.*
- 

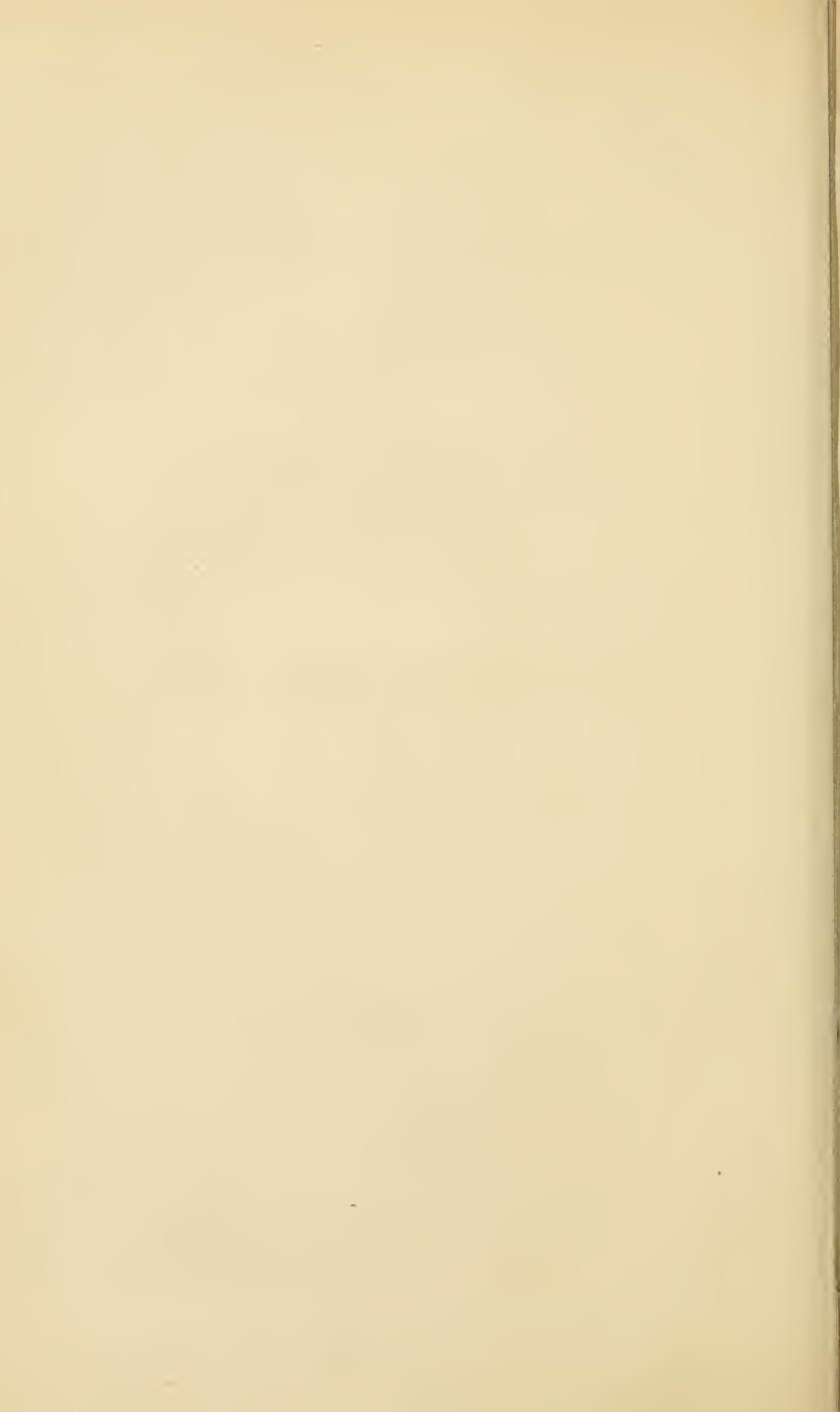
## CORRECTIONS IN THE TRANSLATION.

- P. 8. l. 22. *For may read need.*  
P. 16. l. 1. *For might read canst.*  
Pp. 16, 22, 28, 34. 56. ll. 33, 36, 3, 17, 55. *For mightest read mayest.*  
P. 26. l. 26. *For perishes read draw.*  
P. 34. l. 12. *For if were it mine read though it should be mine.*  
P. 36. l. 13. *Read ever before with.*  
P. 42. l. 6. *For feather-footed read four-footed.*  
„ l. 11. *Cry aloud. See Notes and Emendations.*  
„ l. 13. *For embers read live coals.*  
P. 44. l. 15. *Dele more.*  
P. 52. l. 109. *For love read thus love.*  
P. 60. l. 19. *Christ. See Notes and Emendations.*  
P. 64. l. 177. *Read sins and misdoings against us.*

- P. 84. l. 7 from bottom. *For* man *read* men.
- P. 86. l. 13. *Dele* again.
- P. 88. l. 15. *For* apostle's *read* apostles'.
- P. 94. l. 9 from bottom. *For* shall remove *read* must restrain.
- P. 128. l. 2. *For* draweth *read* drew.
- „ l. 25. *For* forsook *read* disregarded.
- „ l. 34. *For* three *read* four.
- P. 134. l. 6. *For* seed *read* words.
- P. 142. l. 10. *For* e *read* a.
- P. 152. l. 3. *For* wonders *read* advent.
- P. 172. l. 208. *For* hell-fire *read* hell-pain.
- „ l. 228. *For* therefrom *read* from harm.
- P. 178. l. 319. See Notes and Emendations.
- „ l. 340. \* *For* little *read* few.
- P. 182. l. 2 from bottom. teach. See Notes and Emendations.
- P. 183 head-line. *For* oure *read* ure.
- „ l. 384. Hali boc. The line seems corrupt. Does it mean  
‘wholly, as in a book, they shall see’? etc.
- P. 184. l. 15 from bottom. *Dele* my.
- P. 186. l. 34. *For* makest *read* madest.
- P. 190. l. 8. *For* the *read* thee the.
- P. 208. l. 3. *For* sinful men *read* sinners.
- P. 224. l. 12. *For* in safety *read* alone.
- „ l. 29. *For* men *read* mankind.
- P. 232. l. 13. *For* prophets *read* prophet.
- „ l. 19. *For* created *read* ordereth (*or* directeth).
- „ l. 21. *For* as *read* as his.
- „ l. 28. *For* showeth and blesseth *read* cheers and gladdens.
- P. 238. l. 14. *For* together *read* for ever.
- P. 240. ll. 14, 15. *For* speaks to us *read* signifies house.
- „ l. 16. *For* and the *read* Judas and the.
- „ l. 5 from bottom. *For* the *read* our.
- P. 242. l. 5. *After* knightship *add* or warfare.
- P. 250. l. 32. *For* even *read* ever.
- P. 252. l. 14. *For* woe *read* weeping (*or* whining).
- P. 262. l. 11. *For* form *read* glory.

- P. 264. l. 19. *Dele* the *before* God.  
P. 266. l. 4. *Dele* the *and* of.  
„ l. 30. *Read* here *after* may.  
P. 270. l. 32. *For* divideth *read* distributeth.  
P. 272. l. 30. *For* lord *read* love.  
P. 284. l. 14. *For* love *read* blood.  
„ l. 17. *For* hadst *read* hast.







OLD ENGLISH HOMILIES.

## OLD ENGLISH HOMILIES.

---

### I.

#### FOR PALM SUNDAY.

*Quum appropinquasset Jesus Hierosolymis, &c.* Good men, it is a holy day to-day which is observed every twelve months. The gospel tells how the Saviour came nigh towards the city of Jerusalem to-day, with his apostles, and also with other companies of men. When he came to the hill called Olivet, then sent he his two disciples, saying to them, Go unto the city that is (over) against you, and ye shall straightway find there an ass bound with her colt, unbind them and lead them to me. If any man saith ought to you, say that the Lord hath need thereof, and immediately they shall let you depart therewith.

*Euntes autem discipuli fecerunt sicut precepit illis Jesus, &c.* The Apostles went and did as the Saviour commanded them. They took the ass and her colt and led them to him and put their clothes upon the foal of the ass, and our Lord, afterwards, rode thereon up towards Jerusalem. When it was known over all the city that the Saviour was (coming) thitherward then ran towards him all the Hebrew men, some with good hearts and others with evil intentions. Many of the multitude that had previously followed our Lord, and also (the faithful of the city) those who believed upon him, took their clothes, and the best they had, and strewed them under the ass's feet, in the way wherein

# OLD ENGLISH HOMILIES.

## I.

[IN DOMINICA PALMARUM.]

[**Q**]*um appropinquasset ihesus ierosolimam & cetera.* Gode [Fol. 1a.]  
 men hit is an heste dei to dei þe is on .xii. monþe. þis The Gospel  
 godspel sed hu þe helend nehlechede to-ward ierusalem þare for the day.  
 burh to dei mid his apostles *and* ee mid oðere floe manna.  
 þa he eom to pere dune oliueti his ihaten, þa sende he is .ii. Our Lord  
 leornienihthes *and* oped<sup>1</sup> to heom god in þane castel þet is on sends two of  
 3ein eou *and* 3e finded redliche þar ane asse 3e-buunden mid his disciples  
 hire colt, unbinded heo *and* leaded heo to me. 3if eniman seid for an ass  
 eawiht to eou, segged þet þe lauerd haued þar-of neode *and* and its foal.  
 redliche heo eou leted fere þer-mid. "*Euntes autem discipuli* <sup>1</sup> So in MS.,  
*fecerunt sicut precepit illis ihesus & cetera.* þa apostles eoden ? cwed.  
*and* dedeun<sup>2</sup> alswa þe helende heom het, heo nomen þe asse <sup>2</sup> sic.  
 here colt *and* ledden to him *and* heo duden heore clapes huppon  
 þe asse fole *and* ure drihten seodþan rad þer-on uppen toward Our Lord  
 ierusalem. þa wes hit eud ouer al þe burh þet þe helind wes rides upon  
 þiderward. heo urnen on-3ein him al þa hebreisee men mid the foal.  
 godere heorte *and* summe mid ufele þeonke. Moni of þan  
 floe manna þe earþon fulieden ure drihten *and* ee þa 3e-leafulle  
 of pere burh heo nomen heore clapes *and* þe beste þet heo  
 hefde *and* strehiten under þa assa fet, þer drihten rad inne þe  
 Some strewed  
 their clothes  
 under the  
 ass's feet.

the Lord rode, for love and honour of him. The other men who had no garments climbed upon goodly trees and took the twigs and blossoms thereof, and put them under the ass's feet and bestrewed all the path in his honour.

And all the Hebrew folk that went behind and before him sang this song of praise specially for his honour, thus saying, *Hosanna filio David, benedictus qui venit in nomine Domini*; that is, He is blessed, he that cometh here in the name of the Lord. Thus they praised him until he rode in at the east gate of the city that is still called *Speciosa porta*, that is the fair (beautiful) gate, as it is still called; and since Christendom was <sup>1171</sup>never over (~~above once in~~) twelve months is it opened, *except* But to-day all the people went forth in procession to mount Olivet, and (entered) also in (to the temple). Now, dear brethren, I have in the first place repeated to you the gospel, now ye shall understand secondly what it betokens. Ye heard erewhile in the gospel, how our Lord sent two apostles, Peter and John, towards the city that they should unbind the ass, and her foal with her; and how our Lord sat upon the foal of the ass. Dear brethren and sisters, ye have heard how much humility our Lord exhibited for us. He might ride, if he desired, on rich steeds, and palfreys, mules, and Arabs, but he would not, nor even upon the big ass, but upon the little foal that was still suckling—nor had ever borne any burden, nor had ever been defiled by any other ass. In so great humility did God Almighty place himself for us, and moreover set us example, that when we have wealth in abundance in this life be ye not therefore proud, nor wild (elated), nor stark (haughty), nor wayward, nor highminded; but the greater the prosperity we might have in this life the meeker ought we to be, and the more temperate, as if it were not our weal, and thank our Lord for it who hath given it us, and give thereof to those men who have it not. Good men, when the believing Hebrews went and strewed with twigs the Lord's path wherein he rode, then was fulfilled what Isaiah the prophet foretold many hundred winters ere this should be, thus saying, *Parate viam Domini rectas facite semitas ejus*. Raise up the Lord's way and make his paths straight. That betokeneth, that we shall incline our hearts and have good belief towards our Lord.

weye. him to luue *and* herizinge. þa oðre men þe reil nefden  
 heo stizen uppeon þe godes cunnes treowe *and* nomen þa twigga  
*and* þa blostme *and* duden under þe assa fet *and* bistreweden  
 al þane weye him to wurpscipe<sup>1</sup> *and* al þe \*hebreisce folc þe  
 eode efter him *and* biuoren him sungun þisne lofsong helliche  
 to heringe *and* cweþen. *Osanna filio dauid benedictus qui  
 uenit in nomine domini.* þet is he is iblesced þe<sup>2</sup> þe her cumet  
 on drihtenes nome. Þus ha hine hereden a þe þe<sup>3</sup> rad in eþ  
 þan est 3ete þere burh þet 3et me hat. *Speciosa porta.* þet his  
 þet faire 3et me hat hit *and* seodþan þe cristindom wes: nefre  
 ouer .xii. monþe nis hit undon bute to dei al þat folc eode  
 þar ford to processiuu to munte oliueti: *and* in al swa. Nu  
 leoue broðre nu ic eou habbe þet godspel iseid *anfaldeliche* nu  
 scule 3e understonden *twafaldeliche* þet hit bi-tacnet. 3e  
 iherden er on þe godspel hu ure drihten sende his .iii. apostles  
 petrum *and* iohannem on-3ein þene castel þet heo unbunden  
 þat assa *and* hire fole mid hire. *and* hu hure drihten set uppen  
 3a assa fole. Leoue broðre *and* *sustre* 3e hi hered hu muchel  
 edmodnesce ure drihten dude for us. he mihte ridan 3if he  
 walde on riche stede *and* palefrai *and* mule *and* *arabisz* nalde  
 he no. na forþon uppon þa muchele assa, a3c uppon þa lutthle  
 fole þat 3et hit wes sukinde ne ber hit nes nefre nane burðene  
 ne hit nes nefere ifuled of nane oðre assa. In swa muchele  
 edmodnesse godalmihti hine dude for us *and* ec sette us bisne,  
 þa<sup>3</sup> habbe wele to ouer stohwennessce on þisse liue, ne beo þu  
 þereuore prud ne wilde ne sterc ne wemod ne ouer modi; ah  
 þes þe we heoueden mare wele on þisse liue. þes we ahte to  
 beon þe edmoddre. *and* þa mare imete al swa hit ure wele  
 nere *and* þonkien hit ure drihten þe hit us lende *and* don  
 þan monna þerof þat hit nabbet. Godemen þa 3e-leafule  
 ebreisce folc eoden *and* streweden mid twigan in drihtenes  
 weye þer he rad. þa hit wes ifullet þet ysaias þe prophete  
 iwitegede ueale hund wintra er þis were *and* cwel.

Others be-  
 strewed the  
 path with  
 twigs and  
 blossoms.

<sup>1</sup> MS. wurp-  
 seipe.

\* [Fol. 1b.]

All sang  
 "Hosanna to  
 the Son of  
 David,"

<sup>2</sup> ? he.

<sup>3</sup> ? he.

and accom-  
 panied Jesus  
 to the east  
 gate of the  
 city.

*literal,  
 allegore*

The Interpre-  
 tation of the  
 gospel.

Christ's great  
 humility in  
 riding upon  
 the little foal.

We ought to  
 imitate his  
 example.

<sup>4</sup> ? þa 3e.

The prophecy  
 of isaiah  
 fulfilled.

"*Parate uiam domini rectas facite semitas eius.*" Rere~~x~~ up  
 drihtenes wei *and* makiet his weozes rihte. Þet tacnet þet we  
 sulen habben ure heorte *and* habben godne ileafe to ure drihten.

The prophet commanded that we should make his paths (straight); we make them straight then if we keep his commands, and if we are under true confession (shrift), and are God-fearing wholly in all things; and if we each of us have love among us one toward another, as if we were brothers and sisters; and if we thank our Lord for all things that he sends us, the good and the evil; if we do this, then do we make right and clean God's ways and his paths that God Almighty may ride therein. If we do this then will God Almighty dwell in us. Also I erewhile said how, when our Lord rode to Jerusalem, the Hebrew folk sang their song of praise in honour of our Lord. Some sang it through the Holy Ghost, whether they would or no; and the children played in the street praising our Lord and said, *Hosanna filio David*. David, the psalmist, foretold this in the psalter long before, the while he lived; and said, *Ex ore infantium et lactantium*. He prophesied this of our Lord through the Holy Ghost. "Lord, out of milk-drinking children's mouths thou bringest forth praise; thou castest down the old enemy because of thy foes, and thy foes thou avengest." Now we will say more as to what this gospel betokens: The city which was over against the Saviour's two disciples betokens this world, which is transitory and evil, and very treacherous and irksome. Toil thou ever so much, always shall it be undone; and sometimes divers storms come, and war, and famine, and disease of body, all for our guilt; and when thou weenest that thou shalt live best of all, then goest thou forth (diest) and another cometh; wherefore let no man trust too much to this life. She deceiveth us where we least expect. We are not born to have pride, nor even any other vanities; but we are in this life that we may earn the eternal bliss in the kingdom of heaven. Ye have heard how God Almighty sent his apostles towards the city after the ass's foal which was bound, and afterwards unbound. The Apostles denote the teachers, that is, the wise teachers who are now over holy Church and lead a spiritual life; they shall ever unbind God's people from the devil, and tell them God's lore; how they shall lead their lives and earn the everlasting bliss through prayer and through shrift, repenting with fasts and with abasement; and pray for them day and night that Christ



þe witeȝa het þet we sculde makien his stizes þenne make we ham rihte ȝef we haldet his beode *and* ȝef we beod under sod scrifte *and* god fructe þurh-ut of alle þinge. *and* we luuien ure efrec oðer us bi-twenen swa we weren *broðre and* sustre *and* ȝif we þonkiet ure drihten alles þinges þe he us sent. þet gode *and* þet ufele. ȝif we þis doð: þenne make we rihte *and* elene godes weies *and* his sties þet god almihti mei riden on. ȝif we þis doð þenne wunet god almihti in us. Al swa ic er cwet hu hure drihten rad to ierusalem þat ebreisce fole sunge heore leof song ure helende to wurðinge, summe hit sunge þurh þene halie gast, walden heo nalden heo; *and* þa children ploȝeden in þere strete heriende ure drihten *and* cweþen. *Osanna filio dauid.* þis witeȝede dauid þe þe salm scop in þe saltre muchel erdþon þa wile he liuede *and* cwet. *Ex ore infancium & lactancium.* þis he witeȝede bi drihtene þurh þene halie gast, "Drihten þu dest þe lof of mile drinkende childe muðe; wu<sup>1</sup> warpest þene alde feont for þine feonden *and* þine feond þu bi-seildest." Nu we wulleð seggen mare wet þis godspel itacnet; þe castel þe wes aȝeines drih[t]nes twa leornikenehtes: he bi-tacnet þeos world is whilende *and* ontful *and* swiðe lewe. *and* swineful. Ne swincke þu nefre swa muchel: a hit bið undon *and* misliche wederes comet oðer while. *and* unfrit. *and* hunger. *and* lcome un-hele al for ure gulte; *and* þenne þu wenest þet þu scalt libben alre best. þenne gest þu forð *and* oðer cuned; for-þi ne litmie namon to swiðe to pisse liue. al heo us truket þer we lest wenet. Ne we ne beoð iboren for to habbene nane prudu ne forðe nane oðre rencas; ah we beoð on þisse liue for to ernien þa eche blisse in houeneriche. ȝe habbet iherd hu god almihti sende his apostles oȝein þene castel efter þe assa fole þe wes ibunden *and* seoðan un-bunden. þa apostles itacned þa leorneres, þet beoð þa wise witeȝa þe beoð nu ouer þe halie chirche *and* libbed gastliche heore lif; heo sullen eue un-binden godes fole from þam deofle \**and* heom seggen godes lore, hu heo sculen leden heore lif *and* ernien þa eche blisse mid ibede *and* mid scrifte, to betende mid festene *and* mid elmesse; *and* bidden for heom deics *and* nihtes þet crist heom mileic of heore

How to make  
God's ways  
straight.

The prophecy  
of David  
fulfilled.

<sup>1</sup> ? þu.

The city  
denotes the  
deceitful  
world.

Let no man  
trust therein.

The Apostles  
denote the  
teachers in  
holy Church.

\* [Fol. 2a.]

may have mercy on their misdeeds. The ass denotes the Church, or the synagogue; she was bound under the old law, and now is she unbound, under this new law. Good men, learn what this synagogue was in the old law ere Christ was born. Just as the Jews had their synagogue after Moses' laws, so have we now a church after the Lord's law; and ever on the Saturday Jewish folk came at set time to the synagogue and praised their Lord, according to their law. That was their Sunday, and they kept their day of worship better than we do; and they still observe it wherever they are. Beloved, all the believing Jews who observed faithfully their laws and obeyed their Lord ere he came to this world, were called synagogue, just as all Christian folk, who keep Christ's behests, are now called [Church]. The ass that was bound and afterwards unbound betokeneth the synagogue that was bound under the old law, that was all the believing folk of the Jews who were strongly bound ere our Lord came to this life. They had different laws to what we have. That was the law (then)—the same injury that I did thee thou shouldest do to me; and if thou sinnedst towards thy Lord, and it became known, neither gold nor silver might avail thee, but they should take thee and draw thee asunder with horses or dash thee to pieces with stones. Wherefore, dear brethren, there is much need that we thank our Lord who hath helped (us to fulfil) the severe old law with the new. Now no man may atone for his sin with a penalty, but towards Christ alone with shrift, as his priest teacheth him; also with his fasts which quickly overcome the waywardness of the flesh; and church-going, and to do good (for the Church), and many other kinds of good works which would take too long to enumerate to you at present. But how then if a man is so sinful and possessed of the devil that he will not either for his highmindedness, or for his pride, or for the wilfulness of his foul heart, observe his shrift? Then verily I say unto you that there is no need that any one here in this life should pray pater noster for his soul, nor sing mass, nor do any other good thing. Ah! how should another man's good deeds profit him who never in this life took thought of any good thing? Ah! who is he that may water the horse that will not drink himself? No more may any one do

misdede. Þat<sup>1</sup> assa itacned þe chirche oðer þe sinagoga heo wes  
 ibunden on þa ealde laze *and* nuða heo is unbunden in þisse  
 newe laze. Godemen, wite 3e hwet þes sinagoge on þam alde  
 laze ere crist were iboren, alswa hefden þe giwis heore sinagoge  
 efter moises laze, alswa we habbet nu chirche efter drihtenes  
 laze, *and* efere to þam setteres dei heo comen þa iudeisce fole  
 to settes tima to þan sinagoge *and* hereden heore drihten swa  
 heore laze wes. Þat wes heore sunedei *and* bet heo heolden  
 heore wurðing dei þene we doð *and* zet doð þer þe heo beoð.  
 leofemen, alle þa ileafulle iudeisce men þe heolden wel heore  
 laze *and* hersumeden heore drihten her he come on þisse  
 middelerd, heo weren iclipet synagoge al swa is nu iclepet al  
 cristen fole. þa ilke þa haldet cristes heste. Þa assa þe wes  
 ibunden *and* seodðan unbunden þet itacned þe sinagoge þe wes  
 ibunden on þan alde laze. þet wes al þet ileafule fole of iudeus  
 heo weren strongliche ibunden er ure drihten come to þisse  
 liue. heo heofden oðre laze þenne we habbet. Þet wes \* þa  
 laze: þa ilke wrake þe ic dude þe: þu scoldest don me *and* 3ef  
 þu sungedest to-ward þine drihtene *and* me hit mihte witen  
 nouþer gold ne seoluer ne moste gan for þe. ac me þe sculde  
 nimen *and* al to-teon mid horse oðer þe al to-toruion mid  
 stane. For-þi leofe breðre hit is muchel neot þet we þonkien  
 ure drihten þa<sup>2</sup> haued þa stronge ealde laze auulsed mid pere  
 newe. Nu ne þerf<sup>3</sup> na mon his sunne mid wite abuggen  
 bute towar[d] crist ane mid scrifte, swa him his preost lered  
 al swa his festen, þe swiðe ouerkimet þes flesces wlongnesse,  
*and* chuc<sup>4</sup> 3ong *and* god to donne peruore monie *and* feole  
 oðre godere werke þe nu were long eou to telle. A. hu þenne  
 3if hwa is swa sunful *and* mid deoffle biuon, þet nulle for his  
 ouer-moð, oðer for his prude, oðer for his fule heorte wil his  
 scrift ihalden<sup>?</sup> þenne segge ic eou to soðe þet nis hit nan þerf  
 þet me her on þisse liue for his saule bidde *pater noster*. ne  
 messe singe ne nan oðer god don. A. hu scolde oðermonnes  
 goddede comen him to gode þe nefre on þisse liue nanas godes  
 ne rohte<sup>?</sup> A. hwa is þet mei þet hors wec trien þe him self nule  
 drinken<sup>?</sup> Na ma ne mei me her god don for pere saule þe

<sup>1</sup> ? þa.  
 The ass  
 denotes the  
 Church.

The Jewish  
 Sabbath was  
 strictly kept.

The essence  
 of the old  
 law.

\* [Fol. 2b.]

<sup>2</sup> ? þat.

<sup>3</sup> MS. þeif.  
 How sin is to  
 be atoned for  
 under the  
 new law.

<sup>4</sup> ? chirc.

No use to  
 pray for the  
 souls of those  
 who die  
 impenitent.

good for their souls who in this life would not begin to do good. Great need have we then, dear brethren, as long as we live in this life, of true shrift, and greatly to dread our manifold sins, and earnestly to beseech our merciful Lord that he may grant us so to live in this brief life that we may depart hence to the eternal bliss wherein dwell the Father and the Son and the Holy Ghost, ever without end, *per omnia secula seculorum*. Amen.

## II.

## QUADRAGESIMA SUNDAY.

*E*cce nunc tempus acceptabile ecce nunc dies salutis, &c. Good men, now are the acceptable and holy days come upon us, if we ourselves desire it, that is, that we may in these spiritual days repent of our sins that we have previously done through the lust of the body. These days are appointed us and all mankind for great help and comfort. Moses also, who instituted them, fasted these days upon the Mount of Sinai, and never ate human food, for the love he bore to God; and Christ also would have done it. After that the Lord gave him two tables of stone on which God Almighty had written the ten laws which the Israelitish folk should observe, when he led them from the land of Egypt. There were in one of the tables separately three commands, which were—*Audi Israel, Dominus Deus tuus unus est. Secundum. Non habebis nomen Dei tui in vanum. Tertium. Observa diem sabbati*. That is, in English, Hear, ye children of Israel, that there is but one God in heaven and in earth; and above all things ye shall honour, obey, and love him with all your heart. The second behest was, Take not thy Lord's name in any oaths, nor in any idle speech, (nor) in any idle boasting. And the third behest of God was written on the table, Take heed that ye keep holy the Sunday, and that ye honour it and abstain from every kind of toil. Now, good men, these three laws were severally written on the one table, as Christ himself had directed it. And the other seven laws were also severally

on þisse liue god bi-ʒinnen nalde. Muchel is us þenne neod  
leoue breðren wet we on þisse middelerd liuien sod scrift *and*  
swiðe adreden ure monifolde sunne. *and* ʒerne bidden ure  
milciende drihten þet he us leue swa libben on \* þisse scorte  
liue þet we moten heonene feren to þan echeblisse þe hon  
wunet. þe feder. *and* þe sune. *and* þe halie gast a buten ende.  
*per omnia secula seculorum amen.*

Great need  
have all of  
true con-  
fession.

\* [Fol. 3a.]

## II.

## HIC DICENDUM EST DE QUADRAGESIMA.

*E*cce nunc tempus acceptabile ecce nunc dies salutis et  
*cetera.* Gode men nu beoð icumen þa bicumeliche dazes  
*and* þa halie dazes uppen us ʒif we wullet us seolue þet is þet  
we mazen on þisse gastliche dazen ibeten ure sunne þet we abbet  
idon erþisse þurh þe licome lust þas dazes beoð iset us to  
muchele helpe, *and* to frefre al moncun, al swa moyses þe hehte  
heom feste þes dazes uppon þe munte of synai þet he nefre ne  
ete mennisses metes for drihtenes luue *and* ec crist hit walde  
habben idon. Efter þan drihten him bi-tahte twa stanene tables  
breode on hwulche godalmihti heofde iwriten þa ten laze þe þa  
israelisce folc sceolde halden þa he heom ledde of egipte londe  
þer weren in þer oðres tables sunderliche .iii. ibode þa weren.  
*Audi Israel. Dominus deus tuus unus est. Secundum. Non*  
*habebis nomen dei tui in uanum. Tercium. Obserua diem sab-*  
*bati.* þet is on englis Ihereð ʒe israelisce bem<sup>1</sup> þet nis buten an  
god on heofene *and* on corðan *and* over alle þing hine ʒe scule  
wurþian *and* hersumen *and* luuian mid al euwer heorte. Þe  
oðer heste wes. Ne haue þu þines drihtenes nome in nane aða  
ne in \*nane idel speche. in nane idel ʒelwunge<sup>2</sup>. *And* þe þridde  
godes heste wes iwriten inne þa table. Wite ʒe þet ʒe ʒemen  
þenne halie sunnedei. *and* þet ʒe hine wurðien *and* halden from  
uwilche swinke. Nu godemen nu weren þas þreo laze ʒe-writen  
inne þa oðre<sup>3</sup> table breode sunderlipas als wa crist hit hefde idon

The Gospel  
for the day.

The accept-  
able days.

The ten  
command-  
ments.

Three behests  
on the first  
table.

<sup>1</sup> ? bern.

\* [Fol. 3b.]  
<sup>2</sup> ? ʒelwunge.

<sup>3</sup> ? ore for  
are.



written upon the second stone table, teaching us how each man should act towards his neighbour as he would that men should act towards him. *Honora patrem tuum et matrem tuam*, that was the fourth behest that God Almighty commanded—to honour first of all thy father and thy mother above all earthly things, then shall thy days be prolonged in great bliss upon earth. Be thou not a manslayer, nor defile thou thyself with drunkenness. Be not an adulterer. Commit no theft. Speak not false witness against thy neighbour. Be not a liar, neither for fear nor for love. Desire not any other man's wife, nor anything that other men possess more than thou. Forswear not these behests which God Almighty himself ordained and wrote with his own fingers and gave to Moses. The Lord again spoke, and strictly commanded that each man shall do to others as he would that one should do to him. Our Lord spake to Moses that he should teach his folk, and particularly warned him, and thus spake to him: If ye observe my behests then send I you propitious seasons, and I will give you riches and fruits abundantly, and mirth shall dwell in (your) land, which shall be in peace and in freedom under my government, and I will protect you from every harm, so that neither invasion nor famine shall hurt you. Your enemies shall not harm nor harass you, but I will give you victory and strength that ye may overcome your enemies. Moreover, our Lord spake to Moses and said, If ye turn your hearts from me and break my lore and my laws, and disregard or despise my behests, then shall there soon come upon you great vengeance, discord, invasion, and famine, so that your hearts shall be sore afraid, and your enemies shall wax strong; and ever and anon destructive tempests shall destroy the produce of your land; rapine and pestilence shall quickly consume you, and ye shall be given as captives into the hands of your enemies, so that they shall cause you to undergo torment and toil; your land they shall lay waste and your cities shall they burn and your goods they shall destroy, and they shall mar your land. Then shall your sins destroy and utterly ruin you. Then will ye be sorry for it, and bewail your sins and repent you. And then shall my anger cease and the scourge also, when ye call upon me and entreat for help, and when ye put away that unrighteousness and turn to righteousness, and I will succour

to him seoluen. on þa oðre souen laze weren iwriten alswa sund-  
erliche inna oðre stanene table brede hu uwil[c] mon scal his  
euenexta beodan alswa he walde þet me him bude. *honora patrem  
tuum et matrem tuam.* þet wes þe þeofeðe<sup>1</sup> heste þet godalmihti  
het wurðian alre erest þin feder *and* þin moder ouer alle eorð-  
liche þing. Þenne beoð þine dazes ilenged mid muchele blisse  
in eorðan. Ne be þu monslaze. Ne bi sunt<sup>2</sup> þu þe mid  
drunkenesse. Ne beo þu eubruche. Ne do þu þeofðe. Ne spec  
þu azein þine nexta nane false witnesse. N[e] beo þu lihðere. ne  
for eye ne for luue. Ne wilne þu oðres monnes wif<sup>3</sup> ne nanes  
þurzes þe oðre mon aze ultre þenne þu. Ne for-swerie þu þe  
þas .x. bebode þe godalmihti seolf idihte *and* awrat mid is  
azene fringres<sup>4</sup> *and* moyses bitahte. Drihten cweð eft *and*  
jerne larde þet uwilc mon scal beoden oðre alswa he wile þet  
me him beode. Vre drihten cweð to moyses þet he scolde wissien  
his folc *and* wernede him ȝeorne *and* him to \*þus cweð. Gif ȝe  
mine bibode healded. þenne sende ic eou rihte widerunge *and* ic  
eou wille ȝeuan wela *and* westme inoȝe *and* murðhe sculen  
wunian on londe þet bið on griðe *and* on friðe under mire  
onwalde. *and* ic eou wulle werien wið elene<sup>5</sup> herm. Ne þet eou  
ne scal derien nouðer here ne hunger. Euwer feond eou ne scal  
derian ne swenchen. Ah ic eou ȝife ȝize *and* streinþe þet ȝe  
maȝen ouer feond ouer cumen. ȝet cweð ure lauere to moyses.  
Gif ȝe cherrat from me ouer heortam<sup>6</sup> *and* to-brecað mine lare  
*and* mine laze *and* mine heste forȝemeð oðer for-hoȝiet þenne  
scal eou sone ȝe waxen muchele wrake *and* sake here *and*  
hunger *and* þet eower heorte erȝian swiðe *and* eower feond  
stronȝian *and* westmes þorð uuele wederas oft *and* ilome scal  
for-wurðan. stala *and* steorfa. swiðe cow<sup>7</sup> scal hene *and* ȝe beoð  
iseald<sup>8</sup> eower feonde to prisune. Swa þet heo eow tintrazed  
*and* heow iswenchet. lond heo eow awesteð *and* eower burh heo  
for-bernað *and* ehee<sup>9</sup> heo aspillað *and* eard heo amerrad *and*  
þenne eower sunne forworðon *and* eou seolfan al fordon. þenne  
wille ȝe hit bireusian *and* sunne bimenen *and* to boto<sup>10</sup> gan. *and*  
iswica þenne þe orð þa iswingla ȝe me þenne clepiað *and* helps  
me biddað *and* þet unriht for-letað *and* to rihte ibuȝað *and* ic

On the second  
table were  
seven com-  
mandments.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.;  
? feowerðe.

<sup>2</sup> ? smit.

<sup>3</sup> MS. yif.

<sup>4</sup> sic.  
Each man  
was com-  
manded to  
love his  
neighbour.  
\* [Fol. 4a.]  
God's pro-  
mises and  
threatenings  
to the  
Israelites.

<sup>5</sup> ? elcne.

<sup>6</sup> sic.  
The evils that  
would follow  
disobedience.

<sup>7</sup> MS. cow.

<sup>8</sup> MS. iscald.

<sup>9</sup> ? ehte.

<sup>10</sup> ? hote.  
These evils  
would be  
removed by  
penitence.



you and have mercy upon you ; and your land will I deliver, and yourselves I will strengthen and protect ; and joy and freedom I will send upon men who love and honour me aright. These are God's words which God himself wrote and gave unto Moses. All this may be profitable and instructive to us if we desire it. Assuredly it appears to me, good men, that all this vengeance is come over all nations. Ye may know for certain that it is wholly on account of our sins. What man is there that hath not each day broken these laws of God which I have just now declared unto you ? These laws lasted from Moses' time until the Lord came upon this earth for to deliver us from the devil's power ; and after he came upon this middle earth he set the law of his mildheartedness (mercy) over us and over all mankind, so that notwithstanding we sin now in this life, no one shall punish us for it (if we repent). If we will not repent and cease, it is right that they trouble and put us to shame ; not the man, but the devil that reigneth in him. Ye have heard what laws were ere Christ was born. Many men say that those were severe laws, and if those were now (in force) no man would trespass against another—neither man, nor woman, nor maiden. Truly they say, many abstained for fear of the Lord and many for the fierce doom (judgment) that then was. Dear men, we should now think this if we were prudent—so high a Lord and mighty over heaven and earth would see us. Wherefore it was the law (then) that the same evil that I did thee, thou shouldst do to me, that was, if thou woundedst me I ought to wound thee in return. If thou thrustest me in the eye, I in thine also. Blow for blow also, of necessity, except thou were manslayer or thou broke compact or committed adultery, they were punished (with death). But God hath set the law of his mercy for (our) good. Thou shalt not return evil for evil now, but God Almighty biddeth thee do thy good for his evil ; let him do thee ever so much annoyance or harm in this life, be not thou once wrath therefore, but forbear for the Lord's love. If thou returnest evil for evil so much the greater shall be the wrath between you ; and each of you sinneth before the Lord, and moreover ye are the later reconciled. These housebreakers (marauders), robbers, and thieves, that will never cease from their evil ways, thou oughtest love their souls for Christ's love, and the evil that they do thou oughtest to hate

wulle eow ireden *and* milcian *and* eower lond ic wulle friþian  
*and* eow selfe meȝhan *and* bi-\*werian. *and* blisse *and* lisse ic  
 sende uppon monnen þe me luieð *and* irihte iherað þis beoð  
 godes word þe god seolf idihte. *and* moises bi-tahte. Al hit mei  
 us rede *and* to lare ȝif we wulleð. Soðliche me þunched gode  
 men þet al þas wrake is icumen ouer alle þeode. ȝe hit mazen  
 witen iwis þet hit is al for ure sunne. hwulc mon is þet nauet  
 to broken elche dei þas godes laze þe ic eow nu eweð. Þas lazen  
 weren from Moyses. a þet drihten com on þis middilert for us to  
 alesnesse of deoffles onwalde *and* seodðan he com on þisse mid-  
 delert: he sette his mildheortnesse laze ouer us. *and* ouer al  
 moneun. þet wes þaȝh we suneghie nu on þisse liue ne scal us na  
 mon uuelien þer uore. Gif we nulleð gan to bote *and* iswican  
 hit is riht þet me us nede *and* isegge þet sceamie. Nawiht þon  
 monne ah þon deoffle þe rixlað in him. Ge herde wilche laze  
 weren er crist wes iboren. Monimon seið þet þa weren strotige<sup>1</sup>  
 laze *and* ȝif þa laze weren nu nalde na mon mis-don wið oðre  
 ne wepmon ne wifmon ne meiden. fulsoð hit seið moni hit for-let  
 for drihtenes eye. *and* moni hit forlet for þa reða dome þe þa  
 wes. Leofe men þet we sculden þenchen nu ȝef we weren iseli.  
 Swa heh lauerd *and* mihti ouer heuene. *and* eorðe þet he walde  
 us iseon forðan hit wes þa laze þet ilke uuel þe ic dude þe. þu  
 scoldest don me þet wes ȝif þu me wundedest ic sculde wundie  
 þe þer \*on-ȝein. ȝif þu me putttest in þet eȝe: ic þin alswa. dunt  
 a-ȝein dunt. Alswa of neate bute þu were Monslaze oðer þu  
 to-breke wed durge<sup>2</sup>. oðer for-lezen heo weren ȝe tintrazed  
 ah god haueð iset his mildhert-nesse laze on gode. Ne scalt  
 þu ȝelden uel onȝein uel nuða. ah god almihtin þe hat don  
 þin god on-ȝein his uuel. Ne do he þe neure swa muchelne  
 teone ne wite on þisse liue ne beo þu nefre ene wrað þer fore. ah  
 forber for drihtenes lue. Gif þu dest þin uuel on-ȝein his uuel.  
 Swa muchel þa wredða bid þe mare bi-twenen eow *and* eour  
 eyþer sunegað bi-foran drihten *and* ec leter ȝe beoð sahte. þas  
 ruperes *and* þas reueres *and* þas þeues þet nulleð nu nefre swike  
 heore ueeles þu aȝest luuan heore saule for cristes lue *and*  
 heore uuel þe heo doð þu aȝest to hetiene *and* wið-stewen ȝif þu

\* [Fol. 4b.]

All nations  
 are now  
 suffering  
 similar ven-  
 geance for  
 their sins.

The duration  
 of the old  
 law.

The laws  
 before the  
 time of Christ  
 were very  
 severe.

<sup>1</sup> ? stronge.

\* [Fol. 5a.]

<sup>2</sup> ? burge.  
 God hath  
 given us  
 the law of  
 His mercy.  
 We are to  
 return good  
 for evil.

Love the  
 souls of the  
 wicked doers.

and put a stop to if thou might, according to the law of the land. If they will never abstain nor repent, it is right that they should be punished ; for it is better that they be punished in their bodies than withal perish in the devil's hand. If thy nearest friend (neighbour) trespass against thee, be it of one thing, be it of another, as many do, entreat him lovingly that he act right towards thee. If he will not, take two of thy friends and go yet and beseech him, and if he will not then, complain thee to holy Church, that is to the priest and to the congregation. If he will not act rightly for the priest nor for holy Church, hold him then such a one as is without law and like a heathen man. Thy friend thou lovest for the good deeds he doth thee, and he thee also. That is nothing. But thou wouldest indeed be his friend before Christ if, when thou sawest him about to fall foolishly into the devil's hand, thou checked and restrained him as far as thou wert able ; and Christ hath commanded that thou shalt love thy enemy for love of him, and restrain his sins if thou wert able, and pray for him daily that Christ may cause him to turn from his wickedness before the day of his death. What availeth wrath since God Almighty, having come upon this earth, hath commanded each Christian man thus (to love his enemies). And, moreover, if thou offendest or sinnest against the Lord, thou shall repent and receive shrift thereof, as the priest teacheth thee. Do not return evil for evil, as was formerly done. As I previously stated, if any man sinned against Christ under the law of Moses, he was grievously tormented to death, and moreover his sin was (not expiated) nevertheless before God. But Christ, through his great mercy having descended from heaven, humbled himself so that he was born of our Lady Saint Mary ; and he afterwards lived two and thirty winters in this world, and then suffered death for all mankind, entirely for our sins and not for his own. And he gave us moreover afterwards a great gift, through his great humility, and ordained this law : If thou sinnest against thy neighbour unwillingly, make amends for it willingly whatsoever way thou canst, for I know full well that thou mightest offend against thy neighbour (unwillingly). Then will Christ forgive thee who hath commanded thee to act towards each man as thou wouldest that each should act towards thee in accordance with thy will. And moreover he gave us a high gift,

miht al swa hit is nu laze a londe. 3if heo nulluð nefre iswiken  
 ne gan to bote: hit is riht þet me hem spille. forþan betere  
 hit is þet heo beon spilled of heore lcome þenne mid alle fordon  
 to þes deoffles hond. Gif þin nexta freond agult wið þe beo hit  
 of ane þinge beo hit of oðre alswa moni deð: bide hine huweliche  
 þet he þe do riht. Gif he nulle: nim tweien of þine freond *and*  
 ga 3et bi-sec hine. *and* gif he nule þe 3et: men þe to halie  
 chirche. þet is to þan preoste *and* to þan folke. \*Gif he him  
 nule rihtlechen for preoste na for halie chirche: hald hine þenne  
 swilche mon þe beo bute laze *and* heðenne monne 3e ilic. þine  
 frond þu luuest for þam goddede þe he þe deð *and* he þe alswa.  
 þet nis noht. Ah þenne were þu wel his freond toward criste:  
 Gif þu hine ise3e þet he wulle asottie to þes deoffles hond *and* to  
 his werkes. þet þu hine lettest. *and* wið-stewest 3if þu mihtest  
*and* crist hafeð ihaten þet þu scalt luuan þine feond for his luue  
*and* wið-stewen his uueles 3if þu muh3e. *and* bide for him  
 deihwamliche þet crist hine bringe þet he icherre from þan  
 uuelnesse ear his ende dei. Hwet halt þe wredðe seodðan þus  
 god almihtin hauet ihaten uwil[c]ne cristene mon seodðan he  
 com on þis middelerd *and* ec 3if þu agultest. oðer sunegest  
 toward drihten þet þu scalt gan to bote *and* niman scrift þer  
 of al swa þe proest þe techet. Ne do þu þin uuel on-gein uuel  
 swa me dude hwile. Al swa ic er seide. 3if eni mon touward  
 criste isunegede on Moyses laze. he wes ipinet ermiliche to  
 deðe *and* ec nes his sunne nopelesse to drihten. Ah crist þurh  
 his muchele mildheortnesse seodðan he a-steh of heuene riche.  
*and* eadmode hine seolfne þet he wes iboren of ure lefdi Zeinte  
 Marie. *and* he wes seodðan twa *and* þritti wintra on þisse liue.  
*and* seodðan prouwede deð for al moncun al for ure neode  
 nawiht \*for his. *and* ec 3ef us seodðan ane muchele 3ef for his  
 muchele eadmodnesse *and* sette þas laze. Gif þu agultest wið  
 þine efen-nexta unðonkes: bet hit þin þonkes hu se þu miht  
 wið him for-þon ic wat fulwel þet þu miht agultan wið þine euen  
 nexta. Þa wile crist þe haueð ihate þet þu beode eilemon al  
 swa þu waldest þet me dude þe þines þonkes. *and* þa 3et he 3ef  
 us ane he3e 3efe. Gif we sunegieð towaarð him we sculen gan

Better de-  
 stroy the body  
 than the soul.

How to deal  
 with thy  
 guilty neigh-  
 bour.

\* [Fol. 5b.]

Keep thy  
 friend out of  
 the hand of  
 the devil.

Return not  
 evil for evil.

Christ insti-  
 tuted the law  
 of mercy.

\* [Fol. 6a.]

The golden  
 rule of action.

If we sin against him we must repent and leave off our misdeeds ere our lives end, and then we shall not be punished for them, as was formerly the case. But thou shalt repent as thy shriver teacheth thee. Now, good men, Christ gave us many free gifts when he came upon this earth, not on account of our merits, but for his great mercy. Previously we were all doomed to hell through Adam our old father, because he broke God's behests; and wholly for the necessities of us, sinful wretches, Christ descended to this life and suffered death for us, and delivered us out of the abyss of hell, through his precious flesh and blood; and moreover he hath prepared for us the eternal bliss, if we strive to merit it, in the kingdom of heaven. Take heed now, dear men, what great gifts he giveth us, he that aforetime dearly ransomed us; and moreover he established the law of his mercy for us, when he came among us—that if we sinned we should repent, and mortify the wretched body meetly in return, because the body loveth much sloth, and much eating and drinking, and lust and pride, and highmindedness, and unlawful possession of other men's goods, because it pleases him not to labour honestly (for his living) in this life. All that the body loves, that the soul hates, and woe is her therefore! Now shall we therefore abstain from the lust of the body, and labour for the soul's behoof while we may—while Christ may give us respite in this life. Because Christ has given us much greater bliss and liberty in this life to obtain the kingdom of heaven than he did the men of whom I previously spake, (who lived) before he was born, for then many a man abstained from sinning against others, on account of the awful doom and for fear of the Lord; and they knew not so much of him as we know, except they knew, through the holy prophets, that he was holy and mighty, and exalted above heaven and earth and above all things, and that he should come upon this earth for our necessities; and though they then observed his laws and behests faithfully and believed in him truly, we sinful wretches do not so, but daily add sin to sin. We should love and obey him and observe his behests wholly on account of our own necessities, for we have heard through wise teachers how he first created this world wholly for our need, and suffered death for us; and each day we hear it related, and we know it for truth,



to bote *and* forleten ure misdede er ure liues ende ne scal us  
 nan mon pinian þer for al swa me dude hwile. Ah þu scalt hit  
 ibeten al swa þin scrifte þe techet. Nu godemon crist us 3ef  
 moni freo 3eue<sup>1</sup> seodðan he com on pisse midelerd nawiht for ure  
 ernunge bute for his muchele mildheortnesse. er we weren al for-  
 gult in to helle þurh adam ure alde feder for-þon þe he to-brec  
 godes bebode *and* al for ure neode wrecche sunfule he asteh to  
 pisse liue. *and* þrouwede deð for us *and* alesde us of helle grunde  
 mid his derewurðe fesse *and* mid his blode *and* þa 3et he haueð  
 us izarket þa ecche blisse 3if we wulleð hit iernien in heuene  
 riche. Nimað 3eme nu leofemon hwilche 3ife he us 3efeð þet  
 þet ear us bolhte deore. *and* þa 3et he us astalde his mildheort-  
 nesse laze seodðan he com a-mong us þet is 3if we suneged we  
 hit sculen beote *and* pinian þene wrecche licome \*imececheliche<sup>2</sup>  
 þer a-3ein. for-þon þe licome luuað muchele slauðe<sup>3</sup> *and* muchele  
 etinge<sup>4</sup> *and* drunkunge. *and* glanesse.<sup>5</sup> *and* prude. *and* ouer-  
 modinesse *and* oðermannes istreon mid woh3e for-þon þe him  
 ne lust swinken mid rihte on pisse liue. Al þet þe licome luueð  
 þet þa saule heteð *and* wa is hire þer fore. Nu sculle we for-lete  
 þes licome lust for-þon. *and* tilian to þere saule bihofðe þa hwile  
 we mazen þa hwile crist us wule 3efen furst on pisse liue. for-  
 þon crist us haueð izefen muchele mare blisse *and* forlaze on  
 pisse liue to bi3eten heouene riche. þenne he dude þan monne þe  
 ic er cweð er he were iboren. for-þon monimon hit forlet þet he  
 ne misdude wið oðerne for þon eisliche dome. *and* for drihtenes  
 eie *and* þat nusten heo nawiht swa muchel of him swa we witen.  
 bute þet heo wisten 3urh þe halie witege þet he wes hali *and*  
 mihti *and* heh ouer heouene *and* ouer eorða *and* ouer alle þing  
*and* þet he sculde cumen to pisse middeleard for ure neode *and*  
 þah heo beolden wel his laze þa *and* is heste. *and* bi-lefden wel  
 on him. we wrecche sunfulle ne do we noht swa. Ah setteð  
 deihwamliche sunne uppon sunne we hine sculde luuian *and*  
 hersumian *and* halden his heste al for ure a3ene neode. forðon  
 we habbeð ihereden þurh wise witega hu he erest astalde þeos  
 woreld. Al for ure neode. *and* he þrowede deð for us. *and*  
 uwlche dei we ihereð siggen. \**and* we hit witen to soðe. *and*

We shall not  
 be punished  
 for our sins,  
 if we repent  
 of them.

<sup>1</sup> MS. 3ene.

Christ died  
 for sinners.

The body is to  
 be punished.

\* [Fol. 6b.]

<sup>2</sup> ? imeteliche.

<sup>3</sup> MS. slanðe.

<sup>4</sup> MS. ecinge.

<sup>5</sup> ? galnesse.

The body  
 loves what the  
 soul hates.  
 Forsake the  
 body's lusts.

Those under  
 the old law  
 observed  
 God's laws.

We do not,  
 but daily add  
 sin to sin.

\* [Fol. 7a.]

and we see what marvels and joy he did and doth daily. Wherefore we should observe his behests among us. Great is thy earthly lord's awe, and a hundredfold more is Christ's awe; for the earthly lord may do no more than put the wretched body to death, but God Almighty may destroy both thy wretched body and thy soul. Such a lord we ought to dread, that is God Almighty. Now, good men, some of us through this world's treachery and also through the body's lust, as I have before said, are unable in any wise to observe Christ's behests; that is the greater harm to us, for this world ever striveth against us and we against her with great difficulty, so that we sin against the Lord's will more often than we should, but I say unto you for truth, the more tribulation thou hast in this life of thy body, the better thou shouldest obey thy dear Lord and keep his behests. If it befalleth that thou breakest God's behests unwillingly, repent of it willingly—that is, thou shalt go to shrift and punish thy body that causeth thee to do so, and destroy the devil. For first of all thou thinkest the sin with thy thought. The devil may not be aware of the sin nevertheless until thou hast committed it with the body—then cometh the devil therein and perceiveth it, and moreover he writes it in his tablets, and ever he (Satan) dwelleth in the foul sin until the man's day of death, unless he drive him away with true repentance, by sorrow for his sins. The wretched sinner should not delay to repent the while he may—to-day he may, to-morrow it fails him. Dear brethren, distrust not Christ's mercy nor his compassion as do many a man that saith and thinketh, "How may I ever repent; I have done such great and so manifold sins, I can never repent of them in my lifetime." The Book saith thus: "O alas! that he ever will so think in his mind." Be it (the sin) ever so mean or ever so high, ever so great or ever so small, though one of us had done the sins of you all, if he would go to shrift and be sorry for them and renounce them evermore, Christ is willing to shew mercy for his great mildheartedness (compassion), except to the man that so thinketh, as I previously said, and distrusts God's mercy. If he remaineth in that sin and thought he is utterly lost in hell pit, and the men also who will not



we hit iseoð hwilche wunder *and* murhðe he dude. *and* deð deihwamliche. for-þi we scolden halden his heste us bitwenan. Muchel is þines eorðliches louerdes eie. *and* hunfold mare is cristes eie. forðon þe eorðliche lauerd ne mei don na mare bote pinen þe wrecche licome to deaðe. Ah godalmihtin þe mei fordon eiðer 3e þine wrecche licome *and* þine saule. Swicne lauerd we aȝen to dreden. þet is godalmihtin. Nu godemen summe of us for þisse weorlde lewnesse *and* ec for þa licome lustfulnessse. al swa ic ear cweð we ne maȝen alre coste halden crist bibode þet us is þe mare herm. forðon a þis worlð winð onȝein us. *and* we on-ȝein heo mid muchele earueðnesse<sup>1</sup> for-þi we sunegiet on-ȝein drihtenes welle ofter þene we scolde. ah ic eow segge to soðe þes þu hefdest mare deruenesse on þisse liue of þine licome : þes þu scoldest hersumian þe bet þine leofe drihten *and* halden his bibode. Gif hit itit þet þu brekest godes heste unþonkes be<sup>2</sup> hit þin þonkes. þet is þet þu scalt gan to scrifte *and* pinian þine licome þe hit þe makeð don. *and* scenden þene deofel forðon alre erest þu þenchest þa sunne mid þine þonke. Ne mei þe deoffle þa sunne iwiten þa ȝet er þu habbe heo idon mid þe licome þenne kimeð þe deofel þer on *and* wit heo. *and* ec he writ heo in his tables. *and* a he wuneð inne fule sunne to þes monnes ende dei. bute he hine driue a-wei. \*Mid soðe dedbote his sunne bi reowsumnesse. þe wrecche sunfulle ne elde nawiht þet he ne ga to bote þe wile he mei to dei he mei. tomarȝan hit him is awane : Leofe broðre ne ouertrowiȝe cristes milce ne his mildheortnesse al swa monimon seið *and* weneð. Hu mei ic efre ibete ic habbe idon swa muchele *and* swa monifalde ne bete ic hit nefre on mine liue. O. seið þus þe boc. wei þet he eure hit wule iþenche in his þonke. Ne beo heo nefre swa frekel. ne swa heh. ne swa muchel. ne swa eðelic. þah ure an heofle idon eower alre sunne *and* he walde gan to scrifte *and* bi-reusien ha. *and* forleten ha a mare. þet crist almihti nule<sup>3</sup> milcie for his muchele mildheortnesse bute þan ilke monne þe swa þencheð. swa ic er cweð. *and* ouer-treoweð godes milce. Gif he biððed<sup>4</sup> inna þa sunne. *and* in þon þonke. he is al for-loren into helle grunde. *and* þa monne ec þa nulleð ileuen. þet he walð<sup>5</sup> beon iboren of

A hundred-fold more is Christ's awe than any earthly lord's.

The world and the flesh cause us to sin.

The world ever fights against us.  
<sup>1</sup> MS. earneðnesse.

2 ? bet.

Punish the body that causeth thee to sin.

The devil knows not of the sin before it is done in the body.

\* [Fol. 7b.]

Let not the sinner delay to repent.

Christ is able to forgive all sins, great and small.

3 ? wule.

4 ? biððeð.

5 ? walde.

believe that Christ should be born of our Lady Saint Mary and suffer death for us—and also the sinful man who continues ever in evil deeds and thinketh, “Herein I will ever lie (stay) until I be older or I be sick, then will I be sorry and repent, for the Lord is exceedingly merciful, he will forgive me.” Thus the devil will destroy the wretch, and that, we believe assuredly, as quickly as Adam our forefather first doomed us by his trespass to hell. So no man may say how much more God Almighty’s mercy and compassion is towards the sinful man if he will beseech him with good heart and with true penitence, and if he will thoroughly forsake his sins and make confession thereof and repent evermore. Dear brethren and sisters, if we make confession of one or of two sins and yet follow one, God Almighty will not be well pleased. The priest may not shrive thee, unless thou wilt entirely forsake thy sins. How may the physician heal thee whilst the iron sticketh in thy wound? Never. Neither canst thou be shriven sufficiently well to please God Almighty, unless thou forsake all thy sins, both the one and the other. Know well that one sin will mar all the goodness and the alms, and the amends that thou dost for the other. A little poison envenometh much sweetness; and though a castle be well garrisoned with men and with weapons, yet if there be a single hole whereby a man may creep in, is it not all in vain? What betokeneth the castle but man himself? What are the men who are in the castle and defend it but man’s eyes, feet, hands, mouth, nose, and ears? These are the limbs that a man sometimes sinneth with. Thou shouldst keep them as purely as Christ gave them unto thee in the bath of baptism. Natheless sometimes thou sinnest with these limbs more often than thou shouldest. It is no wonder if a man sin occasionally through weakness, but it is much more wonder if he will never cease. As I have before stated, What mean the weapons?—thy alms that thou dost, that is, that thou goest gladly to church, and feedest, and lodgest, and clothest poor men, and every other good that it may be in thy power to do. And moreover when thou art obedient to sin, that betokens the hole (breach) that I previously spoke of. Who creepeth therein? The accursed devil. Because when sin is committed he comes thereafter and dwells ever therein, except thou repent of it. How mightest thou perform thy alms and please the Lord while thou art

ure lefdi *sancte marie* ne þolien deð for us. *and* ec þa sunfulle monne þe dreȝeð a heore uuele werkes. *and* þencheð her on ic wille liggen a þet ic beo ealdre oðer þet ic beo sec. þenne wulle ic birewsien. *and* beten. forðon drihten is mildheorteð inoh he wule hit me forȝenen. þus þe deofel wule bilesnien þe wreche. *and* ec we ileueð to soþe alswa redliche swa adam ure eldre feder us forgulte erest in to helle. \*Swa ne mei nan mon seggen hu muchele mare godalmihtines milce *and* his mildheortnesse is þer aȝein. þon sunfulle monne he hine wile biseche mid gode heorte *and* mid soþe dedbote his sunne ȝif he wile heo þurlut forleten *and* nimin scrift þer-of. *and* beten a mare. Leofe breoðre *and* sustre þah we numen scrift of ane sunne oðre of twa. *and* þe<sup>1</sup> fulie ane nis þet icweme godalmiht. Ne þe preost þe ne mei scrife bute þu wulle heo alforleten. Hu mei þe leche þe lechnien<sup>2</sup> þa hwile þet iren sticat in þine wunde. Nefre. Ne þu ne miȝt beon wel iscrifen god almiht to cweme. bute þu heo alle for-lete eiðer ȝe þa ane ȝe þa oðer. wite þe wel þet þe an sunne wule amerran al þa godnesse. *and* þe almesse. *and* þa dedbote þe þu dest of þam oðer. A lutel ater bitteret muchel swete. And þah an castel beo wel bemoned mid monne *and* mid wepne. *and* þer beo analpi holh þat an mon mei crepan in. Nis hit al unnet. hwet itacnet þe castel þe mon seolf. hwet þa men þe beoð in þe castel *and* hin ȝemeð. þet beoð þes monnes eȝan. *and* his fet. *and* his hondan. *and* his muð. *and* his nesa. *and* his earen. her beoð þa limen þet sunegest uwilene mon. þu scoldest<sup>3</sup> heo bi-witen al swa clenliche swa *crist* ha þe bitahte on þas fulhtes beðe. Noþeles oðerhwile þu sunegest mid summe of þisse \*limen ofter þenne þu scoldest. hit nis nan wunder þah mon sunegie oðer hwile unwaldes. ah hit is muchele muchele<sup>4</sup> mare wunder ȝif he nule nefre swiken. Al swa ic er cweð hwet tacneð þa wepne þine elmisce þe þu dest. þet is þu gast to chirche blupeliche *and* fedest wreche men *and* herebureȝest *and* scrudest elles al þet þu maht don to gode. *and* þa ȝet þu hersumest pere sunne þet is þet holh þet ic er cweð hwa creopeð þer-in: þe awariede deofel. forðon þenne þe sunne bið idon. Seodðan bicumet he. *and* wunet þer-on abute þu hit bete. hu miht þu don þine elmesse *and*

Some delay  
repentance  
till they are  
old and sick.

\* [Fol. 8a.]

No one can  
say how great  
is Christ's  
mercy.

<sup>1</sup> ? we.

Confess all  
thy sins.

<sup>2</sup> MS. lechni-  
nen.

One sin mars  
all the atone-  
ment made  
for the others.

Man sins with  
eyes, hands,  
feet, &c.

<sup>3</sup> ? scoldest.

\* [Fol. 8b.]

<sup>4</sup> sic.

Alms, &c.—  
the weapons  
to be used  
against sin.

a slave to thy sin? And after thou wilt promise God Almighty and thy confessor that thou wilt forsake thy misdeeds, and takest shrift thereof and departest afterward and dost the same sins, then followest thou the habits of the hound that now spews and afterwards eateth its vomit, and becometh much fouler than it erewhile was. Such becomes the man; he at first had one sin and afterwards hath two, if he knowingly does this; he who will frequently repent and frequently sin he displeaseth our Lord. And again, many a man continues in his foul sin, and ever it appears to him that he is guilty of very little wrong when he has unlawful possession of another man's property; and even though he impute to himself any deadly sin, he will not nevertheless repent of it, but thus thinketh, "I am whole and sound and strong and stalworth, I may yet live long and repent in good time of all my sins." Then cometh hereunder the devil treacherously withal and cutteth short his days and casteth him into hell pain, where he shall dwell ever endlessly; and from that hell and that pine (torment) preserve us God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, dwelling and ruling in the world ever without end. Amen.

### III.

#### FIRST SUNDAY IN LENT.

**I**n Lenten time each man goes to confession; there are some to whom there is greater harm in going (than in abstaining), as I will now tell you. He saith with the mouth what is not in his heart. "I will go to shrift for shame, as other men do; if I neglect the priest will ask me on Easter Day who shrove me, before he administer to me the sacrament, and also for the sake of man's esteem." He does not go to shrift as other [good] men do, but acts like the cheat who at last deceiveth himself, and is as a rosy apple—fair without and rotten within. Alas that he will ever dare or think with his foul heart to receive so high and so holy a thing as is Christ's flesh into his sinful body, and thinketh that it will help him. Nay truly not! but when the

iewemen drihten. þa hwile þu þeowest þine sunne *and* eft þu wult bi-haten god almiltin *and* þine scrifte *þet* þu wult forleten þine misdede. *and* nimest scrift þer-of. *and* ferest þe eft *and* dest þa ilke sunne þenne hafest þu þes hundes laze þe nu speoweð *and* ef<sup>1</sup> hit fret. *and* bið muchele. fulre þene he wes earðon. Swa bið þe mon erðon he hefde anfalde sunne *and* seodðan he hauf<sup>2</sup> twafald gif he hit deð in his witscipe. þe þe wule ilome ibeten. *and* ilome breken. he gremeð ure drihten *and* eft moni mon dreget his fule sunne *and* efre him þurzeð<sup>3</sup> al to lutel þat he deð to unrihte *þet* he habbe oðer monnes [istreon] mid wohe. *and* þah he wite mid him seolf eni heafsunne he ha \*nule beten þa zet ah þenchet ic em hal. *and* fere. *and* strong. *and* stelewurðe zet ic mei longe libben *and* alle mine sunne timliche ibeten. þen-ne cumeð her under þe deofel swicanðliche mid alle *and* him scorteð his dazes *and* awerpeð hine in to helle pine þer he scal wnian<sup>4</sup> abuten ende from þan helle *and* from þan pine us bureze þe lauerd þe is feder *and* sune *and* hali gast wuniende *and* rixlende on worlde a buten ende. Amen.

Thou canst not please God and serve sin.

<sup>1</sup> ? eft.

The sinner is like the hound that eateth his vomit.

<sup>2</sup> ? hauet.

<sup>3</sup> ? þingeð.

\* [Fol. 9a.] The sinner delays repentance until he shall become old, but the devil cuts short his days.

<sup>4</sup> ? wunian.

### III.

#### [DOMINICA PRIMA IN QUADRAGESIMA.]

[I]n leinten time uwile mon gað to scrifte ; þer beoð summe þe mare herm is þe gað al swa ic nupe eow tellen wulle. He seið mið<sup>5</sup> þa muðe þet nis naut in his heorte. ic wulle gan to scrifte for seome alswa doð oðer men. zif ic forlete þe preost me walde eskien on ester dei hwa me scriue er he me zefe husul *and* ec for monne weordes ðinge. he ne gad naut to scrifte al swa doð oðer men. Ah al swa he doð<sup>6</sup> swa þe swica þe bi-swikeð hine seolfe on-ende *and* bið al swa is an eppel iheoweð. he bið wið-uten feire *and* frakel wið-innen. Awah þet he efre wulle þristelechen oðer bi-þenchen mid his fule heorte þe heo wulle underfon swa hez þing *and* swa hali swa is cristes licome in his sunfulle buke. *and* weneð þet hit wulle

Lent, the time for confession.

<sup>5</sup> ? mid.

Some men go to confession merely to be like other men.

<sup>6</sup> originally ceð.

He is like an apple, fair without and corrupt within.

Christ's flesh will not avail him.



priest putteth it in his mouth, then cometh the Lord's angel and taketh the holiness with him toward heaven-kingdom. As for what remaineth there in his mouth, if any man were able to perceive it, he might see a burning gleed that consumes him all to coals. Dear men, if thou hast been very guilty towards thy earthly lord, he will forbid thee his presence, and moreover thou durst not come before him on account of thy guilt. How dare the wretched man receive God's flesh and blood in his body? How durst thou, man, there again receive God's flesh and blood in thy body along with vile sin and also with the devil that dwelleth in him? It does him more harm than good, for it draweth him to the bitter death of hell more than to everlasting life. The devil dwelleth in the sinful man until he hath brought him wholly to his will in all things, and the devil indeed so reigneth in him that he will never forsake his sin. The devil thus thinks, "This man I have taken to my own behoof—more men should I so obtain [through him]." By (of) such men saith the Lord in his Gospel thus speaking, *Cum inmundus spiritus exierit ab homine, ambulat per vias inaquosas, querens requiem et non invenit*. The unclean spirit goeth out from the sinful man and goeth from place to place and seeketh rest where he may dwell, but he may not dwell in any good man; for if he be well shriven and God-fearing, the devil may never come into him because of his good works. Then saith he after—*Revertar in domum meam unde exivi*—now I must [dwell] in the same house in which I erewhile was; and then goeth he and taketh him seven devils which are much worse than he. They go as I ere said, and dwell in him ever more, and so perishes his wretched soul in everlasting torment in the pit of hell. Ere that he had but one devil, now he hath seven. Now though he were willing to forsake his evil sins, he is not able, on account of the devils [within him]. But to what men does this that I have mentioned happen? By Christ! it befalls those men that go to shrift more for the world's shame than for to repent of and be sorry for their sins. Wherefore will a man go to confession unless he is willing to forsake and repent of his sins? Of a truth if thou accusest

him helpen : Neisoðliche nawiht ah þenne þe preost hit deð in his muþe. þenne cumeð drihtenes engel and binimeð þa halinesse mid him toward heouene \*riche. þet þer bilefð in his muðe. ah 3if eni mon hit muste isean. he mahte iseon ane berninde glede þet hine al for-bernað þurut to cole. Leofemen 3if þu ert swiðe for-gult wið þine eorðliche lauerd he þe wule for-beode of his e3ane on siht.<sup>1</sup> and ec þu ne derst cumen bi-foren him fore þine gulte. Hu der þe wrecche mon underfon drihtenes fleis and his blod in his licome. hu derst þu mon þer on-3ein underfon drihtenes [fleis] and his blod in þine licome imong þan unwreste sunne and ec imong þan deofle þe wuneð in him. Mare hit him deð to herme þenne to gode for hit hine tið to þan bittre deðe to helle mare þenne to þan eche line. Swa longe þe deofle wunað swa inne þe sunfulle men a þet he hine haueð al ifonded to his wille þurhut. and þe deofel þet to sope þe rixat in-nan him þet he nulle nefre forleten his sunne. He þen-cheð þe deofel. þesne mon ic habbe itaken to mine a3ene bihofpe.<sup>2</sup> Ma monna ic scolde bi3eten swa bi hulche monna seið drihten in his spelle. þa he þus cweþ *Cum inmundus spiritus exierit ab homine ambulat per uia[s] inaquosa[s] querens requiem & non inuenit* þe unclene gast þe geð him of þan sunfulle mon and geð him of þan stude to stude. and secheð reste hwer he mei wunian. \*ah he ne mei in nane gode men. forðon 3if he bið wel iscrifen and godfurht ne þe deofel mey nefre cumen in-ne him for his gode werkes. þenne cweð he eft. *Reuertar in domum meam unde exiui.* Nu ic mot in þet ilke hus þet ic er wes. and þenne ferað he and nimeð him .vii. deofle þe beoð muchele wurse þenne he. heo fereð swa ic er cweð. and wuniað in him a mare and swa dreieð his erme saule in eche pine to helle grunde. Erðon he nefde bute enne deofel. nu he haueð sefene. Nu þah he walde þa ufele sunne for-leten : Ne mei he for þan deoflan. Ah wulche men ilimpeð swa ic habbe er icweðen : witicrist þet beoð þa men þe gað to scrifte mare for worl[d]es scome þenne for heore sunne to beten : and to reusi[e]n. for hwet wule mon et scrifte bute he wulle for leten his misdede. and beten. Soðliche 3if þu wrcest þe scolfen to

The housel shall be taken out of his mouth by God's angel.

\* [Fol. 9b.]

<sup>1</sup> ? a3ene on-siht.

It shall do him more harm than good.

The devil dwells in the sinner,

<sup>2</sup> MS. bi-hospe.

\*[Fol. 10a.] but not in him who is well shriven and Godfearing.

The devil will not let the impenitent forsake his sins.



thyself to thy confessor, the devil may not accuse thee in the other life; for the man who conceals his sins in this life shall never behold the Almighty Lord, nor aught of his bliss. How mightest thou see thy shadow in muddy water? What is shrift but to renounce the devil, and be sorry for, repent, and bewail one's sins, and have in his mind (determine) never more again to commit those sins that he goeth to shrift for; to come to the priest and accuse himself and say there what is in his mind,—“Alas, that I ever did with my wretched body these sins!” For God's love repent of your sins while ye are here in this short life, and think how little time ye shall remain here. With truth thus saith the book, “Robbers, spoilers, thieves, murderers, covetous, adulterers, liars, unjust judges, jugglers, and other sots shall have a reward full quickly.” What say they? We may follow our will while we are young, and when we become older we will repent. Alas wretch! thus saith the book, “Forsooth as easily thou mightest take thine own weapon and smite off thine own head and return again to thine own likeness.” How mightest thou return to thine own likeness if thy head were off? Never! Also, thou mayest never have mercy from the heavenly God if thou art taken (or diest) in this same thought. In a single instant a man may receive a wound in his body that will be a long time in healing; and sometimes it fails to be healed. The little time thou dost it (sin) it appears to thee very good and sweet, and afterwards, by Christ! it is very bitter to repent of, and sometimes it happens thou never repentest of them in this life. What! ween these spoilers and robbers, that take another man's goods wrongfully, that Christ will have mercy upon them, though they have [not] taken and obtained the friendship of the men they have wronged? Nay! Lo! they think thus: “I will obtain goods wrongfully while I am able, and afterwards I will go to shrift, and renounce and fast for it.” He that ever fasteth and ever doth evil hath the practices of the devil. Thus they think that they will take and nought restore, but assuredly he must restore if he hath it; and if he hath it not let him restore as much as he is able and quickly seek forgiveness for the remainder. He will think

pine scrifte: ne mei þe deofel þe wreien son<sup>1</sup> þan oðre liuc. for  
 þe mon þe heleð his sunne aðisse liue ne siht he nefre almihtin  
 drihten. ne nawiht of his blisse. Hu maht þu iseon pine  
 sceadewe in worie watere: Hwet is scrift bute forlete þene  
 deofel. *and* pine sunne. *and* bi-rewsien and beten and wepen.  
*and* habben in his þonke þe he nule nefre mare eft 3e don þeo  
 sunnen: þe he geð to scrifte \*fore *and* cumen to þan preoste  
*and* werian<sup>2</sup> hine seolfe. *and* cweðen in his þonke þar hi<sup>3</sup> bið.  
 Awah: þet ic hit efre dude mid mine wrechede licome þas sunnen.  
 for godes lune beteð ower sunnen þa wile 3e beoð heren on þisse  
 scorte liue. and ipencheð hu lutte hw[i]le 3e beoð here. Mid  
 soðe þus seið þe boc. Rubberes.<sup>4</sup> *and* þa reueres. *and* þa þeoues.  
*and* þa morðslaȝa. *and* ȝitteres. *and* þa eawbrekeres. *and* þa  
 lizeres *and* þa wohdemeres *and* þa iuguleres. *and* þa oðer sottes  
 alle heo habbeð an þone fulnech. hwet seggeð heo. we moten  
 idreȝan ure wil þe hwile þe we beoð ȝunge. *and* eft penne we  
 beoð eldre bete we hit penne weilaweī wrecche. þus cweð þe  
 boc. Soðliche al swa eða þu mihtest neoman pine aȝen wepne  
*and* smiten of þin aȝen heauēð. *and* gan eft to þin aȝene liche.  
 hu mahtest þu gan to pine aȝene liche ȝif þin hefet were offe:  
 Nefre. Alswa naucst þu nefre milce of heofenlic drihten: ȝif þu  
 eart inumen in þon ilke þonke. on enelpi luttele hwile mon mei  
 underfon ane wunde on his licome: þet ne mei beon longe  
 hwile hal. And oðer hwile hit is on wane of his hele. þa lutle  
 hw[i]le þu ha dest ha þe þuncheð fulgod. *and* ful swete. *and* eft  
 wite crist heo is ful biter<sup>5</sup> to betene, *and* oðer hwile hit itit þet  
 þu heo nefre ne ibettest on þisse liue. hwet \*weneð þas ruperes  
 and þas reueres þet nemeð oðres monnes eahte mid wohe. þet  
 crist heom wulle milcien þah heo habbeð inumen *and* heom  
 bi-ȝeten freondscipe et þon monnen: þet heo a-gult habbeð:  
 nei. hwet þencheð heo þus ic wulle bi-ȝeten mid wohe. þa  
 hwile ic mei. *and* seoðan ic wulle gan to scrifte. *and* forleten  
*and* festen þer fore. he haueð þes deofles costes. þet a festeð *and*  
 a deð uuel. þus ha þencheð þet heo wulleð biȝeten: *and* nawiht  
 aȝefen ah soðliche al he hit mot aȝefen ȝif he hit haueð. *and*  
 ȝif he hit naueð aȝefe swa muchel swa he mei *and* forȝeuenesse

<sup>1</sup> ? wreien on.

Shrift is to  
 forsake the  
 devil and to  
 repent of sin.

\* [Fol. 10b.]

<sup>2</sup> ? wreian.<sup>3</sup> ? he.

<sup>4</sup> ? rupperes.  
 Robbers,  
 thieves, mur-  
 derers, and  
 other sots  
 shall have  
 their reward.

To delay re-  
 pentance is  
 like cutting  
 off one's head  
 and expecting  
 to return to  
 one's own  
 form.

<sup>5</sup> MS. bicer.

\* [Fol. 11a.]

Robbers and  
 thieves delay  
 restitution.

it very hard and very shameful that he must repay all, and afterwards seek forgiveness of the man of whom he previously stole or otherwise wrongfully treated. Joyfully will the man go to shrift and tell the priest that he hath bereaved and stolen, and joyfully he will hear (the penance) the priest layeth upon him. But when the priest bids him give back the goods to the man that formerly owned it, no longer will he hear it willingly but he will say with crafty and smooth words, "I have naught thereof; I have spent it all." Thus then saith the priest in reply, "Good man, take thou now of thine own goods and give instead." It may happen that he will reply, "Though I had all that I ever obtained I could not make compensation for the harm I have done." By Christ! he must restore as much as he is able, for many a man would be willing to forgive him half or a third part, when he sees that he is able to produce no more. It may happen that he will say to the priest, "Sir, I know not where are the men whom I have wronged. Some are dead, and others have removed; so that I cannot come across them." Truly thus saith the book, he must seek them, if he knows for truth that they be alive; and he must seek the priest that accursed him, so that he may bless whereas aforetime he cursed him. And if he knows not for certain that they are alive, neither the men nor the priest, let him come to the church (of the district) where he took the goods and follow the advice of the priest whom he findeth there. The priest will bid him that he take that property or its value and distribute it among poor men, or (expend) it on bridges or on church-work, or in some place where it shall be well employed for Christ's love, and for the man that formerly owned it. And moreover let him repent before Christ. He that is wise will do this, and he is unwise if he is loath to do it, because he must again restore aught. Thus the foolish man thinketh, "This priest will have my property wrongfully and will do me no other good, but that I must ever fast; and yet it were well enough might I always fast, provided I parted not with all my other goods." Of the man that thus thinketh thus saith the book—"He will fast and eat, if he is able, as much at one meal as he should at two." Truly Christ owes him no thanks.

weorne<sup>1</sup> bidde et þan ouereake þis him wule þunche swiðe strong and swiðe scondful *þet* he scal al a-geuen *and* seodðan bisechen milce et þan ilke monne þe he haueð er istolen oðer oðer-weis wa idon. Bluðeliche þe mon wile gan to scrifte *and* segge þe preoste *þet* he haueð ireaueð *and* istolen. *and* bluðeliche he wule herkien. *þet* þe preost him leið on: ah þenne þe preost hine hat azefen þa ehte þon monne *þet* hit er ahte. *þet* he nulle iheren his þonkes. ah he wile seggen. *and* foxliche smeþien mid worde. Nabbe ic nawiht þer-of ic hit habbe al ispened þus seið þenne þe preost þer onzein. God mon nim þu nuðe of þin azen ehte *and* do þer onzein. hit mei ilimpen *þet* he wile seggen þah ic hefde al *þet*\*ic efre biȝet ne mahtic ȝelden swa muchel swa ic habbe idon to herme. witecrist he mot azeuen al swa muchel swa he mei. forðon moni mon hit walde him forȝeuen half oðer þridde lot þenne he iseȝe *þet* he ne mahte na mare ȝe-forðian. Hit mei ilimpen *þet* he wile seggen þam preoste. Lauerð nat ic hwer heo beoð þeo men þe ic þene herm to dude. Summe beoð deade and summe on oðre stude. ne ic cume to heom nawiht. Soðliche þus cweþeð þe boc he mot ham isecham.<sup>2</sup> ȝif he wat to soðe *þet* heo beoð liues. *and* þene preost he mot isechen þe hine acursede. *þet* he hine iblecie onzein *þet* he hine acursede. *and* ȝif he nat to soðe *þet* heo beoð liues þa men ne þe preost: cume þenne to þer ilke chirche þer er nom þa ehte. *and* do efter þes preostes rede þe he þer uindeð. þe preost him wile haten *þet* he nime þa ilke ehte oðer his wurð. *and* dele hit wrecche monne oðer to brugge oðer to chirche weorke oðer on sume stude þer hit beoð wel bitozen for cristes luue. *and* for þene mon *þet* hit er ahte. *and* þazet nime bote to criste. þe ilke *þet* is iseli: þis he wule don. *and* he his uniseli ȝif him is lað to donne þis forðon þe he scal azein ȝeuen awiht. þus þe uniselie þencheð þes \*preost wile habben min ehte mid wohe. *and* ne don me nan oðer bote buten a ic scal festen. *and* þa ȝet hit were wel god moste ic alunges festen swa *þet* ic mine oðre goð<sup>3</sup> al ne fors-spende. Bi þam men þe þus þencheð. þus seið þe boc. he wule festen. *and* eaten. ȝif he mei et ane mele swa muchel swa et twam. Soðliche ne con crist him nenue

<sup>1</sup> ? ȝeorne.

They are willing to go to confession and listen to the priest,

but are unwilling to restore what they have stolen.

\* [Fol. 11b.]

They make all sorts of excuses.

<sup>2</sup> ? isechan.

They must make restitution to those to whom it is due.

The thoughts of the foolish thief.

\* [Fol. 12a.]

<sup>3</sup> ? god.

What the book says of such men.

Think ye not hereto, If thou dost me wrong and we two be servants of one master, and I complain of it to my master, first of all thou shalt act rightly towards me, and afterwards towards the master? By Christ! much stronger is the doom of God Almighty. If thou wilt have forgiveness of thy misdeeds from the Lord, first of all thou must have my friendship, if thou trespasses against me, and afterwards thou must obtain mercy from thy lord. If thou breakest the behests of an earthly man, he will be wroth with thee: a hundredfold more then shouldst thou observe Christ's behests, for he is king of all kings. The man who lay twelve months in a prison, would he not give all that he ever might acquire provided he might be quit of these twelve? and though thou mayest have lain sometime in a prison, yet thou hadst clothing to wear, and something to eat and to drink. But, in truth, in Christ's prison—that is, hell—there is none of these various things; but ever there is whining, grief, and gnashing of teeth, hunger, and thirst, and cold, and biting of fiends (devils) and tearing of adders. Woe is him who shall dwell there that ever he was born into this life. For God's love go and get shrift of all your sins, for although ye may repent of some sins, but will not forsake whoredoms, and gluttony, and drunkenness, your shrift availeth nought; and these are the two sins that men most commonly follow, and ween that it is no sin. Except he have shrift he is lost in hell, if he be taken in that sin. Truly thus saith the book, "What saith the foolish, To misfortune was I born 'if I may not have indulgence in this world." But, so help me God, that man who will follow all his sinful lusts, *Non intrabit in regnum celorum*—that is, he shall never come into heaven-kingdom. And again, another teacher saith, *Nemo potest gaudere cum seculo & in eternum regnare cum Christo*—that is to understand, No man may have all his will and rejoice himself with this world, and also dwell for ever with Christ in heaven. Though thou hadst lived from Adam's time until this day, and thou possessedst all worldly power, and hadst the greatest of all riches, when thou shalt depart this life it would appear to thee no more than as if thou hadst but once uncovered (it) with thine eyes. Wherefore this



þonc. Ne þenche 3e herto. Gif þu me dest woh *and* wit beon  
 anes lauerdes men; ic hit mene to mine lauerde alre erest þu  
 me scalt don riht. *and* seodðan þe lauerde. witicrist muchele  
 strengere dom is of godalmihtine. Gif þu wilt habben for-  
 zefenisse of þire misdede to drihten alre erest þu most habben  
 mine freonseipe<sup>1</sup> 3if þu wið me agultes. *and* seodðan þu most  
 biẓeten milce et pine drihtene. Tobreoke anes eorðliches monnes  
 heste; he wile wreðe wið þe. hunfald mare þu scoldest halden  
 cristes biheste for þon he is alra kinge king þe mon þe leie .xii.  
 moneð in ane prisune nalde he ẓefen al þet he efre mahte  
 biẓeten wið þet he moste .xii. beo ðer ut of. *and* þah þu leie in  
 ane prisune oðer hwile þu hefdest clað to werien. *and* to etene  
*and* to drinken. 3e soðliche on cristes prisune nis nan of þis  
 sere; þet is in helle. ah a þer is wauing \**and* graming. *and*  
 toþen grisbating. hunger *and* þurst. *and* chele. *and* feonda  
 bitinga. *and* neddre slittinga. wa is him þet he efre wes iboren  
 on þis liue þe þer scal wunian. For godes luue gað to scrifte of  
 alla eower sunne. for þah 3e gan of sunne ower sunne to bote.  
*and* 3e nulleð forleten hordomes. *and* ẓifernesse *and* druncnesse.  
 ne halt nawiht þat scrift. *and* þis beot þa twa sunne þe men  
 fulieð alra swiðest. *and* weneð þet hit ne beo na sunne bute  
 he habbe scrift. he is forloren in to helle. Gif eani mon bið  
 inumen in þere sunne. Soðliche þus seið þe boc. hwet seið þe  
 dusie to ufele hele wes ic iboren 3if ic ne mot habben on þisse  
 weorlde 3euenesse. ah swa me helpe drihten. þe ilke mon þe  
 wule fulien alle his sunne lustes. *Non intrabit in regnum celo-*  
*rum.* þet is ne kimeð he nefre inne heoueneriche. *and* eft þe  
 oðer witege seið. *Nemo potest gaudere cum seculo. & in eternum*  
*regnare cum Christo.* þet is to understondene. Ne mei nan  
 mon habben al his wil. *and* blissien him mid þisse wordle *and*  
 ec wunian a wið crist on heofene. þah þu linedest of adames  
 frumðe þet come þes dei *and* þu ahtest al weorlde iwald. *and*  
 alre welene mest. þenne þu scalt of þisse liue nalde hit þe  
 þinchen na mare bute al swa þu ene unprizedest<sup>2</sup> mid pine eẓen  
 \*forðon nis nawiht þeos weorlde al heo aẓeð on ane alpi þraze  
 perihtes he ne bið wei hwi beo we uule on þisse wrecche

God's justice  
greater than  
man's.

<sup>1</sup> ? freond-  
scipe.

A hundred-  
fold more  
should we  
observe  
Christ's  
behests than  
man's.

Hell is  
Christ's  
prison.

\* [Fol. 12b.]

Forsake  
whoredom  
and gluttony.

He that  
follows his  
lust shall not  
come into the  
kingdom of  
heaven.

We cannot  
enjoy the  
world here,  
and live with  
Christ  
hereafter.

<sup>2</sup> ? unwrið-  
edest.

\* [Fol. 13a.]

world is nought. It passeth all away in a single instant, (and) forthwith he ceases to exist (he is not). Alas ! why are we evil in this wretched world ? Assuredly she will deceive us when we least expect. Alas ! that any man should wrong another, for covetousness of this world's goods. Truly it will all pass away, and the wretched soul shall bitterly suffer for it.

Go to thy father's tomb, or where any of thy kin are lying, and ask him what he hath gained by his unrighteous dooms, and by his robbery, and by his bodily lusts, and by his other sins while he was here in this life. Truly he would say, could he speak, "Woe is me that I ever did so much sin and repented not of it ! for I endure so great torment that I would rather have, for a single second, some cessation and ease than all the world if were it mine. And, moreover, were it possible to assume my bodily form and be in the world ever more, I would gladly suffer and sit in frost and in the snow up to my chin, and yet it would appear to me the softest bath and the most winsome that I ever enjoyed, might I be out of this wretched life." And, moreover, thou mightest understand when thou standest at his tomb that he was proud and haughty as thou art, and thou shalt perish also, as he is now, all to nought ; and thou knowest never when. While alive he was beloved, but hateful is he now, and his wretched soul is forlorn (damned). Wherefore, dear men, understand yourselves while ye may that this world is worthless ; ye see it yourselves. Be he ever so rich, depart he must when his day cometh. Wherefore go joyfully and repent of your sins while ye are able. Unhappy is the man that becometh old and his days leave him, and the day of his death approacheth, and he will not bethink that his sins increase, which cause the death of the soul : because she (the soul) may not endure all the sins that man putteth upon her, therefore she will go out of the body. Truly thus saith the book, That many thousand men might live many more years than they do, if they were righteous and God-fearing. Dear men, when ye go to shrift for no shame neglect to tell the priest all your sins, be they ever so unimportant ; for there is no sin of which he is ignorant : either he knows it, having committed it himself, or he hath heard of it, or hath found it in books. There is no sin that is not written in books ; wherefore it is better for you to shame yourself before the



world. Soðliche heo us truket þenne we lest weneð. wei þet  
eni mon seal wið oðerne misdōn for þisse worldes ȝifsunge<sup>1</sup>.  
Soðliche al heo a-gað. *and* þa wrecche saule hit seal abuggen.  
Ga to þine feder burinesse oðer þer eni of þine cunne lið in. *and*  
esca hine hwet he habbe biȝeten mid his wohe domas. *and* mid  
his reuunge. mid his licome lustes. mid his oðre sunne. hwile  
he wes her on þisse liue. Soðliche he walde seggen ȝif he mihte  
speken. wa is me þet ic efre dude swa muchele sunne. *and* heo  
ne ȝe bette. for swilche pine ic habbe þet me were leofere þenne  
al world þah hit were min most ic habben an alpi þraȝe summe  
lissee *and* summe leðe. *and* ec mostie underfon minne licome *and*  
beon on worlde a mare ic walde fein pinian *and* sitten on forste  
*and* on snawe up et mine ehinne. *and* þa ȝet hit walð<sup>2</sup> me þunchen  
þet softeste beð. *and* þet wunsemeste þet ic efre ibad moste ic  
beon of þisse earme liue. *and* þaȝet þu maht understonden þenne  
þu stondest et his burienesse þet he wes prud *and* wlonc. swa  
þu ert nu. *and* þu forwurðest. eca swa he is nu al to nolhte; *and*  
þu nast neure hwenne; Leof wes he on liue *and* lað is \*he  
nuðe. *and* þa wrecche saule forloren; for-þi leofemen under-  
stondet. eouseluen þa hwile ȝe mahten. Nis þas weorlð nawiht  
ȝe hit iseoð eow seluen. Ne beo he nefre swa riche forð he  
scal þenne is dei cumeð. for-þi gað bluðeliche to bote of eower  
sunne þa hwile ȝe mazen. Vfel is þet mon aldeð *and* his dazes.  
him at-gað *and* nehlecheð his ende dei *and* nule him biþenchen  
þet his sunnen waxað. þat is þere saule deð; forðon heo ne  
mei abeoren alla þa sunne þe þe mon uppon hire deð. þenne heo  
wulle ut of þon licome. Soðliche þus seið þa boc þet moni  
þusent monne mahte libben fele ȝere mare þenne he do; ȝif he  
were riht-wis *and* god-furlit leoue men þenne ȝe gad to scrifte  
ne forlete ȝe for nane scame þet ȝe ne seggen þam preoste alle  
eower sunne ne beo heo nefre swa ethelic. for nis nan sunne þet  
he ne con oðer he heo wat ðurh. þet he heo dude him seolf oðer  
he heo hafð i-escad oðer hafð ifunden on boke. Nis nan sunne  
þet nis iwriten on boke. for-þi betere eow is þet eow sceamie bi-  
foren þam preoste ane; þenne on domes-dei bi foren criste. *and*  
bi-foren al heuene wara. *and* bi-foren al eorðe wara. *and* bi-

The world is  
treacherous.  
1 ? ȝifsunge.

Go to thy  
father's tomb  
and ask him  
what he  
gained by his  
lusts.

He would  
give all the  
world for a  
little allevia-  
tion of his  
torments.

2 ? walde.

Take heed  
lest thou  
\* [Fol. 13b.]  
perish like  
him.

Evil is the  
man that  
loads his soul  
with sins, so  
that it is  
obliged to  
leave the  
body.

Make confes-  
sion to thy  
priest.

He knows all  
sins.

It is better  
to be ashamed  
before him,  
than before  
Christ at  
doomsday.

priest alone, than on Doomsday before Christ, and before all heaven's host, and before all earth's host, and before all hell's host, and thy soul nevertheless to go into everlasting torment. Dear men, the priest is not able to forgive any man's sins, not even his own, but he is ordained between God Almighty and thee to instruct thee how thou shalt have forgiveness of thy sins from God; and he hath that same power from St. Peter to bind and to unbind, and from our bishop, who is in St. Peter's office; and since he is unable to be in every place, therefore are there priests under him. If thou sinnest he shall advise on God's half how thou shalt have Christ's friendship. Assuredly thou need ask no more (than this). No man may say how easily thou mayest obtain God's mercy. If thou sinnest renounce it for ever, and repent it with true confession, as I erewhile said. If thou repent and yet hide some of thy sins, that is not to thy profit. Christ takes no heed of such leasings, he stands in no need of it; either thou must obey Christ or the devil. Good men, every man must be twice washed of his sins: once at the baptismal bath, for ere the child is baptized it is the devil's; the second time thou shalt be washed at true confession, when thou renoucest thy sins. Assuredly if thou wilt entreat the Lord thou must be free from thy sins, for thus saith the book, *Peccatores Deus non audit*. The prayer of a sinful man God Almighty will not hear, except he forsake his sins and repent. Dear men, though ye sin and repent, trust not wholly to your fasts, if ye are able to do other good deeds. There is no man but what can do something more than fast. If he cannot give alms of clothes or of meat, as a rich man can, let him do some of these things which I will now enumerate. First of all thou shalt go to shrift and entirely renounce thy misdeeds, and fast so that thy body be the leaner; that is, fast for thy Lord's love. The man who thus fasts Christ shall give him such meat that he will never again hunger. The second is to give as much alms as you can afford,—masses for all Christian souls, to poor men shoes, clothes, meat, drink, warmth, and lodging; to visit the sick, to help to bury the dead, and to assist them (the poor) with whatever thou art able. For the book saith, *Sicut aqua exinguit ignem, ita et elemosina exinguit*

foren al belle wara. *and* þa hweþere þine saule feren scal in to  
 eeche pine. Leofe men ne mei þe preost forȝefen \*nane men  
 his sunne ne his aȝene ah he is iset bi-twihan god almihtin.  
*and* þe for þe wissine hu þu scalt et god seolf habben þine  
 sunne forȝeueene. *and* he hauefð<sup>1</sup> þa ilke mahte of *Sancte*  
 petre to bindene. *and* to unbindene. *and* of ure biscope þe  
 is on *sancte* petres stude forðon he ne mei beon on ewilche  
 stude for-þi beoð þa preostes under heom. Gif þu sunegest:  
 he þe scal reden on godes halfe hu þu scalt habben *cristes* freond-  
 scipe: Soðliche ne perft þu bidden namare. Ne mei nan mon  
 seggen hu lihtliche þu maht habben godes milce. gif þu sunegest:  
 forlet hit a mare. *and* þet mid rihte scrifte. *and* bete a. als wa ic  
 er cweð. þah þu ga to bote *and* for-heole summe þine sunna.  
 nis þet nawiht to þine bi-heofðe. Ne reccheð *crist* nane  
 leasunge. ne him nis na neoð<sup>2</sup>. oðer þu most hersumian *crist*.  
 oðer þam deofle. Godmen uwile mon scal beon twiȝen awesscen  
 of his sunne enes et þam fulltbeda<sup>3</sup>. for er þonne þet child beo  
 ifulȝeð hit is þes deofles. oðer siðe þu scalt beon iwesscen et  
 soð scrifte: þenne þu forlestest þine sunne. Soðliche ȝif þu wult  
 habben bone to drihten: þu most beon on ward þine sunnen for  
 þus cweð þa boc. *peccatores deus non audit*. Sunfulles monnes  
 bone nulle \*god almihtin iheren bute he wulle forleten þa sunne  
*and* gan to bote leofemen þah ȝe sunegien *and* gan to bote ne  
 lipnie ȝe no al to eower festene ȝif ȝe mazen eni oðer god don.  
 Nis nan mon þet ne mei mare don þene festen. Gif he ne mei  
 don elmesse of claðe ne of mete al swa mei an rieche mon: do  
 summe of þisse þinge þe ic wulle nu cweþen. Alra erest þu  
 scalt gan to scrifte *and* forleten þurhut pine misdede *and* festen  
 swa þet þin licome beo þe leure þet is fest for ðines drihtenes  
 luue. þe mon þe þus fest *crist* him ȝeneð swilene mete þet him  
 nefre eft ne hungreð. þet oðer is do þine elmesse of þon þet þu  
 maht iforðien. Messen for alle *cristine* saule. Wrecche men  
 sceos *and* claðes. *and* mete. *and* dringen. *and* wermþe. *and*  
 herburȝe. *and* to seke gan. *and* þa deden helpen to buriene *and*  
 helpen heom mid þon þe þu maze. for þa þoc seið. *Sicut aqua*  
*extinguit ignem: ita & elemosina extinguit peccatum*. Al swa

\* [Fol. 14a.]  
 The priest  
 cannot for-  
 give sins.

<sup>1</sup> sic.

He can advise  
 thee how thou  
 mayest have  
 Christ's  
 friendship.

Hide not thy  
 sins from the  
 priest.

<sup>2</sup> ? need.

Twice shall  
 we be washed  
 from our sins.

<sup>3</sup> ? fulltbeða.

\* [Fol. 14b.]  
 God will not  
 listen to the  
 impenitent  
 sinner.

Do something  
 more than  
 fast for your  
 sins;

give alms,  
 feed the  
 hungry, clothe  
 the naked,

visit the sick,  
 and help to  
 bury the  
 dead.

*peccatum*. As water quenches fire so alms quencheth sin. The third is that thou shalt bewail thy sins secretly (behind men), and pour out thy tears very sorrowfully, for the Lord speaketh thus in the Gospel, *Beati qui nunc fletis quoniam ridebitis*; that is, blessed are those who now weep for their sins, for they shall be comforted before the Lord. The fourth is that thou shalt keep vigils for thy Lord's love, for the book saith, *Non sit vobis vanum surgere ante lucem, quia promissit dominus coronam vigilantibus*. Be not loth to arise before day(light), for the Lord promiseth the watchful a crown that shall be seven times brighter than the sun. The fifth is that thou shalt forgive those men that trespass against thee; and as thou forgivest the men that sin against thee, so shall thy Lord forgive thee thy misdeeds; and so thou prayest him daily when thou sayest, *Dimitte nobis debita nostra sicut et nos dimittimus debitoribus nostris*. Lord Father, forgive us all our sins as we forgive those that trespass against us. Here is a sorrowful prayer to offer unless we truly have mercy upon and forgive those men who have angered and injured us. The sixth is that thou shalt reconcile thyself with all those who are at enmity with thee, as far as thou art able; for then thou protectest their souls, and also thine own, from the evil death, that is, from hell torment. The seventh is charity. She perfecteth and completeth all other things. By Christ! the man that loveth not charity shall never come into God's kingdom. Now may ye hear what is true charity, that each man ought to possess—that is, that thou love thy Lord above thy wife and child, and above all earthly things, and thank him for all things; and afterwards do unto each man as thou wouldest that one should do to thee: that is true charity. Truly thus saith the book, that this shall bear your soul to heaven-kingdom.

Now, dear men, ye have heard what I have said, and what ye shall do if ye can afford it. There is no man so rich, nor none so poor, but what he may give something of those things which I have said unto you. He who gives alms of his unlawful gains will get no more thanks of Christ than he that should slay thy child and should bring thee his head for a present. Wherefore, good men, forsake your sins and go to true shrift, and leave your stealing and rapine, for there is no profit in these things; and again saith the book, No good

þet water acwencheð þet fur. swa þa elmesse acwencheð þa sunne  
 þat þridde is þet þu scalt bi-wepen þine sunne bi-often monnen  
*and* ȝeoten þine teres swiðe sariliche for þon drihten cweð on  
 þan god-spelle. *Beati qui nunc fletis quoniam ridebitis.* þet is  
 eadl beoð þa ilke þe nu wepeð for heore sunne \*for heo secolen  
 beon igledeð<sup>1</sup> bi-foren drihten þat forðe is þet þu scalt wakien  
 for þines drihtenes luue. forðon þe boc cweð. *Non sit uobis*  
*uanum surgere ante lucem. quia promisit dominus coronam*  
*uigilantibus.* Ne beo eow noht lað to arisene er dei. for  
 drihten bi-hat þon wakiende ane crune þet seal beon seofesiðe  
 brihtre þene þa sunne fife is þet þu scalt forȝeuen þon monne þe  
 wið þe agultet. *and* swa se þu forȝeuest þam monne þe wið þe  
 agulteð: swa þin drihten forȝeueð þe þine misdede. *and* swa þu  
 hine biddest deihwamliche þenne þu seist. *Dimitte nobis debita*  
*nostra sicut & nos dimittimus debitoribus nostris.* Lauweð<sup>2</sup> feder  
 forȝef us alle ure gultes swa we forȝeueð þan monne þe us to  
 agulteð. her is ane reowlie bone to biddene bute we inwarliche  
 imilcien *and* forȝeuen þan monne þe us wreðeð *and* secandet.  
 þet seste is þat þu scalt sahtnien. þa þe beoð unisahte mid alle  
 þine mahte. þenne bureȝest þu here saule. *and* ec þine aȝene  
 from þan ufele deaðe þet is from helle pine. þet seofeðe is  
 eherite. heo fulled alle þa oðre þing *and* endeð. witicrist þe mon  
 þe ne lueð cherite ne cumeð he nefre in godes riche. Nu ȝe  
 maȝen iheren hwet is riht cherite. þet uwile mon ah to habben  
 þet is \*þet þu luue þine drihten ofer þin wif. *and* ofer child *and*  
 ofer alle eorðliche þing *and* him þonkien alles þinges. *and*  
 seoððan beoden uwile mon swa þu waldest þet me þe bude. þis  
 is riht cherite. Soðliche þus eweð þe boc. þet þis scal beren  
 eower saule to heuene riche. Nu leofe men habbe ȝe iherd  
 hwet ic habbe iscaid hwet ȝe seulen don ȝif ȝe hit maȝen iforðian.  
 Nis nan mon swa riche. ne swa wrecche þet he ne mei sum þing  
 iforðian of þan þe ic heou habbe iseid. þe deð his elmesse of  
 þinge mid wohe biȝeten: ne con him crist na mare þong<sup>3</sup> þene  
 þah he sloȝe þin child *and* bere þe his heaued to lake. for-þi  
 godemen forleteð eower sunne *and* gad to rihte serifte *and* leteð  
 eower stale *and* eower reaflac. for nis þer nan<sup>4</sup> feng on. *and*

Alms quench  
sin.

\* [Fol. 15a.]

<sup>1</sup> ? igledeð.  
Watch and  
pray.

Forgive those  
that trespass  
against thee,

<sup>2</sup> ? Lanerd.  
so that God  
may forgive  
thee,  
as thou  
prayest in the  
Pater noster.

Be reconciled  
to all men.

On trae  
charity.

\* [Fol. 15b.]

It beareth the  
soul to  
heaven.

Give not  
alms of wealth  
wrongly  
acquired.

<sup>3</sup> ? þong.

<sup>4</sup> ? an  
omission  
here.



that ye may do shall go unrewarded, nor even shall ye do any evil without bitterly expiating it. Wherefore, dear brethren, hold brotherly love among you, and strive ye now in this short life that ye may come to the kingdom above, there to dwell with the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, ever without end. Amen!

#### IV.

#### ON THE LORD'S DAY.

Dear men, if ye will listen and willingly understand we will speak to you plainly of the privileges that pertain to the day that is called Sunday. Sunday is called the Lord's Day, and also the day of bliss and of ease and rest for all. On this day the angels of heaven rejoice because the lost souls have rest from their torments. If you are willing to learn who first obtained rest for the wretched souls, I will truly tell you. It was St. Paul the apostle and Michael the archangel. These two went once on a time into hell, as the Lord bade them, to see how the folk fared there. Michael went before and Paul came after, and then Michael showed St. Paul the wretched sinful that were dwelling there. Afterwards he showed him high trees burning horribly before hell gates, and showed him the wretched souls hanging upon those trees—some by the feet, others by the hands; some by the tongue, others by the eyes; some by the head, and others by the heart. Afterwards he showed him a burning fiery oven that threw out seven flames, each of marvellous hues, which were all horrible to behold, and much harder than any one dare endure; and there within were very many souls anhangd. Moreover he showed him a well of fire, and its streams ran burning fire; and twelve master devils like unto kings guarded this well and tormented therein the wretched and forlorn souls, and yet their own torment was in

eft þe boc seið. Ne scule 3e neure god don unforgolden. Ne ec ne scule 3e nefre ufel don þet 3e hit ne sculen mid uuele bitter abuggen. Forði leofe breoðre haldeð broþerreddene eow bi-twenen. *and* earnie 3e eow nu on þisse sceorte liue þet we<sup>1</sup> bicumen moten to þere upplican riche *and* þere wunian mid þe feder *and* mid þe sune *and* mid þe halie gast abuten ende. Amen.

No good or bad deed will go un-required.

<sup>1</sup> 3e.

## IV.

## IN DIEBUS DOMINICIS.

[L]eofemen 3ef 3e lusten wuleð. *and* 3e willeliche hit understonden, we eow wulleð \*suteliche seggen of þa fredome þe limpeð to þan deie þe is iclepeð su<sup>2</sup> sunedei. Sunedei is ihaten þes lauerdes dei *and* ec þe dei of blisse *and* of lisse *and* of alle-irest. On þon deie þa engles of heofene ham iblissieð. forði þe þa erming saulen habbeð rest of heore pine. Gif hwa wule witen hwa erest bi-won reste þam wrecche saule to soþe ic eow segge. þet wes *sancte* paul þe apostel *and* mihhal þe archangel heo tweien eoden et sume time in to helle als wa heom drihten het for to lokien hu hit þer ferde. Mihhal eode bi-foren *and* paul com efter *and* þa scawede mihhal to *sancte* paul þa wrecche sun-fulle þe þer were wuniende, þer-efter he him sceawede he 3e treon eisliche beorninde et-foren helle 3ete. *and* uppon þan treon he him sceawede þe wrecche saulen a-honge. Summe bi þa fet. summe bi þa honden. summe bi þe tunge. summe bi þe e3en. summe bi þe hefede. summe bi þer heorte. Seodðan he him sceauðe an ouen on berninde fure, he warp ut of him seofe leies uwilan<sup>3</sup> of seolcuðre heowe þe alle weren eateliche to bihaldene *and* muclele strengre þen eani þurg to þolien. *and* þer wið-innen weren swiðe feole saule a-honge. 3ette he him sceawede ane welle of fure *and* alle hire stremes<sup>4</sup> urnen fur berninde. *and* þa welle bi-wisten .xii. meister \*deoflen swile ha weren kinges to pinen þer wið-innen þa earming saulen þe for-gult weren; *and* heore

The privileges of the Sunday.

\* [Fol. 16a.]

<sup>2</sup> sic.

Sunday is the Lord's day.

The souls of the lost have rest on this day.

Paul and Michael obtained it for them.

They both once visited hell.

They saw wretched souls hanging on trees;

a fiery oven with seven flames;

<sup>3</sup> ? uwilcan.

a well of fire with streams of fire;

<sup>4</sup> MS. stremies.

\* [Fol. 16b.]



nowise diminished, though they were masters (chiefs). After that he showed him the Sea of Hell; and in that sea were seven bitter waves. The first was snow, the second ice, the third fire, the fourth blood, the fifth adders, the sixth smother (smoke), the seventh foul stink, she was worse to endure than ever any of all the other torments. In that sea were innumerable animals, some feather-footed, others entirely without feet, and their eyes were all like fire, and their breath shone as doth the lightning among thunder. These never cease, night nor day, to break the wretched bodies of those men who in this life here would not complete their shrift. Some of the men sorely weep, others cry aloud. Some there groaningly sigh, others there piteously gnaw their own tongues. Some there weep, and all their tears are burning gleeds (embers) gliding over their own features, and very mournfully at all times they cry and earnestly entreat that some one would release them from the cruel tortures. Of these torments speaketh David, the holy prophet, and thus saith, *Miserere nostri Domine quia poenas inferni sustinere non possumus*. Lord have mercy upon us, for we are not able to endure the torments of hell. Afterwards he showed him a place in the midst of hell, before which were seven enclosures, near which no living man dare go, on account of the noxious vapour, and there within he showed him an old man going about, led by four devils. Then Paul asked Michael who the old man might be. Then said Michael (the) Archangel, "He was a bishop in the other life that never would keep nor observe Christ's laws. More often would he treat wrongfully with his subjects and oppress (them) for a long time than sing psalms or do any other good deed." Hereafter saw Paul where three devils led a maiden very remorselessly. Eagerly did Paul ask Michael wherefore she was so led about. Then said Michael, "She was a maiden in the other life that kept her body in all purity, but would never do any other good thing. Willing alms gave she never, but very proud she was and moody, and a liar and deceitful, and wrathful and envious, and therefore is she now dwelling in this torment." Now began Paul to weep sorely, and the archangel Michael wept also with him. Then came our Lord from heaven to them in the form of thunder and

azene pine neure nere þe lesse þah heo meistres weren. Efter þon he him sceawede þe sea of helle *and* innan þan sea weren .vii. bittere uþe. þe forme wes swuan<sup>1</sup>. þat oðer is. þet þridde fur. þet feorðe blod. þe fifte neddren. þe siste smorðer. þe seofefe ful stunch. heo wes wurse to þolien þenne efreni of alle þa oðre pine. Innan þan ilke sea weren un-aneomned deor summe feðer fotetd. Summe al bute fet. *and* heore eȝen weren al swile swa fur. *and* heore eþem scean swa deð þe leit a-monge þunre. þas ilke nefre ne swiken ne dei ne niht to brekene þa erming licome of þa ilca men þe on þisse line her hare scrift enden nalden. Summe of þan monne sare wepeð. Summe swa deor lude remeð. summe þer graninde sikeð. summe þer reowliche gneȝeð his azene tunge. Summe þer wepeð. *and* alle heore teres beoð berninde gleden glidende ouer heore azene nebbe. *and* swiðe reowliche ilome ȝeȝeð *and* ȝeorne bisecheð þat me ham ibureȝe from þam uuele pinan, of þas pinan speked *dauid* þe halie witeȝe. *and* þus seið. *Miserere nostri domine quia penas inferni sustinere non possumus.* Lauerd haue merci of us forðon þa pinen of helle we ham ne mazen iðolien. \*Seoð-þan he him sceawede *and*<sup>2</sup> stude inne midde-warðe<sup>3</sup> helle. *and* bi-foren þam ilke stude weren seofen clusterlokan þar neh ne mihte nan liuiende mon gan for þan ufele breðe *and* þer wið-inna he him sceawede gan on ald mon þet .iiii. deoffen ledden abuten. þa escade paul to mihhal hwet þe alde mon were. þa cweð mihhal heh angel he wes an biscop on eoðre liue þe nefre nalde cristes laȝen lokien ne halden. after he walde anuppon his underlinges mid wohe motien *and* longe dringan þenne he walde salmes singen oðer eani oðer god don. Herefter iseh paul hwer .iii. deoffen ledden an meiden swiðe unbisorȝeliche: ȝeorne escade to mihhal hwi me heo swa ledde. þa cweð mihhal. heo wes an meiden on oðer liue þet wel wiste hire licome in alle elenesse. ah heo nalde nefre nan oðer god don. Elmesȝeorn nes heo nefre. ah prud heo wes swiðe *and* modi. *and* liȝere *and* swikel. *and* wreðful *and* ontful. *and* forði heo bið wuniende inne þisse pine. Nu bi-gon paul to wepen wunderliche. *and* mihhal heh engel þer weop forð mid him. þa com ure drihten of heueneriche to heom on wunres<sup>4</sup> liche *and* þus cweð.

The sea of hell with its seven waves;

<sup>1</sup> ? snaw.

In which were all sorts of strange creatures.

These ceased not to torture the forloru souls.

David speaks of the pains of hell.

\* [Fol. 17a.]

<sup>2</sup> ? ane.

<sup>3</sup> ? midde-warde.

They saw in the midst of hell seven cloisters, wherein four devils were leading an old man about;

and three devils led a maiden about.

In this life she was virtuous but not charitable.

Paul and Michael weep for the wretched souls.

<sup>4</sup> ? þunres.

thus spake, "Why weepest thou, Paul?" Paul answered, "Lord, I bewail the manifold tortures which I here see in hell." Then spake our Lord, "Why would they not keep my laws while they were on earth?" Then said Paul meekly to him, "Lord, I now entreat thee, if it be thy pleasure, that thou give them rest at least on Sunday ever until doomsday come." Then said God to him, "Paul, I know well where I ought to show mercy. I will have mercy upon those that sought my mercy while they were alive." Then was St. Paul very sorrowful, and bowed him quickly to his Lord's feet, and besought him in these words which ye may now hear. "Lord," he said then, "now I beseech thee by thy kingdom, by thine angels, by thy great mercy, by all thy works, by all thy saints, and also by thy elect, that thou have mercy upon them, and the more so since I have visited them, and give them rest on Sunday ever until thy high doomsday come." Then the Lord answered him with a more gentle voice, "Arise now, Paul, arise! I will give them rest as thou hast asked, from noon on Saturday until Monday's dawn, ever from this time forth until doomsday." Now, dear brethren, ye have heard who first obtained rest for the souls of the damned. Now it becometh each Christian man so much the more to hallow and honour the day which is called Sunday, for of that day our Lord himself saith, *Dies dominicus est dies letitiae et requiei*. Sunday is a day of bliss and rest for all. *Non facietur in ea aliquid nisi Deum orare manducare et bibere cum pace et letitia*. Let nothing be wrought on this day except to go to church and to pray to Christ, and to eat and drink in peace and gladness. *Sicut dicitur, pax in terra, pax in caelo, pax inter homines*. For as it is said, "Peace on earth and peace in heaven, and peace among all Christian men." Again, our Lord himself saith, *Maledictus homo qui non custodit sabatum*. Cursed be the man who will not observe Sunday. And therefore, dear men, each Sunday is to be observed as Easter Day, for it is the commemoration of his holy resurrection from death to life, and commemoration of the Holy Ghost which he sent upon his apostles on that day which is called Whitsunday. Moreover we understand that on Sunday the Lord will come to judge all mankind. We ought to honour Sunday very much and to observe it in all purity, for it hath in it three worthy

Ahwi wepest þu paul. paul him onswerde. Lauerð ic biwepe þas monifolde pine ̅̅̅ ic her in helle iseo. þa cweð ure lauerd. Ahwi nalden heo witen mine \*laȝe þe hwile heo weren en eorðe! þa seide paul him mildeliche to ȝeines. Louerd nu ic bidde þe ȝef þin wille is þet þu heom ȝefe rest la hwure þen sunne dei a þet cume domes-dei. þa cweð drihten to him. paul wel ic wat hwer ic sceal milcien. Ic heom wulle milcien þe weren efterward mine milce þa hwile heo on liue weren. þa wes *sancte* paul swiðe wa. *and* abeh him redliche to his lauerdes fet *and* on halsien hine gon mid þas ilke weord þe ȝe mazen iheren. Lauerd he cweð þa. Nu ic þe bidde for þine kinedome *and* for þine engles. *and* for þine muchele milce. *and* for alle þine weorkes. *and* for alle þine halezen. *and* ec þine icorene. þat þu heom milcie þes þe redþer þet ic to heom com *and* reste ȝefe þen sunne-dei a þet cume þin heh domes dei. þa onswerede him drihten mildere steuene. Aris nu paul aris. Ic ham ȝeue reste alswa þu ibeden hauest from non on saterdei a þa cume monedeis lihting. þet efre forð to domes dei. Nu leofe breðre ȝe habbeð iherð hwa erest bi-won reste þam forgulte saule. Nu bi-cumeð hit þerfore to uwilche cristene monne mucheles þe mare to halizgen *and* to wurðien þenne dei þe is icleped sunne-dei. for of þam deie ure lauerd seolf seið. *Dies dominicus est dies leticie & requiei.* \*Sunne dei is dei of blisse *and* of alle ireste. *Non facietur in ea aliquid nisi deum orare manducare & bibere cum pace et leticia.* Ne beo in hire naþing iwrāt bute chirche bisocnie *and* beode to criste *and* eoten *and* drinken mid griðe *and* mid gledsceipe. *Sicut dicitur. pax in terra. pax in celo. pax inter homines.* for swa is iset. grið on eorðe. *and* grið on hefene. *and* grið bitwenen uwile cristene monne. eft ure lauerd seolf seit. *Maledictus homo qui non custodit sabatum.* Amansed beo þe mon þe sunne-dei nulle iloken. And for-þi leofemen uwile sunne-dei is to locan alswa ester dei for heo is muneȝing of his halie ariste from deðe to liue. *and* muneȝing of þam hali gast þe he sende in his apostles on þon dei þe is icleped wit-sunne-dei. ec we understondeð þet on sunne dei drihten cumeð to demene al mon-cun; we aȝen þene sunne dei swiþeliche wel to wurþien. *and* on alle clenesse to locan. for

\* [Fol. 17b.]

Paul entreats  
God to  
give them  
rest on the  
Sunday until  
Doomsday.

God grants  
his request.

\* [Fol. 18a.]

Sunday is a  
day of rest  
for all.  
Toil not on  
this day.

Cursed is he  
that keeps  
not the  
Sunday holy.

On Sunday  
shall Christ  
come to judge  
all mankind.

virtues, which ye may hear. The first virtue is that it (Sunday) on earth gives rest to all earth-thralls (slaves), men and women, from their thrall-works (servitude). The second virtue is in heaven, because the angels rest themselves more than on any other day. The third virtue is that the wretched souls in hell have rest from their great torments. Let each one then always observe the Sunday, and the other holy days which in church we are commanded to keep like the Sunday, and let it be a participator of heaven's bliss with the Father and the Son and the Holy Ghost without end. Amen. *Quod ipse prestare dignetur qui vivit et regnat Deus, per omnia secula seculorum. Amen.*

## V.

## OF THE PROPHET JEREMIAH.

*M*issus est Jeremias in puteum et stetit ibi usque ad os. Qui cum aliquandiu ibi stetisset, debilitatum est corpus ejus, et tandem dimissis funibus subtractus est. Et cum eorum duritiam, quia debilis erat sustinere non posset, allati sunt panni de domo regia et circumpositi sunt funibus ne eorum duritia læderetur. Dear men, we find in holy book that Jeremiah the prophet stood in a pit and in the mire up to his mouth; and when he had stood there awhile then his body became very feeble, and they took ropes and cast unto him for to draw him out of this pit. But his body was so very feeble that he was not able to endure the roughness of the ropes; then sent they clothes out of the king's house for to wind round the ropes, so that his body, which was (so) feeble, should not receive further injury. Dear men, those words which I have here said have important meaning, and they are good to hear and much better to retain (in mind). Is it a good thing to hear God's words and to observe them? Yea assuredly, for our Lord God Almighty saith in the holy gospel, *Beati qui audiunt verbum Dei et custodiunt illud.* Happy and blessed are all who hear God's words and keep them. Now ye have heard



heo hafð mid hire þreo wurdliche mihte þe 3e iheren mazen. 8et forme mihte is þet heo on eorðe 3eneð reste to alle eorðe þrelles wepmen *and* wifmen of heore þrel weorkes. þet oðer mihte is on heouene. for-þi þa engles hem heom rested mare þenn on sum oðer dei. þet þridde mihte is þet þa erming saule habbeð ireste inne helle \*of heore muchele pine. Hwa efre þenne ilokie wel þene sunne dei. oðer þa oðer halie dazes þe mon beot in chirche to lokien swa þe sunne dei. beo heo dal neominde of heofene riches blisse! mid þan ferde<sup>1</sup>. *and* mid þan sunne. *and* mid þan halie gast abuten ende. amen. *Quod ipse prestare dignetur qui uiuit & regnat deus. per omnia secula seculorum. Amen.*

The three virtues of the Sunday.

\* [Fol. 1<sup>8b</sup>.] Observe well the Sunday, let it partake of heavenly bliss.

<sup>1</sup> ? fedre.

## V.

## HIC DICENDUM EST DE PROPHETA.

[*M*] *issus est ieremias in puteum et stetit ibi usque ad os. Qui cum aliquandiu ibi stetisset: debilitatum est corpus eius. & tandem dimissis funibus subtractus est. Et cum eorum duriciam. quia debilis erat sustinere non posset. allati sunt panni de domo regia et circumpositi sunt funibus ne [e]orum duricia lederetur.* Leofemen we uindeð in halie boc. þet ieremie þe prophete stod in ane putte. *and* þet in þe uenne up to his muðe *and* þa he befede þer ane hwile istonde. þa bi-com his licome swiðe feble. *and* me nom rapes *and* caste in to him fro<sup>2</sup> to drazen hine ut of pisse putte. Ah his licome wes se swiðe feble! þet he ne mihte noht ipolie þe herdnesse of þe rapes. þa sende me claðes ut of þes kinges huse for to bi-winden þe rapes. þet his licome þe feble wes ne sceolde noht wursien. Leofemen þeos ilke weord þe ic habbe her iseit<sup>3</sup> habbeð muchele bi-tacnunge \**and* god ha beoð to heren *and* muchele betere to et-halden. Is hit god for to hiheren godes weordes *and* heom athalden! 3e fuliwis. for ure lauere godalmihtin seið in þan halie godspelle. *Beati qui audiunt uerbum & custodiunt illud.* Ædie *and* blessede beon alle þeo þe ihereð godes weordes *and* heom athaldeð. Nu 3e

The text.

Jeremiah stood in a pit up to his mouth in the mire.

<sup>2</sup> ? for.

How he was drawn out of the pit.

<sup>3</sup> sic.

\* [Fol. 19a.]

It is good to hear, but better to observe God's word.



what it is to hear God's words and to observe them. Now we shall show you what it is to hear and not to observe them; for St. Gregory saith, *Melius est viam veritatis non agnoscere, quam post agnitam retroire*. It is better for a man not to know the way to God Almighty than to know it and afterwards to disregard it. And in another place he saith, *Qui obturat aures suas ne audiat legem Dei, oratio ejus erit execrabilis*. The man who shutteth his ears in holy church against God's law and will not hear the words which proceed from him, his prayers shall be accursed and displeasing to God. *Putrus est peccati profunditas, quia quam diu stas in luto; tam diu jaces in mortali peccato*. The pit denotes deepness of sin, for as long as we lie in head-sins (deadly sins) all that time we stand in the pit and also in the mire (fen) up to the mouth, as these men do that lie in adultery and gluttony, and in perjury and in pride, and in other foul sins. And these are principally rich men who have this great pride in this world, that have (beautiful) fair houses and fair homes, fair wives and fair children, fair horses and fair clothes, hawks and hounds, castles and towns: hereupon they think much more than upon God Almighty, who hath sent them all these things when they lie in such sins and think not of arising. They do daily dig their pit deeper and deeper. *Unde propheta, Non claudit super te puteus os suum nisi cluseris os tuum*. The prophet saith that the pit closes not easily its mouth over us unless we shut our mouths; but if we shut our mouths, then we act as the man that diggeth a pit four days or five, and when he hath delved it for a very long time, then falleth he therein and breaketh his neck, that is, he falleth into hell-pain, from whence he will never again return to repent. But, dear men, God Almighty hath shown us very great grace, since he hath given us to be free of mouth that we may with our mouths bring ourselves out of this pit, which betokeneth the deepness of sin, and that through three hard ways, which are thus named—*Cordis contritione, oris confessione, operis satisfactione*. Through contrition of heart, through opening (utterance) of mouth, and through performance of good works. *Cordis contritione moritur peccatum, oris confessione defertur ad tumultum, operis satisfactione tumultatur*

habbeð iherd wule hit is for to iheren godes weordes *and* heom ethalden. Nu we sculen heow sceawen hwile hit is heom for to heren *and* nawiht for to ethalden. for seint gregori seið. *Melius est uiam ueritatis non agnoscere: quam post agnitam retroire.* Betre hit is þet mon ne iknawe noht þe wei to godalmihtin þe he hine icnawe *and* seodðe hine for-hozie; and on oðer stude he seið. *Qui obturat aures suas ne audiat legem dei: oratio eius erit execrabilis.* Þe mon þe tuneð his eren in halie chirche to-zeines godes laze and nule noht iheren þe weordes þe of him beoð. his beoden beoð aweriede *and* unwurðe gode. *Puteus est peccati profunditas. quia quam diu stas in luto: tam diu iaces in mortali peccato.* Þes put bitacneð deopnesse of sunne. for alse longe alse we liggeð in heueð sunnen: al þa hwile we sto[n]deð in þe putte. *and* þet in þe uenne up to þe muðe alse þeos men doð þe liggeð inne eubruche *and* ine glutenerie *and* ine manaðas. *and* ine prude. *and* ine oðre fule sunnen. *and* þet beoð riche men \*alremest þe habbeð þas muchele prude in þis worlde. þe habbeð feire luses. *and* feire hames. feire wives. *and* feire children. feire hors and feire clapes. heauekes *and* hundes. castles *and* tunes. her uppon heo þencheð muchele mare þen uppon godalmihtin þe al þis heom haueð isend þa þe liggeð inne swile sunne. *and* ne þencheð noht for to arisen: heo delueð deihwamliche heore put deoppre *and* deoppre. vnde propheta. *Non claudit super te puteus os suum nisi clauseris os tuum.* þe prophete seið. þet þe put ne tuneð noht lihtliche his muð ouer us bute we tunen ure muð. ah 3if we tuneð ure muð: þenne do þe<sup>1</sup> alse þe mon þe delueð ene put feower dazes oðer fue *and* þenne he haueð hine alra lengest idoluen: þenne ualleð he þer inne. þet him brekeð þe sweore. þet. is þet he ualleð in to helle pine þer neuer eft ne cumeð of bote. Ah leofemen godalmihtin haueð isceaweð us wel muchele *grace.* þenne he haueð geuen us to beon mud freo. þet we mazen mid ure muðe bringen us ut of þisse putte: þe bitacneð þeo deopnesse of sunne. *and* þet þurh þreo herde weies þe þus beoð ihaten. *Cordis contricione. Oris confessione. Operis satisfactione.* þurð<sup>2</sup> heorte bireusunke. þurh muðes openunge. þurh dede wel endinge. *Cordis contritione moritur peccatum. \*oris confessione defertur*

What it is to hear and not observe.

The words of St. Gregory.

The pit be-tokens the depth of sin;

the mire denotes foul sins,

\* [Fol. 19b.] of which rich men are mostly guilty,

who daily dig their pit deeper and deeper.

<sup>1</sup> ? we.

God hath made us to be mouth-free.

Three hard ways by which we may get out of the pit.

<sup>2</sup> ? þurh.

\* [Fol. 20a.]

*in perpetuum*, that is, when we are sorry in our hearts that we have sinned, for then we slay our sins. When we repent of sin, then we do by our sins as they do by the dead, for after a man is dead they lay the body in the tomb, so also thou layest thy sins in the tomb. When thou receivest shrift of the sins thou hast done against God's will, and when thou repentest of thy sins according to the priest's instructions, then thou buriest thy sins and putteth them out of their power over thee. *Per Jeremiam notatur quilibet peccator qui in suo peccato moram facit.* By Jeremiah the prophet we should understand each sinful man that lies in grievous sin, and through true shrift will not loosen his sin-bonds. *Funiculi amaritudines penitentie significant.* The ropes that were cast to him betoken the hardness of shrift; for there is no man among us that hath done three cardinal sins who is so strong that his body does not become very feeble before he has undergone the shrift that thereto befallerh. *Panni circumpositi funibus, ecclesie sacramenta significant quibus penitentie duritia mitigatur.* The king's house betokens holy church; the clothes, that were sent out of the king's house for to cover the ropes with, betoken the holy orisons that they sing in holy church, and the holy sacraments that are consecrated unto the forgiveness of all sinful. Dear men, now ye have heard the signification of this pit about which I have spoken, and the meaning of the prophet, and what the ropes denote, and what the clothes betoken that the ropes were enveloped in. Hear now what things dwell in this pit; therein live four kinds of reptiles that are now destroying all this middle-earth. Therein live the spotted adders that bear poison under their tongues; black toads that have venom in their hearts; yellow frogs, and crabs. The crab is a kind of fish in the sea. This fish is of such kind that the more he endeavours to swim with the water the more he swimmeth backwards. And the old crab said to the young one, "Wherefore swimmest not thou forward in the sea as other fishes do?" and it answered, "Dear mother, swim thou before me and teach me how I shall swim forwards." And she began to swim forwards with the stream, and always swam backwards (against it). These spotted

*ad tumultum. operis satisfactione tumultatur in perpetuum.* þe we beoð sari in ure heorte þet we isuneged habbeð þenne slage we ure sunne; þene we to sunbote cumeð. þenne do we bi ure sunne al swa me deað bi þe deade. for efterþan þet þe mon bið dead me leið þene licome in þere þruh. Al swa þu leist þine sunne in þare þruh; hwenne þu scrift underuonget of þe sunnen þe þu idon hauest to-geines godes wille. þenne þu hauest þine sunnen ibet; efter þines scriftes wissunge, þenne buriest þu þine sunnen and bringest heom ut of þine on-walde. *Per ieremiam notatur quilibet peccator qui in suo peccato moram facit.* Bi ieremie þe prophete we azen to understonden ulcne mon sunfulle. þet lið in heuie sunne and þurh soðe scrift his sunbendes nule slakien. *funiculi amaritudines penitencie significant.* Ðe rapes þe weren icast to him; bitacneð þe herdnesse of scrifte. for nis nan of us se strong þe hefde idon þre hefsunnen þet his licome nere swiðe feble er he hefde idrezen þet scrift þe per to bilimpeð. *panni circumpositi funibus; ecclesie sacramenta significant quibus penitencie duricia mitigatur.* þas kinges hus bitacneð hali chirch[e þa] claðes þet weren isende ut of þ[es kinges huse] for to binden þe rapes \*mid; bitacnet þe halie ureisuns þe me singeð in halie chirche. and þe halie sacramens þe me sacreð in alesnesse of alla sunfulle. Leofemen nu 3e habbeð iherð of þis putte þe bitacninge þe ic habbe embe ispeken. and þe bitacninge of þe prophete. and þet. þe rapes bitacneð. and hwat þa claðes bi-tacneð þe þe rapes weren mide biwunden. Ihereð nuðe whulche þinges wunieð in þisse putte. per wunieð fower cummes wurmes inne. þet fordoð nuðe al þeos midelerd. per wunieð in-ne faze neddren. and beoreð atter under heore tunge. Blake tadden and habbeð atter uppon heore heorte. 3eluwe froggen. and crabben. Crabbe is an manere of fisses in þere sea. þis fis is of swulc cunde. þet. euer se he mare strengðeð him to sw[i]mminde mid þe watere; se he mare swimmeð abac. and þe alde crabbe seide to þe 3unge. hwi ne swimmeð þu forðward in þere sea also oðer fisses doð. and heo seide. Leofe moder swim þu foren me and tech me hu ic scal swimmen forðward and [heo] bi-gon to swimmen forðward mid þe streme. and swain hire per

We slay our sins with sorrow.

We bury them when we repent of them.

Jeremiah denotes sinful man.

The ropes denote the hardness of shrift.

The King's house is holy church.

\* [Pol. 20b.]

The clothes are holy prayers.

Of the inhabitants of the pit,

spotted adders, black toads, yellow crabs, and frogs.

The fable of the young crab and its mother.

adders betoken the deceitful folk that dwell in this world, that speak as fair before their fellow Christians as if they would embrace them, and as soon as they have turned away from them they slander (to-twitch) and detract them with evil words. *Iii etiam sunt doctores et falsi christiani.* These men that thus pull to pieces their fellow Christians behind their backs have the name of Christians, but nevertheless they are Christ's enemies, and are men-slayers, for they slay their own souls and bring them into the everlasting pain of hell. These black toads that have the venom in their hearts betoken the rich men that have much of this world's goods and cannot moderately eat and drink, nor therewith do any good for the love of God Almighty, who hath given it them all, but lie upon it as the toad does in the earth, that never can be so moderate as to eat her fill, because she is afraid lest the earth (fail) deceive her. This wealth which these men thus overlie turneth to black venom, for they fall thereby into the strong pain that no man may describe. These yellow clothes [betoken women that make themselves fair to draw lechers unto them], for the yellow cloth is the devil's lair (covering). These women that love (? live) are called the devil's mouse-trap, for when a man will bait his mouse-trap he binds thereupon the treacherous cheese, and roasteth it so that it should smell sweetly ; and through the sweet smell of the cheese he entices many a mouse into the trap. Even so do many of these women ; they smear themselves with blaunchet (fine wheaten flour), that is the devil's soap, and clothe them with yellow clothes, that is the devil's covert, and afterwards they look in the mirror, that is the devil's hiding-place. Thus they act in order to make themselves fair and to draw lechers unto them, but they defile themselves therewith. Now, dear men, for God's love keep yourselves from the devil's mouse-trap, and take heed that ye be not the spotted adders, nor the black toads, nor the yellow frogs. The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost shield us therefrom and from all sins ever without end, *per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.



azen. þas faʒe neddre bitacneð þis faʒe folc þe wuneð in þisse weorlde. þe speket also feire bi-foren heore eucencristene \*also heo heom walde in to heore bosme puten. and swa sone se li beoð iturnd away from heom: heom to-twiccheð and to-draʒeð mid ufele weordes. *Hii eciam sunt doctores & falsi christiani.* Þos men þe þus to-draʒed heore eucencristene bi-hinden heo habbeð þe nome of cristene ah þah heo beoð cristes unwines and beoð monslazen for heo slaʒeð heore aʒene saule. and bringeð heon<sup>1</sup> in to þare eche pine of helle. þos blaca tadden þet habbeð þet atter uppon heore heorte. bi-tacneð þes riche men þe habbeð þes mucheles weorlde's elite and na mazen noht itimien þar of to eten ne to drinken ne na god don þer of for þe luuc of god-almiltin þe haueð hit heom al geuen. ah liggeð þer uppon also þe taddle deð in þere eorðe, þet neure ne mei itimien to eten hire fulle: swa heo is afered leste þeo corðe hire trukie. þeos ilke ehte þe þeos þus ouerliggeð heom turneð to swart atter; for heo falleð þer þurh in to þer stronge pine þet na mon ne mei tellen. Þeos ʒeolewe clapes.<sup>2</sup> for þe ʒeolewe clað is þes deofles helfter.<sup>3</sup> þeos wimmen þe þus luuicð<sup>4</sup> beoð þes deofles musestoch iclepede. for þenne þe mon wule tilden his musestoch he bindeð uppon þa swike chese and bret hine for þon þet he scolde<sup>5</sup> swote smelle. and þurh þe \*sweote smel of þe chese: he bicherreð monie mus to þe stoke. Alswa doð monie of þas wimmen heo smurieð heom mid blanchet þet is þes deofles sape and clapeð heom mid ʒeoluwe clape þet is þes deofles helfter.<sup>6</sup> and seodðan heo lokieð in þe scawere. þet is þes deofles hindene. Þus heo doð for to feiren heom seoluen. and to draʒen lechurs to ham. ah heo fuleð heom soluen þer mide. Nu leofemen for godes lufe witeð how wið þes deofles musestoch and witeð eow þet ʒe ne beo noht þe foaʒe neddre. ne þe blake tadde. ne þe ʒolewe frogge. þe feder. and þe sune. and þe halie gast. isilde us þer wið. and wið alle sunnen a buten ende. *per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.

The spotted adders denote slanderers.

\* [Fol. 21a.]

They are Christ's enemies.

<sup>1</sup> ? heom.

The black toads denote the rich men who make a bad use of their wealth.

The yellow clothes denote foolish women, who are the devil's mousetrap.

<sup>2</sup> ? something omitted here.

<sup>3</sup> ? helster.

<sup>4</sup> ? linieð.

<sup>5</sup> MS. sclode.

\* [Fol. 21b.]

<sup>6</sup> ? helster.

Keep away from the devil's trap.



## VI.

## THE LORD'S PRAYER.

*Pater noster qui es in cœlis, &c.*

- Our father that art in heaven,  
That is all truthful indeed !  
We must to these words look,  
4 That are good for both body (life) and soul,  
That we may be as his begotten sons,  
That he may be our father and we his chosen (darlings),  
That we may do all his behests  
8 And act according to his will.  
Let us take heed lest we offend him  
Through Belzebub's wiles ;  
He hath great envy towards us  
12 All the days of our life ;  
About us he is for to terrify us,  
With all his might he will annoy us.  
If we learn God's lore  
16 Then it grieveth him full sore,  
Except we remain in our evil habits.  
He cares not that we are sons (of God),  
If we then call him father ;  
20 All that is but little joy to us.  
Let us observe God's laws  
That we have in his saws (word) ;  
The behests he therein commandeth,  
24 Except we keep them, we commit sin.  
And let each man receive them  
To observe well anent him.  
For so God commands it  
28 In the Gospel which he wrote,  
That we should love God with our might,

## VI.

## PATER NOSTER.

[*P*] *Ater noster qui es in celis & cetera.*  
 Vre feder *pet* in heouene is

Our Father  
 which art in  
 heaven.

*pet* is al soð ful iwis.

weo moten to þeos weordes iseon.

4 *pet* to liue *and* to saule gode beon.

These words  
 are good for  
 soul and  
 body.

*pet* weo beon swa his sunes iborene.

*pet* he beo feder *and* we him icorene.

*pet* we don alle his ibeden.

8 *and* his wille for to reden.

Loke weo us wið him misdon

þurh beelzebubes swikedom.

he haueð to us muchel nið.

Displease not  
 God through  
 Beelzebub's  
 wiles.

12 alle þa deies of ure sið.

abuten us he is for to blenchen.

Mid alle his mihte he wule us swenchen.

Gif we leornið godes lare :

He is grieved  
 when we are  
 good.

16 þenne of-þuncheð hit him sare.

Bute we bileuen ure ufele iwune.

Ne kepeð he noht \**pet* we beon sune.

\* [Fol. 22a.]

Gif we clepieð hine feder þenne.

20 al *pet* is us to lutel wunne.

halde we godes laze.

*pet* we habbeð of his saze.

þa bodes he beodeð þer inne.

24 Bute weo hes halden : we doð sunne

Unless we  
 keep God's  
 behest we  
 commit sin.

*and* uwile mon hes undernim.

to halden wel anundes him.

for alswa god hit bit :

28 *and* inne þe godspelle þe he writ.

Love God  
 with all thy  
 might.

Luuien god mid ure mihte

- Above all creatures,  
With our souls, and with our deeds ;  
32 That we should him both love and also dread.  
This is the first behest here  
That we ought to hold dear ;  
This behest above all others is,  
36 And let us not observe it amiss.  
And the second after this  
Is like to it in truth—  
To love thy fellow Christian  
40 As thyself in all things ;  
With all this have thou charity,  
And true belief and love of truth.  
For God's love forsake what is evil !  
44 Thou shalt see it turn to thy advantage.  
Be thou not manslayer ;  
Nor be in whoredom, day nor night ;  
Nor oughtest thou to steal,  
48 Nor any theft to conceal ;  
A proud man or (false) accuser be thou not,  
Nor envious in thy thought ;  
Be buxom (obedient) toward God,  
52 And keep thou well his behests.  
If thou do this with good intent  
Then art thou God's son.  
Thus thou mightest, if thou wilt,  
56 God's behests well fulfill.  
*Sanctificetur nomen tuum.*  
Thy name be blessed, that we say,  
And thus by these words we affirm  
His name is holy and ever was,  
60 Ever alike firm, it is not less,  
That is, and was, and ever shall  
Be blessed everywhere.  
Then ought we to understand  
64 From all evil he shall preserve us ;

- ouer alle cunnes wihte  
mid ure saule mid ure deden.
- 32 baþe luuien him *and* ec dreden.  
þis is þe furste bode here:  
þet we aȝen to habben deore.  
þeos beode ofer alle oðer is.
- 36 Ne habbe we hit noht onimis.<sup>1</sup>  
*and* þis oðer efter þis.  
þis is ilich fuliwis.  
Luuien þi cristen euenling.
- 40 Alswa þe seoluen in alle þing.  
Mid al þis haue þu charite.  
*and* soðfeste leaue *and* trowðe lef.  
for god let þu þet uuele beon.
- 44 Godere hele þu hit scalt iseon.  
Ne beo þu nawiht monslaht.  
ne in hordom dei ne naht.  
Ne þu naȝest for to stele.
- 48 ne nan þefþe for to heole.  
Prud ne wreiere ne beo þu noht.  
Ne niðful in þi þoht.  
beo buhsum toward gode.
- 52 *and* wel hald þu his bode.  
Do þu þis mid gode mune.  
þenne eart þu godes sune.  
þus þu maht ȝif þu wulle.
- 56 godes heste wel ifulle.  
*San[c]tificetur nomen tuum.*  
þi nome beo ibleeced. þet we seggeð  
*and* þus þa wordes we bi-leggeð.  
his name is hali *and* efre wes
- 60 iliche swiðe hit nis noht les.  
þet is *and* wes *and* efre scal  
beon ibleeced ofer al.  
þenne aȝe we to \*understonden us  
from alle uuele he scal blecen us.

Love and fear  
him.

<sup>1</sup> MS. onuius.

Love thy  
neighbour as  
thyself.

Be not a mur-  
derer, commit  
not adultery,  
and do not  
steal.

Be not proud  
or envious,

but be obe-  
dient to God.

Hallowed be  
thy name.

God's name  
is holy,

and ever shall  
be hallowed  
everywhere.

\* [Fol. 22b.]

- Let us bless (hallow) then enough his name,  
And keep us from harm and shame.  
In the font we were born again,  
68 Cleansed, and by God chosen (adopted) ;  
His holy name we took and bore,  
In the font where we were cleansed.  
Christians are (we) called, rich and poor,  
72 After Christ himself who is God.  
His name that we of him have,  
That he it hallow we do crave.  
*Adveniat regnum tuum.*  
Thy kingdom come, we do say it,  
76 Hearken all unto this writ !  
His kingdom is this middle earth,  
Earth and heaven, and each abode ;  
Over all is his great might.  
80 Lord he is called with right ;  
Lord he is of all creatures,  
In earth and heaven is his might.  
All the creatures that he formed,  
84 That is the truth, it was for man.  
All things he made to appear  
Before he ever made man.  
He made man in righteousness,  
88 In the form of his own likeness.  
All deer (animals) and fowl of flight  
He made to stoop adownright (downwards).  
Man he loved and cared for well,  
92 And therefore his face upward he wrought ;  
That was all for a good skill (reason),  
If that understand ye will.  
Face upwards he him wrought,  
96 He would that man of him thought,  
That he should love him with thought (in his mind)  
As the Lord that him wrought.  
Think now, men, what honour

- To blecen þenne inoh his nome  
 anð kepen us from hearm *and* scome.  
 In þe font we weren eft iboren  
 68 iclensed and to gode icorene.  
 his halie nome we nomen *and* beren.  
 In þe font þer we iclensed weren.  
 Cristen beoð icleped riche *and* loð.<sup>1</sup>  
 72 efter crist seolf þet is god.  
 his nome. þet. we of him hafē.  
 he hit haleȝe þet we crauen.  
*Adueniat regnum tuum.*  
 Cume þi riche we seggeð hit.  
 76 Hercnið alle to þis writ.  
 his riche is al þis middeleard.  
 Eorðe *and* heofene and uwilcherd  
 ofer alle is his muchele mihte.  
 80 lauerd he is icleped mid rihte.  
 Lauerd he is of alle scafte.  
 In eorðe. *in* heuene is his mahte  
 alle þe scafte þe he bi-gon.  
 84 þet is þet soðe hit wes for mon  
 alle þinge he makede æt<sup>2</sup> agan.  
 Er he efre makede mon.  
 he makede mon i rihtwisnesse.  
 88 Onlete on his onlicnesse.  
 Alle dor *and* fuzel ifliht :  
 lete he makede adunriht.  
 þene Mon he lufede *and* welbihohte.  
 92 *and* for-þi his neb upward he wrohte.  
 þet wes al mid muchele skile :  
 ȝif he<sup>3</sup> hit understondon wile.  
 Neb upwardes he him wrohte.  
 96 he walde þet he of him þohte  
 þet he lufede him mid þoht[e].  
 Al swa þe lauerd þet him wrohte.  
 þencheð nu men hwilch wurðin[g]

In the font  
 were we born  
 again and  
 cleansed,

<sup>1</sup> sic.  
 and are called  
 Christians  
 after Christ.

Thy kingdom  
 come.

His kingdom  
 is everywhere.

Lord he is of  
 all creatures.

He made all  
 things for  
 man.  
<sup>2</sup> it may be  
*aft.*

He made man  
 after his own  
 likeness.

Man he made  
 to look up-  
 wards,

<sup>3</sup> ? ȝe.

so that he  
 might think  
 of God.



- 100 The king of heaven to you hath done,  
 To be in heaven, full sooth,  
 Into the seat of Paradise,  
 From which the angels down fell  
 104 Into the darkness of hell.  
 That seat, as they tell thus,  
 Where God shall harbour us,  
 Christ grant us thither to come,  
 108 And ever with himself to dwell !  
 And Christ will amongst us be,  
 Face to face we shall him see,  
 And dwell with him night  
 112 And day, up in heaven that is so bright ;  
 He will be our Father and we his sons,  
 For him is all our journey,  
 That is our country and our kingdom,  
 116 With him to dwell in heaven.  
*Fiat voluntas tua, sicut in cœlo et in terra.*  
 Thine own will be, for that say we,  
 In earth, and heaven, so let it be,  
 As is in heaven thine own will,  
 120 That we, Lord ! serve thee all with skill (rightly),  
 For to be (like), Lord ! thy archangels,  
 And thy beloved holy angels.  
 When the angels from heaven fell,  
 124 For their pride, into hell,  
 The others were strengthened soon,  
 That they should never more misdo.  
 Afterwards none might ever sin,  
 128 Nor from God's will go ;  
 They cannot ever evil work,  
 Nor even once think to do it.  
 God grant us in heart to take (resolve)  
 132 That we no evil think to do,  
 And grant us towards him good will,  
 And to act towards all men with right and skill (rightly  
 and reasonably),

- 100 eow hancð idon þe heouenking ð  
 To bon in heuene fuliwis.  
 In toupe<sup>1</sup> sete of para[d]is.  
 from hwonne þe engles a-dun follon<sup>2</sup>
- 104 in to \*þe þosternesse hellen.  
 þet secle<sup>3</sup> swa ho radden þus ð  
 þer god seal herberȝen us.  
 Crist us ȝife þider to cumen.
- 108 *and* efre mid him solue to wunen.  
*and cristes* wille bo us bitwon.  
 neb wið neb for him to son.  
*and* wunen mid him niht
- 112 *and* dei up in heouene þe is swa briht.  
 þet he beo feder *and* we beo sunes.  
 to him is ure al to cumes.  
 þet is ure eðele *and* ure riche ð
- 116 Mid him to wunen in heouene riche.  
*Fiat uoluntas tua, sicut in celo & in terra.*  
 þin aȝen wille beo for þet segge we.  
 In orðe in heuene swa hit beo  
 Al swa is in heouene þin aȝen wil.
- 120 þet we<sup>4</sup> þeowen lauerd al mid skil.  
 For to beon lauerd þine archangles.  
*and* þi leoue hali engles.  
 þa þe angles. of heouene uolle
- 124 for heore prude in to helle.  
 þa oðre weren fulfeste sone.  
 þet ho ne mihten nefre mare misdome.  
 Sodðon ne mihten sunegenen<sup>5</sup> nan ð
- 128 ne ut of godes wille gan.  
 Ne muȝen heo nefre ufele swinken ð  
 ne for men enes hit bi-pinken.  
 God us ȝefe in horte to fon ð
- 132 þet we ne þenchen ufel to don.  
*and* ȝife us to him god iwil ð  
*and* to alle men ð riht *and* skil.

God hath  
made us to  
dwell in Para-  
dise,

<sup>1</sup> ? In to þe.

<sup>2</sup> ? feilen.

\* [Fol. 23a.]

from whence  
the devils fell  
into hell.

<sup>3</sup> ? setle.

May we see  
Christ face to  
face,

and dwell  
with him for  
ever.

Heaven is our  
country and  
home.

Thy will be  
done.

<sup>4</sup> MS. þe.

May we serve  
thee, Lord,  
and be like  
thy holy  
angels,

who are  
strengthened,  
and cannot  
sin,

<sup>5</sup> sic.

nor even  
think of evil.

- And grant us so his will to do,  
136 That we both please God and man ;  
And that he fill us with his might,  
And us with his Holy Ghost enlight ;  
And in charity (make us) dwell therein,  
140 That we fall not into sin ;  
That we have no will to sin,  
When our foes us do tempt,  
No more than the angels had,  
144 That in God's love did abide.  
*Panem nostrum cotidianum da nobis hodie.*  
Give us to-day our daily bread,  
Lord God, helper of us all !  
Give us our livelihood,  
148 And for the flesh covering and clothes.  
Bread in Greek signifies  
Doctrine to us indeed.  
For as they feed the flesh without  
152 With meat and with clothes all about,  
So behoveth the soul have food  
With God's words, with good mood (mind).  
God's songs are all good (profitable),  
156 To the soul they send food ;  
We ought to take heed to them,  
And please God himself therewith ;  
Then may our souls live,  
160 That our Lord hath given us.  
He who will not listen to this counsel  
Assuredly he shall die,  
For his soul is lost ;  
164 And sorrow is before him,  
And he shall go into hell, into eternal woe,  
Out shall he come never more.  
But, Lord God, hear our prayer,  
168 Of our sins make us clean.  
May he us give, as he can,

- and* ȝife us swa his wil to donne :  
 136 þet we gode likie *and* monne.  
*and* þet he fulle us mid his mihte  
*and* mid his halie gast us lihte.  
*and* in cherite to wnien inne :  
 140 þet we ne fallen naut ine sunne.  
 þet we nabben wil to sunegen.  
 þenne ure unwines us munegen.  
 Ne mare þene þo engles \*efden  
 144 þet in godes luue heo heom lende.  
*Panem nostrum cotidianum da nobis hodie.*  
 Gif us to dei ure deies bred.  
 Lauerd god al ure red.  
 Gif us ure liuenað :  
 148 *and* to þe flesee serud *and* clað.  
 Bred on grikisee is :  
 Larspel to us fuliwis  
 for alse me fet þet fleis wið-uten  
 152 mid mete mid claðe al abuten :  
 swa bi-houeð þe saule fode :  
 mid godes wordes mid gode mode.  
 Godes songes beoð alle gode.  
 156 to þere saule heo senden fode.  
 We hit aȝen to ȝeme.  
*and* god solf þer mid iqueme.  
 þenne mei ure saule lifen.  
 160 þet ure lauerd us haueð iȝeuen.  
 þe luste nulleð þesne red  
 wisliche he scal wurðen ded  
 for þe saule of him : is forloren.  
 164 *and* þe sorȝe is him biforen.  
*and* fereð in to helle mid eche wa :  
 ut ne cumeð he nefre ma.  
 Ah lauerd god her ure bone.<sup>1</sup>  
 168 of ure sunne make us elene.  
 þet he us ȝeue als wa he mei :

May God enlighten us  
with his Holy Spirit,

so that we fall  
into no sin.

\* [Fol. 23b.]

Give us this  
day our daily  
bread,

and shrouds  
and clothes  
for the body.  
Bread denotes  
the Gospel,

which is the  
soul's food.

God's songs  
are all good.

The soul that  
will not listen  
to God's lore  
shall perish in  
hell.

<sup>1</sup> ? bene.

Lord, cleanse  
us from our  
sins.

- What is needful for us day by day  
 For our life's and soul's food,  
 172 So that we may love him with a pure mood (mind).  
*Et dimitte nobis debita nostra sicut et nos*  
*dimittimus debitoribus nostris.*  
 Our sins, Lord, be forgiven us,  
 As we do unto all men that live.  
 Lord, forgive us our folly,  
 76 As we shall forgive all others,  
 Our sins and our misdoings.  
 And here is a sorrowful petition,  
 To God himself we ourselves accuse,  
 180 If we these words say,  
 When we have envy and wrath  
 Against any man that is on land (earth).  
 For if any man doth us aught amiss  
 184 We desire to have him put to death.  
 Here is a very evil boon (prayer),  
 If we hate one another.  
 If any do us aught amiss,  
 188 And will not act right towards us,  
 For God's love forgive we them all,  
 For He shall requite it well.  
 When shall this prayer profit us,  
 192 And when will God receive it?  
 When I forgive hatred against me,  
 For the love of heaven's King,  
 And when I believe and well see  
 196 That no guilt may be forgiven me  
 Unless I observe these behests  
 That we have from our Lord God.  
 Love thy fellow Christian day and night  
 200 As thyself, and that is right.  
 If we these behests observe,  
 For (our) profit we it say.  
 The Pater Noster availeth me nought

- þet us bihoueð ulche dei.  
 To liue *and* to saule ure fode  
 172 *and* him luuien mid elene mode.  
*Et dimitte nobis debita nostra sicut et nos*  
*dimittimus debitoribus nostris.*  
 Vre gultes lauerd bon us forʒenen  
 al swa we dop alle men þet liuen.  
 Lauerd forʒef us ure unskile  
 176 *and* alswa we alle oðre wile.  
 ure sunnen. *and* ure misdonnaing.  
*and* her is a roulich moting.  
 to gode solf we us wreið?  
 180 hwenne we þos word seggeð.  
 hwenne we habbeð nið *and* onde?  
 \*to eni monne þet is on londe.  
 for ʒif eni mon mis-deð us oht?  
 184 we wulleð him habben to deðe ibroht.  
 her is swipe ufel bone?  
 ʒif we heticð us bitwene.  
 ʒif eni us misdoð awiht?  
 188 *and* nule us do riht.  
 for godes luue forʒeue we al?  
 for he hit wel forʒelden scal.  
 Wenne seal þos bode<sup>1</sup> us god don?  
 192 *and* god wule hit underfon.  
 wenne ic forʒeue min hating?  
 for þe luue of heuene king.  
 Wenne ic ileue *and* wel iso?  
 196 þet no gult me forʒeuen bo.  
 for hwenne ic i-halde þa ibode?  
 þet we habbeð of ure lauerd gode.  
 luue þinc euecristene dei *and* niht?  
 200 alswa þe solue *and* þet is riht.  
 Gif we þos bode þus bileggeð?  
 ful<sup>2</sup> goderhele we hit seggeð.  
 þe pater noster bi-halt me noht?

Forgive us  
our trespasses,  
&c.

as we forgive  
others.

We accuse  
ourselves to  
God,  
if we bear  
malice  
towards  
others.  
\* [Fol. 24a.]

This is a  
sorrowful  
petition, if we  
hate one  
another;

<sup>1</sup> ? beode.

but it will  
profit us if we  
forgive our  
foes,

and love our  
neighbours as  
ourselves.

<sup>2</sup> ? for.



- 204 Unless I have (keep) this in my mind,  
Then may we believe and say thus,  
The other very little helpeth us.  
This behest, truly think,
- 208 Of the others is perfect confirmation ;  
Then may we well believe all,  
That whoso will and whoso shall  
Against God do aught amiss,
- 212 Assuredly against the behest he sinneth.  
They that bear hatred to another,  
How may they offer any prayer ?  
Forgive wrath and mood (anger) against thee,
- 216 For then is thy boon (prayer) good.  
That is true, and God saith it,  
And in the Gospel he writeth it,  
Whoso forgiveth not hatred against them
- 220 God will in nowise forgive them.  
Good men, listen to me. Hatred against you  
Forgive ye ; thy sinful fellow man,  
Love him for God's sake.
- 224 Thou oughtest to hate well his sin,  
That thou participate not therein.  
For if thou thus dost full truly  
Thou pleasest God most certainly.  
*Et ne nos inducas in temptationem.*
- 228 Lead us not into temptation.  
That is a kind of trial ;  
For our tempter never ceaseth  
For to tempt us to sin ;
- 232 He hath leave to tempt man :  
Where he may full well he can (knows how).  
He tempted God himself with his wiles,  
And desired much to afflict him,
- 236 And his apostles in the same way also,  
And many others thereto.  
May God give us might and (good) deeds,

- 204 bute ic þis habbe in mi þoht.  
 þenne muze we wenen *and* seggen þus:  
 þet oðer swiðe lutel helpeð us.  
 þos ilke bode wisliche þing:
- 208 of oðre is ful festning.  
 þenne muze we wel trowen al:  
 hwa swa wile *and* hwa swa scal.  
 þet wið gode awiht mis-doð:
- 212 Iwis in þe bode he misfoð.  
 þet hētunge habbeð hom bitwone:  
 hu mazen heo bidden eni bene.  
 for-ȝif þi wreððe *and* þi mod:
- 216 for þenne is þi bode god.  
 þet is soð *and* god seið hit:  
*and* in þe godspelle he hit writ.  
 hwa swa ne forȝefeð heore hating.
- 220 ne god ne forȝeueð him<sup>1</sup> na þing.  
 Gode men lusteð to me. ower hating  
 forȝefe ȝe þin sunful efenling:  
 luue him for godes þing.
- 224 *and* þu aȝest \*to hatien wel his sunne:  
 þet ȝu ne dele noht per inne.  
 for ȝef þu þus dost wel iwis:  
 þu quemest god to fuliwis.  
*Et ne nos inducas in temptationem.*
- 228 Nē led us noht in to costnunga:  
 þet is an eum<sup>2</sup> of fundunga.  
 for ure fond nefre ne linnen:  
 for to fonden us mid sunnen.
- 232 he haueð leue to fonden mon.  
 þer he mei ful wel he con.  
 he fondede god solf mid his wrenche:  
*and* walde hine ȝorne swenche.
- 236 *and* his apostles riht al swa:  
*and* monie oðre þere to.  
 God us ȝefe mihte *and* deden:

This petition  
 is the com-  
 pletion of the  
 others.

How may he  
 who bears  
 hatred in his  
 heart offer up  
 any prayer?

God forgives  
 not the  
 unforgiving.  
 1 ? heom.

Love thy  
 neighbour,  
 but hate his  
 sin.

\* [Pol. 24b.]

Lead us not  
 into tempta-  
 tion.

2 ? eun.

Our tempter  
 is ever busy  
 to lead us  
 into sin.

He tempted  
 God himself,

and also his  
 apostles.

- That we fear not our tempter ;  
240 And give us might through his grace  
That our faith may be our shield  
Against the tempter's trials,  
Through faith and through works.  
244 In other ways I have found  
How we may in sin be bound.  
The first is to be servant (of sin),  
And the other is pleasure (lust) ;  
248 The third is man's will,  
And also, as they say, our reason.  
May Christ give us power over him,  
Better then may we bear the contest.  
252 We may not from us the tempter drive,  
Neither with sword nor with knife,  
But only through God's grace ;  
And may he give us strength and might,  
256 And give us weapons for to bear,  
With good works ourselves to protect ;  
That is, through truth and charity.  
May our right belief, God, come before thee  
260 Through fasting and through good vigils,  
And also through offering of prayer,  
And dwell ever in clean shrift,  
That is, God's own gifts.  
264 And let us keep ourselves from obstinacy,  
And have fair speech and also reasonable,  
And humility and patience,  
Which God esteemeth very good ;  
268 With alms and also with true intent  
The indigent have given advice,  
With lodging and with food,  
And all else that thou might for their good ;  
272 These are the weapons that are good.  
And let us be very patient,  
That we may not fear the tempter,

- þet* we þene fond nolit ne adreden.  
 240 *and* ȝefe us mihte þurh his held :  
*þet* ure leue beo ure seeld  
 aȝein þes fondes fondunge :  
 þurh trowþe *and* þurh swincunge.
- 244 On oðer wise ic habbe ifunde  
 hu me mei in sunne bon ibunde.  
*þet* forme is to beon underling.  
*and* *þet* oðer is liking.
- 248 *þet* ðridde is þes monnes wil.  
*and* swa us seið ure skil.  
 Crist us ȝeue of him mihte  
 betere þenne we habbeð wrihte.
- 252 We ne maȝen þe fond from us driue :  
 ne mid sworde ne mid kniue.  
 bute hit beo þurh godes ȝifte :  
*and* he us ȝeue streinðe *and* mihte.
- 256 *and* ȝeue us wepne for to boren :  
 Mid gode werkes for us to weren.  
*þet* is þurh trouðe : *and* þurh cherite.  
 vre rihte leue god cume to þe
- 260 þurh festing *and* þurh wacunge.  
*and* ec þurh ibodenes biddunge.  
*and* wunien efre in elene scrifte :  
*þet* is godes aȝene ȝeifte.
- 264 *and* halde we us from uniwil :  
*and* habben feir lete *and* ec skil.  
*and* edmodnesse *and* þolemod :  
*þet* þuncheð gode swiðe god.
- 268 Mid elmesse *and* ec \*mid trowe inhed :  
 þe node habbeð ȝiuen heom red.  
 Mid hereberge. *and* mid fode :  
*and* mid *þet* þu miht to gode.
- 272 þos beoð þa wepne *þet* beoð gode :  
*and* beo we swiþe þolemode.  
*þet* we þenne fond noht ne dreden.

May God give  
us his grace,  
so that our  
faith may be  
our shield.

Our lust, will,  
and reason  
lead us into  
sin.

We cannot  
drive the  
tempter away  
with sword or  
knife.

Our weapons  
must be truth,  
charity,

fasting, vigils,  
prayers, and  
shrift ;

fair and ra-  
tional speech,  
meekness and  
patience,

\* [Fol. 25a.]  
giving alms,  
good counsel,

lodging and  
food to the  
poor.

So that he may not deceive us through his deeds.

*Sed libera nos a malo. Amen.*

- 276 But do thou deliver us from all evil,  
And choose us for thine own,  
And keep us from his loss,  
That loathsome spirit, that loathsome thing ;
- 280 And from evil men keep us also—  
All that we ask also thereto—  
And from each head-sin (deadly sin),  
That he bring us not into sorrow ;
- 284 But if any evil befall us  
Let us thank God in our hearts.  
For we ought then our prayers to sing,  
That God may help us to do good things,
- 288 So that life (body) and soul be preserved,  
And both delivered out of sorrow.  
And may he give us his great blessing  
And true shrift at our ending (death),
- 292 That we have it so well received,  
That the soul may come to him.  
May he delay the time of our death,  
As he through the prophet promised,
- 296 “I desire not that the sinner be dead,  
But that he live and take good advice.”  
Lord God we pray thee thus,  
With humble hearts, grant us
- 300 That our souls be to thee elect,  
And not through the flesh forlorn (damned).  
Suffer us to bewep our sins  
That we die not therein ;
- 304 And grant us, Lord, this same gift,  
That we repent of them through holy shrift. Amen.

ne he us biswike þurh his deden.

*Sed libera nos a malo. Amen.*

But deliver us  
from evil,

276 ac þu from alle ufele us ales.

*and* to þin aȝen us ches :

and choose us  
for thy own.

*and* kep us from his waning.

þat lape gast þet laðe þing.

280 *and* from unele men kep us swa :

Al þet we biddeð ec þerto.

And from iwileh heued sunne.

þet he ne bringe us in to unwune.

Keep us from  
the devil's  
loss, from bad  
men,  
and from  
deadly sin,  
and from  
sorrow.

284 Ac ȝif us eni ufele bitit :

þonke we gode in ure wit.

We aȝen þenne ure boden to singe.

þet god us helpe to gode þinge.

288 þet lif *and* saule beon iborȝen.

*and* baðe ileseð ut of sorȝen.

*and* ȝefe us his muchele blessunge.

*and* riht scrift et ure endunge.

We ought to  
sing our  
prayers,  
which are  
good for soul  
and body.

292 þet we habben him swa wel imune.<sup>1</sup>

þet þe saule mote to him cume.

Vre deð he do in firste ȝet :

swa he þurh þe witega bihet.

<sup>1</sup> ? inune.

May God give  
us time to  
repent.

296 Ne wille ic noht þet þe sunfulle beo ded :

ac libbe *and* nime godne red.

Lauerd god we biddeð þus

mid edmode heorte ȝif hit us.

May he adopt  
us for his  
children.

300 þet ure saule beo to þe icore.

Noht for þe flesce for-lore.

þole us to bi-wepen ure sunne :

þet we ne sternen noht þer inne.

Let us bewail  
and repent of  
our sins.

304 And ȝif us lauerd þet ilke ȝifte :

þet we hes ibeten þurh halie scrifte. Amen.



## VII.

## THE CREED.

*T*ria sunt hominum salutis necessaria, fides, baptismus, munditia vite.

Three things there are that each man must have that will follow up his profession of Christianity; the first is true belief, the second is baptism, the third is to lead a fair (pure) life in this world. He is not fully a Christian man who lacks aught of these three things. Of belief our Lord hath spoken in the holy gospel, and saith, *Qui non crediderit condemnabitur*—The man that hath not true belief in him shall be doomed to suffer woe with devils in hell. In another passage the apostle hath spoken of true belief, and saith, *Impossibile est hominem sine fide posse Deo placere*—No man may do anything acceptable to God except he have true belief in him. Of holy baptism our Lord hath spoken in another place and saith, *Nisi quis renatus fuerit ex aqua et spiritu sancto non potest introire in regnum cælorum*—No man may come into God's kingdom except he be baptized. Of clean (pure) life the prophet Isaiah hath thus spoken, *Lavamini et mundi estote*—Wash you and be clean. And David the prophet speaketh in one of the psalms concerning clean life, and saith, *Asperges me Domine isopo et mundabor*—Besprinkle me, Lord, with obedience, then shall I be clean; *et alibi, Delecto meo munda me Domine*. And in another passage he saith, Lord, cleanse me from all my foul sins. And though all men be cleansed from their sins at baptism, nevertheless they ought to learn their belief. At the beginning of the Christian religion each man learnt his belief ere he received baptism. But then there were many children that died without baptism and perished, therefore it was ordained by God's command that children should be baptized in holy church, and their godfathers and godmothers should answer for them at the church-door, and enter into pledges (covenants) at the font-stone, that they should be believing (faithful) men, and know their belief when they were able to learn it. And this the godfathers

## VII.

## [CREDO.]

[**T**ria sunt hominum saluti necessaria. fides. baptisimus. mundicia vite.

Three things necessary to every Christian man.

[Fol. 25b.]

Pro þing bod þet ech .Mon. hadde mot þet wile his cristindom foleze. þet an is rihte ileue. þet oðer<sup>1</sup> fulluht. þet ƿridde<sup>1</sup> feir lif to leden on þisse liue. he nis noht fulliche cristene mon þet is awiht wone of þisse þreo þing. of ileue spek ure drihten

Of Belief.

ine þe hali godspel and seið. *Qui non crediderit condemnabitur.* þe mon. þet naueð rihte ileue mid him. he wurh<sup>1</sup> idemed to polien wawe mid douelen in helle. on oðer stude of rihte ileue spec þe apostle and seið. *Impossibile est hominem sine fide posse deo placere.* Ne mei na man do þing þet beo god iqueune.

<sup>1</sup> ? wurð.

bute he hadde rihte ileue mid him. of þe halie fulht spec ure drihten on oðer stude and seið. *Nisi quis renatus<sup>2</sup> fuerit ex aqua & spiritu sancto non potest introire in regnum celorum.* Ne mei na .Mon. cume in to godes riche bote he beo ifulhted.

Of Baptism.

<sup>2</sup> Much rubbed in MS.

of elene liflade spec þe prophete isaias and þus seið. *Lauamini mundi estote.* wascheð ou<sup>1</sup> and wonieð elene. and dauid þe prophete spekeð in an salm of elene lif and seið. *Asperges me domine isopo & mundabor* bi-spreng me lauerd mid buhsommenesse<sup>1</sup> þenne wurðe ic elene. & *alibi. Delicto meo munda me domine.* and on oðer stude he seið. lauerd clense me of alle mine fule sunnen.

Of a pure life.

and þeh alle men beon of hore sunnen ielensed \*et<sup>3</sup> þe fulht<sup>1</sup> noþeles heo aȝen for to cumen<sup>4</sup> heore bileue. onforward þos cristendomes ech man leornede his bileue er he fulht underfenge. Ah þa weren monie childre dede fulhtles. and forlorne. þer fore hit wes iloked bi godes wissunge ine halie chirche. þet mon seule childre fulhten and heore godfaderes and heore godmoderes scullen onswerie for hem et þe chirche dure and beo in borȝes et þe fonstan þet heo sculen beon bi-lefulle .Men. and heore bileue cunnen<sup>1</sup>

At Baptism we are cleansed of our sins.

\* [Fol. 26a.]

<sup>3</sup> MS. ec.

<sup>4</sup> ? cunnen.

wenne heo lorne muȝe. and þis ne mei þe godfadres ne þe

Why young children are baptized.

and godmothers cannot do, except they themselves know their belief, that is, *Pater noster* and *Creed*. No man should himself refuse (to learn) when any one for (his) need thereto offers (to teach him). Therefore we will begin our lore-spell (doctrine) of (concerning) belief. The true belief was committed to writing by the twelve apostles ere they separated and went throughout this earth; and each of them wrote one verse thereof; and St. Peter wrote the first. And the psalm that they all thus wrote was called Creed, after the first word of the psalm. You all, I expect, know at least your creed, though you do not all know the meaning of it. Attend now thereto, and I will repeat it word after word, and therewith what the words signify. This word 'creed' we may understand in three ways. The first is *Credo Deo*—I believe God; the second is *Credo Deum*—I believe that God is. These two things do all heathen men believe. But the third no man believeth except the good Christian and the God-fearing and the believing (faithful), *Qui credit in Deum*—who believeth in God; and to believe in God five things are necessary. *Silicet, eum dominum omnium cognoscere, super omnia diligere, pre omnibus timere, et venerari, eique per omnia obedire.* The first is to acknowledge him as Lord over all things; the second is to love him above all things; the third is to stand in awe of him above all things; the fourth is to honour him above all things; the fifth is to obey him before all things. The man that hath these same five things in him is a believing (faithful) man, and if he lacks any thereof, he is not as faithful as it behoveth him to be. *Credo in Deum*, I believe in God, *patrem omnipotentem*, the Father Almighty, *creatorem cæli et terræ*, creator and ruler of heaven, and earth, and of all creatures; *et in Jesum Christum*, and I believe in the Saviour Christ, *filium ejus unicum*, his only Son, *Dominum nostrum*, our Lord. He is called Saviour for he healed mankind of the deathly venom that the old devil blew into Adam and Eve and all their offspring, so that their fivefold powers were all taken from them; that is, their hearing, their sight, their blowing (breathing), their smelling, and their feeling were all poisoned, but he healed them with his five holy wounds when he suffered for us on the cross, and gave everlasting freedom to as many as would receive it. He is his only Son, not adopted, but begotten;

godmodres don: buten heo cunnen heore bileue. *pet* is. *pater noster. and credo.* Ne na .*Mon.* nah him solue wernen henne<sup>1</sup> .*Mon.* him for node per to bide. per fore we willen biginne ure larspel of bileue. *pet* rihte ileue setten þe twelue apostles on write er heo to-wenden in to al þis middelerd. *and* ec of heom wrat per of his uers. *and sancte peter* wrat *pet* ereste. *and* þe salm *pet* heo alle þus writen wes ihaten. *Credo.* efter þan formeste word of þe salm. Alle 3e kunnen leste *pet* ich wene ower *credo.* þeh 3e nuten nawiht alle hwat hit seið. Numeð nu zeme þerto *and* ic ou wile seggen word efter word *and* þermide hwat *pet* word bi-queþ. Þis word. *credo.* *Mon* mei understonden. on þro wise. *pet* on is: *Credo deo.* Ih ileue gode. *pet* oðer is: *Credo deum.* ich ileue *pet* god is. þos twa þing doð alle heðene men. ah *pet* [þridde] ne leueð nan: bute þe gode cristene .*Mon.* *and* þe godfurhte *and* þe lefulle \**qui credit in deum.* þe bileued in god. *and* to luene<sup>2</sup> ine god: mote fif þing. *Silicet. eum dominum omnium cognoscere. super omnia diligere. pre omnibus timere. & uenerari eique per omnia obedire.* *Pet* an is iknawen him to lauerd ouer alle þing. *pet* oðer is luuen him ouer alle þing. *pet* þridde is: habben heie of him ouer alle þing. *pet* forþe is: wurþen him ouer alle þing. *pet* fifte is: beon him ibuesum ouer alle þing. Þe .*Mon.* *pet* haueð þis ilke fif þing mid him: he is leful .*Mon.* *and* if him is eni þer of wane: he nis nawiht also leful also him bi-houede. *Credo in deum.* Ic ileue in god. *patrem omnipotentem.* þe fede[r] almihti. *Creatorem celi & terre.* scuþpende *and* weldende of heouene *and* of orðe *and* of alle iscefte & in *ihesum christum.* *and* ich ileue on þe helende crist. *filium eius unicum.* his enlepi sune. *dominum nostrum.* ure lauerd he is ihaten helende for he moneun helede of þan depliche atter. *pet* þe alde deouel blou on adam. *and* on eue. *and* on al heore ofsprinke. swa *pet* heore fif-falde mihte<sup>3</sup> hom wes al binumen. *pet* is hore lust. hore loking. hore blawing. hore smelling. heore feling wes al iattret. ac he hom helde mid his halie fif wunden þa he polede for us ine þe halie rode. *and* gef hom eche frechipe alle þa *pet* hit alde<sup>4</sup> cunnen. he is his enlupi sune. nawiht efter þopnuinge. ac efter istrone.

<sup>1</sup> ? þenne.

The Belief was composed by the twelue Apostles.

Why called Creed.

The first word has a three-fold meaning.

\* [Fol. 26b.]

<sup>2</sup> ? leuene.

Five things necessary to true belief.

I believe in God the Father Almighty, And in Jesus Christ, &c.

Why our Lord is called Saviour.

<sup>3</sup> MS. inihle, ? for inihle.

Christ's five wounds healed man's five poisoned senses.

<sup>4</sup> ? walde.

for He begot Him as the sun generates light, which he spreads abroad into all this wide world. And the Father is in the Son in three ways:—in strength, for he is great and mighty above all things; in form (beauty), for the sun and moon darken before his beauty; in virtue, for he is full of all goodness. And though he be the lord of all creatures, because he created all things, nevertheless he is not the lord of all men, though all men are subject to him, but he is lord only of the faithful and God-fearing men and good Christians that believe on God; for all other men that commit grievous sins and will not forsake them are under the devil's rule, and it availeth them not while in this state to sing pater noster and creed. May God give good belief to all those that have it not, and grant that we and all others that have it keep it unto their life's end. *Qui conceptus est, &c.* We have commenced to tell you the meaning of the creed, and have said two verses thereof, and will now pass on to the third. And I believe in the Saviour, whom the holy virgin conceived in her body, not after the will (desire) of the flesh, nor after carnal conception, but even as ye receive the words that I speak to you from my mouth, so she conceived our Lord when the angel brought her the blissful tidings, thus saying, *Ecce concipies in utero et paries filium*—Thou shalt conceive a child in thy womb, and bear a male child and call it Saviour, and it shall be king in the everlasting kingdom. And the holy maiden answered and said, *Quomodo fiet istud, &c.*—How shall that be, since no man hath touched my body nor hath had carnal intercourse with me. Then answered the angel and said, *Spiritus sanctus, &c.*\*

\* The MS. here ends rather abruptly, but another version of the concluding portion of this homily will be found in the discourse on the *Pater noster* in the Trinity College homilies, in Series ii. of this Collection.

for þan he him also þe sunne streonþ þe lome þet ho spret in to  
 al þis wide \*worlde. *and* þe fader is inc þe sune on þre wise.  
 On waeste: for he is muchel *and* mihti ouer alle þing. On  
 wlite: for sunne *and* mone þostreþ for his fairnesse. On þewe.  
 for he is ful of alle godnesse. *and* þeð<sup>1</sup> he beo alle ichefte lauerd  
 for he alle þing iscop. nopeles he nis nawiht alle monne lauerd.  
 þech alle men bon on his onwald: but lefulle monne lauerð.  
*and* þe godfurhte. *and* gode cristene .Monne. lauerd: þet on god  
 bileueð. for alle oðre .men. þet heuie sunnen drecheð. *and* nulleð  
 heore sunnen forleten: boð on þe doules on-walde. *and* þet  
 hwile ne studed hom nawiht þet ho singe pater noster. *and*  
 credo. God zefe gode leue alle þa þet hit nabbet. *and* ihalde  
 hit us. *and* alle oðre þa hit habbeð to hore lines ende. *Qui*  
*conceptus est & cetera.* We habbeð bigunnen on to seggen on  
 englisch hwat bi-qu[c]þ þe crede. *and* habbeð on iscið twa uers.  
*and* wule nuþe þet þridde. *and* ic ileue on þene helend þe þet  
 halie meide in hire likame underfeng. nawiht efter flesces wille.  
 nē efter likames ikunde: ah alswa also 3c nimeð þe worde þet  
 iho<sup>2</sup> speke to ou of mine muþe swa ho ifeng ure drihten. þa þe  
 engel hire brohte þe blisfulle tidinge. þus queþende. *Ecce con-*  
*cipies in utero & paries filium.* þu scald underfon an child in þi  
 wombe *and* bere knaue child: *and* haten hit helend *and* hit  
 seal king bon on þet eudelese kineriche. *and* þet hali meiden  
 onswerede *and* seide. *quomodo fiet istud & cetera.* \*hu scal þat  
 bon soppen na .Mon. mine likame irineð ne mid me flesliche  
 nefde to donne. þa onswerede þe engel *and* seide. *spiritus*  
*sanctus & cetera.*

The Son has  
 the properties  
 of the Father.  
 \* [Fol. 27a.]

1? þeh.

Christ is not  
 all men's lord,  
 but only the  
 Christian  
 man's lord.

The second  
 verse of the  
 Creed.

Of the  
 miraculous  
 conception,

2 sic.

and its an-  
 nouncement  
 to the Virgin  
 Mary.

\* [Fol. 27b.]



## VIII.

## THE NATIVITY OF OUR LORD.

*Homo quidam descendebat ab Jerusalem in Jericho, et cetera.* God Almighty hath spoken a parable to his people in the holy gospel, and saith, A man went down from Jerusalem into Jericho, and fell among thieves, who robbed him and sore wounded him, and let him lie half alive, and went on their way. There came a priest by the way and helped him not, but went on his way; there came a deacon [Levite], &c. Then came there a foreign man [Samaritan] and had pity upon him and washed his wounds with wine and anointed them with oil and bound his wounds, and put him upon his own horse and brought him to an inn and consigned him to the innkeeper to be taken care of. On the morrow he gave him two pence to spend on him, and said, "and if thou spendest more of thine own, when I return I will repay it thee." Now it behoveth us to break these words, just as we break the nut for to get at the kernel. This man that went down from Jerusalem into Jericho betokens Adam our forefather who fell from an exalted position to a low one. Jerusalem denotes "Sight (vision) of peace," and Jericho signifies "absence of light." Here we may understand that he fell from high to low, when he fell from that blissful abode into the wanting of bliss. He fell among thieves. What are the thieves? They are those that were once angels in heaven, and fell out for their pride. When he fell among them and followed their lore, and broke Christ's behests, then they robbed him of the great power that Christ had given him, over all the earth's produce, over the fishes in the water, and fowls in the air, and all kinds of wild animals, and all kinds of reptiles. Adam might call all of them unto him and all would come unto him. But as soon as he sinned they all fled and shunned him—those that before loved him now wounded him. When he felt ashamed before his Creator, then he suffered thirst and hunger and cold and every

## VIII.

[DE NATALE DOMINI.]\*

[*H*] *omo quidam descendebat ab ierusalem in ierico. & cetera.* Godalmiti seið an forbisne to his folk in þe halie godspel *and* seið. A mon lihte from ierusalem in to ierico. *and* fol imong þoues. ho him bireueden. *and* ho him ferwunden *and* letten hine liggen half quie. *and* wenden forð. Þer com a prost bi þe weie *and* him nawiht ne help; *and* wende forð þer com an diaene. *et cetera.* þa com þer an helendis .Mon. *and* heuede roupe of him. *and* wesch his wunden mid wine. *and* smerede mid oli *and* bond his wunden. *and* brohte him huppen his werue. *and* brohte him to an hors huse. *and* bitahte hine þe hors horde; to witene. A þe marzen bitahte him twa penezes to spenen on him *and* seide. *and* 3if þu mare spenest of þine hwan ic a3en cherre; al ic þe 3elde. Nu hit iburd breke þas word; alse me brekeð þe nute for to habbene þene curnel. Þes .Mon. phet a lihte from ierusalem in to ierico. þet his bitacned adam ure forme feder; þet alihte from hehe in to lahe. Ierusalem bitacneð gripes sihþe. *and* ierico; truinge of lihte. her me mei understonde þet he \*alihte from hehe to lahe from derewurð wuninge; in to wone of blisse. He uol imong þeues. hwet boð þas þeues; þet boð þo þet weren imakede engles in houene. *and* fellen ut for hore wrechede. þe he uel imong hom *and* fole3ede hore lare; *and* brec cristes heste. þa ho hine bireueden of þere muchele mihte. þet crist him hefde i3efen of al þer orþe scrude of þe uisceas iþe wetere. *and* fuzeles iþe luhte. *and* alles cunnes wilde dor; *and* alles cunnes wurmes. Al adam him mihte to clopie. *and* al walde him to cume. Al se hwat se he forgulte wes; al hit him ulel<sup>1</sup> *and* seunede; þet him er luuede ho him for wunden; þa þe he heuede scome a3eines his scuppende. þa he hefde þurst *and* hunger *and* chele *and* alle wreche siþe; ho hine bilefde liggen

The text.

The parable of the Good Samaritan.

How the Samaritan, a foreign man, took care of him whom the thieves left half-quick.

The man who went from Jerusalem to Jericho denotes Adam.

\* [Fol. 28a.]

The thieves are the fallen angels,

who deprived man of his earthly power.

Adam's sin brought upon him

<sup>1</sup> ? uleh.

hunger, thirst, cold, and other miseries.

\* For the probable commencement of this discourse, see homily "In die natalis Domini," in Second Series of this Collection.

misery. They (the devils) left him half alive; half alive he was when that he had sorrow within himself for his sins. Here we ought to understand why it says "half alive" and not "half dead." Hereof we may take an example by two brands (torches), when the one is aquenched altogether, and the other is aquenched except a little spark; the one that hath the one spark in it we may blow and it will quicken (revive) and kindle the whole brand. The brand that is wholly quenched, though one blow on it for ever, may never again be kindled. These two brands betoken two men: the one sinneth and is sorry for his sin, but cannot subdue his flesh. We may preach to this man with God's word, through which he will forsake his sins and believe and be enkindled of the Holy Ghost, as is the brand of the little fire. This other man sinneth and loveth his sins, as doth the fat swine to lie in the foul mire. This same man is hard to preach to; but Christ may enlighten him with (a) gracious mind. We may understand by this that Adam was sorry for the sins that he had committed, and for this sorrow it is said that he was left half alive. Now cometh the priest that helped him not: this betokens the world that was from the beginning and lasted ever unto the time of Moses the prophet. In this world there was neither law nor law-expounder, and though the patriarchs, as Abel and Noah, Abraham and Isaac, were good men, being enlightened of the Holy Ghost, yet all this goodness could not preserve them from going into hell; and all this period elapsed and ever lay this wretch forwounded. Now is the priest gone and hath helped him not. Now cometh this deacon: that betokens Moses the prophet, who brought the law (of circumcision)—that on the eighth day the male child should be circumcised with a flint knife; and he established law and lore among mankind, how they should serve God Almighty and perform his will upon earth; and all this could not preserve them from going into hell. Now is this deacon gone. Now comes the foreign man and hath pity upon this wounded man. He is called foreign for he is from a foreign (uncouth) land, (and betokens) the king of heaven who came upon earth and turned himself into his (man's) form. Hereof speaketh St. John the Evangelist in the Apocalypse, A fowl came flying from heaven into earth; here he took covering of feathers and wings. With this flight he flew into

half quic. half quic ho wes! þa þe he sarinesse heuede wið-innen him! for his sunnen. Her me ah to understonden for-whi hit seið alf quic. *and* noht alf ded. her of me mei ane forbisne of twa brondes. hwanne þe an is aquenched al to gederes. *and* þe oðer is aquenched al buten a gnast þene þet haued þene ene gnast upen him. me mei blauwen. *and* he wule aqwikien *and* al þe brond tenden. þe brond þe is al aquenched þah me blouwe efre! ne quikeð he neure. þas twa brondes bitacneð twein men. þe an sunegeð. *and* is sari for his sunne. ah he ne mei his flesc awelden. þis monne me mei sermonen \*mid godes worde. for hwat he scal his sunne uor-saken *and* bileuen *and* bon itent of þen hali gast. Also is þe brond of þe lutle fiure. Þes oðer .Mon. þet sunegeð *and* lueð his sunnen also deð þet fette swin þet fule fen to ligger in. þes ilke .Mon. is strong to sermonen! ah *crist* hine tende mid holde mode þer we muzen understonde þet adam wes sari uor þe sunne þet he heuede idon. *and* for þisse sarinesse hit is iseid! þet he wes half quic bileued. Nu cumeð þe prest þet him nawiht ne help. þis bitacneð þe world þet wes from biginnegge *and* eue! þat cume to moises þe prophete. In þisse worlde nas na laze ne na larþeu. *and* þah þes patriarches also abel *and* noe *and* abraham *and* ysaac. gode men weren þurh þet ho weren itende of þan halie gast. *and* al þos godnesse hom ne mihte werien. þet ho ne wenden alle in to helle. *and* al þos world wende forþ *and* efre lei þes wreeche for-wunden. Nu is þes prest uorþe. *and* him naueþ nawiht iholpen. Nu cumeð þes diakne! þet bitacneð moyses þe prophete. he brohte þe laze! þet me sculde in þe ehtuþe dei þet knaue child embsnipen mid ane ulint sexe. *and* sette imong monkunne laze *and* lare hu me sulde godalmihti serue. *and* his wille wurchen in orðe. *and* al þis hom helpe ne mihte! þet ho ne wenden alle in to helle. Nu is þes deakne forþe. Nu kumeð þes helendis .Mon. *and* haueð reunesse of þisse forwundede \*.Mon. elelendis<sup>1</sup> he is icleped for he is of unkuþe þode. þe king of heuene þe com in to herþe *and* auenede<sup>2</sup> him in to his iscefte. her of seid! seint Iohan þe ewangeliste in apocalipsi. A vuhel com flon from houene into orðe. her he uette feþer-home *and* wenge mid þisse fluhte he fleh into

The devils left him "half-quick."

The term "half-quick" is explained by two brands.

The two brands denote two sorts of men.

\* [Fol. 28b.]

The priest who helped not the wounded man denotes the world before the time of Moses.

The deacon betokens Moses the prophet.

\* [Fol. 29a.]

<sup>1</sup> ? elendis.

The foreign man betokens Christ.

<sup>2</sup> ? awende.

heaven, where he took that form which was not his own, and re-linguished nought of what he was. This is to be understood of the Son of the living God, the great Lord that filleth all the world of himself, who enclosed himself in a virgin's womb, as the sun shineth through the glass window without breaking or cracking the glass. And the sun shineth there through, and receiveth whatsoever colour it thereon findeth ; if the glass is red, it shineth red. In like manner did the Son of the living God come into the virgin, and she blemished not at all her maidenhood. If she were blemished in her maidenhood, then her son could not have had the name that was given him at circumcision, that was Saviour ; and if he had marred the maidenhood of his mother, then could not the breaker be called healer. [He is called healer] because he came and healed, who never broke. He is called foreign because he is here and is not from hence. This man who came from heaven into earth and took man's nature upon him for man's sake, what need had mankind that he should become man ? Man had lost the right of speaking before God ; then came this man who had never sinned and who might speak everywhere. This man became spokesman. He reconciled God and man. He came to this forwounded man. Well ! he came to him when he became such as he is, only without sin. He was bathed in wine and anointed with oil. We ought to understand what the weapons are that Adam was wounded with—with the same weapons we are wounded—with the spear of pride, of covetousness, of greediness, of wrath, of whoredom, with envy, with sloth. These are the weapons that Adam was wounded with. Now it behoveth the wounded wretch to have a physician (leech). We are wounded and stand in need of a leech. Adam was healed through God Almighty himself, and it behoveth us to be healed through the priest's mouth. He washed his wounds with wine. What is wine in a wound ? Wine maketh the wound smart, but the smarting cleanseth the wound, so that it receives no further injury. Just so holy shrift shall be in our wounds when we fast and renounce the flesh and much of our will (lusts) on account of our sins. What is the oil ? Oil hath in itself the properties of lightness and softness and healing. Such shalt thou have when thou hast performed thy shrift of thy misdeeds, then shalt thou have lightness and softness and healing. This



houene þer he uatte *þet* he nes *and* nawiht ne lefde of *þet* he wes.  
 þis is to understonden *þet* hit wes þes liuendes godes sune þe  
 muchele lauerd : *þet* al þe world fulleð of him solue. bitunde him  
 solue *in* ane meidenes inneþe also þe sunne scineð þurh þe glesne  
 ehþurl. *þet* gles ne brekeð ne chineð *and* þe sunne schineð þer  
 þurh. *and* ho nimeð al swuch hou also ho þer on uint. 3if *þet*  
 gles is red : ho schineð red. Also þe liuendes godes sune *in* to  
 þe meidene com. *and* ho of hire meiden-had nawiht ne wemde.  
 3ef ho awemmed were of hire meiden-had : þenne ne mihte noht  
 hire sune habbe þene nome *þet* him wes iʒefen at circumcisiun *þet*  
 wes helend. *and* 3ef he hefde on his moder ibroken hire meiden-  
 had : ne mihte nawiht brekere bon icloped helere. for-þi he com  
*and* bette þe ne brec nefre. for-þi he is icleped elelendis. for-þi  
 þe here he is : *and* honen he nis. þes .Mon. *þet* com þus from  
 houene *in* to horðe *and* uppen him nom monnes icunde for  
 monnes node. Hwet node efde moncun *þet* he .Mon. were : Mon  
 hefde uorloren \*efre stephne bi-uore gode. þa com þes .Mon.  
 he nefre ne gulte. þes mihte speken ouer al þes .Mon bi-com  
 uorspeker. he isehtneð god *and* man. he com bi þis forwundede  
 mon. Wel he com bi him : þa he bi-com alswich also he : wip-  
 ute sunne ane. He wes iwunde mid wine. *and* smirede mid oli.  
 We aʒen to understonden hwet boð þe wepne *þet* adam wes mide  
 forwunded. mid þa ilke wepne we boð forwunded. mid spere of  
 prude. of ʒiteunge. of ʒifernesse. of eorre. of hordome. mid onde.  
 mid aswolkenesse. þis boð þa wepne *þet* adam was mide for-  
 wounded. Nu bihoueð þe forwunded wreche *þet* he habbe leche.  
 we boð forwunded us bi-houed leche. Adam wes ilechned þurh  
 god almihti solf. *and* us bi-houeð leche þurh prestes muð. he  
 weis his wunde mid wine. hwet is win in wunde : Win makeð  
 wunde smerte. Ah þe smertinge clenseð þe wunde : swa *þet* ho  
 ne seal of þere wunde habbe nan oðer uuel. Al so hali scrift  
 bið in mine [ure]<sup>1</sup> wunde hwan we scale<sup>2</sup> festen. *and* fleis bileuen  
*and* muchel of ure [mine] wille for ure [mine] wrechede. Hwet  
 is *þet* oli : Oli haueð huppen him lihtnesse *and* softnesse *and*  
 hele. Also þu scalt habben hweerne þu hauest idon þi scrift of  
 þine misdede þenne þu scalt habbe lihtnesse *and* softnesse *and*

The mira-  
culous con-  
ception ex-  
plained.

The purity of  
the Virgin  
Mary.

Christ took  
upon him  
man's nature.

\* [Fol. 29b.]

He became  
our spokes-  
man.

The weapons  
with which  
Adam was  
wounded  
were pride,  
covetousness,  
&c.

God healed  
Adam of his  
wounds.

Wine denotes  
holy shrift.

<sup>1</sup> The words  
in brackets  
are written  
above the  
others.

<sup>2</sup> ? scule.

The oil de-  
notes the  
comfort aris-  
ing from  
shriff.



is the oil, the great satisfaction (reward) that thou shalt have when thou hast repented of thy misdeeds. Then he brought him on his own beast, that is a rude mare, which denoteth our vile flesh whensoever we have made the body subject to the soul. He brought him to an inn and delivered him to the innkeeper and bad him take care of the wounded man. What is this inn? It is holy church. What is holy church? All Christian folk. Wherefore? In holy church are better and worse. Even so in an inn there are foul and clean. He that hath charge of the inn shall make it clean wherever it is foul. That betokeneth the priest who shall among Christian men cleanse the sinful of their sins. He hath on the morrow received two pence which the foreign man gave him. These are the two laws, the old and the new which the priest shall spend among all his flock. If he spendeth more of his own when he again returneth he will repay him the whole of it. What is this that he may spend more of his own? Good example of his own conduct; also all those that are under him, that take more upon them than (is commanded by) the behest of holy church, that is to say, the maiden that preserveth her virginity, which is not a behest of holy church, and the widow her widowhood, and a man to forsake the world. In the day of award when God Almighty shall winnow what was before thrashed out, he will see which are those that can withstand the lust of the flesh and have restrained the will of their own flesh. That is denoted by the corn that the wind pierceth through, [and] by the small chaff that flieth forth with the wind [and] becometh rubbish. The corn we put into the garner, betokeneth the good man who shall be received into heaven; those that follow the lust of the flesh, as the small chaff doth the wind, shall remain (for ever) in darkness. May God Almighty shield us that we be not of the small chaff, but that we may be of the corn that shall be placed in the garner, that is, in heaven, with the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, *per omnia secula seculorum*. Amen.

hele. þis is *pet* oli þe muchele mede *pet* \*þu scalt habben \* [Fol. 30a.]  
 hwenne þu hauest ibet þine misdeden. þenne he brohte hine  
 uppen his werue *pet* is unorne mare. *pet* bitacneð ure unorne  
 fleis. hwense we habbeð imaked þene licome to þer saule bihoue.  
 he hine brohte to aue hors-huse. *and* bitahte hine þan hors-  
 horde. *and* bed hine witen þene forwundede .Mon. H[w]et is  
 þis hors-us? *pet* is hali chirche. hali chirche hwet is? al eristene  
 folc. for hwon? In halie chirche boð betere *and* wurse. Also  
 in hors-huse boð fule *and* elene. he *pet* haueð *pet* hors-hus te  
 witene? scal þer. þer hit is ful? makien hit elene. *pet* bitakneð  
 þe prost *pet* scal among cristene monkun þene sunfulle of sunne  
 clensen. he haueð oþe marzen þa twein penezes þe þe helelendisse.<sup>1</sup> 1? helendisse.  
 Mon. bitahte. *pet* boð þa twa lazen þe alde *and* þe nowe *pet* prost  
 scal spenen among al his underþede. 3ef he mare speneð of his?  
 hwense he aȝein cherreð al he hit him wule ȝelden. hwet is *pet*  
 he mei mare spenen of his aȝen? feire forbisne of his aȝene  
 liflade. Also alle þo *pet* him boð underþede. *pet* nimeð mare  
 uppen hom þen þe heste of hali chirche. *pet* is to understonden.  
 Meiden *pet* hire meiden-hat wit. *and* haldeþ so se hit nis noht  
 heste of hali chirche. *and* widewe of hire widewe-had \*ne .Mon.  
 þe worlde to forsaken. In þe deie of liureisun hwense god al-  
 mihtin wule windwin *pet* er wes ipor[s]chen. he wile ison hwiche  
 boð þo. *pet* muȝe stonden aȝein þes fleisces lust *and* wernen his  
 aȝene fleisces iwillle. *pet* bitakneð *pet* corn *pet* þurleð þe wind. *pet*  
 smal chef *pet* flid ford mid þe winde? bicumeð wurpinge *pet*  
 eorn me deð in to gerner. *pet* bitakeneð þe gode men þe scule  
 bon idon in to heuene. þe ilke þe foleȝeð þes fleisces lust. Also  
 deð *pet* smalchef þe winde? þo seule bileuen in þosternesne.  
 God almihtin isilde ut *pet* we ne bo noht of þe smalcheue.  
 Ah *pet* we moten bon of þe corne þe me scal don in to þe  
 gernere *pet* is in to heuene? þe feder *and* þe sune *and* þe halie  
 gast. *per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.

The mare  
denotes our  
flesh.

The inn is  
holy church,  
in which are  
good and bad.

1? helendisse.

The two  
pence are the  
old and the  
new laws.

How the  
priest may  
spend more  
of his own.

\* [Fol. 30b.]

The separa-  
tion of the  
good from  
the evil at  
doomsday.

May we be of  
the corn that  
shall be put  
into the  
heavenly gar-  
ner.

## IX.

## THE DAY OF PENTECOST.

From the holy Easter Day are reckoned fifty days unto this day ; and this day is called Pentecost, that is, the fiftieth day of (from) Eastertide. This day was established and observed in the old law. God bade Moses in the land of Egypt that he and all the Israelitish folk whom he had led thither, that they of each family should offer to God a lamb of one year old, and mark with the blood their doors and lintels, as on that same night God's angel went and killed the eldest and dearest child in each house of the Egyptian folk, and the Israelites departed from that land that very night, for they had there endured great affliction, and God led them dry-footed over the Red Sea. Then went Pharaoh, the king of the land, after them with a great army, and when they came into the midst of the sea, then were God's folk gone up from the sea again, and then God sank Pharaoh and all his host. God then bade Moses and the people that they should observe this time, with great bliss, each year. Then was this season ordained among the people as Eastertide, because God rid them of and destroyed their enemies. Then fifty days from Eastertide God gave laws to the people. And God's foretoken was seen upon a hill, that is, the mount of Sinai, for there came great light, and (an) awful sound, and blowing of trumpets. Then God called Moses nearer to him, and he was with God forty days and wrote the old law under God's direction. Then was this day called Pentecost in the Old Testament. The lamb offered up by the command of the angel betokeneth Christ's death, who was meek and without guilt, offered to his father for our ransom. Now is his passion and his resurrection our Eastertide, because he delivered us from the devil's bondage, as he delivered the Israelites from Pharaoh's bondage. And our foes, the devils, are sunk into hell through the holy

## IX.

## [IN DIE PENTECOSTEN.]

[F]ram þan halie hester dei: boð italde. fifti daza to þisse  
 deie *and* þes dei is ihaten pentecostes þet is þe fiftuða  
 dei fram þan ester tid. þes dei wes on þere alde laze iset *and*  
 ihalden. God het Moyses on egipte londe þet he *and* al þet  
 israelisce folc þet he pider iled hefde: þet heo sculden offrien of  
 elchan hiwscipe gode an lomb of ane zeres *and* merki mid þan  
 blode hore duren. *and* hore ouersleht. þa on þere ilke nihte:  
 iwende godes engel to *and* acwalde on elche huse of þam egiptiss-  
 en folche þet frumkenede childe *and* þet lefeste: *and* þet israelisce  
 folc ferde on þere ilca nihte of þam londe. forðon muchele wawen  
 þet hi þer iðoleden. \**and* god hom ledde ofer þa rede se: mid  
 druze fotan. þa iwende pharaon þe kin[g] of þam londe efter  
 heom ledde<sup>1</sup> muchele ferde. þa þe heo comen on midden þere se.  
 þa wes þet godes folc<sup>2</sup> up of þere se agan. *and* god bisencte þa þe  
 pharaon: *and* al his genge. Ða het god moyse *and* þan folce þet  
 heo heolden þa tid mid muchlere blisse ewilche zere þa wes þon  
 folce iset þo tid to estertide: for þon god heom aredde wið  
 heore ifan *and* heom fordude. Ða fram þam ester tid fifti daza  
 isette god þam folke laze. *and* wes isezen godes fortacne uppon  
 ane dune þat is þe mont of synai. for þet<sup>3</sup> com muchel liht. *and*  
 eislic swei *and* blawende beman. þa cleopede god þe<sup>4</sup> ner Moyses  
 him to. and he wes mid gode fowerti dazes *and* awrat þa alde e  
 bi godes wissunge. þa wes þe dei pentecostes ihaten on þere alde  
 isetnesse. þet i-offrede lomb þet þe engel het offrian bitacneð  
 cristes deðþe þet wes milde. *and* wiðutan gulte his feder i-offrad:  
 for ure alesendnesse. Nu is his þrowunge *and* his ariste ure  
 ester tid: forðon þet he us alesde from deofles þewdome alswa  
 he alesde þet israelisce folc of pharaones þewdome *and* ure ifan  
 þet beoð þa deofles beoð bisencte in to helle þurh þe halie fullht

The feast of Pentecost on the fiftieth day from the feast of Pass-over, which was instituted by Moses in Egypt.

\* [Fol. 31a.]

God led the Israelites dry-footed over the Red Sea.

<sup>1</sup> ? mide.

<sup>2</sup> MS. foel.

Fifty days after, the old law was given to Moses.

<sup>3</sup> ? þer.

<sup>4</sup> MS. þe.

Easter commemorates Christ's passion and resurrection.

baptism, if we observe it aright, even as Pharaoh with his host was (drowned) in the Red Sea. These fifty days from Easter Day are all hallowed unto one thanksgiving (celebration), and this day is our Pentecost Day, that is, our Whitsunday, which is the fiftieth day from Easter Day. On the old Pentecost God gave a law to the Israelites how they should lead their life; on this day came the Holy Ghost under the form of fire to God's company. And forasmuch as the lamb typified Christ's passion, so also the old law in Moses' days typified the preaching of the Gospel under God's grace. Three periods are there in this world. One is that which was without law, the second is that which was under the law, the third is now after the advent of Christ. This period is ordained under (by) God's grace. We are not without law, nor may we observe the Mosaic law bodily, but God's grace directs us to his will, if we be mindful of God's behests and of the apostle's lore (precepts). It is related in the epistolary lesson how the Holy Ghost on this day came to the faithful assembly. Luke the evangelist wrote it in the book that is called Acts of the Apostles, saying, *Cum complerentur dies pentecostes erant omnes discipuli pariter in eodem loco. Et factus est repente de caelo sonus tanquam advenientis spiritus vehementis et replevit totam domum ubi erant sedentes.* The holy assembly of Christ's apostles were abiding patiently (unanimously) in their prayers in an upper chamber, after Christ's ascension, awaiting his promise; when, on this day, that is, Pentecost, which in our speech is called Whitsunday, there came suddenly a great sound from heaven and filled all the upper chamber with fire. And there was seen before (above) each of them, as it were, fiery tongues, and they were then all filled with the Holy Ghost and began to speak with divers tongues according as the Holy Ghost taught them. Then were there gathered together within the city of Jerusalem true (pious) men of every nation that dwelt under heaven, and the apostles spake to the assembly of the people and each of them recognised his own speech. Then were the people much amazed, and in astonishment thus spake, *None ecce omnes isti Galilei sunt; et quomodo nos audivimus unusquisque linguam nostram in qua nati sumus.* Behold! are not these that here speak Galileans, and each of us hath heard how they speak our own speech in which we were born? Lo! what shall this be? Then said the Jewish men



3if we hit ariht haldeð alswa pharaon wes mid his ferde on þare rede se. Ðas fifti dazes fram þan esterliche \*deie beoð alle ihal-  
 3ode to ane herunge: *and* þes dei is ure pentecostes dei. *þet* is ure witte sunnedei *þet* is þe fifeo3aðe dei fram þam ester deie. on þam ealdan pentecoste god sette .e. þam israelisce folce hu heo sculden heore lif leaden: on þisse deie com þe halie gast on fures heowe to godes hirede. forði alswa *þet* lomb bitacnede cristes þrowunge: Swa ec þeo alde .e. on moyses dazen bitacneðe godspelles bodunge: under godes 3ife. Ðreo tide beoð on þissere worlde. An is *þet* wes buten .e. *and* oðer is þe *þet* wes under þere .e. þe þridde is nu efter cristes to-cume. Þeos tide iset under godes 3ife. we ne beoð na buten .e. ne we ne moten. halden moyses .e. licamliche. Ac godes 3ife us wissað to his willen. 3if we imundie beoð godes bibode *and* þera apostla lare. Hit is ireht on þes pistles redinge: hu þe halia gast on þisse deie com to þan ileanfullen hirede. Lucas þe godspellere awrat on þere boc *þet* is inemned *actus apostolorum*. *and* eweð. *Cum complerentur dies pentecostes erant omnes discipuli pariter in eodem loco. Et factus est repente de celo sonus tanquam aduenientis spiritus uehementis & repleuit totam domum ubi erant sedentes.* Ðat halie hired cristes apostles weren wuniende edmodliche<sup>1</sup> on heore ibeoden on ane upflore \*after cristes upstize onbodinde his bi-hates. þa on þisse deie *þet* is pentecostes *and* wittesunnedeie on ure speche: com ferliche muchel swei of heofne *and* fulde al þa upfleunge<sup>2</sup> mid fure. And wes ise3en biforan heore elehe swile hit were furene tungen. *and* heo weren þa alle ifullede mid þan halie gast. *and* on-gunnen to spoken mid mislichen spechen bi þam *þet* þe halie gast him talte. þa weren þer igedered wiðinne pere buruh of ierusalem trowfeste men of elehere þeode *þet* under heofene erleden. *and* þe apostles speken to þes folkes igederunge. *and* heor ecelienew<sup>3</sup> his ah3ene speche. þa iwarð þat fole swiðe abluied:<sup>4</sup> *and* mid wundrunge eweðen. *None ecce omnes isti galilei sunt: & quomodo nos audiuius unusquisque linguam nostram in qua nati sumus.* La hu ne beað þa *þet* here specað galileisce: *and* ure ele iherden hu hi spechen ure speche on þan *þet* we akenned weren: Lahwet scal þis beon: þa seiden þa iudeiscen men a

\* [Fol. 31b.]

Pentecost is  
 our Whit-  
 sunday.

On this day  
 the Holy  
 Ghost came  
 upon the  
 apostles.

It is recorded  
 by St. Luke  
 in the Acts  
 of the  
 Apostles.

<sup>1</sup> ? anmod-  
 liche.

\* [Fol. 32a.]

The descent  
 of the Holy  
 Spirit in the  
 form of fire.

<sup>2</sup> ? upfler-  
 unge.

The apostles  
 speak with  
 divers  
 tongues.

<sup>3</sup> ? elc icnew.

<sup>4</sup> ? ablicged.  
 The people  
 marvel.



in scorn, "These men are drunk with new wine." Then answered Peter, "It is undern time (the third hour), how might we at this time be drunken? But the saying of the prophet Joel is now fulfilled. God said through the mouth of the prophet that he would send his spirit over human flesh, and men's sons shall prophesy, and I will send my tokens on the earth." Peter said moreover, "Know ye assuredly that Christ arose from the dead and in our sight ascended to heaven, and sitteth on his Father's right hand, as David prophesied of him, saying, *Dixit dominus domino meo sede a dextris meis*. The Lord said to my Lord, Sit on my right hand until I put thine enemies under thy footstool." When the people heard this, then their mood changed, and they said to the apostles, "Dear men, what must we do?" Then answered Peter, "Repent of your sins and receive baptism in Christ's name, then shall your sins be forgiven and ye shall receive the Holy Ghost." Then received they his lore (doctrine), and in that day three thousand men were baptized, and they were all in unity and followed the apostles, and sold their property and gave the value of it to the apostles, and they distributed it to each according as they had need. Afterwards, at a second preaching (of the Gospel) five thousand men believed in Christ. Then became all these believing men as if they had one heart and one soul, and none of them had separate goods, but all their things were common among them, and there was no lack amongst them; and those that had land sold it and brought the worth of it to the apostles' feet, and they distributed it to each according as they had need. Then God wrought many wonders among the people through the hands of the apostles, so that they laid the sick men by (along) the street where Peter went forth, and as soon as his shadow glided over them they were healed of all infirmities. They set their hands on believing men and they received the Holy Ghost. Then was there a man named Ananias and his wife Sapphira; they agreed between themselves that they would join the apostles' company, and so they did. They took counsel together to withhold some of their goods from the apostles, for they knew not what might befall them. When the man came with his treasure (money) to the apostles, then Peter said to him, "Ananias, the devil hath deceived thine heart, and thou hast lied to the Holy Ghost. Why wouldst thou act deceit-

bismer. þas men beoð mid miste fordrencte. Ða *and*-wurde petrus. hit is undertid hu mihte we on þissere tide beon fordrencte : Ac þes witezan ewide ioheles is ifulled. God cweð þurh þes witezan muð. *þet* he walde his gast asenden ofer men-nesc flesc. *and* monna bern sculen witezan. *and* ic sende min tacna 3eond \*þa eorðe. petrus cweð þa. wite 3e soðliche *þet* crist aras of deaðe *and* on ure iwitnesse astah to heofene. *and* sit on his feder riht alfe : alswa *dauð* bi him wite3ede þus cweðinde. *Dixit dominus domino meo sede a dextris meis.* Drihten cweð to mine drihtene. site to mine riht alfe. forð *þet* ic alegge þine feond under þine fot-sceomele. þa *þet* folc þis iherde þa iturne<sup>1</sup> heore mod *and* seden to þan apostlan. Leofemen hwet is us to donne : Ða *and*-wre petrus. Bi-reowsiað eo[w]re sunnan *and* underfoð fuluht on cristes nome. þenne beoð eowre sunnen aleide *and* 3e underfoð þene halie gast. þa underfengen heo his lare *and* buzen to fulehte on þon deie : þreo þusend monna. *and* þa weren alle mid sibsumnesse : *and* fuleden þam apostles. *and* salden heore elhte *and* *þet* feh bitahten þam apostles *and* heo hit delden elcan alswa heo neode hefde. eft on ane oðre bodunge 3e-lefden fif þusend monna on criste. þa iweorden alle þos ilefede men swulche hi alle hefden ane heorte *and* ane sawle ne heore nan nefden sunderlich ehte ac heom alen wes imene heore þing ne þer nas nan wone bi-twuxan heom *and* þa *þet* lond hefden he hit sealden : *and* *þet* wurð brohten to þes apostlas fotan *and* heo hit delden elchun alswa heo neode hefden. þa warhte god feole tacne on þan folke þurh þere apostlan hondan \*swa *þet* ileiden þa untrummen men bi þere stret þere petrus forð-eoðe *and* swa reðe swa his sceadu<sup>2</sup> heom on glað heo weren iheled. from alle untrumnesse. heo setten heore honden ofer ilefde men : *and* heo underfengen þene halian gast. Þa wes þere an mon ananias ihaten *and* his wif saphira. Heo bispeken heom bitweonen : *þet* heo walden ibuzen to þere apostlan fereden *and* swa duden. Heo nomen heom to þam rede *þet* heo walden sum of heore ehte etholdan. þam apostlan : for heo nusten hwet heom ilumpe. þa com þe mon mid his gersume to þan apostolum. þa cweð petrus. Ananias þe dcofel bipichte þine heorte *and* þu hauest ilo3en þan halie gaste :

The apostles are accused of being drunk.  
St. Peter's speech.

\* [Fol. 32b.]

The mood of the people is changed.

<sup>1</sup> ? iturnde.

Three thousand are converted to Christianity.

They have all things in common.

\* [Fol. 33a.]

St. Peter's shadow heals many sick persons.

<sup>2</sup> It may be secada.

The story of Ananias and Sapphira.

fully with thine own (things)? Thou hast lied not to men, but unto God." When he heard these words then he fell down and (departed) died. When he was buried, then came his wife Sapphira and knew not what had befallen her husband. Then said Peter, "Why have ye two so done, that ye durst tempt God." When she heard this then she fell down and died, and they buried her with her husband. Then came there great dread on God's folk (church) and on all those that heard these tidings. The apostles afterwards, ere that they separated, placed James, that was called righteous (the Just), on Christ's seat, and all the faithful congregation were obedient to him, after (according to) God's teaching (instruction); he then occupied that seat thirty years, and after him Simeon, the Lord's kinsman. And after this example arose monastic life, together with the unity and concord that they should practise, according to the instruction of their abbots. Ye heard a little while before, in this discourse, that the Holy Ghost came upon the apostles with fiery tongues and gave them the power by which they knew all languages, for what the humble assembly merited from God through their meekness, that, long before, the angels of heaven had lost for their pride. It happened after Noah's flood that giants desired to rear up a city, and a tower so high that its top should ascend to heaven; and there was but one speech among all mankind, and the work was begun against God's will; therefore also God scattered them so that he gave each of the workers an uncouth (unknown) speech, and none of them knew another's speech. They then left their building and dispersed throughout all the earth, and afterwards there were as many tongues as there were workers, in all two hundred men. Now again on this day, through the coming of the Holy Ghost, all languages were again and concordantly received, for Christ's apostles were speaking in all tongues, and even more wonderfully, because when one of the apostles preached in one tongue, to each man that heard the discourse it appeared as though he spake in their own speech, whether they were Hebrews, or Greeks, or Romans, or Egyptians, or of whatsoever land they were, that heard that lore (doctrine). In this fellowship the meekness of the apostles obtained (for them) this power, and the pride of the giants earned confusion. The Holy Ghost was seen over the apostles in the form of fire, and

hwi woldest þu swikian on þine aʒene þinge! Ne luʒe þu na monnum! ac dudeſt gode. þa he þa worde iherde! þa feol he adun *and* iwat *and* þa he iburied wes! þa com his wif saphira *and* nuſte hwet hire were ilumpen wes. Ð[a] eweð *petrus* hwi iwearð hinc swa *pet* ʒit durſten fondian godes! þa heo þis iherde! þa feol heo þer adun *and* iwat *and* me buriede heo mid hire fere. Ða iwearð þer muchel eie on godes folke. *and* on alle þam *pet* þeos tiðinge iherdon. Ða apostoli siððan er þon *pet* heo toferden isetten iacob *pet* wes ihaten rihtwis on criſtes ſelt *and* alle þeo ileafulle laðunge him ihersummede! eſter godes \*tecunge. he þa iſet *pet* ſeld .xxx. ʒera *and* eſter him ſimeon þes h[e]lendes mei. *and* eſter þiſſere biſnunge weren arerede munechene lif mid. mid þere annesse *and* ſibſumneſſe *pet* heo ſculen þolien! bi heore abbodes iwiffunge. ʒe iherden a lutel er. on þiſſe redunge. *pet* ðe halie gaſt com ofer þa apoſtlas mid furene tungen! *and* heom ʒef þo mihte *pet* heo cuþen alle ſpechen! forðon *pet* ðeo edmode iſomnunge iernade et gode! *pet* muchel er þe engles of eoſene for heore modineſſe forluren. hit itimode eſter noes flode *pet* eontas walden areran ane buruh *and* anne ſtepel swa hehne! *pet* his rof aſtiʒe up to heofena. *and* þa wes an ſpeche on al moncuu. *and* *pet* weore wes bigunnen on-ʒen godes iwillan. God ec forðon heom to drefde swa *pet* he ʒef ewilecum of þan wurhtan ſelcuðe ſpeche! *and* heore nan ne icnew oðres ſpeche. þi<sup>1</sup> bileafden heo heore timbrunge *and* to dreofden ʒeond al middeleard. *and* peððan<sup>2</sup> weren swa felen ſpechen swa þere wurhten weren, *pet* weren twa hun manna. Nu eft on þiſſe deie þurh þes halie gaſtes to-cume! weren alle iſpechen aʒein inumen. *and* iſome! forðon *pet* criſtes apoſtlas weren ſpecende mid alle ſpechen. *and* ec *pet* wunderluket forðon *pet* þa an of þon apoſtlum bodeden mid ane ſpeche! eleche men wes iþuht *pet* þa bodunge iherde! ſwilche heo ſpechen mid heore ſpeche \*weren heo ebreiſſe. weren heo grekiſſe. oðer romeniſſe. oðer egiptiſſe. oðer of hwulche londe swa heo weren *pet* þe lare iherden. On þiſſere ifereden iemede<sup>3</sup> þere apoſtlan admodneſſe þas mihte. *and* þere eontan modiniſſe iarnede iſcendneſſe. þe heolia<sup>4</sup> gaſt wes iſeʒen ofer þa apoſtlas on fures heowe. *and* ofer criſt on hi[s] fuluhte on ane eulfre

The death of Ananias and Sapphira.

James appointed head of the Church.

\* [Fol. 33b.]

The apostles through meekness obtained the gift of tongues.

The giants lost it through pride.

The confusion of tongues.

1? for þi.

2? seððan.

On the day of Pentecost all speeches restored.

\* [Fol. 34a.]

3? iernede.

Of the two forms in which the Holy Ghost was seen.

<sup>4</sup> sic.

over Christ at his baptism in the likeness of a dove. Why over Christ in the form of a dove, and why over Christ's flock in the likeness of fire? Because that kind of bird is very (meek) simple, harmless, and peaceful. The Saviour is the judge of all mankind; but he came not to judge mankind, as he himself hath said, but to heal (save). If he then would have judged mankind when he first came upon earth, who would then have been saved? But he would not judge the sinful at his coming (advent), but he desired to gather them into his kingdom. He would first with gentleness direct us, that he might afterwards preserve us in (at) his doom (judgment); and therefore was the Holy Ghost (seen) upon Christ in the form of a dove, because he was living in this world in simplicity (meekness), in innocence, and in peace; for he cried not aloud, nor was he of bitter speech, nor did he ever stir up contention, but bore with man's wickedness through his gentleness. But he, who at his first advent led through kindness the sinful to goodness, will judge the guilty with stern doom (justice) at his second coming, that is, doomsday. The Holy Ghost was seen in the form of fire upon the apostles, because he made them to be burning (zealous) in God's will, and to be preaching concerning God's kingdom. Fiery tongues they had when they lovingly proclaimed the greatness of God, so that the hearts of heathen men, that were cold through unbelief and fleshly lust, might be inflamed to obey the heavenly behests. If the Holy Ghost teach not the heart of man and his mind within, in vain will be the words of preachers spoken outwardly. The nature of fire is that it consumes whatsoever is near it; even so shall the teacher do who is enkindled with the Holy Ghost, first he shall remove himself from sin, and afterwards his flock. In the likeness of a dove and in the form of fire was God's Spirit manifested, because he makes those to be meek, and without evil, and burning (zealous) in God's will, whom he fills with his grace. Simplicity (meekness) is not pleasing to God without wisdom (prudence), nor wisdom without simplicity. What is simplicity without righteousness? and what is wisdom without true love to God and to men? And therefore the Holy Ghost, who teaches both righteousness and meekness, should be manifested both as fire and as a dove, for he causes men's hearts,



onlicnesse. Hwi ofer criste on culfren heowe. *and* hwi ofer cristes hirede on fures ilicnesse: forðon þe þet fuzel-cun is swiðe bilehwit. *and* wit-utan laðe *and* isibsum. þe helend is alles moncunnes dema. Ac he ne com na to demane moncun swa se heo him seolf cweð: ac to helenne. Gif he walde þa deman moncun þa þe he erest to middleearde com. hwa weren þanne ihalden: Ac he nalde mid his to-cume þa sunfullen fordemen: ac he walde to his riche heom igederian. Erest he walde us mid liðnesse isteoren þet he mihte seoððan on his dome us ihalden. *and* forðon we[s] þe halia gast on culfren onlicnesse bufan criste. forðon þet he wes dreihninde on þissere worlde mid bilehwitnesse. *and* mid nane laðnesse *and* mid sibsumnesse. for he ne remde ne of bitere speche nes. ne he sake ne asterde: ac forbere monna hufelnesse þurh his liðnesse. Ac þe þet on þam ercan<sup>1</sup> to-cume liðgedde þan \*sunfullen to þere godnesse: he demað stiðne dom þam forsunegede on his efter to-come þet is on domes deic. þe halia gast wes isezen on fures heowe bufan þam apostlas. forðon þe he dude þet heo weren birnende on godes willan. *and* bodiende umbe godes riche. Furen tungen heo hefden þa þe heo mid lufe godes murhðe bodeden. þet ðere heðene monnan heortan þet calde weren þurh ilefleaste *and* flescliehe iwilnunge: muhten beon atende to þan heofenliche liboden. 3if þe halia gast ne leaƿð þes monnes heorte *and* his mod wið-innan: on idel beoð þes budeles word wið-utan icleopde. þes fares<sup>2</sup> icunde is þet hit forðnimeð swa hwet him neh bið. Alswa scal þe larðeu don þe ðet bið mid þen<sup>3</sup> halia gast itend. Erest he scal hine seolfne wið sunnan isteoran. *and* seoððan his heorde. On culfre onlicnesse *and* on fures heowe wes godes gast isceawed. forðon þet he deð þa þe beoð bilehwite. *and* wið-utan ufelnesse. *and* birnende on godes willan. þet he mid his 3if ifulleð. Ne bið þeo bilehwitnesse godes icwime butas<sup>4</sup> sno<sup>5</sup>ternesse ne sneternesse butan bilehwitnesse. hwet bið bilehwitnesse butan rihtwisnesse: *and* hwet \*bið sneternesse bute soðe lufe to gode *and* to monnen: forðon þe halia gast þe þet teeð riht-wissnesse *and* bilehwitnesse scule<sup>6</sup> beon isceawed eiðer 3e on fure. 3e on culfren. forðon þet heo deð

Why under these two forms?

Christ came not to condemn the world.

The dove denotes simplicity and innocence.

<sup>1</sup> erran.  
\* [Fol. 34b.]

The Holy Ghost was seen as fire,

*and* enabled the apostles to enkindle the cold hearts of men.

<sup>2</sup> ? fures.

<sup>3</sup> ? MS. þet.

Simplicity without wisdom not pleasing to God.

<sup>4</sup> ? butan.

<sup>5</sup> sno at first, but altered to sne.

\* [Fol. 35a.]  
<sup>6</sup> ? sculde.



whom he enlighteneth with his grace, that they shall be meek through innocence, and kindled through (by) love and wisdom. God is, as Paul said, a consuming fire ; and he is the ineffable and invisible fire. Of this fire speaks the Saviour, "I came because I would send fire on earth, and I will that it burn." He sent the Holy Ghost on the earth, and he with his blast (inspiration) enkindled earthly men's hearts. Then burneth the earth when the heart of the earthly man is kindled to the love of God, which before was cold through fleshly lust. The Holy Ghost is not in his nature existing as he was seen, for he is invisible ; but he was manifested in the form of a dove and of fire, for the sign (reason) we have previously mentioned. He is called in Greek *Παράκλητος*, that is, the Comforting Spirit, because he comforteth the (sorrowful) dreary, those that are sorry for their sins, and he giveth them forgiveness and hope, and alleviates their sorrowful mood (mind). He forgiveth sins, and he is the way to the forgiveness of all sins. He giveth his gift (grace) to whom he will. To one man he giveth wisdom and speech (eloquence), to one good thought, to one great (faith) belief, to one power to heal sick men, to one prophecy, to one a discrimination of good and evil spirits. To one he gives divers tongues, to one man interpretation of divers speeches (sayings). All these things, and many others, doth the Holy Ghost, distributing to each as he thinks fit, for he is the Almighty Creator ; for so soon as he enlightens man's heart and mind, it turneth from evil to good. He enlightened David's heart, when he in his youth loved the harp, and made him to be a psalm-wright. There was a herdsman called Amos, whom the Holy Ghost turned to a good prophet. Peter was a fisher, whom the same Holy Spirit of God turned to an apostle. Paul, that injured the Christians, him he chose for a teacher of all the Gentiles. Matthew, that was a toll-gatherer, him he converted to an evangelist. The apostles durst not preach the true belief for fear of the heathen (? Jews) ; but when, subsequently, they were enkindled of the Holy Ghost, they were not afraid of any bodily torments, and therefore without fear preached God's bliss. The greatness (dignity) of this day is to be praised (celebrated), because that Almighty God, himself, on this day condescended to be poured out on mankind. At the birth of Christ, God Almighty's Son became human man, and on

pere monnan heortan *þet* he onlihteð mid his 3ife. *þet* heo beoð  
 liðe þurh un-cladnesse<sup>1</sup>. *and* itenð þurh lufe *and* snoternesne. God  
 is swa paul cweð. *þet* niminde fur *and* he is un-asecgliche fur.  
*and* unisewenlich fur. Bi þam fure cweð þe helende. Ic com  
 forðon *þet* ic walde sendan fur on eorðan. *and* ic wile þat hit  
 berne. he sende þene halia gast to eorðan *and* he mid his bleade  
 ou-calde eorðlichen monnan heortan þenne birneð þa eorð<sup>2</sup> þenne  
 þes eorðliche monnes heorte bið itend to godes lufe. þa *þet* er  
 wes cald þurh flesclike lustes. Ni<sup>3</sup> na þe halia gast wunniende  
 on his icunde. swa se he isezen wes : forðon *þet* he is unisezenlic.  
 Ac for þere itacnunge swa þe<sup>4</sup> er seiden. *þet* he wes isezen on  
 culfre *and* on fure. He is ihate on grekisc paraclitus. *þet* is þe  
 frofre gast. forðon *þet* he ifrefrað þa drorizan. þa *þet* heore sun-  
 nan bireusiað. *and* 3ifð heom for3ifnesse. *and* huht. *and* heore  
 3eomerinde mod iliðegað. heo for3ifeð sunna. *and* he is þe wei to  
 \*alre sunnen for3ifnesse. he 3ifð his 3efe þan *þet* he wule.  
 Summe Men he 3if wisdom and speche. Summe god iðonc.  
 Summe muchele ileafe. Summe mihte to helene un-trume men.  
 Summe witegunge. Summe iscead godra gast. *and* ufele. Summe  
 he 3ifð misliche irord. Summen man irecdnesse of misliche  
 spechen. Ealle þas þing *and* monize oðre deð þe haliza gast :  
 to delende uwilchen bi þan *þet* him iwurð : forðon *þet* he is  
 almihtin wurhte. for swa reðe swa he þes mannes heorte *and*  
 his mod on-lihte : hit iwendeð from ufele to gode. he on-lihte  
 dauðes heorte þa þe he on 3eo3oþe herpan lufede. *and* warhte  
 hine : to saln wurhtan. Amos het a reoðer heorde þene  
 aw[e]nde þe haliza gast to ane gode witege. petrus wes fixere  
 þene iturnde þe þe<sup>5</sup> ilcan godes gast to apostle. paul *þet* hermede  
 cristene men : þene he iches to larðewe alle peoden. Matheus *þet*  
 wes cachepol þene he iwende to god-spellere. Ða apostlas ne  
 dursten bodian þa soðen ileafen for þon eie of þon heðene. Ac  
 þa siððan heo weren itend of þan halia gaste. hi neren aferede of  
 nane licamliche pinunge. *and* perfore wið-utan fore godes blisse  
 bodedan. Disses dei3es helnesse is to heriane. forðon *þet* þe  
 almihti god hine seoffmede\*mede<sup>6</sup> *þet* he walde monna cun on  
 pisse deie isundian. on cristes akennednesse iwearð þe almihtiza

<sup>1</sup>unlaðnesse.

God is a consuming fire.

The Holy Ghost inflames the cold hearts of men.

<sup>2</sup> ? eorðe.<sup>3</sup> ? nis.<sup>4</sup> ? we.

He is called the Comforter.

\* [Fol. 35b.]

The gifts of the Holy Ghost.

The Holy Ghost converts sinners.

<sup>5</sup> sic.

The apostles durst not preach the Gospel before the Holy Ghost enlightened them.

\* [Fol. 36a.]  
<sup>6</sup> ? seoffne imedmede.

this day became faithful (believing) men God's sons, and even as Christ also saith, "I said ye are God's children." The elect (chosen men) are God's children not naturally, but through the grace of the Holy Ghost. One God is naturally in three persons—the Father, the Son, who is his wisdom, and the Holy Ghost, who is the Will of them both. Their nature is indivisible, ever existing in one Godhead. The same said of his elect, "Ye are Gods." Through Christ's humanity men were redeemed from the devil's bondage; and through the coming of the Holy Ghost men's souls were brought unto God. Christ received humanity at his coming (upon earth), and men received God through the outpouring of the Holy Ghost. The man that hath not God's Spirit in him is not God's. Each man's work showeth what spirit directeth him. God's Spirit directeth ever to holiness and to goodness. The devil's spirit leadeth ever to sin and to wicked deeds. The Holy Ghost came twice upon the apostles. Christ breathed the Holy Ghost over the apostles before his ascension, thus saying, "Receive the Holy Ghost." Again on this day he (they?) sent—the Almighty Father and the Son—the Spirit of them both upon the apostles. While yet living in the world, the Saviour breathed his Spirit upon the apostles for a sign that they and all Christian men should love their neighbours. Also he sent, as he before promised them, the Holy Ghost from heaven, because that we should love God above all things. The Holy Ghost is one, although he came twice upon the apostles. So also there is one love and two behests, that we should love God and men. But we should learn from men how we may come to love of God, as saith John the Evangelist, "He that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen bodily?" We celebrate the coming of the Holy Ghost with songs of praise for seven days, because he enlighteneth our mind with sevenfold graces (gifts), that is, with wisdom and understanding, with counsel and strength, with good deeds and with piety, and he filleth us with the fear of God. He that through good deserving (deserts) attaineth to these sevenfold graces of the Holy Ghost, will have all bliss. But he that desires to attain to this bliss must believe in the Holy Trinity and in true Unity, that is, that the Father and his Son and the Spirit of them both, are three in persons and one God, indivisible, existing

godes sune to monnesce men ibroht. *and* on þisse deie iweorden  
 ileafulle men godes *and* swa se crist cweð. Ic cweðe 3e beoð  
 godes bern þa icorene men beoð godes bern : na icunðliche : ac  
 þurh þes halȝan gastes ȝife. *And*<sup>1</sup> god is icundeliche on þreom.  
 Hadan feder. *and* sune. *þet* is his wisdom. *and* þe halȝe gast : þe  
*þet* is heore beire wille. Heore cuude is unto-deledlich efer<sup>2</sup>  
 wuniende on aue godnesse. þe ilca cweð. bi his icorene 3e beoð  
 godes. Þurh cristes menniscnesse men weren alesde from deofles  
 ðeowdome. *and* þurh þes halȝe gastes to-cume mannen saule were  
 ibroht to gode. Crist underfenc meniscnesse on his to-cume.  
*and* men underfengen god : þurh þes halȝan gastes isundunge. þe  
 mon *þet* nafð godes gast on him nis he na godes. Elches monnes  
 weorc cuðan hwile gast hine wissað. Godes gast wissað efre to  
 halȝnesse. *and* to godnesse. Deofles gast wissað to sunnan : *and* to  
 mandeden. þe halȝa gast bicom twa ofer þa apostlas. Crist ableow  
 þana<sup>3</sup> halȝa gast ofer þa apostlas : er his upst[i]ȝe þus cweðinde  
 onfoð haline gast. eft on þisse deie he sende þe almihtin feder  
*and* þe sune heore \* beire gast to þam apostli : þa ȝet wuniende  
 on þissere weorkde. þe helende ableu his gast on his apostlas  
 for ðere itacnunge. *þet* heo *and* alle cristen men scullan lufian  
 heore nehstan : al swa he heom er bihet þene ilca gast of  
 heofne. forðon *þet* we sculen lufian god ofer alle oðer þing. An  
 is þe halie gast þah *þet* he twa bicom ofer þa apostlas. Al swa  
 ec is an lufe : *and* twa biboden. *þet* we sculen lufian god : *and*.  
 Men. Ac we sculen leornian on mannen hu we mazen bicuman  
 to godes lufe. Al swa Iohan þe godspellere cweð. þe *þet* ne lufeð  
 his broðer þene *þet* he isihð. hu mei he lufian god þene *þet* he ne  
 isihð licomliche : we wurðiað þes halȝen gastes to-cume mid loft<sup>4</sup>  
 songe seofen dazes. forðon *þet* he onlihte ure mod mid seofanfald  
 ȝife. *þet* is mid wisdom. *and* anȝite mid iðohte. *and* streinde mid  
 gode dedan : *and* trewfestnesse. *and* he us ifulð mid godes eiȝe.  
 þe *þet* ðurh gode iearnunge<sup>5</sup> bi-cumð to þissan seofanfalden ȝefan  
 of þam<sup>6</sup> halȝan gaste : he haueð alle blisse. Ac þe *þet* wule to  
 þare blisse bicumen : he scal ileafan on þa halȝa preomnesse. *and*  
 on soðre annesse. *þet* is þe feder. *and* his sune *and* heore beira  
 gast heo beoð preo on hadan *and* an god unto-\*delendlich on

The elect  
are God's  
children.

<sup>1</sup> ? An.

<sup>2</sup> MS. efter.

Through  
Christ's  
humanity  
men were  
delivered out  
of the power  
of the devil.

The Holy  
Ghost came  
twice over  
the apostles.

<sup>3</sup> sic.

\*[Fol. 36b.]

The Holy  
Ghost is one,  
although he  
came twice  
over the  
apostles.

<sup>4</sup> ? lof-.

He who will  
come to the  
gifts of the  
Holy Ghost  
must believe  
in the Trinity

<sup>5</sup> sic.

<sup>6</sup> ? þan.

\*[Fol. 37a.]

in one Lordship and Godhead. This belief was betokened by the three thousand men that first inclined to belief, after the coming of the Holy Ghost. And as the three thousand men were one fellowship (communion), even so the Holy Trinity is one God; and that fellowship is as one-minded (unanimous) as though they were all one in heart and soul, because that of the Holy Trinity there is one Godhead and one nature, and one will and one inseparable work. The faithful (believing) men brought their wealth and laid it at the feet of the apostles. By that is denoted that Christian men should not put their trust in temporal possessions, but in their God alone. The covetous, that setteth his thought on his goods, is the devil's child, except he cease to do so. Because covetousness had no place in the hearts of those who held their goods of little worth, therefore did they put their goods in common amongst them, that they might be in true unity without covetousness. The apostles set their hands over believers, and the Holy Ghost came upon them through their confirmation (bishops); and bishops of the same order are still in God's Church and observe the institution in their confirmation (bishops), so that they place their hands over baptized men and pray that the Almighty Ruler may send them the sevenfold gifts of the Holy Ghost. *Qui vivit et regnat, &c.*

## X.

CONCERNING EIGHT VICES AND TWELVE ABUSES  
OF THIS AGE.

*O*mnia nimia nocent, et temperantia mater virtutum dicitur, that is in English, All things overdone (all excesses) are injurious, and moderation is the mother of all virtues. Overliving in eating and in drinking maketh the man unwhole and his soul loathsome to God, and so our Lord hath said in his Gospel. On the other hand, immoderate fasting and too much abstinence in eating and drinking make the man infirm and bring him to great grief, as say the books, That some men fasted so that they sorely afflicted themselves and had no



ane drihtnesse *and* godnesse wuniende þeos ileafan itacneden þa preo þusend men. *þet* erest buzen to ileafan efter þes halza gastes to-cume. *and* alswa þeo preo þusend weren an iferende<sup>1</sup>. alswa is þeo halze preomnesse an god. *and* *þet* iferende is swa anmod swule heom alle an weren on heorte. *and* an sawul: forðon *þet* þere halzan þremnesse is an godnesse. *and* an icunde. *and* an iwille. *and* an wore un-to-delendlich. Ða ileaffullen brohton heore gersum *and* leiden heo et þere apostlan fotan. Mid þan is itacned *þet* cristene men ne sculen heore bileafe bisettan on þere weordliche eahte: ac on heore god ane. þe 3itsere þe biset his ipone on his ehte: he bið þes deofles bern buten he hit iswike: forðon heo *þet* þa 3itsunge heolden heore eahte unwur[ð]liche nefde nenne stude: on heore heortan<sup>2</sup>. *and* for þi heo dudan heore þing heom 3emene: *þet* heo soðre sibsumnesse butan 3itsunge beon mihten, þa apostlas setten here hondan ofer ileaffulle men: *and* heom com to þe halza gast. þurh heore bisceopunge. Bisceopas þes ilcan hades on godes ilaðunge. *and* haldað þa isetnesse on heore bisceopunge swa *þet* heo setteð heoran \*handan ofer iful3ede men. *and* biddað *þet* þe almihti welden[de] heom sende þa seofenfalde 3ife of þam halzan gaste. *Qui uiuit & Regnat, &c.*

The Trinity in Unity, denoted by the three thousand converts on the day of Pentecost, who were one fellowship.

<sup>1</sup> ? iferedene.

True unity is without covetousness.

<sup>2</sup> The proper order is—heo leolden heore eahit unwurliche forðon *þet* þa 3itsung nef de, &c.

\* [Pol. 37b.]

## X.

### DE OCTO VICIIS & DE DUODECIM ABUSIUIS HUIUS SECULI.

[**O**mnia nimia nocent. & temperancia mater virtutum dicitur. *þet* is on englisc. alle ofer done þing denað<sup>3</sup>. *and* imetnesse is alre mihta moder þe oferlifa on hete *and* on wete macað þene mon un-halne. *and* his saule gode laðeð<sup>4</sup> *and* swa ure drihten on his godspelle seide. *þet* þer to3eines unimete festen *and* to michel forhefednesse on hete *and* on wete macað þene mon un-halne *and* on michelere sarinesse bringeð swa swa us seggeð bec. *þet* sume men festen swa *þet* hi swencten swiðe

Of eight vices and twelve abuses of this age.

<sup>3</sup> ? deriað.

<sup>4</sup> MS. laðeð.

Excess injurious.

Moderation the mother of all virtue.



reward for that great affliction, but the farther were they from God's mercy. Easily may the man find how he may injure himself, but we must recollect that no self-murderer, that is, self-slayer, shall come into God's kingdom. Now there are eight cardinal sins that reign very powerfully in us. One is called *Gula*, that is, greediness in English, which causeth that the man eateth and drinketh before the time, or, on the other hand, taketh too much to eat and drink. This sin destroyeth both soul and body; for it bringeth upon a man great diseases, and bringeth (him) to death through excessive drink; and it destroys also the man's soul, for it will sin often even when he knoweth not how he conducts himself on account of his immoderate drinking. The second sin is fornication and immoderate lasciviousness, which is called *Fornicatio*. It defileth the man, and of the limbs of Christ maketh whores' limbs, and of God's house the abode of ills. The third sin is *Avaritia*, that is, evil covetousness. It is the root of every crime; it produceth rapine and injustice, theft, leasing and perjury; it is like unto hell, because that they both have such insatiable greediness as to be never full. The fourth is called *Ira*, that is, in English, wrath (anger). It causeth man not to have the control over his anger, and maketh murders and evils of many kind. The fifth sin is *Tristitia*, that is, sorrow of this world; when the man sorroweth altogether too much for the loss of his wealth, which he hath loved too much, and chideth then with God and increaseth his sins. There are two sorrows;—the first is this evil one (just mentioned); the second is salutary, that is, that a man be sorry here in the world for his sins. The sixth is called *Desidia*, that is, sloth in English, when the man desires not to do any good in his life; but is ever unready for any good deed. The seventh is called *Jactantia*, that is, idle boasting in English, when man is greedy of praise, and acts deceitfully, and does more for praise than for the love of God if he distributes aught (to the poor), and therefore the notoriety shall be his reward for the deed, and in the other world his retribution awaiteth him. The eighth sin is called *Superbia*, that is, in English, moodiness (pride). It is the beginning and end of all evils; it turned angels into horrible devils, and maketh man also, if he wax very proud, the associate of devils, who previously fell out of heaven through pride. Now are there eight head (cardinal) virtues which

heom seolfe. *and* nane mede nefden for þa michele iswinche. ac  
 þes þe fir weren fram godes milce [E]aðe mei þe mon fundan hu  
 he hine seolfe amerre. ac we scole witan. þet nan seolf cwale þet  
 is aȝen-sclaȝa ne cumeð to godes riche. Nu beoð .viii. heofod  
 sunnan þe rixað on us to swiðe. On is icweðen. *Gula.* þet is  
 ȝifernesse on englisc. þeo deð þet mon et er timan. *and* drinceð.  
 oðer eft to muchel nimeð on ete oðer on wete. Deos sunne  
 fordeð eiðer ȝe saule. ȝe lichoma. for \*heo maceð þan men  
 muchele untrumnesse *and* to depe bringeð mid unmete drunche.  
*and* heo fordeð ec þes monnes saule for heo scal suneȝan oft.  
 þenne he nat hu he ferð for his feondlicchan drunche. Þa oðer  
 sunne forliger *and* unimete galnesse. þet is ihatan *fornicatio*. He  
 buleð<sup>1</sup> þene mon *and* maceð of cristes leoman heoranna leoman :  
*and* of godes husa gromena wuniunge. þa þridde sunne is. *Aua-*  
*ricia.* þet is þeo ufele ȝitsunge. heo is more of elchere wohnesse  
 heo macað reaflic *and* unrilhte domes. stale *and* lesunge. *and*  
 forsworenesse. heo is helle iliche. forðon þet hi ba habbeð un-  
 afillendliche gredinesse : þet hi nefre ne beoð fulle. þeo feorð[e]  
 sunne is ihatan. *Ira.* þet is on englisc wemodnesse. heo deð þet  
 þe mon ne ah his modes iwald *and* heo macað monslehtas. *and*  
 monies cunnes ufel. Þeo fiftte sunne is. *Tristicia.* þet is pissere  
 worlde sarinesse þenne þe mon sorȝeð alles to swiðe for his  
 hehte lure. þe he luuede to swiðe. *and* chit þenne wið gode.  
*and* his sunnen echeð. Twa sarinesse beoð. an is þeos uele  
 oðer is halwende. þet is þet mon beo sari her on worlde for his  
 sunnen. Þeo sixte is ihatan. *Desidia.* þet is slewðe on englisc  
 þenne þan mon ne lust on his liue nan god don. *and* bið eure  
 unȝearu to elchere duȝeðe. \*Þe seofeðe sunne is icweðen.  
*Iactancia.* þet is idelȝelp on englisc. þenne mon bið lof-ȝeorn.  
*and* mid fikenunge fearð *and* deð for ȝelpe mare þenne for godes  
 luue. ȝif he awiht delan wule. *and* forðon bið þe lesse<sup>2</sup> his edlen  
 pere dede. *and* his wite abideð on pere oðre weorlde. Þe ehtuðe  
 sunne is ihatan. *Superbia.* þet is on englisc, modinesse. Heo is  
 ord *and* ende of alle uele. heo macode englas to ateliche deoffan  
*and* þene mon makeð ec ȝif<sup>3</sup> heo modigað to swiðe þes deoffes  
 ifere : þe feol er ut of heouene þurh modinesse. Nu beoð .viii.

Excess in  
fasting is not  
commend-  
able.

There are  
eight cardinal  
sins.  
1. Gluttony.

\*[Fol. 38a.]

2. Adultery.

1 ? befuleð.

3. Avarice.

4. Anger.

5. Wanhope.

6. Sloth.

\*[Fol. 38b.]

7. Boasting.

2 ? for hlisse.

8. Pride.

3 MS. ȝis.

may overcome all these sins, through God's assistance. The first is *Temperantia*, that is, moderation in English, that man be moderate in all things and partake not of too much in eating and drinking, nor sit at his table before time. Brutes eat as soon as they get it, but the discreet man ought to keep to his meals, and then in reason adhere to his regimen. Then may he in suchwise overcome greediness. The second virtue is *Castitas*, that is, cleanness (chastity) in English, that the layman should keep himself without fornication lawfully and reasonably. The consecrated servant of God should ever observe his chastity above all things, and thus then shall the foul lasciviousness be overcome. The third virtue is *Largitas*, that is, liberality in English, that a man should wisely spend the things which God gives him to enjoy in this life and not for worldly praise. God desires not that we be greedy niggards, nor also for worldly praise that we waste our property; but let us deal out our wealth wisely so that it may be pleasing to the Lord; and if we give alms, let us give them without boasting, then may we destroy the excessive covetousness. The fourth virtue is *Patientia*, that is, in English, patience (forbearance), that the man be patient and forbearing for God's sake, and ever let his discretion prevail over his wrath; for the Saviour speaketh thus in his Gospel, *In patientia vestra possidebitis animas vestras*, that is in English, In your patience ye have preserved your souls; and again the heavenly wisdom saith, *Ira requiescit in sinu stulti*, that is, Anger hath its dwelling in the bosom of the fool, that is, when the man is very angry-minded; and the Almighty Judge shall judge you with righteousness, and therefore we should overcome wrath with forbearance. The fifth virtue is *Spiritualis letitia*, that is, ghostly bliss, that the man rejoice in God amidst the sorrows of this stark (harsh) world, so that we be not despairing in misfortunes, nor, on the other hand, rejoice too extravagantly in prosperity. And if we lose these poor worldly things, then we shall know that our abode is not here, but in heaven. If we trust in God, as the Apostle hath said of himself and other righteous men, *Nostra autem conversatio in caelis est*, that is, our dwelling is in heaven, thither we shall hasten from this tribulation with spiritual joy; then shall the evil sorrow with-al be overcome through our good endurance. The sixth virtue is *Instantia boni operis*, that is, diligence in good

heafod mihtan. þe mazen ouercumen alle þas sunnan þurh  
 drihtnes fultum. An is [Temperantia] þet is metnesse on  
 englisc. þet mon beo imete on alle þing *and* to muchel ne þigge  
 on ete *and* on wete. ne er timan to his borde ne sitte. Nutenu  
 etað swa er<sup>1</sup> swa hi hit habbeð. ac þa iscead-wise mon scal kepan  
 his meles *and* þenne mid isceade his isetnesse halden. þenne mei  
 he ouercuman swa þa ȝiue[r]nesse. Þe oðer mihte is *Castitas*. þet  
 is clenesse on englisc. þet þe leawde mon hine halde butan for-  
 lizere on rihte laȝe. *and* mid isceadwisnesse. þeo ihadode godes  
 þeowa halde eure his clenesse ouer alle þing. *and* þenne bið ouer-  
 cuman swa ec þa fule galnesse. Þe þridde mihte is. *Largitas*. þet  
 is custinesse on englisc þet mon wisliche \*spene þa þing þe him  
 god lene on þisse liue to brukene. *and* noht for world ȝelpe.  
 God nele þet we beon gredie ȝitseras. ne ec for weorlð ȝelpe for-  
 worpan ure ehtan ah dele we ure ehtan mid wisdom. swa þet  
 hit drihtne likie. *and* ȝif [we] almesse doð: don hi butan ȝelpe  
 þenne mæze we fordon swa þa deoffliche ȝitsunge. Þe feorðe mihte  
 is. *paciencia*. þet is on englisc ipuld. þet þe mon beo ipuldi. *and*  
 þolemod for godes lne. *and* lete elchur<sup>2</sup> his iwit weldre þene his  
 wreððe. forðon þe heleud cweð þus on his godspel. *In paciencia*  
*uestra possidebitis animas uestras*. þet is on englisc. on eower  
 ipulde ȝe habbeð eower saulen ihaldene *and* eft þe heouenlich[e]  
 wisdom cweð. *Ira requiescit in sinu stulti*. þet is wreððe hafð  
 wununge on þes dusian bosme. þet is þenne þe mon bið to red-  
 mod. *and* þe al weldenda dema demeð eou mid rihtwisnesse. *and*  
 we sculen mid ipulde ouercuman þa wreððe. Þe fifte mihte  
 is. [*Spiritualis laetitia*] þet is gastliche blisse þet þe mon on god  
 blissie bitwuxe þa sorinessen þissere sterke worlde. swa þet we<sup>3</sup>  
 on unilimpan to ormode ne beon: ne eft on iselhðan to swiðe  
 ne blissian. *and* ȝif we forleosað þas lenan world-þing: þenne we  
 sculan witan þet ure wununge nis nauht her: ac is on heuene:  
 ȝif we hopiað to gode swa þe apostel seide bi him *and* bi oðran  
 rihtwise. [*Nostra autem conversatio in celis est.*] þet is ure  
 wununge is on heuene. þider we sculen \*hihȝen of þissere erfeð-  
 nesse mid gastlichere blisse. þenne bið þa ufele sarinesse mid alle  
 ouercuman mid ure gode ipulde. Þe sixte mihte is. [*Instantia*

Eight car-  
 dinal virtues.  
 1. Modera-  
 tion.

1 ? ec.

2. Chastity.

3. Liberality.

\* [Fol. 39a.]

4. Patience.

2 ? æfre.

5. Spiritual  
 bliss.

3 MS. þe.

Our con-  
 versation is  
 in heaven.

\* [Fol. 39b.]

6. Persever-  
 ance in good  
 works.

works, for if we be diligent in good works then may we in this wise overcome sloth, for it will be a longsome (lasting) reproach (to us) if all our life be in vain here. The seventh virtue is *Caritas*, that is, true love to God and to man; that we should engage in good works for the love of God, and not for the sake of idle boasting (vain-glory), which is displeasing to him; but let us do alms as he hath taught us, for love to God, and not for praise; so that our Lord may be ever praised in our good works, and that vain-glory be ever despicable in our sight. The eighth virtue is called *Humilitas*, that is, true meekness towards God and to man, with purity of mind; for he who is [wise] is never proud. Of what may the man be proud? though he be well-to-do and prosperous he may find many who are better to do and of higher estate than he. Nor, on the other hand, may he be proud of his weal, or of his wealth, because he knoweth not the day nor the hour that it shall all pass away. Nor of anything ought a man to be proud, if he is wise. Now ye have heard how these holy virtues overcome the sins which the devil soweth in us, and if we will not subdue them they will sink us into hell. We may through God's help overcome the devilish sins through warfare, if we keenly fight; and finally obtain for ourselves the everlasting honour ever with God himself, if we strive for it now while here. Now there are twelve vices, which we shall first declare to you in Latin, and afterwards in English. *Duodecim abusiva sunt seculi. Hoc est. Sapiens sine operibus bonis. Senex sine religione. Adolescens sine obedientia. Dives sine elemosina. Femina sine pudicitia. Dominus sine virtute. Christianus contentiosus. Pauper superbus. Rex iniquus. Episcopus negligens. Plebs sine disciplina. Populus sine lege; et sic suffocatur justitia Dei.*

**T**welve abuses there are in this world for harm to all mankind if they might hold sway; and they subdue righteousness, and mar belief, and bring mankind, if they were able, into hell. That is, if the wise man be without [good works, and if the old man be without] piety, and if the young be without obedience, and the rich without charity (alms-deeds), woman without purity, and the lord (ruler) without might (virtue), and if the Christian man



*boni operis.*] þet is anrednesse godes werkes. for ȝif weo beoð aurede on ure gode wercan! þenne maȝe we swa ouercumen þa slauðe. for hit bið lonsum bismer ȝif al ure life bið on unnet her. Þe seofeðe mihte is. [*Caritas.*] þet is soð luue to gode and to monnen. þet weo on gode weorcas godes luue kepan! and naut idelȝelp þe is him ansete. ac uten don elmessen swa he us tehte gode to luue. and naut for herunge. ac þet ure drihten beo eure ihered on ure godan weorcan. and þe idele ȝelp us beo eure unwurð. Þe eahtuðe mihte is ihaten. [*Humilitas.*] þet is soð edmodnesse to gode and to monnen. mid modes lusternesse.<sup>1</sup> for þe þe bið [wis] he neme<sup>2</sup> modi. On hwan mei þe mon modegian þeh he beo wel iþoȝen and iþungen. for he mei findan fele þe beoð bet iþoȝen and istoȝen þene he. Ne eft he ne mei on his welan. ne on his ehte modegian. forðon þet he nat þene dei ne þene time þe hit al forletan scal. Ne on nane þinge ne ah þe mon to modegian. ȝif he wis bið. nu<sup>3</sup> ȝe habbeð iherd hu þes halie mihten ouercumað \*þa sunnan þe deouel bisaweð on us. and ȝif we nelleð heom ouercuman. hi bisencheð us on helle. [W]e mazen þurh godes fulste þa fondliche sunnan mid icompe ouercuman. ȝif we kenliche fehtað and habban<sup>4</sup> us on ende þene eche wurðment a mid gode seoluan. ȝif we swineað nu her. Nv beoð .xii. unþeawes. þe we sculen eou seggan erest on bocleden! and siðþan on englice. *Duodecim abusiua sunt seculi. Hoc est. Sapiens sine operibus bonis. Senex sine religione. Adolenscens sine obediencia. Diues sine elemosina. Femina sine pudicitia. Dominus sine uirtute. Christianus contenciosus. Pauper superbus. Rex iniquus. Episcopus negligens. Plebs. sine disciplina. Populus sine lege. & sic suffocatur iusticia dei.*

7. Charity.

8. Humility.

<sup>1</sup> ? hlutterness.  
<sup>2</sup> ? ne wurðneure.

Eschew pride.

<sup>3</sup> MS. hu.

\* [Fol. 40a.]

<sup>4</sup> ? originally habbeð.  
 Of twelve vices.

[T]welf unþeawes beoð on pissere weorlde to hermen alle monnen. ȝif hi moten rixian and hi aleggað rihtwisnesse. and þene ileafan amerrað. and moncun bringeð ȝif hi motan to helle. Þet is ȝif þe wisa mon bið butan [gode wercan. and ȝif þe alde bið butan<sup>5</sup>] treuscipe. and ȝif þe ȝunge bið butan hersumnesse. and þe richen butan elmesdedan. wif butan clenesse. and þe lauereð butan mihte. and ȝif þe cristene mon

These vices mar belief.

<sup>5</sup> See p. 109, 1. 3.



be quarrelsome, and if the poor be proud, and if the king be unrighteous, and if the bishop be negligent, and the people without correction or without law. Now if the wise man who should give other men good example be without good works, will not his lore then soon be of little value to the laity, if he himself will not do as he teacheth them to do? His lore will not be profitable or acceptable to the laity, if he by his works sets aside his own teaching. Again, if the teacher fall into error, who shall afterwards be his teacher? If the eye becomes blind, the hand will not be well-seeing. The old man who is without religion is like the tree that beareth leaf and blossom but no fruits, and is worthless to its owner. What is ever so foolish and blockish as the old man that will not turn his thoughts to God with good intent, when his limbs show him that he will not be long alive? A young man may doubt whether he may live, but the old man may certainly look for death. The old man should guard against evil thoughts, for the heart nor the tongue become old, but these two things oft injure the old man. Let the old man observe therefore what is profitable to old age, and disregard those things that hurt the soul. The third abuse of this world is, that the young man be without obedience. Unworthy shall he be in old age that other men should be subservient to him who in his youth would not honour his elders. Our Saviour in his youth was obedient to his parents, and his heavenly Father he obeyed even to the death. And as it behoves the old man to have virtuous habits and true religion, so also it becomes the young man that he have obedience and submission. God's law biddeth also each man ever to honour his father and his mother with much honour, and if he curseth them he is worthy of death. The fourth abuse is that the rich man should be without charity (alms-deeds) and hide his goods, and assuredly earn for himself hell-torment. Accursed is the covetous who comes to destruction through his wealth, and through his own goods perishes ever in eternity; but blessed are ever the meekhearted, for they shall find mercy. Again, he who gives alms for his Lord's love, hides his treasure in heaven, where no thief may steal away (his) treasures, but where they shall be an hundredfold preserved for him. In many ways may a man do alms—in meat and drink, and also in clothing; and by

bið sacful. *and* 3if þe wrecche bið modi. *and* 3if þe king \*bið unrihtwis. *and* 3if þe biscop bið 3emeles. *and* þet fole butan steore eft<sup>1</sup> butan laze. Nu 3if þe wisa mon bið butan gode wercan. þe þe oðer monnen scolde sullan gode bisne. hu ne bið sone his lare þan lewede monnen unwurð. 3if he seolf nule don swa swa he heom techeð to donne! Ne bið naut his lare fremful ne icweme þan ileweden! 3if he mid wercan to-werpeð his bodunge. Eft 3if þe larðeu dwelað. hwa bið siððan his larþeu! Gif þet ege ablindað! ne bið naut þe hond wel lokinde. Þe alde mon þe bið butan treowscipe. bið iliche þan treo þe bereð lef *and* blosman. *and* nane westmas ne bereð. *and* bið unwurð his lauerde. Hwet is eure swa dusi *and* swa stuntlic swa is þet þe alde mon nule his mod to gode awendan mid gode huhte. þenne his leoman him cupað þet he ne bið quic longe! 3unge monnan mei tweonian hweðer hi moten alibban. ac þe alde mei him witan iwis pone deð. Ðan alden his to warniene wið uuele ipohtas for þeo heorte ne aldeð naut ne þa tunge. ac þas twa þing deriað oft þan alden. Wite for þi þe alde alde<sup>2</sup> hwet is elde bihouige. *and* þa 3ing forseo þat his saule deriað. Þe þridde unþean is on þissere worlde. þet 3ung mon beo butan ihersumnesse. \*vnwurðe bið þe on elde þet him oðer men þenien<sup>3</sup> þe on his 3uheðe nule his eldian<sup>4</sup> hersumian. Vre helend on his 3uheðe wes ihersum his cunne. *and* his heouenlich federe he hersumede to ða deðe. Swa swa þan alden bihouað duzende þewas *and* [t]riwe treofestnesse! swa biriseð þan 3ungan þet he abbe ihersumnesse *and* ibuhsumnesse. Godes laze bit ec mon wurðie efre his feder *and* his moder mid muchelere wurþunge. *and* 3if he heom werieð! he bið deðes wurðe. Þe feorðe unþeu is þet þe riche mon [beo] butan elmesdedan. *and* bihude his feh. *and* 3eornliche halde hit him to helle wite. vniseli bið þe 3itsere þe þurh his iselhðe leosað. *and* þurh his ahzene ehte forwurð a on echnesse. ac iselie beoð efre þa mildheortan. for þi heo imetað þa mildheortnesse. Eft þe ðe deleð elmessan for his drihtnes luuan! þe bihut his gold hord on heouene riche. per nan þeof ne mei [his] maðmas forsteolan. ac heo beoð bi hundfalde ihalden him þer. On monie wisen mon mei wurchen elmessan. on ete *and* on wete. *and* ec on iwedan. *and* þet mon gistas

\*[Fol. 40b.]]

1. Of the wise man without good works.

<sup>1</sup> sic.

2. Of the old man without belief.

The tongue and the heart do not get old.

<sup>2</sup> sic.

3. Of the young man without obedience.

\*[Fol. 41a.]

<sup>3</sup> MS. wenien.<sup>4</sup> ? eldran.

4. Of the rich man without charity.

Of divers kinds of almsgiving.

receiving strangers, and visiting sick men, and comforting the sorrowful, or by leading a blind man, or supporting the infirm, or healing the sick, if he know aught of leech-craft (the healing art) ; or if he forgiveth those who have offended him ; or if [he succour] the distressed ; or if he carry [a dead] man to the tomb. All this is alms ; and also that a man chastise the frail body, for correction, which must be corrected, for that is mercy that the wise man with reproof rectify the unwise. Lay never up in thine hoard what may be of service to destitute men, for thou thyself enjoyest not thy weal, though thou keep it secretly (hoarded up). Thou gatherest more and more, and men die of hunger, and thy wealth rots before thine eyes. Let us not do so, but let us do as our Lord hath commanded us. He hath said in his gospel, *Date elemosinam, et omnia munda sunt vobis*, that is, Give alms, and all things shall be pure to you. The fifth abuse is, that a woman be without chastity. An unclean woman suffers shame in this world, and is despicable in this life, and after this life shall have no joy with God. Wisdom is needful to men, and chastity to women, for chastity shieldeth them from vices. Where chastity is, there also are good virtues ; and the chaste woman shunneth covetousness, stirs not up strife, but appeases wrath, and scorns lasciviousness and covetousness ; she guards herself against drunkenness, and loves not idle words. Verily chastity subdues all vices, and observeth good virtues which are pleasing to God and man. The sixth abuse is, that he who is appointed a lord (ruler), cannot, for pusillanimity, check his men, but is so powerless in mental vigour that he dare not cause his men to stand in awe of him, nor will teach them to follow any wisdom. Some lords approach God through their lordship, as Moses the leader did, who spake to Almighty God ; and some lords in their rule displease God, as Saul the king did, who disregarded God's commands. The lord shall be gentle to the good, and awful (terrible) to the wicked, so that he may put down their folly ; and he shall be true to his word, and listen to wise lore (counsel). The good men shall love him for his gentleness, and the foolish shall ever fear him, else his reign shall neither be firm nor lasting. He shall so conduct himself that a man may contradict him and remind him of his needs (faults) ; and whatsoever the lord may do harshly to his men, it must be done for

underuo. *and* to seke monan ga. oðer sarine frefrað. oðer blindne mon let. oðer bereð unhalne. oðer unhalne lechnað 3if he lechedom con. \*oðer 3if he miltsað<sup>1</sup> þan men þe hine abelh. oðer 3if he 3eher-godne<sup>2</sup> mon fereð to buriene. Al þis bið almesse *and* ec þet mon biswinke þene stunte lichome for steore þe þe<sup>3</sup> steoran scal for þet is mildheortnesse. þet þe wisa mon mid steore þene unwisan irihleche. Ne ligge nefre on pine heorde. þet hauelese monnam meie fremian. for þu ane ne brukest naut þinra welena : þah þu hi demliche<sup>4</sup> halde. Ðu gederast mare *and* mare. *and* men cwelað on hungre. *and* pine welan forrotiað biforan pine eh3an. Ne don we nauht þus. ac uten don al swa ure drihten cweð. he seide on his godspelle. *Date elemosinam : & omnia munda sun[t] uobis.* þet is. deleð elmesse *and* alle þing eou beoð elene. Þe fifta unþeu is þet wif beo buten clenesse. Vnelene wif þoleð scome on weorlde. *and* unclene wif bið unwurð on liue. *and* efter þisse liue nane blisse nafð mid gode. Wisdom biriseð weran. *and* clenesse birisað wifan. for þe clenesse iscilt heo wið u[n]þeawes. Ðer þa clenesse bið : þer beoð ec þa gode þeawes *and* þet elene wif scunað 3itsunge *and* cheste ne sturað. ac heo gestilð groman *and* forsihð galnesse *and* gredinesse forho3að. heo hi wernað wið drunkenesse *and* idele weord \*ne lumað. Iwisliche þa clennesses iwelt alle unþeawes *and* halt gode þeawes þe gode likiað *and* monnan. [þ]e sixte unþeau is þet þeðe to lauerde bið iset. þet he for modleste ne mei his monnan don stere ac bið swa mihtles on his modes streche. þet he his men eisian ne der ne to nane wisdomes heom nule wissian. Summe lauerdes inehlecheð gode þurh heore lauer[d]scipe swa Moyses þe hereto3a dude þe to þan almihtigan gode spec. *and* summe lauerdes on heore onwalde god gremiað. swa saul þe king dude þe forsech godes heste. Ðe lauerd scal beon liðe þan godan *and* eisful þan dusian þet he heore dusi alegge. *and* he scal beon weordfeste. *and* wise lare lusten. Hine scule þa gode men lufe for his liðnesse. *and* þa dusian him sculen efre adredan. elles ne bið his rixlunge ne fest ne lonsum. he scal beon swa iweorht þet him mon mote wið speken *and* his neode menan. *and* swa hwet swa þe lauerd speke to his men sterliche : do hit for rihtwisnesse

Of alms-giving.

\*[Fol. 41b.]  
1 MS. mult-sað.

2 ? insert here efter neode ideð. oðer 3if he forðfarene.

3 sic.

Hoard not up thy wealth.

4 ? dernliche.

5. Of the woman without chastity.

Description of a virtuous woman.

\*[Fol. 42a.]

6. Of the lord (ruler) without true courage.

Moses a type of a wise ruler.

Description of a good ruler.

righteousness and for God's awe, and not for (his own) anger. It is written in books that he that allows evil is as guilty as he who commits it, if he may amend it and takes no heed of the amendment. He shall with righteousness bow to God, for he can have no power aright without God's help, as saith God. The lord shall take heed that he have God's help, and he shall nowhere be distrustful of God's help. If God be his helper, nowhere shall his power be despised, because there is no power except from God. *Qui suscitavit de pulvere egenum, et de stercore erigit pauperem*, that is, God raiseth from the mire whom he will, though he were erewhile poor, and maketh him a lord. And again the prophet speaks of God, *Deponit potentes de sede et exaltat humiles*, that is, The Lord casteth down the proud from their seats and exalteth the meek. And again the Scripture saith, *Deus superbis resistit, humilibus dat gratiam*, that is, God resisteth the proud and giveth strength to the humble, that all the earth may be obedient to him and honour his name. The seventh vice is, that the Christian man is contentious (quarrelsome). Of Christ's name is the Christian called, that is, the Christian man who is baptized in Christ: then if he be contentious, assuredly he is not a true Christian. Verily there is no man a true Christian, unless he imitate Christ. Christ would not scold nor chide, as his Father's voice spake of him, "Here is my child who is very dear to me, and I have set my spirit over him; he chideth not with contention, he stirreth not up strife, neither in the street heareth any man his voice." The Lord saith also in his Gospel that they are God's children who are peaceable and raise not up strife: and even as the peaceable are assuredly children of God, so also are the quarrelsome the children of the devil. We all address God, and say *Pater noster*, that is, Our Father which art in heaven, but we may not have the heavenly inheritance except we be devoid of all strife. The eighth abuse is, that the poor man should be proud. Many a man hath not wealth and yet hath pride, and is poor before the world and accursed before God, when he raiseth his thought with pride against God, and will not observe humility in his poverty. Christ saith in his gospel of the spiritually poor, *Beati pauperes spiritu, quoniam ipsorum est regnum celorum*, that is, Blessed are the poor who are poor in spirit, for theirs is the joy of heaven's kingdom.



and for godes e3e and noht for wreððe. hit is awriten on boken.  
 þet þe bið al swa sculdig þe þet uuel ipeuað: swa þe þe hit deð. He is guilty who allows evil to pass unreproved.  
 3if he hit betan mei: and umbe þe bota[ne] ho3að. he scal hine  
 mid rih[t]wisnesse ibu3an to gode. for he ne mei habben nane  
 mihte \*to rihte butan godes fulste swa god cweð. Ðe lauerd \*[Fol. 42b.]  
 scal biho3ian þet he habbe godes fultum and he ne scal nohwer  
 ortrowian bi godes fultum. Gif god bið his ifulsta: ne bið his  
 mehte nohwer for-se3en. for þon þe nan mihte nis bute of gode.  
*Qui suscitāt de puluere egenum. & de stercore erigit pauperem.* God abases the proud and exalts the meek.  
 þet is. God ahef of mexe þene mon þe he wule þau he were er  
 wreche and macað hine to lauerde and eft þe witega seið bi  
 gode. *Deponit potentes de sede & exaltat humiles.* þet is. Drihten  
 aworpeð þa modian of heore heh setle and on-hefð þa mildan  
 and eft þet writ cweð. *Deus superbis resistit: humilibus dat gratiam.* þet is. Drihten widset þan prudan and 3eueð þan ed-  
 meodan streinþe þet al middel eard beo him ibuhsun: and his  
 nome herize. Þe<sup>1</sup> seofeðe un-þeaw is þet þe cristene mon beo sacful.  
 of cristes noman. is cristianus icweðen. þet is þe cristene mon þe is  
 on criste ifuleh3ad. þenne 3if he bið sacful: soðliche ne bið he noht  
 wel cristene. Soðliche nis nan mon wel cristene: butan þe þe  
 criste euenlecheð. Crist nalde flitan ne chidan. swa swa his feder  
 stefne cweð bi him. Her is min child þe me is swiðe leof and ic  
 sette minne gast ouer him. He ne flit mid cheste. ne he sake ne  
 sturað. ne on strete ne ihereð nan mon his stefne. Drihten seið ec  
 on his godspelle þet þa beoð godes bern þe beoð isibsumme ac sake  
 ne sturiað. and swa swa [þa] isibsumma \*beoð soðliche godes bern: 7. Of the quarrelsome Christian.  
<sup>1</sup> The þ is by a later hand.  
 swa beoð ec þa sacfulle soðliche deofles bern. Alle we cleopiað to  
 gode: and cweðað. *pater noster.* þet is. þu ure feder þe ert on heuene  
 ac we ne mazen habben þene heouenlichen eþel: butan we beon  
 elene from alle sake. [þ]e ehtuðe unþeau is þet þe wrecche mon  
 beo modi. Moni mon nafð ehta. and þeh haueð modinesse and  
 is erm for worlde. and uniseli for gode. þenne he arereð his mod  
 mid modinesse on3ein god. and nule on his ermðe: edmodnesse  
 halden. Crist cweð on his godspelle bi þan gastliche wrecchan.  
*Beati pauperes spiritu: quoniam ipsorum est regnum celorum.* 8. Of the poor man who is proud.  
 þet is. eadi3e beoð þa wrecchan þe on gaste beoð wrecchan: for  
 Blessed are the poor in spirit.



They are poor in spirit who for God's love are meek and humble ; for humbleness of mind may obtain God's kingdom sooner than the poverty which cometh of misfortune. Assuredly the rich that live righteously may be reckoned amongst God's poor if they have meekness and forsake superfluity (extravagance), as King David saith of himself, *Ego egenus et pauper sum, Deus adjuva me*—I am needy and poor, but, O God, aid me. The proud poor for the pride of his mind is rightly reckoned (in books) amongst the rich ; and the humble rich, though he have wealth, may be amongst God's poor, if he pleaseth God. The ninth abuse is that the king is unrighteous. The king is chosen for that which his name declareth. King is called *rex*, that is, governor (director), for he shall direct his people with wisdom, and put down wrong, and exalt belief (faith). Then is it a grievous thing if he be unrighteous, for he may direct none aright if he himself is unrighteous. The righteousness of the king exalteth his throne, and his soothfastness (truth) establisheth the government of the people ; that is the king's righteousness, that he oppress not wrongfully the poor nor rich, but judge every man equitably. He shall protect widows and orphans, and suppress stealing, and forbid whoredom, and banish thieves from his kingdom ; and withal, he shall put down witchcraft, and he shall not tolerate soothsaying. The wise men shall advise him and he shall never be passionate. He shall ever protect God's minsters, and feed the poor, and boldly fight against an invading host, and preserve his kingdom. He shall appoint him trustworthy men for sheriffs, and for the fear of God lead a good life, and be unmoved in tribulation and meek in peace (prosperity), and shall not suffer his offspring to be unrighteous. He shall pray at the appointed times, and ere meal times shall not touch meat, for that it is written, "Woe to the people where the king is a child, and where the leaders eat in the early morning unlawfully !" If the king will with carefulness observe these afore-said precepts, then shall his kingdom be prosperous in this life, and after this life he shall go to the eternal life for his piety. And if he disregard these precepts and this lore (instruction), then shall his land be ever and anon impoverished either by war or by famine, or by disease or by tempests, or by wild beasts. Let the king

heore is heouenriche murhðe. Ða beoð wrecchan on gaste þe for godes lūue beod milde *and* admode. for þon þe þes modes edmodnesse mei biȝetan godes riche reðer þen þe haueleste þe of henðe cumeð. Gewisliche þa richan þe rihtliche libbað maȝen beon bitwixen godes wrecchan ȝif heo edmodnesse habbeð *and* ouerflowendnesse forletað swa swa þe king dauid cweð bi him seoluen. *Ego egenus & pauper sum: deus adiua me.* þet is. Ic em þarua *and* wrecche. ac god fulst þu me. Ðe modie wreccha for his modes upahfednesse is to richan itald rihtliche on boken *and* þe edmeda riche þah he ehte habbe mei beon godes wrecche. ȝif he gode icwemeð. [þ]e nihȝeðe unþeau is þet þe king beo unriht[is]. Ðe king bið icoren to þan þe him cuð his noma. \*King is ibaten *rex*: þet is wisegend for he scal wissian mid wisdom his folke *and* unriht aleggen *and* þene ileaue areren. þenne bið hit ermlic. ȝif he bið unrihtwis. for he ne mei nenne irihtlechan: ȝif he bið him seolf unrihtwis. Ðes kingges rihtwisnesse arereð his kine setle *and* his soðfestnesse istapeleð þes folkes stere. Ðet is kinges rihtwisnesse þet he mid wohȝe ne of-sitte ne ermne ne eadine. ac elche men deme riht. He scal biwerian widewan *and* steopbern *and* stale aleggen *and* heordom for-beodan. *and* þeouas addriuan. of his erde mid alle *and* he scal wicche creft aleggan *and* wiȝelunge ne geman wise men him scule readan *and* he ne scal beo nefre wemod godes minist[re]<sup>1</sup> he scal mundian efre. *and* fedan wrecchan. *and* festliche winnan wið onsiȝend-ne here. *and* haldan his eþel. He scal soðfeste men setten him to irefen. *and* for godes eie libban his lif rihtliche *and* beon on erfeðnesse anred *and* edmod on stilnesse. *and* his of[s]pringe ne ipaue þet hi beon unrihtwise. he scal hine ibidan on a-sette tidan<sup>2</sup>. *and* er meltiman metes ne arinan. for hit is a-writen þet wa þere þeode per þe king bið child. *and* þer þa aldor-men etað on erne marȝen ulaȝeliche<sup>3</sup>. Gif þe king wule mid carfulnesse haldan þas bebodan: þenne bið his riche isundful on liue. *and* efter þisse liue he scal faran to þan eche liue for his treowscipe. And ȝif he forslihð þas isetnesse\* *and* þas lare: þene bið his erd ihened oft *and* ilome eiðer ȝe on herȝunge. ȝe on hungre. ȝe on cwalme. ȝe on uniwidere. ȝe on wilde deoran.

Of the poor in spirit.

The proud poor is rich before God.

9. Of the king who is unrighteous.

\* [Fol. 43b.] The meaning of the word king.

The duties of a good king.

<sup>1</sup> The contraction is scarcely legible; ? read minstre.

<sup>2</sup> MS. ridan.

Woe to the people when the king is a child. (Eccles. x. 16.)  
<sup>3</sup> ? ulaȝe-jiche.

\* [Fol. 44a.] The evils that shall befall the country of a bad king.

take heed how it is written in books, if he holdeth not righteousness, that even as he is exalted on his throne before other men, so shall he be hurled down to the lowest torment under the unrighteous devil, whom he previously obeyed and pleased. The tenth abuse is that a bishop is negligent. Episcopos is a Greek name, which is in Latin *speculator*, and in English watchman, for he is ordained to the end that he may overlook the lewd with his superintendence (care), as God himself saith to Ezekiel the prophet, *Speculatorem dedi te domui Israel*; that is, I have made thee to be a watchman unto the house of my people Israel, that thou shouldst hear my word and shew them the speech of my mouth, and if thou wilt not tell the unrighteous of his unrighteousness, then the unrighteous shall die in his unrighteousness, and in indignation I shall require of thee his blood; and if thou warnest the unrighteous man and he will not turn from his sins through thee, he dieth in his unrighteousness, and thy soul shall be quit. Thus speaketh our Lord to bishops. Now if the bishop be negligent when he is God's messenger and ordained as instructor to the lay-folk, then shall many souls perish, and he himself forthwith for his negligence. But the people are blessed through a wise bishop, who declareth to them God's law and tends them under God, as a good shepherd, so that they may be saved and that he may receive the reward. The eleventh abuse is that the people be without instruction. Many follies there are where no discipline is, and where the foolish man is bold and where error reigns supreme. There shall it be hard for any wise man to dwell, and therefore saith the Psalmist, speaking in these words, *Apprehendite disciplinam nequando irascatur Dominus et pereatis de via justa*; that is, in English, Receive correction lest God be angry with you, and ye then perish from the right way. Also the apostle Paul saith in his Epistle, Continue in discipline, for ye shall be as fornicators if ye live without correction. Again, the prophet Isaiah concerning the same says, *Quiescite agere perverse, discite bene facere*; that is, Cease unrighteous deeds, and learn to do good; and David saith also, *Declina a malo et fac bonum*; that is, Turn from evil and do good. If thou be evil, turn thee from evil, lest thou perish at the last incorrigible. The twelfth abuse is that the people be without law. We may not observe Moses' law in the olden manner after our Lord's

Wite ee þe king hu hit is icweðen on boken. 3if he rihtwisnesse ne halt. *þet* swa swa he is on heuene<sup>1</sup> on his kine setle to-foran oðer mennem? swa he bið eft inipered on þan neopemeste pinan under þan unrihtwise deoule þe he er iherd *and* icwemde. [þ]e teouðe unþeau is *þet* biscop beo 3emeles. *Episcopus* is gerkisc noma *þet* is on boc leden speculator. *and* is on englice scawere. for he is iset to þon *þet* he scal ouerscawian mid his 3eme þa lewedan. swa god seolf cweð to ezechiele þan witegan. *Speculatorem dedi te domui israel.* *þet* is. Ic þe 3ef to scawere mine folke israel's hirede. *þet* þu ihere mine word *and* of mine muðe mine speche heom cuðe. *and* 3if þu þan unrihtwisan nult his unrihtwisnesse seggan? þenne swelt þe unrihtwise on his unrihtwisnesse. *and* ic of-ga et þe mid groman his blod *and* 3if þu wernast þane unrihtwise mon *and* he nule icherran from his sunnan þurh þe? he swelt on his unrihtwisnesse *and* pine saule bið aleded. Ðus speked ure drihten to biscopan. Nu 3if þe biscop bið 3emeles þenne he godes budel is *and* to larþeawe iset þan leawede folke? þenne losiað fele saulen *and* he seolf forð mid for his 3emeleste. ac *þet* folc bið iseli þurh snoterne biscop þe heom seið godes lare. *and* halt heom under gode swa god heo3te<sup>2</sup> *þet* heo beon ihaldene *and* he habbe<sup>3</sup> þe mede. [þ]e endleofte unþeau is folc beo butan steore. fela stuntnesse beoð? þer \*nan steore ne bið. *and* þer þe ðusie mon bið þriste. *and* þer þe dwolunge rixað? þere bið uuel to wunienne eni wise men. *and* for þon cweð þe salmwurhita mid þise<sup>4</sup> wurden cleopiende. *Apprehendite disciplinam nequando irascatur dominus & pereatis de uia iusta.* *þet* is on englice. Vnderfoð steore þi les ðe god iwurðe wrað wið eou *and* 3e þenne losian of þan rihtan weie. Ec þe apostel paulus cweð on his pistel Ðurð<sup>5</sup>-wuniað on steore *and* 3e beoð swilche forlizeres. 3if 3e libbað butan steore. Eft þe witega ysaias bi þan ilcan cweð. *Quiescite agere peruerse. discite bene facere.* *þet* is iswikeð unrihtwisra dedan? *and* leorniað god to wurchenne. *and* dauid cweð ec. *Declina a malo & fac bonum.* *þet* is. Buh from uuele *and* do god. Gif þu uuel were? iwend þe from uuele. þi les þe ðu steorles losie on ende. [þe] twelfta unðeau is. *þet* folc beo butan laze. we ne moten halden nu Moises laze on þa alde

<sup>1</sup> read on-houen.

10. Of a negligent bishop. Bishop is a Greek word—its meaning.

The Lord's words to bishops.

A negligent bishop causes many souls to perish.

<sup>2</sup> read heorde.

<sup>3</sup> originally habbenen.

11. Of the people without instruction.

\* [Fol. 44b.]

<sup>4</sup> MS. wise.

The words of the apostle Paul.

<sup>5</sup> ? Ðurh.

12. Of the people without law.

coming, but we shall fulfil to the best of our ability the Saviour's behests, and they are for a law to us, for we are ever without God if we observe not God's behests. Many ways there are, as the Book of Wisdom declares, which men think right, but they nevertheless at last leadeth to death those that foolishly follow them. He who forsaketh God's law, which is our way, he shall in various ways fall into many errors. Christ himself is the way, as he said of himself, *Ego sum via, veritas et vita*; that is, I am the way, and the truth, and the eternal life; no man may come to my heavenly Father but through me. But we are through Christ brought to heaven if we keep his ordinances. Those who live without God's law and God's ordinances, they are ever dwelling without God. The Lord himself promised this to all those that observe his behests, *Ecce ego vobiscum sum omnibus diebus usque ad consummationem seculi*; that is, I myself am with you all days unto the end of this world. May the Saviour direct us ever to his will, so that our souls may return again to him after our life (here) to the eternal life, and that he may receive our souls which previously he sent into the body. *Quod ipse prestare dignetur qui vivit et regnat Deus per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.

## XI.

### THE FIFTH SUNDAY IN LENT.

*Factus est Filius Dei omnibus sibi obtemperantibus causa salutis eternæ, appellatus a Deo pontifex juxta ordinem Melchisedech.*

Our Lord's holy passion, that is, his holy suffering which he for mankind underwent, is now come in, and the holy writ admonishes and bids us that we be mindful of the torment that our Lord endured for us at this time; and therefore we must ever honour him with all our hearts and with all our minds, and chiefly at this holy season which is now come to us; and we must thank him for the great compassion



wisan efter ure helendes to-cume. ac we sculen ȝefullan swa we best muȝen ȝes helendes biboda. *and* ȝa beoð us for laȝe for we beoð efre butan gode : ȝif we godes bibodan ne haldeð. Monie ȝewas<sup>1</sup> beoð swa swa ȝe wisdom cleopað. ȝe monnen ȝuncheð rihte. ac hi ȝah ledað to deðe on ende ȝa ȝe heom duseliche folȝiað. Ðe ȝe godes laȝe forlet ȝe is ure wei : he scal misliche faran on monie gedwilȝan. Crist seolf is ȝe weie : swa he seide bi him *Ego sum uia ueritas & uita*. ȝet is. Ic em ȝe wei *and* ȝa soðfestnesse *and* ȝet eche lif ne mei nan man bicuman to mine heouenliche federe butan ȝurh me. ac we beoð ȝurh crist to heouene ibroht : ȝif we his bigenge haldað. \* Ða ȝe butan godes laȝe *and* godes isetnesse libbeð : ȝa beoð butan gode efre wuniende. Drihten seolf bihat ȝis alle ȝon ȝe haldeð his biboden. *Ecce ego uobiscum sum omnibus diebus usque ad consummationem seculi*. ȝet is. ic seolf beo mid eow alle daȝen aȝet endunge ȝissere weorlde. Ðe helen[de] us iwissie to his willan efre ȝet ure saule moten eft-siȝian to him efter ure liue to ȝan eche liue. ȝet he ure saule underfo ȝe he er asende to ȝan lichoman. *Quod*<sup>2</sup> *ipse prestare dignetur qui uiuit & regnat deus per omnia secula seculorum*. Amen.

Worldly wisdom leadeth to death.

<sup>1</sup> ? ȝeȝes.

Christ is the way, the truth, and the life.

\* [Fol. 45a.]

God's promises to those who keep his behests.

<sup>2</sup> MS. quoð.

## XI.

### [DOMINICA V. QUADRAGESIMÆ.]

[**F**] *actus est filius dei omnibus sibi obtemperantibus causa salutis eterne : apellatus a deo pontifex iuxta ordinem Melchisedech.*

The text.

Vre drihtnes halie passiun. ȝet is his halie ȝrowunge ȝe he for moncunne underfeng. is nu icumen in. *and* ȝe halie writ us muneȝað *and* hat. ȝet we beon imundie of ȝere pine ȝe ure drihten ȝolede for us on ȝisse timan. *and* for-ȝi we sculen hine efre mid alle ure heorte. *and* mid alle ure mode herian *and* swiȝest on ȝissere halie tide ȝe is nu icumen to us. *and* we

The commemoration of our Lord's Passion.

Christ is to be praised specially at this season.



which he manifested towards us, when he spared not Jesus Christ his own Son, but gave him to death for mankind, as we sing in books, *Proprio Filio suo non pepercit Deus, sed pro nobis omnibus tradidit illum*; that is, God spared not his own Son, but gave him to death for us all. Again, the Apostle saith in his Epistle, *Christus factus est pro nobis obediens Patri, usque ad mortem, mortem autem crucis*—Christ, God's Son, was obedient to the heavenly Father to the death, and even to such a death as ye may see on the rood-token before you. With iron nails he was fastened on the cross, and with the spear's point pierced to the heart, and with a crown of thorns his head was crowned, so that the red blood flowed out on every side; and the folk that thus treated him kneeled before him in mockery, and greeted him, and in scorn called him king. Some there were that bound his eyes, and with their hands smote him smartly on the face, and bade him tell who it was that smote him. This torture and many others our Lord suffered from the heathen folk at this time, as the prophet had foretold when he said of him, *O vos omnes qui transitis per viam, attendite et videte si est dolor similis dolori meo*; that is, All ye that pass by the way, abide and understand and look (see) whether any man's sorrow be like my sorrow. Among all the sufferings that he suffered for us, he opened never once his mouth wickedly against any of them, as the Scripture said of him long before, *Dominus tanquam ovīs ad victimam ductus est, et non aperuit os suum*—Our Lord was led to the slaughter as one doth a sheep, and he never then opened his mouth. He willingly suffered for us and took our sins; for if it were not his will (so to do) no death nor suffering could hurt him, as the book saith, *Oblatus est quia ipse voluit, et peccata ipse portavit*; that is, our Lord was offered because that he desired it, and bore our sins; and nevertheless he did not compel the heathen folk to put him to death, but the devil instigated them to the work, and God permitted that (it) for the redemption of all faithful men; and the devil blinded their hearts so that they could not know our Lord who was amongst them. *Quia si principes mundi hujus Christum cognovissent*

sculan þonkian him þere muchele mildheortnesse þe he dude on us þa he na sparede na ihesu crist his aþene sune ac salde hine to deðe for moncunne al swa we singeð on boken. *proprio filio suo non pepercit deus. Sed pro nobis omnibus tradidit illum.*

God spared not his own son.

Ðet is. God ne sparede na his aþene berne: ac 3ef hine to cwale for us alle. eft þe apostel seið on his pistel. *Cristus factus est pro nobis obediens patri usque ad mortem mortem autem crucis.*

Crist godes sune wes ibuhsun þan heuenliche federe to þa deðe. and þet to swulche \*deðe swa 3e mazen iseon on þere rode tacne to-foren eou. Mid irenen neilen he wes on þere rode ifestned.

Of Christ's obedience and death.

\* [Fol. 45b.]

and mid speres orde to þere heorte istungen. and mid þornene crune his heaued wes icruned. swa þet þet rede blod seh ut on iwulche half. and þet folc þe hine þus makede knewede to-foren him on bismar and hine greite and cleopede king on bismar. Summe þer weren þet his eȝan bundan and hine on þet neb mid heore hondan stercliche beoten and hehten hine aredan: hwa hit were þet hine smite. Ðas pine and monie oðre ure drihten

Of his torments on the cross.

þolede of ðan heðene folke in þisse timan. al swa þe prophete heffede iboded þa he seide bi him. *O uos omnes qui transitis per uiam: attendite & uidete si est dolor similis dolori meo.* þet is Ge alle þe ferað þene wei: abidað and understondað and lokiað hewðer enies monnes sar beo iliche mine sare. Imong alle þere pine þe he for us þolede: ne undude he nefre ene his muð mid uuele to-3eines nan of heom al swa þet writ seide bi him muchel to-foran. *Dominus tanquam ovis ad uictimam ductus est: & non aperuit os suum.* Vre drihten wes iled to sleȝe al swa me dede a scep and he nefre þa ne undude his muð. His ahȝenes þonkes he þrowede for us and binom ure sunnan. for 3if hit his willa nere: ne mahte him nan deð ne nan pine denan<sup>1</sup>: al swa

Of his forbearance.

The words of Isaiah.

þe boc seið. *Oblatus est quia ipse uoluit: & peccata ipse portauit.* þet is ure drihten wes ioffred for-þi þe he hit walde and aber ure sunnan. and þah ne nedde he na þet heðene folc to his cwale ac þe deofel heom tuhte to þan werke and god ipeafede þet to \*alesendnesse alles ileffulles moncunnes. and þe deofel ablende heore heortan þet heo ne cunnan ienawen ure helend þe wes imong heom. *Quia si principes mundi huius Christum*

<sup>1</sup>? for derian.

The devil egged on the Jews to put Christ to death.

\* [Fol. 46a.]

*nunquam illum crucifixissent* ; that is to say, If the head-men (princes) of this world had known Christ, they would never have fastened him to the cross for our salvation. Christ's righteousness (justice) is so great that he would not have taken mankind by force out of the devil's power, unless he (the devil) had been guilty ; but he grievously sinned when he incited and beguiled the folk to put to death Christ the Son of Almighty God ; and then through his precious death we were delivered from eternal death, if we destroy not now ourselves through sins. Then it happened to the devil as it doth to the maw of the fish that sees the bait but not the hook which sticketh in the bait ; then is he greedy for the bait, and swallows the hook along with the bait. So was it with the devil. He saw the manhood in Christ, and not the divine nature ; wherefore he enticed the heathen folk to his (Christ's) death, and then felt the hook, which was Christ's divinity. Then Christ proceeded to hell and bound the old devil, and took from him Adam the first created man, and his wife Eve, and all those who of their kin in this life pleased God. He took not all those who were therein, but only one portion, as one taketh a bite out of an apple, for it was written through the prophet, *O mors, ero mors tua, morsus tuus ero inferne* ; that is, Thou death, I will be thy death, and thou hell, I will be thy sting. And then the devil felt the hook which he had before greedily swallowed ; for our Lord arose from death on the Sunday, which we call Easter Day, which will be a fortnight to-day, and delivered us, if we will, from the everlasting death which is in hell, into which we had fallen through the guilt of our forefathers. But we shall now do as the man that is, after Christ himself, called Christian. The wit and the wisdom which our Lord hath sent us, let us spend it in God's will and in God's works, and for our own advantage let us praise our Lord who delivered us and made us free, who previously were slaves ; and made us, who ere were thralls, his own sons. Let us love him with all our hearts, with all our souls, with all our minds, and with all our strength, as the apostle St. John admonishes us, *Diligamus Deum quia ipse prior dilexit nos* ; that is, Let us love our Lord, for he loved us before we loved him. Great love he showed for us when he redeemed us ; he had no need of us, but we had great need of him. Moreover we ought to do more. We must love

*cognouissent nunquam illum crucifixissent.* Ðet is to seggane. Gif þa hefdmen of þissere worlde hefden icnawen crist? nefden heo nefre ifestned hine on rode for ure hele. Cristes rihtwisnesse is swa muchel þet he nolde niman moncun nedunga of ðan deofle butan he hit forgulte. ac he hit forgulte eteliche þa þe he tuhte *and* spuhte þet fole to cristes ewale? þes almihtie godes sune. *and* þa þurh his deorewurðe deðe we weren alesede from þan eche deaðe. 3if we us seolue nu ne fordoð þurh sunnan. Ða itimede þan deofle als wa deð mahze fisce þe isið þet es. *and* ne isihz na þene hoc þe sticað on þan ese. þenne bið he gredi þes eses *and* forswolezeð þene hoc forð mid þan ese. Swa wes þon deofle. He iseh þa monnisnesse on criste *and* nauht þa godcunnesse. Ða tuhte he ðet heðene folc to his sleze *and* ifelde þa þene hoc þet wes cristes godcunnesse<sup>1</sup>. þe ferde to helle *and* iwrað þene alde deouel *and* nom of him adam þene frumscepene mon. *and* his wif euan *and* alle þa þe of heore cunne on þis liue gode iewenden. Ne nom he na alle þa þe þer inne weren ah ane dale als wa me bit of ane eppel? for hit wes awriten þurh þan prophete. *O mors ero mors tua morsus tuus ero inferne.* þet is. Ðu deað ic wulle beon þin deð? *and* þu helle ic wulle beon þin bite. *and* þa ifelde þe deofel þene hoc. þe he er gredliche forswearh for ure drihten \*aras of deaðe on þene sunnen dei þe we hateð easter dei. þe nu bið to dei on fowertene niht. *and* alesde us 3if we wulleð of þan eche deaðe þe is on helle þe we weren in bifolen þurh ure eldra gult. ah we sculen don nu al swa þe mon þe bið efter criste selue cristene mon inemned þet wit *and* þene wisdom þe ure drihten us sende aspenen we hit on godes willan *and* on godes wercan. *and* us seluan to helpe herien we ure drihten þe us alesde *and* makede us freo of þeowan *and* of þrelan his ahzene bern. Luuian we hine mid alre heorte. mid alre saulen. mid alle mode. mid alle meine als wa þe apostel Sancte Iohannes us munað. *Diligamus deum quia ipse prior dilexit nos.* Ðet is luuian we ure drihten. for þon þe he luuede us er we hine. Muchele luue he us cudde þa he us alesde. Nefde he nane neode to us ac we hefden muchele neode to him. Git we sculen mare. we sculan luuian ure nehstan

How the devil sinned against Christ.

The devil like a fish that swallows the bait with the hook.

He saw Christ's manhood, but not his divine nature.

<sup>1</sup> sic.

\* [Fol. 46b.]  
On Easter Day Christ redeemed us.

Let us praise him with all our heart, soul, mind, and might.

our neighbour—that is, all Christian folk—as ourselves, for we are all brethren. We all have one father in heaven, and we all address him and say, *Pater noster qui es in cælis*—Our Father which art in heaven. None of us may say “my Father,” nor “thy Father,” but “our Father that art in heaven.” As boldly may the poorest man call God his father, as the richest man of the land, wherefore no man ought to bear malice nor hatred towards any Christian man, as St. John saith in his Epistle, *Qui odit fratrem suum manet in morte*—The man who hateth his brother abideth in death. And again, the same apostle saith, *Qui dicit se diligere dominum et fratrem suum odit, mendax est*—The man who saith that he loveth God, and hateth his brother, is a liar; for if a man loveth not his brother whom he seeth, how can he love well his Lord whom he seeth not? Among the great lessons which our Lord taught his apostles, he taught them even this before other things, and said, *Hoc est preceptum meum ut diligatis invicem sicut dilexi vos*—This is my command and behest, that ye love one another as I have loved you. And therefore shall every man love another, *Non verbo neque lingua sed opere et veritate*; that is, Not alone with words, nor with the tongue, but even in deed and in truth. And may our Lord and Redeemer grant us all that we in this life so observe his behests and commands, that we may have for our reward the bliss of heaven’s kingdom. *Auxiliante domino nostro Jesu Christo, qui vivit et regnat per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.

## XII.

### THE SECOND SUNDAY AFTER EASTER.

*Christus passus est pro nobis, vobis relinquens exemplum, ut sequimini vestigia ejus, &c.* All that we read and sing at this time in holy church, it all appertains to God’s love and to God’s praise. The songs which we now sing are blissful, for they are made of the heavenly bliss which was opened to us at this time when our Lord arose from



*pet* is al cristene fole alswa us seoluan. for alle we beoð ibroðran. Alle we habbeð enne feder on heouene *and* alle we cleopiað to him *and* seggað. *Pater noster qui es in celis.* Vre feder þe ert in heouene. Ne seið ure nan min<sup>1</sup> feder ne þin feder ah ure feder þe ert in heouene alswa baldeliche mei þe wrechesta mon clepian drihtan him to federe swa þe richeste mon of þan londe for-þi ah nan mon to beoran nið ne onde to nane cristene monne: al swa *Sancte iohan* seið in his pistelle. *Qui odit fratrem suum manet in morte.* Ðe mon þe hetað his broðer he wunað in deaðe *and* ef(t) þe ilca apostel seið. *Qui dicit se diligere dominum & fratrem suum odit: mendax est.* Ðe mon 7e seið *pet* he luuað \*god. *and* hateð his broþer he is lihzare. for þe mon þe ne luuað na his broðer þe he isið. hu mei he luuian wel ure drihten þe he naut ne isihð: Imong þan muchela wisdoma þe ure drihten larde his apostles he tahte heom. þis swulche toforan oðran þingan: *and* cweð. *Hoc est preceptum meum ut diligatis inuicem sicut dilexi uos.* Ðis is min bibode *and* min heste. *pet* 3e luuian eou bitwixan alswa ic luuede eou. *and* for-þi scal iwile mon oðerne luuian. *Non uerbo neque lingua sed opere & ueritate.* *pet* is naut one mid worde ne mid tunge: ac ee mid worke *and* mid soðfestnesse. *and* ure drihten *and* ure alesend iunne us allen *pet* we swa on þisse liue mazen his hest *and* his biboden halden: *pet* we moten habben to mede heouenariches blisse. *Auxiliante domino nostro ihesu Christo qui uiuit & regnat per omnia secula seculorum. amen.*

Love thy neighbour as thyself.

<sup>1</sup> n is partly erased.

He who hates his brother loves not God.

\* [Fol. 47a.]

Christ bade us love one another,

in deed and in truth.

## XII.

[DOMINICA SECUNDA POST PASCHA.]

*Christus passus est pro nobis uobis relinquens exemplum. ut sequimini uestigia eius & cetera.* Al *pet* me ret *and* singeð on þisse timan in halie chirche. al hit bilimpeð to godes luue: *and* to godes herunge. Ða songes þa we nu singeð beoð blisfulle for heo boð makede of þere heouenliche blisse þe us wes

The text, 1 Pet. ii. 21.

Songs of praise to be sung at this period.



the dead, and delivered us from eternal death, and will bring us (hereafter) to everlasting life. Great love our Lord shewed us when he, who is and ever was, without beginning, true God, became for our help true man. *In similitudinem hominum factus et habitu inventus ut homo*; that is, He was made in the likeness of man, and enclosed in flesh as man; and much more love he shewed us when he redeemed us, for it is written, *Nihil nobis nasci profuit, nisi redimi profuisset*; that is, It profited us nothing that we were born, unless he redeemed us. With (a) very great price we were redeemed, as St. Peter hath said, thus saying, *Non ex corruptibili auro vel argento redempti estis de vestra vana conversatione, sed precioso sanguine agni immaculati et incontaminati Jesu Christi Filii Dei*; that is to say, Ye are not redeemed from the devil's power with gold nor with silver, but with the precious blood of the pure and unspotted Lamb, that is God's Son. He is the true Lamb, as St. John the Baptist hath said, *Qui tollit peccata mundi*—who taketh away the sins of middle earth. His precious blood was shed in a place called *Calvarie locus*, as the evangelist telleth us. There it was shed *in remissionem peccatorum nostrorum*; that is, for forgiveness of our sins. With his blood we should daily besprinkle (spiritually) the posts and the lintel of our houses, that is of our hearts; that is to say, that we shall cross our foreheads and the seven gates of the body with the sign of the holy cross, that our enemy—*Qui tanquam leo rugiens circuit querens quem devoret*; that is, That the devil who goeth about as a hungry lion seeking whom he may destroy, that he may never come within us. What are the seven gates? They are our eyes, our nose, our mouth, and our ears. Upon them, as we before said, we shall mark the sign of the cross, *in qua triumphavit rex angelorum*—that is, of the cross by which the King of angels overcame the devil; for that is the seal which the devil cannot break, that is the lock which the devil cannot unlock, that is the bolt which the devil cannot break. Of this token a wise man said, *Hæc est scala peccatorum per quam Christus rex calorum*

iopenad on pisse timan þe ure drihten aras of deaðe *and* alesde  
us of þan eche deðe *and* wule us bringan to eche liue. Muchele  
luue ure drihten us cudde þa þe he þe is *and* eure wes butan  
biginnunge soð god bicom for ure helpe soð mon. *In simili-*  
*tudinem hominum factus & habitu inuentus ut homo.* þet is he  
wes imacad to monne ilienesse *and* iwunden mid flesce al swa  
mon *and* muchele \*mare luue he seawede is þa þe he us alesde  
for hit is awriten. *Nichil nobis nasci profuit: nisi redimi pro-*  
*fuisse.* Ðet is. Ne fremede us na þing þet he<sup>1</sup> were iboren:  
buten he us alesde. Mid swiðe muchele wurðe we weren alesde  
al swa. *Sancte peter* us seide *and* eweð. *Non ex corruptibili auro*  
*uel argento redempti estis de uestra uana conuersatione:* sel pre-  
*cioso sanguine agni immaculati & incontaminati ihesu Christi*  
*filii dei.* Ðet is to seggen. Ge ne beoð ne alesde of deofles  
anwalde mid golde ne mid seolure: ac beoð mid þan deorewurpe  
bleode of þan elenan *and* of þan unwemmedan lombes Ðet is  
godes sune. He is þet soðe lomb alswa. *Sancte Iohan* þe baptist  
cweð. *Qui tollit peccata mundi.* þe binimeð middanerdes sunne.  
his deorewurpe blod wes asced on stude þe is ihaten. *caluarie*  
*locus.* al swa þe godspellere us seið. Ðer hit wes agoten *In*  
*remissionem peccatorum nostrorum.* Ðet is alesendnesse of ure  
sunnan. Mid his blode we sculen deihwanliche<sup>2</sup> þa postles *and*  
þet ouerslaht of ure huse þet is of ure heortan gastliche bispre-  
gan. þet is to understondan þet we sculen ure forheafod *and*  
þa .vii. ȝeade ures lichomes mid þere halie rode tacne seinian  
þet ure wiðerwinna. *Qui tanquam leo rugiens circuit querens*  
*quem deuoret.* þet is þet þe deofel þe geð abutan alswa þe gredie  
leo sechinde hwen he mæge fordon þet he neure ne mæge cuman  
wið-innan us. hwet beoð þas .vii. ȝeate: Ðet beoð ure eȝan  
*and* ure neose *and* ure muð *and* ure earan. yppon heom alswa  
we er seiden we sculen markian þet tacne of þere halie rode. *In*  
*qua triumphauit rex angelorum.* þet is of þere rode of \*hwem  
englan king ouercom þene deofel. for þet inseil þe þe deofel ne mei  
nefre to breocan. þet is þet [loc] þeðe deofel ne eon unlucan. þet  
is þet scutles þeðe deofel ne mei nefre to-cȝsan. Bi pisse tacne  
seide sum wis mon. *Hec est scala peccatorum per quam Christus rex*

Of Christ's  
great love to-  
wards us.

\* [Fol. 47b.]

<sup>1</sup> ? we.

The words of  
St. Peter.

Christ the  
true lamb.

<sup>2</sup> ? deihwam-  
liche.

Where to  
make the sign  
of the cross.

The seven  
gates of the  
body.

The virtues of  
the holy rood.  
\* [Fol. 48a.]

*ad se traxit omnia*—This is the ladder of sinful men through which our Lord draweth to himself all mankind. Through this token king Constantine overcame all the folk that fought against him. Through this token Moses made the water of Egypt to be pleasant and sweet to all the people of Israel, which was sour and bitter to all the men of the country. Again, through this token Moses brought water out of the hard flint and gave the folk to drink upon the hill of Sinai. Otherwise might our Lord have redeemed us, if it were his will (so to do), but it seemed good to him that we who through the tree had been doomed to hell for our sins, should afterwards through the tree of the cross be redeemed. Of this redemption and of the conflict which our Lord had with the devil, David the prophet spake when he was on the earth, *Liberavit pauperem a potente et pauperem cui non erat adjutor*; that is, in English, The Lord delivered the poor from the mighty, and the poor who was altogether helpless. The poor that he spake of was our father Adam, who became poor and helpless as soon as he broke God's commands and God's behests. Our Lord who created him did not make him poor, as it is written, that our Lord crowned him with bliss and with honour, and set him over his handiwork; and again it is written of him in the same psalm, *Omnia subjecisti sub pedibus ejus*; that is, All earthly things our Lord put under his feet, all beasts and all cattle that were on the earth, all the fowls that flew in the air, and all the fishes that swam in the sea. They were all obedient to Adam, and not only under his hand but under his feet. But as soon as he forsook his Creator, through his wife's counsel, they lost the delightful abode which was assigned them, that was earthly Paradise. Then anon they were expelled, as the book saith, *Expulsi sunt nec potuerunt stare*—They were driven out of Paradise, and might no longer abide there. And where went they then? Truly into this world—*ubi omnis homo cum dolore nascitur et cum dolore moritur*—Into this world they went where each man is born in great sorrow, and endeth his life in great grief. Here they lived all their lifetime in anxiety and in affliction, and in great toil; and after this life their souls went to hell, and there remained three thousand years

*celorum ad se traxit omnia.* Ðis is sunfulla monna leddre þurh hwa<sup>1</sup> ure drihtan teh to him al moneun. þurh þis tacne þe king *constantinus* ouer com at þet folc þe feiht to-geines him. Ðurh þisse tacne makede *Moyſes* þet ðet weter of egipte wes liðe and swete þan folce of israel. þe wes sur and bitere alle þon monnen of þan londe. Eft þurh þisse tacne Moyses werp ut þet welle weter of þan herda flinte and 3ef þan folke drinken uppā þan hulle synai. On oðer wise ure drihten us mehte alesan 3if his wille were. ac him þuhte biemmelic þet we þe weren þurh þe treo forgult in to helle: weren. eft þurh þet treo of þere rode alesede. Of þissere alesednesse and of þan icompe þe ure drihten hefde wið þene feond: dauid þe prophete seide þo he wes on eorðe. *Liberavit pauperem a potente & pauperem cui non erat adiutor.* Ðet is on englice. Drihten alesde þene wrechan of þan mehtigan and þen werchan þe wes al helples. Ðes wrecche þe he of spec wes ure feder adam. þe bicom wrecche and helples swa sone he to-brec godes bibode and godes heste. vre drihten þe hine iscop ne macode hine na wrecche. alswa hit is awriten. þet ure drihten hine crunede mid blisse and mid wurðscipe. and sette hine ouer his hondiwere. and eft hit is awriten bi him on þan ilcan psalme. *Omnia \*subiecisti sub pedibus eius.* Ðet is al eorðlic þing ure drihten dnde under his fotan. Alle þa deor and alle þe nutenu þe on eorðe weren. and alle þe fuzelas þe fluzen bi þan lufte. and alle þe fiscas þe swummen in þere se: alle heo weren adame ibuhsume and naut ane under his hond: ac under his fet. Ac swa sone swa he forseh his scuppard þurh his wifes red: heo forluren ba þa murie wununge þe heom bitaht wes: þet wes eorðliche para[d]is. Ða anan heo weren iscouen: alswa þe boc seið. *Expulsi sunt nec potuerunt stare.* heo weren ipult ut of paradise: and ne mehten þer naleng etstonden. and hwer bicomē heo þa: Soðliche on þissere worulde. *ubi omnis homo cum dolore nascitur & cum dolore moritur.* on þissere weorlde heo bicomē þer iwilch mon bið iboren mid muchele sara. and mid muchele sorze his lif iendað. her heo leueden al heore lifdazes on kare and on pine and on unimete iswinche. and efter þisse line heore saulen ferdē to helle and þer wuneden.

The cross is the ladder of sinful men.  
1 ? hwan.

Through the tree we perished, and through the tree we were redeemed.

God did not make Adam poor,

\* [Fol. 48b.]

but put all things under his feet.

They became poor when they were banished from Paradise.

and thereto four hundred years ; and all the men descended from them, good and evil, as soon as their souls left their bodies they went to hell. There might none resist, neither prophet, nor patriarch, nor even St. John the Baptist, who bore witness of our Lord and said, Between man and woman was never a greater man than he, but nevertheless his soul was ever in hell until the strong lion (came), that was the Son of the living God—*et contrivit portas ereas, et vectes fereos confregit* ; that is, he thrust aside the gates of steel and broke in pieces the iron bars of hell, and took out all those who in this life observed his behests. *Et eduxit eos de tenebris et umbra mortis*—He led them out of darkness and from the shadow of death into heaven ; *ad quod et nos perducatur Christus filius Dei vivi, qui vivit et regnat per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.

### XIII.

#### SERMON ON 2 CORINTHIANS IX. 6.

*Qui parce seminat, parce et metet.* Our lord Saint Paul, the greatest teacher after our Lord himself, speaketh in the holy epistle, which is read to-day in holy church, and exhorts both clerks and laity to God's words and to good deeds, and thus saith, *Spiritualiter quidem monens hos, ut ait Gregorius, ad sanctæ predicationis officium. Generaliter vero hos et illos ad salutarem obedientiam mandatorum.* Consecrated men he admonishes to teach well lewd men (the laity), and both consecrated and the lewd to lead a fair and pure life in this world ; and saith that every man shall receive recompence, thus saying, *Qui parce seminat et cetera.* The man that soweth little shall reap little, and he that soweth in joy shall reap in joy, that is to say, the man who well doeth he shall receive abundantly. *Sacra Scriptura nomine seminis appellat tria, scilicet, hominis progenituram, Dei verbum, opus bonum.* Holy Scripture commonly nameth three things as seed—one is man's progeny, the second is God's word, and the third is good deeds. Our



iiii. þusend 3eran *and* þerto iii. hundred 3eran *and* alle þa men þe comen of heom gode *and* uuele swa sone swa heore saulen *and* heore licoma to-delden heo ferdan to helle. Ne mihte þer nan wiðstonden. ne prophete. ne patriarche. ne hure. *Sancte iohannes baptiste.* þe ure drihten ber iwitnesse *and* seide. Bitwuxe were *and* wife nes nefre mare mon þenne he. ac þah hweðre his saule wes in helle. a ðet þa streonge leo þet wes þes liuizendes godes sune. *Et contriuit portas ereas. & uectes fereos confregit.* Ðet is he to-pruste þa stelene gate. *and* to brec þa irene barren of helle. *and* nom ut alle þa ilcan þe on þisse \*liue his bibode heolden. *Et eduxit eos de tenebris & umbra mortis.* He ledde heom of þeostran *and* of scadewe. *and* of deaðe into heouena riche. *ad quod et nos perducat Christus filius dei uiui. qui uiuit et regnat per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.

Adam and Eve were in hell four thousand four hundred years.

\* [Fol. 49a.]

Christ brought them out.

### XIII.

[SERMO IN EPIST. 2 AD CORINTH. IX. 6.]

[Q] *vi parce seminat : parce & metet.* vre lauerd seinte paul he3es[t] larðewen. efter ure helende seolfe : speceð on þe halie pistle þe me ret to dei ine halie chirehe *and* munegeð eiðer ihadede *and* ileawede to godes worde *and* to weldede *and* þus seið. *Spiritualiter quidem monens hos ut ait gregorius ad sancte predicationis officium. Generaliter uero hos & illos ad salutarem obedienciam mandatorum.* Ihadede men he munegeð wel to lerene ilewede men. Ihadede *and* lewede feier lif *and* elene to leden in þisse liue. *and* seið þet eurie mon scal auon mede : *and* þus seið. *Qui parce seminat et cetera.* Ðe mon þet lutel seweð he scal lutel ma3e. *and* þe ðe saweð on blescunge he scal mawen of blescunge þet is to suggen. Ðe mon þe wel deð : he wel ifehð. *Sacra scriptura nomine seminis appellat tria. scilicet hominis progenituram. dei uerbum. opus bonum.* Halie boc nemneð iwuneliche ðreo þing to sede. an is monnes istreon. þet

The text.

The clergy and laity are admonished to lead a pure life.

We shall reap according to what we sow.

Three things spoken of by Holy Writ as seed.



Lord called man's progeny seed, when he spake with the holy man Abraham of his seed, and said that so great a people should spring from him, that no man should be able to number them any more than one may number the stars of heaven, and thus said, *Suspice cælum et numera stellas si potes, sic erit semen tuum.* Look, he said, up to heaven and number the stars if thou canst; so great shall be thy offspring. *Sed observandum est quod prudens sator observat et glebe aptitudinem et temporis opportunitatem.* It is to be noticed that when the wise husbandman is about to sow, he taketh heed of two things. One is whether the land be fit for the seed. So also ought every Christian man and woman, when they go to sow for issue, to take great care that they do it in a becoming (proper) place and at a right time. There is no place fit for procreation except those that procreate be lawfully married together, nor is there ever right time thereto when they ought to fast or keep holy day. Again, God's word is called seed in the beautiful parable which our Saviour spake with his own mouth to his apostles, and thus said, *Exiit qui seminat et cetera.* A rich man went out and sowed, and some of the seed fell upon stones and there dried up, and some among thorns and there perished, and some by the way and were trodden under and fowls devoured it, and some on good earth and that came well forth. The apostles entreated him that he should say what the parable signified, and he said, *Semen est verbum Dei, sator autem Christus, omnis qui audit eum manebit in eternum.* God's word is the seed and Christ is the sower, and every man who heareth joyfully God's word and leadeth his life rightly thereafter, he shall have everlasting life and bliss without end. *Sed est diligenter attendendum quod hoc semen spargitur tum ore proprio tum ore ministrorum.* But we must understand that our Saviour soweth his holy word sometimes through his own mouth and sometimes through the mouths of the apostles, sometimes through the mouths of clerks who know the lore of holy books and who read and teach God's law unto the hearts of man. And in such wise speaks the heavenly King with every Christian man to whom he sendeth his holy Scriptures. *In hac etiam satione diligenter observa agri competentiam, et temporis*

oðer is godes word. *and þet* ðridde is weldede. vre drihten cleopede monnes streon sed: þa þe he spec wið ðene halie mon abraham of his istreone *and* seide. *þet* swa muchel moncun sculde springen of him ðet na man ne mihte itellen a mare þe me mei ðeo steorren of heuene: *and þus* seide. *Suspice celum & numera stellas si potes: Sic erit semen tuum.* Bihald he \*seide up to heouene *and* tel þeo steoren 3if þu miht swulc scal beon þin ofspring. *Sed obseruandum est quod prudens sator obseruat & glebe aptitudinem & temporis opportunitatem.* hit is to witene þet alrihtes swa also þe wise teolie þenne he wule sawe nimeð zeme of twam þingen. an is hweðer þet lond beo bicumelic to þe sede. Alswa alhte eurec cristene mon: wepmon *and* wifmon. þenne heo fundieð to teoliende: efter istreone nimen muchele zeme þet heo hit<sup>1</sup> don on bicumeliche stude *and* on rihte time. Nis na stude to istreone bicumelic butan ða þe istreonieð beon bispused rihtliche to gedere. ne neaure nis riht time þer to: þenne me scal ueste oðer al freos3e. Eft-sone godes word is icleoped sed: on þere feire forbisne þe ure helend seide mid his a3ene muðe to his apostlen: *and þus* seide. *Exiit qui seminat et cetera.* A riche mon ferde ut: *and* seow *and* sum of þe sede feol an uppe þe stane *and* þer adru3ede *and* sum among þeornen *and* þer aswond *and* sum bi þe weie *and* werð to-treden *and* fu3eles hit freten. *and* sum on gode eorðe: *and þet* com wel forð. ðeo apostles hine beden þet he scalde suggen hwet þeo sa3e bieweðe *and* he seide. *Semen est uerbum dei sator autem Christus omnis qui audit eum manebit in eternum.* Godes word is sed *and* crist is þe sawere *and* euric mon þe lusteð luueliche godes wordes *and* ledeð his lif rihtliche þer efter: he scal habben eche lif *and* blisse abuten ende. *Sed est diligenter attendendum quod hoc semen spargitur tum ore proprio tum<sup>2</sup> ore ministrorum.* ah þet is to understonde þet ure helend saweð \*his halie word hwile þurh his a3ene muðe *and* hwile þurh ðere apostlene muðe. hwile þurh ðere clerkene muðe þe cunnen þe lare of halie boke þe radeð *and* techeð godes laze in to þes monnes heorte. *and* alswuche wise spekeð ðe eorðliche<sup>3</sup> king wið iwilche cristene monne þe he to sendeð his halie iwrinen. *In hac eciam satione diligenter obserua agri competentiam: & temporis*

1. Man's progeny.
2. God's word.
3. Good deeds.

\* [Fol. 49b.]

Two things to be taken heed of in sowing seed.

<sup>1</sup> MS. bit.

The Parable of the Sower.

The explanation of the Parable.

<sup>2</sup> MS. cum.

\* [Fol. 50a.]

<sup>3</sup> ? heofenliche.  
God speaks to every Christian man.

*congruentiam.* When the instructor of the people is about to sow his seed he ought to take great care that he sows it in proper earth, and at the right time, in the hearts of the men who joyfully listen to God's words. Some of these were previously good, some thereby became good, and this is befitting earth in which to sow God's seed. But those who love (their) sins, and will not renounce them nor be subject to any belief, are unbecoming earth for the seed of God's word. *Unde divina scriptura. Nolite spargere margaritas ante porcos.* And therefore said the heavenly teacher, Ye shall not lay gemstones (jewels) before swine for meat. On every Sunday and other high days is the time to sow the holy seed, that is God's word, and that in holy church, where all Christian men ought to be gathered together. *Bonum opus nomine seminis dicitur, tum quum nunc seritur in futuro metetur, tum quum more frugum multiplicabitur.* Good works are called seed for two reasons ; one is, that just as they sow seed at one time and gather the fruit at another time, so also man doth now his deeds in this life and in the eternal world he shall receive the reward thereof ; the second is, as of one seed come manifold fruits, so of a good deed shall man receive afterwards manifold and great rewards. *Multa quidem genera sunt bonorum operum, sed hic de uno eorum agitur, scilicet de elemosinarum largitione, unde prophetam inducit dicentem. Dispensit, dedit pauperibus, et cetera.* Many kinds of good deeds are there ; but the apostle exhorts us to one of them, that is almsdeed, and saith that we ought to give alms to destitute men, but, as the holy Psalmist David said, distribute it so that every needy man that craves it may receive something thereof. Give what behoveth thee, bestow it, and do not sell them the alms, but give. All good deeds are profitable for penance, but none more profitable than almsdeed. *Quia sicut aqua extinguit ignem, ita elemosina peccatum.* For as water quencheth fire, so almsdeeds quench sin. But if we sell the alms it loseth its name and its virtue also. *Quatuor modis venditur elemosina, et tunc inde populi favor emitur, aut pudoris molestia deprimitur, aut recompensatio rei temporalis adquiritur, aut debiti beneficii solutio impenditur.* In four kinds of way man selleth

congruenciam. Denne þeʒs folkes larþew his sed wule sawen he ahte to nimene muchele ʒeme þet he hit sawe on bicumeliche eorðe; and on rihte time. On ðere monne heorte þe hnelich[e] lusteð godes wordes summe heo creðon gode weoren summe heo ðere þurh gode iwurðeð. and þet bið bicumelic eorðe godes wordes on to sawen. Ah þa ðe sunnen lneð and for-leten heom nulleð ne nane bileafe under-fo; heo beoð unbicumelic eorðe to þe sede of godes weorde. *Vnde diuina scriptura. Nolite spargere Margaritas ante porcos.* and þere for seide þe heouenliche larþew. Ne sculen ʒe nawiht ʒimstones leggen swinen to mete. Euriche sumen deie. and oðre heʒe dazen is time to sawene þet halie sed þet is godes word. and ðet in halie clirche þer alle cristene men aʒen to beon isomned to gedere. *Bonum opus nomine seminis dicitur. tum quum nunc seritur in futuro metetur. tum quum more frugum multiplicabitur.* Weldede is icleoped sed; for twam þingen. An is ðet alrihtes swa also me saweð sed on ane time and gedereð þet frut on oðer time; al swa mon deð nuðe his dede in þisse liue. and on ðere eche weorlde \*he scal hafon ðer of his mede. Ðet oðer is. Alswa of ane sede cumeð feole folde weste. Alswa of ane eðeliche dede mon scal afon eft feole folde mede and muchele. *Multa quidem genera sunt bonorum operum. sed hic de uno eorum agitur. scilicet de elemosinarum largitione. vnde prophetam inducit dicentem. Dispersit dedit pauperibus. et cetera.* feole cunne beoð of weldede. Ah þe apostel us munegeð here to one of heom þet is ehnasdele and seið þet me heo scal ʒefen hafelesen monne monne<sup>1</sup>. Ah also ðe halie salmwurhte dauid. seide delen heo þet enric neodi ðe heo biseceð sum þing ðer of afo. Gif þan bilazeð ðe heo deleð and neng<sup>2</sup> sullen heom ðeo elmesse ah ʒefen. Alle weldede beoð freomfulle to sun-bote<sup>3</sup>. ah nan mare freomful denne elmes idal. *Quia sicut aqua extinguit ignem ita elemosina peccatum.* for alswa weter acwencheð fur; alswa elmesdede acwencheð sunne. Ah ʒif me sulleð þeo elmesse heo feorleoseð hire nome and hire milite alswa. *Quatuor modis uenditur elemosina. & tunc inde populi fauor euertitur<sup>4</sup>. aut pudoris molestia deprimitur. aut re-compensatio rei temporalis adquiretur. aut debiti beneficii solutio*

Things to be regarded by the sower of spiritual seed.

Holy seed to be sown on Sunday.

Good deeds are called seed.

\* [Fol. 50b.]

Of this seed cometh manifold fruits.

Of almsdeed.

<sup>1</sup> sic.

<sup>2</sup> sic.

<sup>3</sup> M<sup>s</sup>. sum-bote.

Do not sell thy alms.

<sup>4</sup> ? emitur.

his alms. One is when he begetteth praise therewith. *Et hoc animi morbo laborat fere omnis homo.* And this vice hath mostly all men who give their alms both for love (sake) of recompense and also for to have praise, and to be honoured far and near where they are known. In the second mode man selleth his alms when he giveth it to such men whom for shame he cannot refuse because neighbours or else friends, and therewith rids him of shame which he should have if he gave it not. In the third mode he selleth his alms when he gives it to such a man who doth for him, or hath done or shall do, good service and chares (good turns), and thinketh with his alms to requite him his trouble. Then is this man's good-will (services) bought with the alms. In the fourth mode a man selleth his alms when he giveth it to such men as he ought rightly to help, for sustenance, for clothing, according to his behoof, as doth many a man who giveth his alms to father or mother, brother or sister, or others so akin, that he may not rightly withhold it. All the alms which a man doth specially to please our Lord, all that quencheth sin and merits (earns) recompense from our Saviour himself, and all good deeds which a man doth in other ways, and are also done for the love of recompense, he nevertheless selleth them and receiveth here the reward thereof, as our Lord saith in the Gospel, *Amen dico vobis, receperunt mercedem suam.* Verily I say unto you, that those who do good for to have thereof again in this life, shall have no reward in the everlasting world ; but all that a man doth specially for God's love he shall receive the reward thereof, and be then rewarded even as it shall now be merited here ; for our Lord saith in the holy gospel, *Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis remetietur vobis.* According to the same measure that ye mete now, your good deeds shall afterwards be meted to your meed (advantage), and a hundredfold more. As we previously said, *Qui parce seminat et cetera.* Every man shall afterwards reap according to what he now sows, and he who soweth now in joy shall afterwards reap in joy ; that is, every man who leadeth a fair and pure life, and according to all his behoof distributes his alms, merits thereby that all men bless him and pray for him ; and our Lord God Almighty for their prayers will give him his blessing, that is, the



*inpenditur.* An fower cunne wise mon sulleð his elmesse. An is þenne he biȝeteð hereword ȝere mide. *Et hoc animi morbo laborat fere omnis homo.* and þesne lehter habbeð mest hwet alle men. ȝe ȝefeð heore elmesse eiðer for godes luue and ec for hereword to habbene and beon iwurðegede fir \*and neor ȝer þe heo icnawene beoð. An oðre wise mon sulde<sup>1</sup> his elmesse þenne he heo ȝefeð swulche monne ȝe he for seome wernen ne mei for neȝeburredde oðer elles freonde and þere mide hine aleseð of seome : þe he habben seulde. ȝif he heo ne ȝef. On ȝridde wise mon sullȝe his elmesse ȝenne he heo ȝefeð sulche monne þe him deð. oðer haueð idon. oðer don scal wiken and cherres and ȝencheð mid his elmesse forȝelden him ȝeo hwile. ȝenne bið þes monnes wile ibeht mid þere elmisse. On feorðe wise mon sulleð his elmesse. þenne he heo ȝefeð swulche monne þe he alite mid rihte helpe to fodneðe and to serude bi his bi-haȝe. also deð monimon ȝe ȝefeð his elmesse feader oðer moder brøðer oðer suster oðer oðre swa isibbe ȝe he ne mei mid rihte wiðteon. Al ȝe almisse þe mon deð sunderlipe for to quemen ure drihten : alle þeo eweneheð sunnen and ernið sunbote at ure helende seolfe. and alle goddede þe mon deð on oðre wise and beoð ec idone for godes luue. Neoðeles he beom sulleð and underuehȝe here ȝer of his mede alswa ure drihten seið in þe godspelle. *amen dico uobis : receperunt mercedem suam.* to soðe ic eow sugge þet þa ȝe doð god for to habben ȝer of aȝen in pisse liue ; nabbeð heo nenne þone on eehe weorlde. Ah al þet mon deð sunderlipe \*for godes luuen : he scal auon ȝer of his mede. and beon þenne ifunde also hit bið nuðe ierned here. for ure drihten hit seið in þe halie godspelle. *Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis remecietur uobis.* Biðon ilke imet ȝe ȝe meteð nuðe : eower weldede scal eft beon imeten eower mede. and bi hunderfalde mare : alswa we er seiden. *Qui parce seminat & cetera.* Æuric mon scal eft mowen bi þon þe he nu saweð. and þe þe<sup>2</sup> saweð nu on blescunge. he scal eft mowen of blescunge. Ðet is æuric mon þe ledeð feir lif and elene. and bi al his bihaȝe deleð his elmesse and þere mide ierned þet alle men hine blesceð. and for him biddeð. and ure lauerd god almihten for heore bene ȝeneð

In four ways  
may alms be  
sold.

1. When it is  
given for the  
sake of a  
return.

\*[Fol. 51a.]

<sup>1</sup> sulȝe =  
sulleð.

2. For shame.

3. For good  
services.

4. When it is  
given to those  
whom they  
ought to  
support.

Alms given  
rightly  
quench sin.

\*[Fol. 51b.]

They shall be  
rewarded a  
hundredfold.

<sup>2</sup> sic.



eternal kingdom that he hath prepared for all men who do his will here in this life. *Ad quam gloriam nos perducere dignetur dominus noster Jesus Christus, qui vivit et regnat per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.

## XIV.

## THE LORD'S DAY.

*R*euerenda est nobis hæc dies sancta quæ dicitur dominica, et ideo dicitur dominica quoniam hæc dies sola dies Domini est. Greatly ought we to honour this holy day that is called Sunday, for it is God's own day. All other days of the week are subservient to this day. This day is the holy day, the blessed day, the blissful day, the pleasant day, the day seven times brighter than the sun, the first day that ever yet was seen on earth, *in qua visa est lux.* On Sunday was seen the first light on earth, for our Lord said this day, *Fiat lux et facta est lux.* Let there be light, and there was light. *Ex hac enim die reliquæ dies sumpserunt exordium.* Of this day took all others their beginning. *Dies in qua convenit plebs ad ecclesiam, ad predicandum et ad celebrandum.* On Sunday every Christian man ought especially to come to church: the learned to teach the folk to obey God's behests, and the lewd to hear God's behests and to pray unto God. *Dies in qua letantur agmina cæli et terræ.* On Sunday rejoice together the hosts of heaven and of earth, as the Holy Ghost saith through the mouth of the prophet David: *Hæc est dies quam fecit Dominus, exultemus et letemur in ea.* This is the day that God hath made, let us be joyful and glad on this day. *In hac die multa et magna mirabilia fecit Dominus pro salute nostra.* Many and great wonders did our Lord for our salvation on this day. *In die dominica creati sunt angeli ab ore Dei.* On Sunday were the angels made by the mouth of God. *In die dominica resedit archa post diluvium.* On Sunday Noah found land

him his blescunge. Ðet is ȝeo echeliche riche þet he haueð  
 izarwed to alle ȝon monnen þe his iwille wurchað her on [þisse]  
 liue. *Ad quam gloriam nos perducere dignetur dominus noster*  
*ihesus christus qui uiuit et regnat per omnia secula seculorum.*  
*amen.*

The eternal  
 kingdom the  
 reward of  
 almsgiving.

## XIV.

## IN DIE DOMINICA.

[*R*] *euerenda est nobis hec dies sancta que dicitur dominica, &*  
*ideo dicitur dominica quoniam hec dies sola dies domini*  
*est.* Muchel man aeh to wurþen þis halie dei þat is sunnen dei  
 icleoped. for hit is godes aȝen dei. Alle oðer dazes of þe wike  
 beoð to þreldome to þis dei. \*þis dei is þet halie dei þet blescede  
 dei þe blisfulle dei þe murie dei. þe dei seouensiþe briçtere þene  
 þe sunne. þe fo[r]meste dei þet eaner ȝiete was iseȝen buuen eorðe.  
*In qua uisa est lux.* Sunnen dei was iseȝan þet formeste liht  
 buuen eorðe for ure drihten seide þis dei. *Fiat lux & facta est*  
*lux.* beo liht and hit wes liht. *Ex hac enim die: relique dies*  
*sumpserunt exordium.* Of þisse dei nomen alle oðer heore  
 biginni[n]ge. *Dies in qua conuenit plebs ad ecclesiam ad pre-*  
*dicandum & ad celebrandum.* Sunnedei ah efri cristenne .Mon.  
 nomeliche to chirche eume þe ahte for to techen þe folke godes  
 hesne to done. þe lewede godes hesne for to heren. and hom to  
 gode bidden. *Dies in qua letantur agmina celi & terre.* Sunne  
 dei blisseð to-gederes houeneware and horðe ware. also þe halie  
 gast seið þurh daniðes muð þe prophete. *Hec est dies quam*  
*fecit dominus exultemur & letemur in ea.* þis is þe dei þet god  
 makede. beo we bliðe and glade on þis dei. *In hac die multa*  
*& magna mirabilia fecit dominus pro salute nostra.* Monie  
 wundre and muehele dude ure drihten. for ure hele on þisse dei.  
*In die dominica creati sunt angeli ab ore dei.* sunnendei! weren  
 engles makede of godes muðe. *In die dominica resedit archa*  
*post diluuium.* sunnendei fond noe lond efter þet ure drihten

Sunday is  
 God's own  
 day.

\* [Fol. 52a.]

On this day  
 light was first  
 seen.

On Sunday  
 every man  
 should go to  
 church.

On this day  
 angels were  
 created.

after that our Lord had drowned the people. *In die dominica pluit Dominus manna filiis Israel.* On Sunday God sent manna from heaven to the people of Israel. *In die dominica percussum est mare rubrum in virtute Dei, per manum Moysi, et transierunt filii Israel siccis pedibus per mare rubrum.* On Sunday Moses smote the Red Sea, and the sea divided and the Israelitish people went over; *et stetit illis murus in dextera atque in sinistra*, and there stood (the sea) on the right side and on the left as a castle wall. *Et iterum percussit Moyses mare et reversum est in locum suum, et mersus est Pharaon cum curribus et equitibus ejus.* And afterwards Moses smote the sea and it went together, and drowned Pharaoh and all his host with him, so that there was not even one left undrowned. *In die dominica percussit Moyses petram in heremo et fluxerunt quatuor flumina, quae divisa sunt in duodecim partes ut traxerint sitim populo.* On Sunday smote Moses the stone in the wilderness when the people without drink had nearly perished, as our Lord bad him, and the stone split and four wells of water sprang out thereof, and the four were divided into twelve, so that the twelve tribes should therewith quench (cool) their thirst. *In die dominica natus est Christus ex Maria virgine pro salute nostra.* On Sunday was our Lord born of the holy maiden Mary for our salvation. *In die dominica baptizatus est Dominus noster in Jordane.* On Sunday was our Lord baptized in the river Jordan. *Et Spiritus Sanctus venit super eum in specie columbae.* And the Holy Ghost came upon our Lord in the form of a dove, and he heard his Father's voice from heaven, which said, *Hic est filius meus dilectus in quo mihi bene complacitum,* This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. *In die dominica resurrexit Christus a mortuis.* On Sunday arose our Lord from death to life, and made arise with him all those who had previously obeyed him. *In die dominica, post dies octo, venit ad discipulos per clausas januas et stetit in medio eorum dicens, Pax vobis.* And on the twelfth day after that he had arisen he came among his disciples when the gates were locked, that was on Sunday, and said to them, Peace be with you. On Sunday our Lord made peace between heaven and earth, between angels and men, between God and men, between body and soul, between the old law and the

hefde þet folc adreint. *In die dominica pluit dominus manna filiis israel.* sunnedei god sende manna from houene þam<sup>1</sup> israelisce folc. *In die dominica \*percutsum est mare rubrum in uirtute dei per manum moysi & transierunt filii israel siccis pedibus per mare rubrum.* Sunnedei smat<sup>2</sup> Moyses þe rede sée. and þe see to-eode and þet iraelisce folc wende ouer. *Et stetit illis murus in dextera atque in sinistra.* and þer stod a richt halue and a luft; also an castel wal. & *iterum percussit Moyses mare & reuersum est in locum suum & mersus est pharao cum curribus & equitibus eius.* and eft sone Moyses smat<sup>3</sup> þe see. and heo wende to gederes. and adreinte pharao. and al his ferede mid him. swa þet nes þere nefre an bileued uu-dreint. *In die dominica percussit moyses petram in heremo & fluxerunt quatuor flumina que diuisa sunt in duodecim partes ut traxerint sitim populo.* Sunnedei smat<sup>4</sup> Moyses þene stan ine þe wastine; þa þet folc wes welnech for-faren driukeles also ure drihten him het. and þe stan to-chan; and fouwer walnes of watere sprungen ut þer of. and þa fouwer weren ideled a twelue. for þa twelf kun-reden sculden þer mide heore þurst kelen. *In die dominica natus est Christus ex Maria uirgine pro salute nostra.* Sunnendei wes ure drihten iboren of þe halie Maiden Marie for ure hele. *In die dominica baptizatus est dominus noster in iordane.* Sunnendei wes ure drihten ifulcthed ine flum iordan. & *spiritus sanctus uenit super eum in specie columbe.* and þe halie gast com uppen ure drihten in ane culfre liche. and iherde his fadre stefne of heouene and seide. *Hic est filius \*meus dilectus. in quo michi bene complacitum.* þis is min loue sune þet me wel likeð. *In die dominica resurrexit Christus a mortuis.* Sunnedei aras ure drihten from deðe to liue. and makede arisen mid him alle þa þet him efden er ihersumed. *In die dominica post dies octo uenit ad dicipulos per clausas ianuas. & stetit in medio eorum dicens. pax uobis.* and on þe twelftuzeþe dei efter þet he wes arisen. he com among his disciples þer þe ȝeten weren ilokene. þet wes a sunnedei. and seide to heom setnesse beo mid eou. Sunnedei makede ure drihten pes bitweone heouene and eorðe. bi-tweone engles and monne. bi-tweone gode and monne.

On Sunday manna was sent from heaven.

<sup>1</sup> MS. þet.  
\* [Fol. 52b.]

<sup>2</sup> MS. siriat.

On this day Moses divided the Red Sea.

<sup>3</sup> MS. siriat.

<sup>4</sup> MS. siriat.  
On Sunday Moses smote the rock in Horeb.

On Sunday our Lord was born.

On Sunday he was baptized.

\* [Fol 53a.]

On this day he arose from the dead.

new, between Heathens and Christians. *Ipsa enim est qui facit utraque unum.* He it is who causeth two to be one. *In die dominica misit Dominus spiritum super Apostolos.* On Sunday our Lord sent the Holy Ghost on his Apostles in the form of fire. *In die dominica venturus est in majestate, sua cum sanctis angelis et archangelis, in judicium vivorum et mortuorum.* On Sunday our Lord will come in his great strength with all the host of heaven for to judge both the good and the evil, and all men shall be gathered before him, and the earth also shall quake at the sight of him, as doth the sea in a storm. *Tunc montes liquescent sicut cera e facie ignis.* Then each hill shall burn and all folk, as the prophet saith, *Ignis ante ipsum precedet et inflammabit in circuitu inimicos ejus.* The fire shall go before him and consume his enemies about him. *Et iterum Dominus noster cum virtute veniet &c.* Our Lord shall come in power, in the form of fire, and will consume all his foes and them who are wont to do evil. *Tunc cantabunt angeli magna tuba et mortui resurgent.* Then shall the angels blow with their trumpets in the four quarters of the world, and all the dead shall arise, and stars shall darken, and the sun shall lose her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven. *Et tunc judicabit judicia novissima, et reddet unicuique juxta opera sua.* Then will God judge his last doom, and will give each man his reward after his works. The sinful who break the spousehood (marriage), the closefisted men, those that gave little to the poor, thieves, those that speak fair before and false behind, the envious, the proud, the drunken, the quarrelsome, the foresworn, the heathen, the heretics—*Ejicientur cum fletu et lamentatione in pœnam sempiternam, sine ablutione et misericordia*—shall be cast into everlasting torment without redemption and without mercy. But the righteous men, the true men, the monks, the maidens, the wedded wives, the good men, the gentle men, the merciful men, the liberal, the meek, the entertainers (of strangers), the patient, the almsgivers, those who refrain from fleshly lusts—*vocabuntur in dextra Dei Patris omnipotentis*—shall be called to sit on the right hand of the Father. There shall be worldly weal without



bi-tweone licome *and* saule. bi-tweone þe alde laze *and* þe neowe. bi-tweone heðene *and* cristene. *Ipse enim est qui facit utraque unum.* he is þet makeð twa to an. *In die dominica misit dominus spiritum super apostolos.* Sunnedei sende ure drihten þene halie gast his apostlen in fures liche. *In die dominica uenturus est in maiestate sua cum sanctis angelis & arcangelis in iudicium uiuorum & mortuorum.* Sunnedei wile ure drihten eumen ine his muchele strenðe mid alle heouenware for to deme haþe þe gode *and* þe uuele. *and* alle Men sculen beon igedered bi-foren him. *and* ech corþe scal hwakien on his eesene<sup>1</sup>. also deoð þe see in storme. *tunc montes liquescent sicut cera a facie ignis.* þenne uch dune scal berne. *and* al folc also þe p[ro]phete seið. *Ignis ante ipsum precedet & inflammabit in circuitu inimicos eius.* þet fur scal gan biforen *and* \*forbernen abuten him fon. *et iterum. Dominus noster cum uirtute ueniet. & cetera.* Vre drihten wile eumen dredliche in fures liche *and* wile for-berne alle his fon. *and* heom þet beoð iwunede uuel to done. *Tunc cantabunt angeli magna tuba & mortui resurgent.* þenne sculen engles mid beme blauwen on fower halue þe world. *and* alle dede arisen *and* steorren sculen þeostren. *and* þe sunne hire liht forleose. *and* steorren sculen from heouene falle. *Et tunc iudicabit iudicia nouissima. & reddet unicuique iuxta opera sua.* þenne wille god deme his leste dom. *and* wile ȝelden eche men his mede efter his werke. þe sunfulle .Men. þet spushad brekeð. þa feste .Men<sup>2</sup>. þa þet mei lutel to wreehe. þe þoues. þe þet spekeð faire bi-foren *and* false bi-hinden. þe niðfulle. þe prude. þe fordrunkene. þe chidinde. þe forsworene<sup>3</sup>. þe heðene. þe erites. *eicientur cum fletu & lamentatione in penam sempiternam sine ablutione & misericordia.* sculen beon iwarpen ine eche pine. wiþ-uten alesinge *and* wið-uten milce. Ach þe richtwise men. þe treowe men. þe munekes. þe meidene. þe weddede wiues. þe gode .Men. þe softe .Men. *and* þe .Men. ful of milce. *and* þe large. Men. *and* þe milde .Men. þe herbe[r]gers. þe þolemode. þe elmesfulle. þa þe heom wið-teoð of flesliche lustes. *uocabuntur in dextra dei patris omnipotentis.* sculen beon ieoleped on þe fader riht halue. þer scal beon worldwunne: wið-uten \*þouerte.

On Sunday  
our Lord sent  
the Holy  
Ghost upon  
the apostles.

On Sunday he  
will come to  
judge the  
earth.

<sup>1</sup> sic.

\* [Fol. 53b.]

He will come  
in the form of  
fire.

All the dead  
shall rise,

and receive  
their reward  
according to  
their works.  
<sup>2</sup> ? Mon.

The wicked  
shall be cast  
into hell.

<sup>3</sup> MS. for-  
sporene.

The righteous  
shall sit on  
God's right  
hand.

\* [Fol. 54a.]



poverty, fullness without hunger, health without infirmity, rest without toil, bliss without sorrow, youth without old age, sight without sleepiness, song without cessation, smelling with sweetness, and service without weariness. *Defectio omnis mali, habundancia omnis boni.* Lack of all evils, abundance of every thing that is good. Amen.

## XV.

## SERMON ON MARK VIII. 34.

*Qui vult venire post me, abneget semet ipsum et tollat crucem suam et sequatur me.* Woe to the man that is unfortunate, for more (woe) shall one threaten him with, and it may and will cling to him. But happy is he that is bidden from little to great weal, and it is also much better for him that is invited to come from great affliction to great weal.

We are all in manifold adversities in this wretched life, what with our ancestors' works, and what with our own guilts (offences); but God Almighty comforteth us with his mild words, and teacheth us by what way we may come to him, and saith, *Qui vult venire post me, &c.* Whoso will come after me, let him deny himself and bear his cross, and follow me. These words he said sometime before he departed this life. He admonished all to endless bliss those who were come, or subsequently have come, or are to come. But it seemeth a foolish thing to them to forsake what they greatly love. *Alii quidem amant peccata sua, alii parentes, alii possessiones, alii voluptates et vicia.* Some men love their sins, some their kin, some worldly wealth, some lecherous practices and wicked devices. Those who love their sins he admonishes thus and saith, *Penitentiam agite appropinquabit enim regnum cœlorum.* Repent and forsake your sins, for doomsday is nigh at hand. Those who love their kin he admonishes and saith, *Omnis qui reliquerit patrem aut matrem, fratrem aut sororem, aut ceteros amicos propter nomen meum, centuplum, et vitam eternam possidebit.* All those who

fulle! wið-uten hungre. hele! wið-uten unhele. reste! wið-uten swinge<sup>1</sup>. blisse! wið-uten sarinesse. Ivȝeðe! wið-uten <sup>1? swincunge.</sup> elde. Lokinge! wið-uten winkunge. song! wið-uten lisse. <sup>2? ðenunge.</sup> smellinge! mid swetnesse. and dunge<sup>2</sup>! wið-uten prikunge. *defectio omnis mali. Habundancia omnis boni.* wone of alle uuele; wole! and alle gode<sup>3</sup>. Amen. <sup>3? and wole of alle gode.</sup>

## XV.

[SERMO IN MARCUM VIII. 34.]

[Q] *vi uult uenire post me. abneget semet ipsum & tollat* The text.  
*crucem suam & sequatur me.* wa is þan<sup>4</sup>. Mon. þet wa is <sup>4 MS. þet.</sup>  
*and me him mare bihat. and mei and wile hit him ileste.* Ach  
*him is wel þet is ilaðed from lutel weole to muchele. and him is*  
*ce muchele bet! þet is ilaðed from muchele wowe! to muchele*  
*wele. Alle we beoð in monifald wawe ine þisse wreche liue.* We are in  
*hwat for ure eldere werkes. hwat for ure aȝene gultes. ach god* manifold  
*almihtin us freureð mid his milde word and techeð us bi hwiche* aduersities in  
*weie we mazen to him cume and seið. Qui uult uenire post me* this world.  
*et cetera. Hwa se wile cume efter me! for-sake him seolf. and*  
*bere his rode. and folege me. þos word he seide et sumtime to-*  
*ȝeines þet he walde þis lif forleten. he munegeðe alle þa þet þo*  
*weren oðer seopðen habbeð ikumen. oðer to kumene beoð to*  
*endeles blisse. ach heom þingð uel to forleten þet heo muchel*  
*luueð. Alii quidem amant peccata sua. alii parentes. alii pos-*  
*sessiones. alii uoluptatates<sup>5</sup> & uicia.* Summe men luueð heore <sup>5 sic.</sup>  
*sunnen. summe heore kun. summe world wunne. summe! gal-*  
*liche\* lectres and luðere lastes þa þet luueð heore sunne! he*  
*muneȝeð þus and seið. penitenciam agite appropinquabit enim*  
*regnum celorum. Cumeð to sunbote and forleteð eower sunne.*  
*for domes dei nehlecheth þa þet luueð heore kun! he muneȝeð*  
*and seið. Omnis qui reliquerit patrem aut matrem. fratrem aut*  
*sororem. aut ceteros amicos propter nomen meum! centuplum. &*  
*uitam eternam possidebit.* Alle þa þet forleteð fader oðer moder.  
<sup>\* [Fol. 54b.]</sup>  
 They are admonished to forsake their sins,

leave father or mother, sister or brother, or other friends for my name, they shall receive a hundredfold reward, and life without end. Those who love worldly bliss he admonishes, and saith, *Qui non renuntiaverit omnibus quæ possidet non potest meus esse discipulus*—No man may follow me except he leave all that he possesseth. *Duobus modis renunciatur possessis, desinendo habere et desinendo amare*—In two ways a man may forsake worldly wealth; one is that he should bestow it upon those who have none, another is that he should think so little thereof, as not to love it. It is not a great sin if a man have wealth, but it is a great sin if a man love his riches; for he may not love God and also his wealth. Those who love lascivious sins he thus admonishes, and saith, *Qui vult venire, &c.*—Whoso desires to come after me, let him deny himself, and bear his cross, and follow me. But as it is hard to understand in what manner a man may deny himself, take heed thereto, and by God's permission I will tell you (how). *Duo sunt in homine, aliud per naturam conditum, aliud per culpam illatum*—Two things are in man, the one is brought by nature, and that is the fair nature that is formed between soul and body; the other is the foul guest (stranger) which the devil hath brought therein. Wherefore no man may come to God unless he forsake the foul sojourner which the devil hath brought in him on account of sin, and also preserve that fair nature of soul and body that God hath put into him, and continue in the purity that he hath acquired at his baptism. *Tres cruces sunt de quibus hic agitur, duæ corporis, una mentis*—Three crosses there are about which I shall speak, two bodily, and one spiritual. *Crux corporis est quando corpus distensum membratim punitur*—The corporal cross is when the body suffereth pain in this life upon the cross, and is thereon spread out, as our Saviour was when put on the holy cross for our sins, though he himself had none, and when he had upon his head a crown of thorns, and when his sides were opened with the point of the spear, and when his feet were pierced through with the iron nails. But man may come to God though his body endure not so great torture. But he admonishes us to bear another cross, that is named *carnis maceratio*—leanness of flesh. Man causeth his flesh to become lean when he giveth himself little to eat and

suster oðer broþer. oðer oðre freond. for mine nome : heo sculen underfon hundfalde mede. *and* lif buten ende. þet luucð world wunne : he munegeð *and* seið. *Qui non renunciauerit omnibus que possidet non potest meus esse discipulus.* Ne mei na .Mon. me folgen : bute he forlete al þet he iwald ach. *Duobus modis rennunciatur possesis desinendo habere & desinendo amare.* On twa wise .Mon. mei forlete world winne. an is þet he hit do for him : þet he hit nabbe. an oðer is þet he telle swa lutel tale þer of : þet he hit nawicht ne luuie. hit nis nawicht sunne muchel : if .Mon. echte habbe. ach hit is muche sunne : if .Mon. echte luuieð. for he ne mei nawiht luuie god : *and* ec his ehte. þa þet luueð galiche lectres : he munegeð þus *and* seið. *Qui uult uenire et cetera.* hwa se wule cume efter me : forsake him solf. *and* bere his rode. *and* folege me. Ach hit is uel to understonden on hwulche wise .Mon. mei him solf forsake \*nimeð 3eme þer to : *and* ic hit weo<sup>1</sup> wile sugge b[i] godes leue. *Duo sunt in homine. aliud per naturam conditum. aliud per culpam illatum.* Twa þing beoð ine þe .Mon. þet an is þet brochte icunde. *and* þet faire icunde þet is igedered bi-twene saule *and* licame. þet oðer is þe fule on-kume þa þe douel haueð þeron ibroht. þerfore ne mei na .Mon. to gode cume : bute he forlete þe fule on-cume þe ðe douel haued on him ibroht of sunne. *and* het halde þet faire ikunde. þet god haueð on him idon of saule *and* of likame. *and* wunie ine þet clenese : þet he haueð et<sup>2</sup> his fulluhte ifet. *tres cruces sunt de quibus hic agitur. due corporis una mentis.* þreo roden beoð þa ich umbe speche. twa licamliche : *and* an gastliche. *Crux corporis est : quando corpus distensum membratim punitur.* þe likameliche rode is : hwenne þe likame þoleð pine ine þis liue ine rode *and* bið þer on to-spreð : also ure helende wes ine þe halic rode for ure gultes. þet nefde him solf nane. þa þe he hefde uppen his hefde þornene helm. *and* weren his side mid speres orde iopened. *and* his fet mid irnene neiles þurhstungen. ach .Mon. mei to gode cume þach his likame swiche pine ne þole. Ac he munegeð us an oðer rode to berene : þet is incmned. *Carnis maceratio.* fleises lensing. .Mon. lenseð his fleis : hwenne he him 3efeð lutel to etene. *and* lesse to drinke. \**and* ofte for

and to leave  
their kin and  
friends and  
follow Christ.

In what way  
worldly  
wealth may  
be forsaken.

\* [Fol. 55a.]

1 ? eow.

Two things in  
man—the one  
divine, the  
other devilish.

2 MS. ec.

Of three  
crosses.

Of the bodily  
cross.

Leanness of  
flesh.

\* [Fol. 55b.]

less to drink, and often for his sins scourgeth himself with small switches. *Et hæc est scala peccatorum*—And this is the ladder of all sinful men by which they shall ascend into heaven. *Crux mentis est cordis contritio et proximi compassio*—The spiritual cross is named sorrow of heart on account of a man's own sins and pity for his fellow-Christian's woes. Heart-sorrow hath the man when he remembers that he has sinned, and bemourns his affliction, and comes to shrift, and repents of his sins, according to his priest's instructions. Pity for his fellow-Christian's woes hath the man that sees his neighbour fall into sin or attacked with sickness, and unable without assistance to get quit thereof. If he may not with worldly goods relieve his necessities it sorely grieves him, and he bemourneth bitterly his fellow-Christian's woes. Again, when a man remembers that he hath been sinful, and committed very many sins, his heart then aches as his head would if he had thereon a helmet of thorns. Again, when the man remembers that he hath, in lustful deeds, provoked God very much to wrath, and hath not taken heed whether she with whom he had to do was married or not, but only that his foul lusts were slaked; when the man remembers that he hath too seldom gone to church, and often with his hands done what he should not have done; then will his heart ache, as his feet and his hands would if they were pierced through with iron nails. And if we ourselves thus willingly torture, then may we be God's disciples—then may we follow him and abide with him. Entreat our Lord that ye may come after him, and renounce the foul guest of sin that the devil hath brought into you, and retain the bright nature of soul and body that God hath brought into you, and the purity of your baptism that ye have received at the font; and that ye may bear the cross which God admonishes you to bear, and follow him, and dwell with him (for ever). *Quod nobis prestare dignetur qui vivit, &c.* Amen.



his sunne swingeð him mið<sup>1</sup> smeles twige. *Et hec est scala peccatorum.* and þis is alle sunfulle monne leddre þet heo seculen in to heouene stizen. *Cruix mentis est cordis contritio & proximi compassio.* þe gastliche rode is inemned: heorte sar for þe monnes azene sunne. and rowðe for his emeristenes wawe. horte sar haueð þe .Mon. [hwenne] him biþengþ þet he isuneged haueð. and þet sare bi-murneð and to scrifte kimet. and bi his prostes wissunge his sunne beteð. Reuþe for his emeristenes wawe haueð þe .Mon. þet isich his emeristene in sunne bi-falle. oðer mid siennes bi-gan. and ne mei buten helpe þer cume. If he ne mei mid worldliche echte his neode ibete: þet him sare roweþ. and his emeristenes wawe sare bi-murneð. eft sone hwenne .Mon. him bi-pencheð þet he haueð sunful ibeon. and to fele sunne idon. þenne wule his heorte ake also his heued wolde: if he hefde þer uppon þornene helm. Eft sone hwenne þe .Mon. him bi-pencheþ þet he haueð on galiche dede to muche god iwreped. and naued inume zeme hweðer heo bi-wedded were þe nere: þet he hefde mid to donne: bute his fule lust were ikeled. þenne þe .Mon. him biþengþ þet he haueð to selde igan to chirche. and ilome mid his honde idon þet he don ne sculde: þenne wule his heorte ake also his fet and his honde: if heo þurh irnene neile were þurh-stunge. and if we þus us solue willeliche pineð: þenne maze we beon godes lornigkinchtes<sup>2</sup>. þenne \*we maze him folege. and mid him bileue. Biddeð ure drihten þet 3e moten efter him kume and þene fule onkume for-lete þa þe douel haueð in ow ibroht of sunne and edhalde þet brihte ikunde: þet god haueð in ow ibroht of saule and of likame. and þe klennesses of ower fulluhte þet 3e habbeð et þe fonstan underfonge. and þet 3e moten þe rode bere. þe god ow to munegeð. and him folege and mid him bileue. *Quod nobis prestare dignetur qui uiuit & cetera.* Amen.

<sup>1</sup> MS. nuð.

The ladder of sinful men.

The spiritual cross is called heart-sorrow.

Sorrow for sins of the flesh;

sorrow for neglect of duties.

<sup>2</sup> ? leorning-knights.

\*[Fol. 56a.]

Pray to be delivered from the foul guest of sin.



## XVI.

## BE STRONG IN WAR.

*E*stote fortes in bello et pugnate cum antiquo serpente et accipietis regnum eternum dicit Dominus. This word that I now declare unto thee, our Lord uttered at a time when he dwelt in the land of Jerusalem, and admonished all that were (there) to fight bravely (strongly); and because the fight (conflict) was strong to master and difficult to undertake, he promised them great reward provided they would undertake this conflict, and saith, *Estote fortes, &c.*—Be strong in battle, and fight with the old serpent, and if ye be stronger than she, ye shall have for your reward eternal bliss. *Quia diversa genera hominum sequebantur eum, et ipse dixit sermones suos, tum ad discipulos, tum ad hos, tum ad illos; aperiendum est et quibus, et de qua fortitudine et de quo bello, et de qua serpente hoc dixerit.* Many kinds of men followed our Lord in this life, some to get their faith from him, others to get their daily bread, and some to try if they might take him unawares in sin. Therefore it is good that you should be told whom he admonishes to this warfare. Some men loved their sins and would not forsake them; he admonishes not them to this fight, nor those who have forsaken their sins but have not repented of them; but he admonishes to this fight those who have repented of their sins, or are possessed with the spirit of repentance, and specially the twelve apostles, and among them the lord Nathaniel, whose day it is to-day. Of the strength that God admonishes us to speaks *Liber Sapientie*, that is, the Book of Wisdom, and saith, *Fortitudo simplicis est via Domini*—God's way is strength to the simple man. Simple or double is each man; that showeth the lord St. James, and saith [of the double man], *Vir duplex animo inconstans est in omnibus viis suis*—The double-faced man is unsteadfast in all his ways. But Job was a simple and righteous man, and so good a man that our Lord himself praised him, and said that under heaven there was none like unto him. *Via Domini qua venit ad nos et nos ad eum, misericordia et veritas*—The way that God

## XVI.

## [ESTOTE FORTES IN BELLO.]

[*E*]*stote fortes in bello & pugnate cum antiquo serpente. & accipietis regnum eternum dicit dominus.* Þis word þe

ich nu þe for-tech<sup>1</sup> : seide ure drihten et sume time þa he wunede ine þe londe of ierusalem. and munegeðe alle þet weren to stronge

fechte. and for þon þe þet fecht wes strong to ouer-cumen. and uuel to underfone : he bi-het hom mucche mede wið þan þet heo

walde þis fecht underfon and seið. *Estote fortes & cetera.* heoð stronge on fihte. and fihteð wið þe alde neddre. and if 3e heoð

strengre þe heo : 3e sculen habben to me[de] eche blisse *Quia diversa genera hominum sequebantur eum. & ipse dixit sermones suos. tum ad discipulos. tum ad hos. tum ad illos. aperiendum est et quibus. et de qua fortitudine et de quo bello. et de qua serpente*

*hoc dixerit.* Monie kunnes men folegeden ure drihten ine þisse liue : summe to fechen heore bileue et him. summe to fechen

heore deis fode. summe to kunnen if heo mihten him mid sunne undernime \*þer fore hit is god þet Mon ow segge hwiche he

munegeþ to þis fehte. Summe men luueden heore sunne. and nalden heom forleten. he ne munegeð noht heom to þis fiht. ne

for þon þa þe hefden heore sunne forleten. and nawiht ibet. Ah þa he munegeð to þis feht : þet hefden heore sunne ibet. oþer

on bote bifongen. and nomeliche þe twelf apostles. and among heom þe lauerd. N. hwas dei hit is to dei. of þe streinþe þet god

us to munegeð spech liber sapientie. þet is þe boc of wisdom and seið. *fortitudo simplicis est uia domini.* Godes wei is streinðe

þe anfalde monne. Anfald oðer twafald is ech mon þet kimed<sup>2</sup> þe lauerd saint Iame. and seið. *Vir duplex animo inconstans est in omnibus uis suis.* Þe twafalde .Mon. is unstaþelfest : on alle

his weies. Ah Iob wes anfald rihtwis .Mon. and swa godmon : þet ure drihten him solf hine herede. and seide þet under houene

ne nan his ilike. *Via domini qua uenit ad nos & nos ad eum*

These words were spoken by Christ in Jerusalem.  
1? forð-teah.

Fight with the old adder.

Of the diuers kinds of men who followed our Lord.

\* [Fol. 56b.] Concerning those whom Christ admonishes to warfare.

2? kunneð. Simple or double is each man.

Of the simple man.

came unto man, and man cometh unto him, is called mercy and truth. God showed mercy to man when he sent his patriarchs and prophets to proclaim his wonders. Truth he showed to man when he himself came, as he had promised, and delivered us out of everlasting woe. Let us thank him for it. Mercy a man shows to himself when he bethinks of his sins, and sorely bemourns them, and prays for mercy. Truth a man shows to himself when he makes known his sins to his priest just as he has committed them. And against what foes we ought to fight the apostle thus saith, *Non est nobis colluctatio adversus carnem et sanguinem, sed adversus rectores tenebrarum*—We are not to fight against flesh and blood, but against the accursed spirits that rule the darkness. *Sed ab hoste invisibili difficile cavetur*—But evil (hard) it is to fight against this foe whom we are not able to see, and the blows are hard to ward off, and we never know on which side they will fall. But wherefore does our Lord call this foe an adder (serpent)? *Diabolus nominatur hic serpens, propter tria. Invidia tabescit; sine strepitu serpet; quod pungit, veneno afficit*—The serpent doth three things bodily that the devil doth spiritually. The serpent hath envy and hatred; the serpent creeps secretly; the serpent poisoneth all those that she stings. So hath the devil envy and hatred towards man, and could endure that men were dead, though he himself were none the better for it. As the book saith, *Per invidiam intravit mors in orbem terrarum*—Through envy and hatred came death into the world. Again, the serpent creepeth secretly; so doth the devil into the eyes of men, if they are open to behold idleness and vanity; into the ears, if they are open to listen to slander, idle stories and lies, and other things that are against God's behests; into the nose, when the nose is open to smell illicite breath (smells); in the mouth, when it is open to lie, or sinneth in excessive eating and in over-drinking; into the privy parts the devil creepeth secretly, when they are ready to (commit) lascivious deeds. *Hæ sunt quinque portæ mortis per quas ingreditur auctor mortis ut afferat mortuos*. These are the five gates through which the worker of death cometh in, and therein death also, as the psalmist saith, *Per mille meandros agitât quieta corda*—With a thousandfold devices he

*misericordia & ueritas.* þe wei þet god com in to monne. *and* mon kumeð in to him : is ihaten mildheortnesse, *and* soðfestnesse. Mildheortnesse God kudde monne : þa þe he sende his patriarken *and* propheten : for to bodien his tokume. Soðfestnesse he kudde mon : þa þe he him self com also he hefde bihaten. *and* us alesde ut of eche wawe. Iponked wurðe him. Mildheortnesse me kuð him soluen : henne<sup>1</sup> he him bi-þengð þet he isuneged haueð. *and* þet sare bimurneð. *and* milce bit. Soðfestnesse \*me kuð him solue : hwenne he his sunnen undeð to his proste. als wa also he heom haueð idon *and* to-zeines hwiche fan we aȝen to fechte þe apostel seið. *Non est nobis colluctatio aduersus carnem et sanguinem. sed aduersus rectores tenebrarum.* We ne aȝen naut to flhten to-zeines fleis *and* blod : ah to-zeines þa awariede gastes þet weldeð posternesse. *sed ab hoste invisibili difficile cauetur.* Ah uel hit is to werien to-zeines þene fa : þe .Mon. ne mei naut ison. *and* þe duntles boð uel to kepen : þet mon nat nefre on hwilche halue ho wilen falle. Ach for-hwi nemneð ure drihten þis fa to neddre. *Diabolus nominatur hic serpens : propter tria. Inuidia : tabescit. sine strepitu : serpit. quod pungit : ueneno afficit.* [ned]dre deþ þreo þing licamliche : þet þe douel deð gastliche. Nedre haueð nip *and* onde. Nedre smuȝeð derneliche. nedre attreð al þet heo priked. Swa haueð þe douel nih<sup>2</sup> *and* onde to monne. *and* þolede<sup>3</sup> þet Mon ded were : þeh him self þe betre nere. also þe boc seið. *Per inuidiam intrauit mors in orbem terrarum,* þurh nið *and* onde com deð in to þe worlde. Eft sone smuȝeð derneliche : swa deð þe douel ine þe monnes eȝen : if ho boð opene to bihalden idel *and* unnet. Ine þe : eren : if ho boð opene to lusten hoker. *and* spel. *and* leow. *and* oðer þing þet boð to-zeines godes heste. Ine þe nose : hwenne þe nose bið open to smelle unlofne breð. Ine þe muðe. hwenne þe \*muð is open for to lizen. oðer suneȝeð on muchele ete *and* on ouer drinke. Et þe schape þe douel smuȝeð in derneliche : hwenne hit bið ȝaru to galiche deden. *Hee sunt quinque porte mortis per quas ingreditur auctor mortis ut afferat mortuos.* Þis beoð þe fif ȝeten þurh hwan kimð in deðes wurhte. *and* þer ine deð also þe lof-songere seið. *Per mille meandros*

Of God's  
mercy and  
truth to man.

<sup>1</sup> ? hwenne.

\*[Fol. 57a.]

We are com-  
manded to  
fight against  
the spirits of  
darkness.

Why the devil  
is called a  
serpent.

<sup>2</sup> ? nið.

<sup>3</sup> ? wolde.

Through envy  
death came  
into the  
world.  
The devil  
creeps into  
man through  
his five senses.

\*[Fol. 57b.]

troubles the thoughts that formerly were (at peace) together, and woundeth the soul. But may our Lord, that admonishes us to fight against the old adder (serpent), give us power and strength to have the same weapons that the apostle speaks of, thus saying, *Induite vos armaturam dei sumentes lorica[m] fidei, galeam spei, scutum caritatis, gladium spiritus, quod est verbum dei*—Clothe you with the weapons of God, and take good belief for your hauberk, hope for a helmet, true love (charity) for a shield, and God's word for a sword. *His armis munitus vicit David Goliath*. With these weapons was David armed when he overcame Goliath the enemy; so desires God that we may herewith overcome the old serpent, and have for our reward everlasting bliss. *Quod nobis prestare dignetur qui vivit et regnat deus, &c.* Amen.

## XVII.

## SERMON ON PSALM CXXVI. 6.

*E*untes ibant flebant, mittentes semina sua, venientes autem venient cum exultatione, portantes manipulos suos. The holy prophet David speaks in a passage in the psalter, and makes us understand in what wise the holy men honoured our Lord in this life, and what reward they shall have for their fair service, and thus saith, *Euntes, &c.* They went weeping and sowed, and shall afterwards come and reap in joy. He speaketh of what was to come, as if it were come, for he knew that it should come. *Sed quo euntes? in mortem*—But whither were they going? from worldly joy unto bodily woe; from health into sickness; from rest into toil; where their bodies should be mortified until they came to their lives' end. *Quas lacrimas fundentes? tum compunctionis, tum compassionis, tum peregrinationis, tum contemplationis*—What tears shed they? Sometimes they shed hot tears for their own sins when they bethought that they had sinned, and sorely bemoaned it and prayed for mercy. *Tales lacrimas fudit Maria*



*agitat quicquid corda.* Mid þusend falde wrenche he to-drefeð þe þonk þet erre weren to-gedere. *and* wundeþ þe saule. Ah ure drihten þet munegeð us to fechten te-zeines þet<sup>1</sup> alde neddre ! zeue us mihte *and* streinðe to habben þet<sup>1</sup> ilke wepne þa þe apostel spekeð of *and* seið. *Induite uos armaturam dei sumentes lorica fidei. Galeam spei. scutum caritatis. gladium spiritus ! quod est uerbum dei.* Serudeð ow mid godes wepne. *and* nimeð gode ileue to burne. To hope to helme ! soðe luue to scelde. godes word to sworde. *His armis munitus uicit dauid Goliath.* Mid þis wepne wes dauid iserud þa he goliath þe fond ouer-com. swa wile god þet we moten her mide þe alde neddre ouercume. *and* habbe to mede endelese blisse. *Quod nobis prestare dignetur qui uiuit et regnat deus, et cetera.* Amen.

May God give us strength to fight against the serpent.  
<sup>1</sup> ? þe.

Our spiritual armour.

## XVII.

[SERMO IN PS. CXXVI. 6.]

[*E*]*untes ibant et flebant. mittentes semina sua. Venientes autem uenient cum exultatione portantes manipulos suos.* Þe halie prophete dauid speceð on ane stude in þe sauter. *and* deþ us to understonden on hwiche wise þe halie .Men. hersumden ure drihten \*ine þisse line. *and* hwiche mede heo sculen habben for hore feire seruise *and* þus seið. *euntes et cetera.* heo oden wepende. *and* sowen *and* sculen eft cumen mid blisse *and* mawen. he speceð of þet wes to cumene alse hit icumene were. for he wiste þet hit cume sculde. *Sed quo euntes ! in mortem.* Ach hwider wenden heo ! from worliche wunne ine likamliche wawe. fram hele ! in unhele. from reste in to swinke. *and* þer hore likame pineden for to þet heo comen to his<sup>2</sup> liues ende. *Quas lacrimas fundentes. tum compunctionis. tum compassionis. tum peregrinationis. tum contemplationis.* hwiche teres scheden ho ! oðer hwile heo scheden hate teres for hore aȝen sunnen ! hwenne ho hom biðohten þet heo isuneged hefden. *and* þet sare biurneden. *and* milce beden. *Tales*

The words of the Psalmist.

\* [Fol. 58a.]

Of those that sowed weeping.

They went from joy into woe.

<sup>2</sup> sic.

They shed hot tears for their sins.



*Magdalene quando lavit pedes Domini*—Such tears shed Mary Magdalene when she washed our Lord's feet, and she herself became washed of her foul sins. *Interdum videntes aliquos affligi multotiens fuderunt lacrimas compassionis*—Sometimes the holy men shed hot tears for their fellow-Christians' woes, when they saw their fellow-Christians suffer affliction or fallen into sickness, for which they sincerely pitied them, and, as far as they were able, relieved their necessities. *Tales lacrimas fudit dominus quando Lazarum suscitavit*—Such tears shed our Lord when he saw the sisters Martha and Mary Magdalene weep for their brother's death; and our Lord, in compassion for them, shed hot tears from his holy eyes, and raised their brother, so that they ceased their weeping, and their hearts and their weeping were turned to great joy. *Plerique et tedio vitæ presentis affecti fuderunt lacrimas peregrinationis*—Sometimes the holy men shed hot tears because weary of the world, for they were sorry because this earthly life lasted too long for them. *Tales lacrimas fudit Job; quando dicebat. Tedet animam meam vite mee*—Such tears shed Job when he uttered these words, "Woe is my soul that my life lasteth thus so long!" And David the prophet wept because disgusted with the world when he said, *Heu michi, &c.*—Woe is me now that my exile is here so long protracted, and that I must dwell in a strange land. *Hoc autem dicebat, quia non habemus hic manentem civitatem; sed in cælis debet esse conversatio nostra.* That he said, because we dwell here as exiles, but our abode is in heaven if we strive thereafter. *Justus autem cum languet pro desiderio celestis patrie fundit lacrimas contemplationis*—The righteous man, that with the eyes of his heart looks into heaven and seeth the great bliss to which he is invited, will soon long to go thitherward, and when he may not come thither as quickly as he would he sendeth thither his hot tears. *Utrasque lacrimas, scilicet peregrinationis et contemplationis fudit fortasse apostolus quando dicebat, cupio dissolui et esse cum Christo*—Each of these tears shed the apostle, at least, I ween, when he said, "I would that I were dead, for I long for Christ." *Hæ quatuor lacrimæ sunt quatuor aquæ, quibus lavari jubemur per Isaiam*

*lacrimas fudit Maria Magdalene quando lauit pedes domini.*  
 swiche teres seelde. M. Magdalene : þa heo<sup>1</sup> wosch ure drihtenes  
 fet. *and* heo werð hire solf waschen of hire fule sunnen. *Interdum*  
*uidentes aliquos affligi multotiens fuderunt lacrimas compas-*  
*sionis.* Oðer hwile þe halie .Men. seelden hare teres : for heore  
 emeristene wawe. hwenne ho isezen hore emeristene wandrede  
 polie. oðer in seknesse bifalle *and* þet hom sare rowð. *and* bi  
 heore mihte hore node bette. *Tales lacrimas fudit dominus*  
*quando lazarus suscitauit.* swiche teres schedde ure drihten : þa  
 he isch Martham *and* Mariam Magdalene þe sustren wepe for  
 hore broðer deð *and* ure drihten þurþ rouðe þet he efde of hom :  
 schedde of his halie ezene hate teres *and* hore \*broðer arerde  
*and* weren stille of hore wope. *and* iturnd hore horte *and* heore  
 wope to muchele blisse. *Plerique et tedio uite presentis affecti*  
*fuderunt lacrimas peregrinationis.* oðerhwile þe halie .Men. sched-  
 den hate teres for lape of þe worlde : for hom ofþuchte þet þis  
 orliche<sup>2</sup> lif hom to longe leste. *Tales lacrimas fudit Iob : quando*  
*dicebat. Tedet animam meam uite mee.* swiche teres schedde  
 iob : þa þe he þos word seide. Wa is mine saule : þet mi lif þus  
 longe ilest. *and* dauid. þe prophete wop : for laðe of þe<sup>3</sup> world :  
 þa he seide. *heu michi et cetera.* Wume nu þet min utbiwiste  
 is her swa longe ituped. *and* þet ic seal wunien in unkupe londe.  
*Hoc autem dicebat. quia non habemus hic manentem ciuitatem :*  
*sed in celis debet esse conuersatio nostra.* þet he seide for we  
 wunieð here also fleme. Ah ure erde is in houene : if we þer  
 efter erneð. *Iustus autem cum languet pro desiderio celestis*  
*patrie fundit lacrimas contemplationis.* þe rihtwise .Mon. þet  
 mid þe ezene of his horte bihalt in to houene *and* sieð þe  
 muchele blisse þet he is to ileðed : him wile sone longe þiderward  
*and* hwenne he ne mei þider cume also raðe se he walde : he  
 send þider his hate teres. *utrasque lacrimas. scilicet peregrinati-*  
*onis & contemplationis fudit fortasse apostolus quando dicebat.*  
*cupio dissolui & esse cum Christo.* Eiðer of þisse teres schedde  
 þe apostel leste ich wene. þa þe he seide ich walde þet ich ded  
 were : for me longeð to criste. *\*hee quatuor lacrimae sunt .iiii.* *or*  
*aque quibus lauari iubemur per isayam dicentem. Lauamini*

1 þe has been  
dotted out  
before heo.

They shed  
tears on  
account of  
their fellow-  
Christians'  
woes.

\* [Fol. 58b.]

They shed  
tears because  
weary of the  
world.  
2 ? eorðliche.

3 ? þere.

Our abode is  
in heaven.

The good man  
sends his tears  
there.

\* [Fol. 52a.]

*dicentem, Lavamini, mundi estote*—These four kinds of tears are the four waters in which we are commanded to wash and become clean. *Lacrima compunctionis est amara sicut aqua maris*—The tear that a man weepeth for his own sin is as salt water, and therefore it is named sea-water. *Lacrima compassionis comparatur aque nivis, quæ defluit contra calorem solis*—The tear that a man sheds for the sins of his fellow-Christian is called snow-water, for it melts from the tender heart as doth the snow against the sun. *Lacrima peregrinationis comparatur aque fontis, quia sicut hæc ebullit de terra, ita illa de cordis angustia*—The tear that a man weepeth for loathing of this world is called well-water, for it (the tear) wellet from the heart as doth water from the well. *Lacrima contemplationis comparatur aque roris, quia sicut aqua illa nutu dei trahitur ab imo in altum, ita illa emanat per alti desiderium*—The tear that a man weepeth through longing for heaven is called dew-water, for as the sun draweth up the dew and maketh thereof the rains to come, so the Holy Ghost maketh the man to look up to heaven, and when he may not thither come as quickly as he would, he sendeth thither his hot tears. And what reward shall they receive on account of this sending (message)? *Salutem eternam, lucem perpetuam, vitam sempiternam*—Everlasting salvation, perpetual light, and eternal life. And it is God's will that we should sow these four kinds of tears above the earth, so that we may for our reward have eternal salvation, perpetual light, and endless life. *Quod nobis prestare dignetur, &c. Amen.*

## XVIII.

## A MORAL ODE.

I am now older than I was in years and in lore,  
 I wield more than I did, my wit ought to be more.  
 Well long have I been a child, in words and in deeds,  
 4 Though I be old in years, too young am I in wisdom.

*mundi estote.* þos fure kunnes teres boð þe fuwer wateres : þa þe beoð ihaten us on to weschen þurh ysaïam þe prophete þus queþende. beoð iweschen : *and w[u]nieð elene. Lacrima compunctionis est amara sicut aqua maris.* Þe tere þet mon wepð for his aȝen sunne : is also salt water. *and* þer fore hit is inemned see water. *Lacrima compunctionis comparatur aque niuis : que defluit contra calorem solis.* Þe ter þet .Mon. schet for his emcristenes sunne : is inemned snaw water for hit melt of þe neche<sup>1</sup> horte swa deð þe snaw to-ȝeines þe sunne. *Lacrima peregrinationis : comparatur aque fontis. quia sicut hec ebullit de terra : ita illa de cordis angustia.* Þe ter þet .Mon. wepð for laðe of þisse liue : is inemned welle water. for he welleð of þe horte swa doð water of welle. *Lacrima contemplationis comparatur aque roris. quia sicut aqua illa nutu dei trahitur ab imo in altum : ita illa emanat per alti desiderium.* Þe ter þet .Mon. wepð for longinge to heouene : is inemned deu water for alswa se þe sunne drach up þene deu. *and* makeð þer of kume reines : swa makeð þe halie gast þe .Mon. bi-halden up to houene. *and* hwenne he ne mai þider cume also raþe se he walde : he send þider his hate teres. *and* hwiche mede sculen ho fo of þisse sonde : *Salutem eternam. lucem perpetuam. vitam sempiternam.* eche hele. \*les-tende liht. *and* endeles lif. swa wile god þet we moten þis fouwer kunnes teres sawen biuuen<sup>2</sup> orðe þet we moten to mede habben eche hele. *and* lesten[de] liht. *and* endeles lif. *Quod nobis prestare dignetur, et cetera.* Amen.

These four tears are four kinds of waters.

1. Salt-water.

2. Snow-water.  
1 ? nesche.

3. Well-water.

4. Dew-water.

The reward for these tears.  
\* [Fol. 59b.]

2 ? buuen.

## XVIII.

## POEMA MORALE.

*Ich em nu alder þene ich wes awintre and a lare\*.*

*Ich welde mare þene ich dede mi wit ahte<sup>3</sup> bon marc.*

*Wel longe ich hadde child ibon a worde and a<sup>4</sup> dede*

4 *þak ich bo a wintre ald to zung ich em on rede.*

My wit increases not with my years.

<sup>3</sup> ? ah.

<sup>4</sup> ? ec n.

\* The italics represent the rubrical letters of the MS.

- An idle life have I led, and still appear to lead ;  
 When I bethink me well of it, full sore I am in dread.  
 Most all that I have done befalls to childhood (childishness).
- 8 Full late I have repented me, but may God have mercy upon me !  
 Many idle words I have uttered since I could speak,  
 Many childish deeds I have done, of which I now repent.  
 Most all that erewhile pleased me, it now displeaseth me.
- 12 He who followeth his will much, he deceiveth himself.  
 I might have done better, had I the discretion ;  
 Now I would, I am unable, through age and infirmity.  
 Old age is stolen upon me before I became aware of it,
- 16 I might not see before me for smoke nor for mist.  
 Slow are we to do good, and all too bold to do evil ;  
 More do men stand in awe of men than they do of Christ.  
 Those who do not well while they may, full often shall they rue it,
- 20 When they shall mow and reap what they previously had sown.  
 Do for God what ye may, the while ye are alive.  
 Let no man trust too much neither to child nor to wife (women) ;  
 For he who forgetteth himself for wife or for child,
- 24 He shall come into an evil place, except God be merciful to him.  
 Send some good thing before you, the while ye may, to heaven,  
 For better is one alms before than are seven afterwards.  
 All too often I have trespassed in works and in words,
- 28 All too much have I spent, too little hid in hoard.  
 Prefer not to thyself thy kinsman nor thy kinswoman,  
 For a fool is he that is a better friend to others than to himself ;  
 Let no wife trust to her husband, nor husband to his wife,
- 32 Be every man for himself, the while that he is alive.  
 Wise is he who thinks of himself the while he may have life,  
 For soon will he be forgotten both by strangers and by kin.  
 He who does not well while he may shall not (be able) when he  
 would.
- 36 Many kinds of sore trouble have often the infirm.  
 No man shall delay nor be slow to do good,  
 For many a man promises well, but it forgetteth soon.  
 The man who desires to make sure of God's bliss,



- Vnnet lif ich hadde iled. *and* zet me þingþ ilede.  
 Þenne ich me bi-þenche wel ful sare ich me adrede.  
 mest al þet ich hadde idon bi-fealt to child-hade.
- 8 Wel late ich hadde me bi-þocht ! bute God me nu rede.  
 Fole idel word ich hadde iqueðen soððen ich speke kuðe.  
 fole þunge dede idon ! þe me of-þinchet nuðe.  
 Mest al þet me likede er nu ! hit me mislikeð
- 12 þa muchel fulieð his wil ! hine solf he biswikeð.  
 Ich mihte hadde bet idon. hefde ich þe iselþe.  
 Nu ich walde ah ich ne mei ! for elde *and* for un-helpe.  
 Elde me is bistolen on. er ich hit wiste.
- 16 ne michte ich seon bi-fore me. for smike ne for miste.  
 Erze we beoð to done god. *and* to ufele al to þriste.  
 Mare eie stondeð men of monne þanne hom do of *criste*.  
 Þe wel ne doð þe hwile þe ho mužen. wel oft hit schal rowen !
- 20 þenne ze mawen sculen *and* repen þet ho er sowen.  
 Do he to gode þet he muze þe hwile þet he bo aliue.  
 ne lipnie na mon to \*muchel to childe ne to wiue.  
 þe him solue forzet for wiue ne for childe !
- 24 he scal cumen in uuel stude bute him God bo milde.  
*Sendeð* sum god bi-foren eow. þe hw[i]le þet ze mužen to  
 houene.  
 for betere is an elmesse biforen ! þenne boð *after* souene.  
 Al to lome ich hadde igult a werke *and* o worde.
- 28 Al to muchel ich hadde ispent. to litel ihud in horde.  
 Ne beo þe loure þene þe solf ! ne þin mei. ne þin maze.  
 Soht<sup>1</sup> is þet is oðers monnes frond betre þen his azen.  
 Ne lipnie wif to hire were. ne were to his wiue
- 32 Bo for him solue ech .Mon. þe hwile þet he bo aliue.  
*Wis is þe to him solue þenche* þe hwile þe mot libben.  
 For sone wule hine forzetten þe fremede *and* þe sibbe.  
 þe wel ne deð þe hwile he mai ! ne scal [he] wenne he walde.
- 36 Monies monnes sare iswine haddeð oft unholde.  
 Ne scal na mon don afirst. ne slawen wel to done.  
 for moni mon bihateð wel þe hit forzeteð sone.  
 Þe .Mon. þe wule siker bon to habben Godes blisse.

I have been  
too much of  
a child.

I might have  
done better  
had I been  
wise,  
but old age  
now prevents  
me.

We shall reap  
what we sow.

\*[Fol. 60a.]  
Trust not in  
wife nor child.

Send some  
good before  
you to  
heaven.

<sup>1</sup> sic.  
He is a fool  
who is a  
better friend  
to others than  
to himself.

Delay not to  
do good.



- 40 Let him do well while he may, then shall he have it with certainty.  
 These rich men ween to be safe through wall and ditch.  
 He putteth his treasure in a secure place who sendeth it to heaven,  
 For there he need not be afraid of fire nor of thief,
- 44 For there may no one deprive him of it, the foe nor the friend ;  
 There need he have no care of gifts nor of rewards.  
 Thither he sendeth and carries himself too little and too seldom.  
 Thither we should turn, and do well often and frequently,
- 48 For there shall no one rob us with wrongful (unjust) judgments.  
 Thither should ye eagerly turn, would ye God believe,  
 For there may no one rob you of it, neither king nor reeve.  
 All the best that we might have, thither should we send it,
- 52 For there we might find it again and have it for ever.  
 Those who do here any good for to have God's mercy,  
 They shall find it all there, and a hundredfold more.  
 He who will hold his wealth wisely while he may enjoy it,
- 56 Let him give it away for God's love, then doth he keep it well.  
 Our labour and our produce is often wont to dwindle away,  
 But what we do for God's love, we shall find it all again.  
 No evil shall go unpunished, nor any good unrequited.
- 60 Evil we do all too much, and less good than we ought.  
 He who doth most for good and least for evil,  
 Both too little and too much shall both afterwards seem to him.  
 There shall our work be weighed before the King of heaven,
- 64 And there shall be given us the reward of our labour according to  
 our deserts.  
 Each man with what he has may purchase the kingdom of heaven,  
 He who hath more and he who hath less, both alike may ;  
 He even so with his penny, as the other with his pound.
- 68 This is the most marvellous bargain (chaffare) that any man ever  
 might find,  
 And he who may not do more, he may do it with his good-will,  
 As well as he that hath of gold many a heap.  
 And often God is better pleased when one giveth him less ;
- 72 And his works and his ways are mercy and righteousness.  
 A little gift is acceptable to God that cometh of good-will,

40 do wel him self hwile *pet* he mai : þenne haueð he his mid  
iwise.

þes riche .*Men.* weneð bon siker þurh walle *and* þurh  
diche.

þe deð his echte on sikere stude he hit sent to heueneriche.  
For þer ne þerf he bon of-dred of fure ne of þoue

Heaven is the  
safest place  
for our trea-  
sures.

44 þer ne \*þerf he him binimen þe laðe ne þe loue.

\* [Fol. 60b.]

þer ne þerf he habben kare of ʒefe ne of ʒelde.

þider he sent. *and* self bereð to lutel *and* to selde.

*þider we sculen drazen and don wel ofte and ilome.*

48 for þer ne scal me us naut binimen mid wrangwise dome.

þider ʒe sculen ʒorne drazen. walde ʒe god ileue.

for ne mei þer<sup>1</sup> hit ou binimen king ne reue.

<sup>1</sup> MS. *þet*.

Al *pet* beste *pet* we hefden þider we hit solde senden

We should  
send there the  
best that we  
have,

52 for þer we hit michte finden eft. *and* habben buten ende.

þo þe er doð eni God for habben godes are.

al he hit scal finden eft þer *and* hundred fald mare.

þe *pet* echte wile habben wel hwile þe he muze es welden.

56 Giue hies for godes luue : þenne dep hes wel ihalden.

*Vre swinc and ure tilpe is ofte iwoned to swinden.*

that is, we  
should distri-  
bute our alms  
for the love of  
God.

Ach *pet* þe we doð for godes luue : eft we sculen al finden.

Ne scal nan ufel bon unbocht. ne nan god unforʒolden.

60 Vfel we doð al to muchel. *and* god lesse þenne we sculden.

þo þe mest doð nu to gode. *and* þe lest to laðe.

Eiðer to lutel *and* to muchel scal punchen eft hom baþe.

þer me scal ure werkes weien bi-foran þe heuen king.

64 and ʒeuen us ure swinkes lan efter ure erninge.

*Ech mon mid pet he haueð mei buggen houene riche.*

Each man  
may purchase  
heaven's  
kingdom,

þe mare haueþ *and* þe þe lesse : baþe hi \*muzen iliche.

\*[Fol. 61a]

Also mid his penie also oðer mið his punde.

the poor with  
his penny and  
the rich with  
his pound.

68 *pet* is þe wunderlukeste chep : *pet* eni mon efre funde.

*And* þe ðe mare ne mai don : do hit mid his gode þonke.

Also wel se þe þe haueð golde fele manke.

*And* oft god kon mare þonc þen þe him ʒeueð lesse.

72 *And* his werkes *and* his weʒes his milce. *and* rihtwisnesse.

*lutel lac is gode lof : pet kumeð of gode wille.*

A little offer-  
ing is accept-  
able to God.

- And worthless is great gifts when the heart is evil.  
 Heaven and earth he surveys ; his eyes are so bright,  
 76 Sun and moon and heaven-fire (lightning) are dark compared to  
     his light.  
 Nothing is hidden from him, so great is his might,  
 Let it be done ever so secretly, or in so dark a night,  
 He knoweth what we think and what do all living creatures.  
 80 There is no lord like Christ, nor king like our Lord.  
 Heaven and earth, and all that is, are enclosed in his hand ;  
 He doth whatever his will is, in water and on land ;  
 He made fishes in the sea, and fowls in the air ;  
 84 He protects and (rules) wieldeth all things, and created all creatures ;  
 He is beginning without beginning, and end without end ;  
 He alone is always in each place, turn wherever thou may ;  
 He is above us and beneath, before and behind.  
 88 He who God's will doth, everywhere may he find him ;  
 Each whisper he hears, and he knows all deeds,  
 He perceives each man's thoughts. What shall avail us  
 We who break God's behests and sinneth so often ?  
 92 What shall we say or do at the great doom,  
 We who loved unright, and an evil life led ?  
 What shall we say or do, when the angels shall be in dread ?  
 What shall we bear before us, with what shall we make peace-  
     offering,  
 96 We that never did good, to (please) the heavenly Judge ?  
 There shall be so many devils who will accuse us ; [saw,  
 And they have not forgotten anything of all that they previously  
 All that we did wrong here they will make it known there.  
 100 They have all in their writing that we did amiss here,  
 Except we repented of it, the while we were here.  
 Though we knew not nor saw them, they were our fellows (com-  
     panions).  
 What shall whoremongers do, the traitors, and the perjured ?  
 104 Why are so many folk called and so few chosen ?  
 Why were they conceived—wherefore were they born—  
 That shall be doomed to death and evermore forlorn (damned) ?

- And* ec-lete<sup>1</sup> muchel ȝeue of þan þe herte is ille. <sup>1</sup> ? et-lete.  
 Houene and horpe he ouer sich. his eȝen boð swa brichte  
 76 *Sunne and mone and* houen fur boð þestre aȝein his lihte.  
 Nis him noht forholen nihud. swa muchele boð his mihte. Nothing is  
hidden from  
God.  
 nis hit ne swa derne [idon] ne [a] swa þostre nihte.  
 he wat wet þenkeð *and* hwet doð alle quike wihte.  
 80 *Nis na lauerd swich se is crist.* ne king swuch ure drihten.  
 houene *and* orðe *and* al þet is biloken is in his honde. All is under  
his hand.  
 he deð al þet his wil is : a wettre *and* alonde.  
 He makede fisses in þe se *and* fugeles in þe lifte.  
 84 he wit *and* waldeð alle þing *and* scop alle scefte.  
 he is hord buten horde *and* ende buten ende.  
 he ane is eure an ilche stude wende þer þu wende. He alone is  
everywhere.  
 he is buuen us *and* binopen. biforen *and* bihinden.  
 88 þe þe deð godes wille uwer he mei him finden.  
*Helche rune he iherð and* wat [he] alle deden. He hears,  
sees, and  
knows all  
things.  
 he þurp-sicheþ uches monnes þonc. wi hwat scal us to  
 rede.  
 We þet brokeð godes hese *and* gulteð swa ilome.  
 92 hwet scule we seggen oðer don et þe muchele dome  
 þa þe luueden unriht *and* ufel lif \*leden. \* [Fol. 61b.]  
 Wet sculen ho seggen oðer don : þen þe engles bon of-dred.  
*hwet sculen we* beren biforen us mid hom scule we  
 iquemen.  
 96 þo þe neure god ne dude þe houenliche deme[n].  
 þer sculen bon doule swa fole þet wulleð us forwreien. At Doomsday  
the devils will  
be our  
accusers.  
*And* nabbeð hi naping forȝeten of al þet ho [ere] iseȝen.  
 Al þet we misduden her : ho hit wulleð kuðe þere.  
 100 Al ho habbeð in hore write þet we misduden here.  
 [Buten we habben it ibet þe wile we her were]  
 þach we nusten ne niseȝen. ho weren ure ifere.  
*Hwet sculen ordlinghes<sup>2</sup> don* þa swicen *and* ta for-  
 sworene <sup>2</sup> ? orlinges.  
 104 hwi boð fole iclepede. *and* swa lut icorene  
 wi hwi weren ho biȝeten to hwon weren ho iborene.  
 þet sculen bon to depe idemet. *and* eure ma forlorene.

- Each man shall accuse and condemn himself,  
 108 His own works and his thoughts for a witness he shall summon.  
 No man may so well judge him, nor so rightly,  
 For none knoweth him so well, except God alone.  
 Each man knoweth himself best, his works and his will.
- 112 He who knows least often says the most ; he who knows all, is  
 often silent.
- There is no witness so great as a man's own heart.  
 Whoso saith that he is whole, he himself knows best his smart.  
 Each man shall doom himself to death or to life ;
- 116 The witness of his own work shall drive (urge) him thereto.  
 All that each man hath done since he came to manhood  
 As if he saw it written in a book, so shall it seem to him then.  
 But the Lord judgeth no man by the beginning of his life,
- 120 But all his life shall be such as is his ending (death) ;  
 If that his end is evil the whole is evil, and all is good if his end  
 is good. [given us.
- God grant that our end may be good, and preserve what he has  
 The man that will not do any good, nor ever lead a good life,
- 124 Ere death and judgment come to his door he may be sore afraid  
 That he cannot then pray for mercy (for it often happens so) ;  
 Therefore he is wise that watches and prays and repents before  
 the Doom.
- When death is at the door, too late he cries for mercy ;
- 128 Too late he hateth evil work who is unable to do it any more.  
 We ought well to believe that, for our Lord himself hath said it,  
 At what time soever a man repenteth of his misdeeds,  
 Sooner or later, mercy he shall find ;
- 132 But he that hath not repented, very much has he to repent of.  
 Many a man saith, who thinketh of the torment that shall have  
 an end,
- May I not pray better to be delivered from bonds at Doomsday ?  
 Little he knoweth what is suffering, and little does he know
- 136 What heat is there where the soul abideth, how bitter the wind  
 there bloweth ;  
 Had he been there one day, or two bare hours,

- Ech .*Mon.* scal him solue þer biepie *and* bidemen.  
 108 his aȝen werch *and* his þonc te witesse he scal demen<sup>1</sup>.  
 ne mei him na *Mon* alsa wel demen ne alswa rihte  
 for nan ne knauð him ase ȝere : buten ane drihte.  
 Ech .*Mon.* wat him solue best : his werkes. *and* his wille.  
 112 Þe ðe lest wat biseið ofte mest : þe hit al wat is stille.  
 nis nan witesse also muchel se monnes aȝen horte.  
 Wa se seið þet he bo hal. him solf wat best his smirte.  
 Ech .*Mon.* scal hin<sup>2</sup> solf demen to deðe oðer to liue.  
 116 þa witesse of his aȝen werch : hine þer to scal driue.  
 Al þet ech .*Mon.* haueð idon soððen he com to monne  
 sculde he \*hit sechen o boke iwriten he scal ipenchen  
 þenne.  
 Ah drihten ne demeð nenne .*Mon.* efter his biginnigge.  
 120 ah al his lif scal bon suilch boð his endinge.  
 ȝef þet his [ende is] *uel al hit is uel and* [al] God ȝefe  
 god his ende.  
 God ȝeue þet ure ende bo god. *and* wite þet he us lende.  
 þe .*Mon.* þet uuel<sup>3</sup> don na god. ne neure god lif leden.  
 124 er deð *and* dom come to his dure he mei him sare  
 adreden.  
 þet he ne muȝe þenne biden are. for þet itit ilome.  
 for-þi he is wis þe biet *and* bit *and* bet bi-fore dome.  
 Wenne deð is *attere dure* wel late he biddeþ are.  
 128 Wel late he latheð uuel were : þe ne mei hit don ne  
 mare.  
 þet achten we to leuen wel. for ure drihten solf hit seide.  
 A hwilke time se eure .*Mon.* of pinchþ his mis-dede.  
 Oper raþer oðer later : milce he scal imeten.  
 132 Ac we<sup>4</sup> þet þer naf[eð] nocht ibet : wel muchel he haueð  
 to beten.  
*Moni mon seit hwa recheð of pine þe scal habben ende.*  
 Ne bidde ich na bet bo aledes a domes dei of bende.  
 Lutel he wat wet is pine. *and* lutel he hit scaweð<sup>5</sup>  
 136 hwice hete is þer þa saule wuncð hu biȝer wind þer blaweð.  
 hefde he bon þer enne dei oðer twa bare tide :

Each man  
shall be his  
own judge.  
<sup>1</sup> ? temen.

A man's own  
heart is his  
greatest  
witness.

<sup>2</sup> MS. hm.

\* [Fol. 62a.]  
All men's sins  
are written in  
a book.

<sup>3</sup> ? nule.

The evil man  
will be sore  
afraid when  
death shall  
come to his  
door.

We may all  
obtain mercy,  
if we seek it.

<sup>4</sup> ? þe.

<sup>5</sup> ? icnaweð.

Little we  
know of the  
pains of hell.



He would not for all middle earth abide there the third.  
 Those that have come thence have said this—they knew it most  
 certainly.

- 140 Wo worth seven years' sorrow for a week's bliss !  
 And our bliss here, which hath an end, for endless torment !  
 Better it is to drink muddy water than poison mingled with wine.  
 Swine's flesh is very sweet, so is that of the wild deer,
- 144 But all too dear he buyeth it who giveth his neck for it.  
 Full belly may speak lightly of hunger and of fasts,  
 So may he of torment who knoweth not how it shall for ever last ;  
 Had he experienced it for a while he would tell another tale,
- 148 Worthless were his wife and child, his sister, father and brother ;  
 Altogether would he differently do and differently think,  
 If he thought on hell-fire, which cannot be quenched ;  
 Ever would he abide here in sorrow and anxiety,
- 152 Provided he might bely and avoid hell-torments.  
 Worthless to him should be all worldly joy and earthly bliss,  
 For to come to that great bliss (of heaven) is mirth indeed.  
 I will now return to the Doom, of which I previously told you.
- 156 In that day and at that Doom may Christ help and succour us !  
 For there we may be soon frightened and greatly be in dread ;  
 There he shall see before him all his words, and also his deeds ;  
 All shall there be made known what men here lied and stole,
- 160 All shall be there discovered what men did here secretly and  
 covertly.  
 We shall know then the life of all men as our own.  
 There shall the rich and the low (poor) be equals,  
 There need no man be ashamed nor be in fear,
- 164 If he here is sorry for his sins and repenteth of his misdeeds,  
 For to him that shall be saved there is neither shame nor wrath ;  
 But the others have shame and wrath, and often many sorrows.  
 The Doom shall soon be finished ; it will not last long.
- 168 No man shall remind him (God) there of violence nor of wrong.  
 Those shall have hard (severe) doom who here were hard (un-  
 merciful,  
 And those who treated poor men cruelly, and evil laws areared,

molde he for al middenerd þe þerdde þer abiden.  
 þet habbeð iseid þ[et] comen þonen þa hit wisten mid  
 iwissen.

140 wa wurð sorȝe seueȝer. for souenihte blisse.

*In<sup>1</sup> hure blisse þe \*þe ende haueð.* for endelese pine.

<sup>1</sup> ? And.  
 \* [Fol. 62b.]

betere is wori water drunch ! þen atter meind mid wine.

Swines brede is swiðe swete. swa is of wilde dore.

144 alto dore he is abuh ! þe ȝefð þer fore his swore.

Ful wombe mei lihtliche speken of hunger. *and* of festen !  
 swa mei of pine þe ne cnauð [hu] þe scal a ilesten.

Deer and  
 swine's flesh  
 is dearly  
 bought with  
 one's neck.

Hefð he ifonded summe stunde ! he wolde al seggen  
 oðer.

148 Et-lete him were wif. child. suster. feder *and* broðer.

*Al he walde and oðertuker don and oðertuker þenchen*

Wenne he bi-polite on helle fur þe nawiht ne mei quenchen.

Eure he walde her inne wawe *and* ine wene wunien !

All worldly  
 woes are  
 nothing com-  
 pared to the  
 pains of hell.

152 Wið þet þe mihte belle pine bi-flien *and* bi-sunien

Et lete him were al world wele *and* oðliche blisse.

for to þet muchele blisse cumen is murþe mid iwisse.

*Iwule nu cumen eft to þe dome þet ich er ow of sede*

Of Doomsday.

156 A þa dei *and* at ta dome us helpe crist and rede.

þer we muȝen bon epe offerd *and* herde us adreden.

þer he scal al son him biforen his word *and* ee his deden.

Al scal þer bon þenne cud þer men luȝen her ent stelen.

160 Al scal þer bon þanne unwron ! þet men wruȝen her *and*  
 helen.

All our sins  
 shall be made  
 known at  
 Doomsday.

We sculen alre monne lif iknauwen [þer] alse ure ahen.

þer sculen eueningges bon þe riche *and* þe laȝe.

Ne scal na mon snakie<sup>2</sup> þer ne perf he him adreden.

<sup>2</sup> for skamie.

164 Gif him her of-pineþ \*his gult *and* bet his misdede.

\* [Fol. 63a.]

For him ne seameþ ne ne gromeð þe sculen bon iborȝen.

*Ach þopre habbeþ scome and grome and oft fele sorȝe.*

*þe dom scal sone bon idon* ne lest he nawiht longe.

168 ne scal him na mon mene þer of strengþe ne of wronge.

þe sculen habbe herdne dom þa her weren herde.

þa þe ueele holden wreche men *and* ueele laȝe redde.

The wicked  
 shall have a  
 severe  
 sentence.

- Also according to what he hath done shall each one be judged,  
172 Blithe may he be then who hath pleased God.  
All those who have sprung of Adam and Eve  
They all shall come thither, in truth we so believe.  
Those who have done to the best of their ability  
176 Shall go to the kingdom of heaven along with our Lord ;  
Those who have done the devil's work, and therein be found (at  
their death),  
They shall go forth with him (the devil) into hell's abyss,  
There they shall ever dwell, without mercy or end (of their tor-  
ments).  
180 Our Lord will never break hell-gates to deliver them from bonds.  
It is no wonder if they are sorrowful and wretched ;  
Christ shall never again suffer death to deliver them from death.  
Once our Lord broke into hell and brought out his friends ;  
184 He himself suffered death for them ; very dearly he ransomed them.  
Kinsman would not do it for kinsman, nor sister for brother,  
Nor the son for his father, nor any man for another.  
The Lord of us all, for his thralls, was tortured on the cross ;  
188 Our bonds he loosed, and bought us with his blood.  
We give for his love scarcely a single morsel of our bread.  
We think not that he shall judge the quick and the dead.  
Great love he showed to us, would we understand it.  
192 Because our elders misdid we now suffer for it.  
Death came into this earth through the devil's hand,  
And strife and sorrow, and toil on water and on land.  
For our first father's guilt we all suffer,  
196 And all his offspring after him are fallen into harm,  
Thirst, hunger, cold and heat, old age and infirmity ;  
Through him death came into this earth, and other miseries,  
Else were no man dead or sick, nor any one miserable,  
200 But might live evermore in bliss and health.  
Little it seemeth to many a man, but great was the sin  
For which all suffer death who come of their kin.  
For their sin, and also our own, we may sorely grieve ;  
204 Through sin we all live in sorrow and in toil,

- Ec efter *pet* he efð idon s[c]al þer þenne [beon] idemet.  
 172 [Blipe mai he þanne buen þe god haued iquemed]  
*Alle þa þi sprunge boþ of adam and of eue.*  
*Alle hi sculen cumen þider for soðe we hit ileueð.*  
 þa þe habbeð wel idon efter hore mihte.  
 176 to houene riche hi sculen faren forð mid ure drihte.  
*þa þe habbeð doules were idon, and þer inne bo ifunde.*  
*hi sculen faren forð mid him in to helle grunde.*  
*þer hi sculen wunien a buten are and ende.*  
 180 Ne brekeþ ne ure drihte helle gate for lesen hi of bende.  
*Nis na sullie þech hom bo wa and hom bo uneade.*  
*Ne scal neure eft crist þolie deþ for lesen hom of deape.*  
*Enes drihten helle brec his frowd he ut brochte.*  
 184 him solf he þolede deð for him<sup>1</sup>. wel dore he hom  
 bohte.  
 Nalde hit mei do for mei. ne suster for broðer.  
 nalde hit sune do for fader. ne na mon for oðer.  
*Vre alre lauerd for his þrelles ipined wes a rode.*  
 188 vre bendes he unbond] and bohte us mid his blode.  
*We ȝeueð \*uneðe for his huue a stuche of ure brede.*  
 Ne þenke we noht *pet* he scal deme þa quike and þa  
 dede.  
 Mucbele huue he us cudde. walde we hit understonde  
 192 *pet* ure eldre misduden ; we habbeð ueele on honde.  
*Deþ com in þis middenerde þurh þes doules honde.*  
*And sake and sorȝe and swine a watere and a londe.*  
*vre forme fader gult. we abuȝeð alle.*  
 196 [Al his ofsprunge after hym in herme is bifalle]  
 þurst and hunger. chele and hete. helde and unhelðe.  
 þurh him deð com in þis middenerd and oðer uniselðe.  
 Nere namon elles ded ne sec ne nan unsele.  
 200 ac mihten libben eure ma a blisse and a hele.  
 lutel hit þuncheð moni mon. ac muchel wes þa sunne.  
 for hwam alle þolieð deð þe comen of hore cunne.  
*Hore sunne and ec ure aȝen sare us mei of-þinche.*  
 204 þurh sunne we libbeð alle in sorȝe and in swinke.

The righteous  
shall go to  
heaven.

The wicked  
shall go into  
hell.

Christ once  
harrowed hell.  
1 ? heom.

Christ died  
for us all.

\* [Fol. 63b.]

Through  
Adam's guilt,  
death, thirst,  
hunger, &c.,  
came into the  
world.

Through sin  
we are all still  
in sorrow and  
toil.

Since God took so great a vengeance for one misdeed.

We who so much and so often sin, we ought easily to be in  
fear.

Adam and his offspring for one single sin

208 Was many hundred winters in hell-fire and in misery.

Those who lead their life with unright and with wrong,

Except God have mercy upon them, shall be there full long.

God's wisdom is very great, and so is his might,

212 And his mercy is not less, but is in the same weight (measure).

More he may forgive to one than all folk can sin.

The devil himself might have had mercy, if he had begun to  
ask it.

Those who seek God's mercy may certainly find it ;

216 But hell-king is pitiless with those whom he may bind.

He who follows his will most, he hath the worst reward ;

His bath shall be welling (boiling) pitch, his bath shall be burning  
gleeds.

Worst he doth to his good friends, than to his very enemies.

220 May God shield all good (? God's) friends ever from such friends.

Never in hell came I, nor thither care to come,

Though I might there get the wealth of every world,

Yet I will say in such wise as men have told us,

224 And as one may read it written in books ;

I will say to those who know it not themselves,

To warn them from their misery, if they will listen to me.

Attend now to me, simple men and poor,

228 I will tell of hell-fire, and warn you therefrom.

In hell is hunger and thirst, two evils together ;

Those suffer this who were of meat miserly here.

There is whining and woe, after each stretch (torment) ;

232 They go from heat to cold, and nearly freeze the wretches ;

When they are in the heat the cold seems bliss to them,

When they come again to the cold they miss the heat.

They suffer woe enough, they have no bliss ;

236 They know not with any certainty which of the two is worse.

They ever walk and seek rest, but they cannot find it,

Suððen God nom swa muchele wrake for are misdede :  
 We þe swa muchel *and* swa ofte mis-doð. we mužen eðe  
 us adrede.

Adam and his of-sprung for are þare<sup>1</sup> sunne.

<sup>1</sup> ? bare.

- 208 Wes fele undret wintre an helle pine *and* an unwunne.  
 Þa þe ledden hore lif mid unriht *and* mid wrange.  
 buten hit godes milce do ho seulen bon þer wel longe.

Godes wisdom is wel muchel *and* als wa is his mihte

God's mercy  
 is as great as  
 his power.

- 212 *And* nis his milce naut lesse. ac bi þan ilke iwichte.

*Mare he ane mei* forȝeuen. þen \*al folc gulte cunne.

\* [Fol. 64a.]

Sulf douel mihte habben milce. ȝif he hit biguune.

Þa þe godes milce secheð : he iwis mei ha ifinden.

The devil  
 might have  
 had mercy  
 had he sought  
 it.

- 216 Ac helle king is are-les with þa þe he mei binden.

þe þe dep is wille mest : he haueð wurst mede.

His baþ scal bon wallinde. his bað scal<sup>2</sup> bon berninde  
 glede.

<sup>2</sup> MS. scab.

*Wurst he deð his gode frond :* þenne his fulle fond[e] :

- 220 God scilde alle godes frond. a wih swilche freonde.

Neure in helle hi com. ne þer ne come reche.

I never came  
 in hell, yet I  
 will tell you  
 what I find  
 in books.

Þach ich elehes worldes wele. þer me mahte feche

þet his wulle seggen on þat wise men us seiden.

- 224 *And* aboken hit writen þer [me] mei hit reden.

Ich hit wille seggen þan þe hit hom solf nusten.

Warni hom wið hore unfrome. ȝif ho me wulleð lusten.

Vnderstondeð nu to me edi men *and* arme.

- 228 Ich wulle tellen of helle pin : *and* wernin ow wið herme.

In helle his hunger *and* þurst : twa ueele iuere.

In hell is hun-  
 ger and thirst.  
<sup>3</sup> ? mete.

þas [pine] þolieð þa weren maket<sup>3</sup> nipinges here.

þer is waning *and* wow. efter eche streche.

- 232 ho fareð from hete to hete. *and* hech to frure þe wreche.

þenne hi bið in þere hete : þe chele him þunchet blisse.

The sinners  
 go alternately  
 from the heat  
 into the cold.

þenne hi cunneð eft to þe chele : of hete hi habbeð misse.

hi hem deð wa inoch nabbeð hi nane blisse.

- 236 *Nute hi huweper hom dep wurs*<sup>4</sup> mid neure nane wisse.

<sup>4</sup> MS. þurs.

hi walkeð eure *and* secheð reste \*ac ho ne mužen  
 imeten.

\* [Fol. 64b.]



- Because they would not, while they could, repent of their sins ;  
 They seek rest where there is none, therefore they cannot find it,  
 240 But walk weary up and down, as water doth (tossed) with the wind.  
 Those are they who were in their thoughts unsteadfast,  
 And who made vows to God and would not perform them,  
 Those who began good works and would not complete them,  
 244 Who went now here and now there, and knew not what they desired,  
 There is burning pitch for their souls to bathe in.  
 For those who led their life in war and in strife,  
 There is fire that is a hundredfold hotter than ours is ;  
 248 Salt water cannot quench it, nor fresh water from the stream ;  
 This is the fire that ever burneth, nought may quench it.  
 Therein shall be those who delighted to persecute poor men,  
 Those who were treacherous men and full of evil devices,  
 252 Those who loved to do evil and delighted to think of it,  
 Those who loved injustice and stealing, whoredom and drunkenness,  
 And in the devil's work blithely toiled ;  
 Those who were such liars that no one might believe them,  
 256 Bribe-greedy judges and unjust reeves ;  
 Those who loved other men's wives and despised their own,  
 Those who sinned greatly in drinking and in eating ;  
 The wretched man took his goods and laid it up in hoard,  
 260 That recked little of God's message and God's word, [needed,  
 And those who would not of their own give where they saw it was  
 Nor would hear God's message when they heard it proclaimed ;  
 Those who loved other men's goods more than they ought,  
 264 And were all too greedy for silver and gold,  
 And those who committed breach of trust when they should have  
     been trustworthy,  
 And omitted what they should do, and did what they would ;  
 Those who were ever after this world's wealth,  
 268 And did all that the loathsome spirit bid and taught them,  
 And all those who in anywise here pleased the devil—  
 Those are now with him in hell, undone and damned,  
 Except those that grieved sorely here for their misdeeds,  
 272 And did repent of their sins and lead a better life.

- for-þi þe ho nolden þe hwile þet ho mihten here sunne beten.  
 ho secheð reste þer nis nan. for-þi ne muȝen hi es finden. They find no  
rest there.
- 240 Ac walkeð weri up *and* dun : se water deþ mid winde.  
 þo boð þa þe weren her a þanke unstedefeste.  
*And* þa þe gode biheten heste *and* nolden hit ileste.  
 þa þe god were bigunnen *and* ful enden hit nolden.
- 244 *Nu witen<sup>1</sup> her. and* nuðe þer. *and* nusten hwat hi wolden. 1 ? weren.  
*þer is bernunde pich hore saule to bapien inne.* In burning  
pitch do their  
souls bathe.  
 þa þe ledden here lif in werre *and* in winne.  
 þer is fur þet is undret fald hattre. þene bo ure.
- 248 Ne mei quenchen salt weter ne uerse of þe burne. Nothing may  
quench this  
fire.  
 þis is þet fur þet efre bernd ne mei nawiht hit quenchen.  
 þer inne boð þa þe was to lof wreche men to swenchen. In this fire  
shall dwell  
the persecu-  
tors of the  
poor ;  
traitors,  
evil-doers,  
robbers,  
drunkards,  
&c. ;  
 þa þe weren swikelemen *and* ful of uuel wrenchen.
- 252 þa þe mihten uuel don. þe þe lef hit wes to þenchen. 2 MS. lele.  
 þe luueden tening *and* stale. hordom *and* drunken  
*And* a doules werche bliþeliche swunken.  
 þa þe weren swa lese<sup>2</sup> þet me hom ne mihte ileuen.
- 256 Med-ierne domes men. *and* wrongwise reuen. unjust judges,  
 þet oðer monnes wif lof. his aȝen et-lete. adulterers,  
 þo þe sungede muchel : a drunke *and* an ete.  
 þe wreche mon binom his ehte. *and* leide his on horde. misers, &c. ;
- 260 þet lutel let of godes borde. *and* godes worde. \* [Fol. 65a.]  
*And* þo þe his aȝen nalde ȝeuen þer he isech. \* þe node  
 ne nalde iheren godes sonde. þenne he hit herde bode.  
 þe þet is oðers monnes þing. loure þene hit sculde. covetous men,
- 264 *And* weren to gredi of solure *and* of golde. unfaithful,  
*And* þa þe untrownesse duden þon þe ho sculden bon  
 holde.  
*And* leten þet ho sculden don. *and* duden þet ho wolden.  
 þa þe weren eure abuten þisse worldes echte.
- 268 *And* duden al þet þe lape gast hechte to *and* tachte. and those who  
pleased the  
devil.  
*And* alle þe þen anigewise doulen iquemde<sup>3</sup>. 3 MS.  
iquende.  
 þa boð nu mid him in helle fordon *and* fordemet<sup>4</sup>. 4 ? fordemde.  
 [Bute þo þe ofþouhte sore. her here mis-deden
- 272 *and* gunnen here gultes beten. *and* betere lif leden

- There are adders and snakes, newts and ferrets,  
 That tear and fret the evil speakers, the envious and the proud ;  
 Never shineth there the sun, nor the moon nor the stars.
- 276 There is much of God's heat (anger) and much of God's wrath,  
 There is ever evil smoke, darkness and awe ;  
 There is never other light than the gloomy flames.  
 There lie loathsome fiends in strong chains,
- 280 Those that previously were with God, in heaven full high.  
 There are horrible fiends and awful (creatures) wights,  
 These shall the wretched see that sinned through sight.  
 There is the loathsome Satan, and Belzebub the old ;
- 284 Easily may they be in dread who shall behold them.  
 No heart may think, nor can any tongue tell  
 How much torment and how many are in hell.  
 Of those torments that are there I will not lie to you.
- 288 All that men endure here is not without game and glee,  
 But yet it is not so with them that dwell in those loathsome bonds,  
 But they know that their pain shall never have an end.  
 There shall be the heathen men, who were lawless (without law),
- 292 Who knew not of God's commands nor of God's behests ;  
 Wicked Christian men shall be their companions,  
 Those who their Christianity badly held here.  
 Yet they are in a worse place in hell's abyss,
- 296 Nor shall they ever come out, for mark nor for pound.  
 Nor may prayers nor alms help them there,  
 For there is in hell neither mercy nor forgiveness.  
 Let each man shield himself, the while he may, from this hell's pain,
- 300 And warn also his friends therefrom, as I have mine.  
 Those who know not how to shield themselves, I will teach them ;  
 I can (know how to) be, if I am allowed, the body's and soul's leech.  
 Let us forsake what God has forbidden to all mankind,
- 304 And let us do what he bids us, and let us keep ourselves from sin ;  
 Let us love God with our hearts and with all our might,  
 And our fellow Christian as ourselves, as our Lord hath taught us.  
 All that we read and sing before God's board (table),
- 308 It all hangeth and holdeth by these two words.

- þeor beð naddren *and* snaken. eueten *and* frude  
 þa tered *and* freteð þe uuele speken. þe nihtfulle *and* þe prute  
 Neure sunne þer ne scinð. ne mone ne steorre  
 276 þer is muchel godes hete. *and* muchel godes ȝeorre  
 Eure þer is vuel smech. þusternesse *and* eie  
 nis þer neure oþer liht. þanne þe swarte leie  
 Þer ligget laðliche fend. in stronge raketeie  
 280 þat buð þe þe were mid gode. on heuene wel heie  
 Þer buð ateliche fend. *and* eisliche wilit  
 þos sculle þa wrecchen i-son. þe sunege þurð sihte  
 Þer is þe loþe sathanas. *and* belsebuc þe ealde  
 284 Iepe he muwen ben of-drard<sup>1</sup>. þe hine sculled bi-helde  
 Ne mai non heorte it þenche. ne no tunge ne can telle  
 hu muchele pine. *and* hu vele. senden inne helle  
 Of þo pine þe þere bued. nelle ic hou nout leioȝen  
 288 nis it bute gamen *and* gleo. al þat man mai here dreoȝen  
 Ae ȝet ne deð heom nout so wo. in þo loþe biende  
 bute þat hi witeð þat heore pine. ne scal neure habben ende  
 Þer buð þo heþenemen. þe were lawe-lese  
 292 þe heom nas nout of godes bode. ne of godes hese  
 Vuele cristenemen. hi bud here i-vere  
 þo þe heore cristen-dom. vuele heolden here  
 ȝut hi bud a wurse stede. on þere helle grunde  
 296 ne sculle hi neure comen vp. for marke ne for punde  
 Ne mai heom noþer helpen þer. i-bede ne almesse  
 for nis noþer inne helle. ore ne forȝiuenesse  
 Sculde him elc man þe wile he mai. of þos helle pine  
 300 And warnie æc his frend þer wid. so ic habbe mine  
 Þo þe scilden heom ne cunnen. ic heom wulle teachen  
 ich kan beo ȝif i scal. lichame *and* soule liache  
 Lete we þat god for-bet. alle mancuune  
 304 *and* do we þat he us hat. *and* scilde we us wid sunne  
 Luue we god mid vre heorte. *and* mid al vre mihte  
*and* vre emeristene also us suelf. swa us lerne drihte  
 Al þat me rat *and* singð. be-fore godes borde  
 308 al it hanged *and* bi-halt. bi pisse twam worde

There are  
adders and  
ferrets that  
tear the  
wicked.

There is much  
smoke and  
darkness.

Loathsome  
fiends lie  
bound in  
chains.

<sup>1</sup> MS.  
of-drard.  
No one can  
tell how many  
pains there  
are in hell.

In hell are  
the heathen,

wicked  
Christians,

whom neither  
mark nor  
pound shall  
ever help.

Let each man  
warn his  
friends of this  
place of  
torment.

Let us love  
God and man.

- All God's laws he fulfills, the old and the new,  
 Who hath these two loves, and will observe them well.  
 But they are very difficult to hold, so oft we all offend,  
 312 For it is hard to stand long, and easy it is to fall ;  
 But may Christ give us strength that we may stand,  
 And permit us to repent of all our guilts.  
 We long after world's weal, which may not last long,  
 316 And lay all our labour on unsteadfast things.  
 If we laboured for God's love half what we do for wealth,  
 We should not be so beguiled nor so evilly ensnared ;  
 If we served God as we do wretches,  
 320 More we might have from heaven, than of earls or kings.  
 They cannot protect themselves here against cold, thirst, nor  
 hunger,  
 Nor old age, nor from death, the older nor the younger.  
 But there is no thirst, nor death, nor infirmity nor old age.  
 324 Of this kingdom we think too often, and of that too seldom.  
 We should all bethink us often and very frequently  
 What we are, to what (place) we shall (go), and whence we came,  
 How little while we shall be here, how long elsewhere,  
 328 What we may have here, and what we shall find there ;  
 If we were wise men we should think of this.  
 But let us be aware that this world will intoxicate us,  
 Most all men it gives drink of a devil's draught ;  
 332 He shall be able to shield himself well if he will not shrink.  
 With Almighty God's love let us shield ourselves  
 From this wretched world's love, that it may not hurt us.  
 With fasts and alms and prayer let us keep ourselves from sin,  
 336 With the weapons that God hath given to all mankind.  
 Let us leave the broad street and the open way,  
 That leads to hell the ninth part of men, and more I ween ;  
 Let us go the narrow way and the green way,  
 340 There journey little folk, but it is fair and bright.  
 The broad street is our will, which we are loath to forsake ;  
 He who followeth wholly his will, goeth by this street.  
 They may easily go along the downward slope



- Alle godes lawe he fulð. þe newe *and* þe ealde  
 he þe þos twa luue haued. *and* wel hi wule healde  
 Ac hi buð wunder erued-helde. swa ofte we gulted alle  
 312 for it is strong to stonde longe. *and* liht it is to falle  
 Ac drihte crist he ȝiue us strenȝe. stonde þat we mote  
*and* of alle vre gultes. unneȝ us come bote  
 We wilnied efter worldes wele. þe longe ne mai ileste  
 316 *and* leggeð al ure iswinch. on þinge un-stede-faste  
 Sswunche we for godes luue. half þat we doð for elhte  
 ne were we nout swa bi-cherd. ne swa vuele bi-cauhte  
 ȝif we serueden god. so we doð erninges  
 320 more we haueden of heuene. þanne corles oper kinges  
 Ne muwen hi her werien heom wið chele. wið þurst. ne  
 wið hunger  
 ne wið elde ne wið deð. þe eldre ne þe ȝconger  
 Ac þer nis hunger ne þurst ne deð. ne vuhelpe ne elde  
 324 of þisse riche we þenchet oft. *and* of þere to selde  
 We scolden alle us bi-þenche. oft *and* wel ilome  
 hwet we beð. *and* to wan we sculle. *and* of wan we come  
 Hu lutel wile we beð her. hu longe elles ware  
 328 hwat we muȝen habben her. *and* hwet elles hware  
 ȝif we were wise men. þis we scolden iþenche  
 bute we wurpe us iwar. þes worlð us wule for-drenche  
 Mest alle men he ȝined drinke. of one deoffles scenche  
 332 he seel him cunne sculde wel. ȝif he him nele serenche  
 Mid ealm[i]hties godes luue. vte we us bi-werien  
 wið þes wreeches worldes luue. þat he ne mawe us derien  
 Mid fasten. *and* almesse. *and* ibede. werie we us wið sunne  
 336 Mid þo wepnen þe god haued ȝiuen alle maneunne  
 Læte we þe brode stret. *and* þe wei bene  
 þe lat þe niȝeðe del to helle of manne. *and* mo ic wene  
 Go we þene narewe wei. *and* þene wei grene  
 340 þer forð-fareð lutel fole. ac it is feir *and* scene  
 þe brode stret is vre iwil. ðe is us lod for to lete  
 þe ðe al folewed his wil. fared bi þusse strete  
 Hi muwen lihtliche gon. mid ðere nuðer hulde

He who hath  
 these two  
 loves fulfils  
 the Old and  
 New laws.

We long after  
 world's weal  
 instead of hea-  
 venly bliss.

We may get  
 more from  
 heaven than  
 from earls or  
 kings.

Let us think  
 of the short-  
 ness of this  
 life.

and beware  
 of this false  
 world.

Let us fortify  
 ourselves with  
 fasts, alms,  
 and prayer.

Let us go the  
 narrow and  
 green way.

The broad  
 way is man's  
 will.



- 344 Through a goodless wood, into a bare field.  
 The narrow way is God's behests, there journey very few ;  
 Those are they that shield themselves well from every vice.  
 These go with difficulty along the cliffs, along the high hills ;
- 348 These forsake their own will in order to fulfill God's behests.  
 Let us all go that way, for it will bring us  
 With the fair few men before heaven's king,  
 Where there is the greatest of all mirth, with angels' songs.
- 352 He who is there a thousand winters, will not think it long ;  
 He who hath least, hath so much that he asketh no more.  
 He who forsakes the (heavenly) bliss for this (world), he will sorely  
     rue it.  
 In God's kingdom there is no evil nor want,
- 356 But there are many dwellings, each unlike another.  
 Some there have less mirth (bliss), and some more,  
 According to what they did here, according as they toiled sore.  
 There shall be no bread nor wine, nor other kinds of delicacies,
- 360 God alone shall be eternal life and bliss and eternal rest.  
 There shall be neither yellow nor grey (fur), nor (fur of) coney nor  
     ermine,  
 Nor of squirrel, nor of martin, nor of beaver, nor of sable.  
 There shall be neither sheet nor shroud, nor any world's weal.
- 364 All the mirth (bliss) that is promised us shall be God alone ;  
 No mirth may be so great as is the sight of God.  
 He is true sun and bright, and day without night.  
 He is full of every good, there is nothing that he is without.
- 368 They who dwell about him lack nothing that is good ;  
 There is weal without grief, and rest without toil.  
 He who may and will not come thither, sorely shall he rue it.  
 There is bliss without sorrow, and life without death,
- 372 Those who shall dwell there for ever, blithe may they easily be ;  
 There is youth without old age, and health without sickness,  
 There is no sorrow nor sore, nor ever any unhappiness ;  
 There shall the Lord himself be seen as he is, most certainly.
- 376 He alone may and shall be the bliss of angels and men.  
 And yet their eyes shall not be all alike bright,

- 344 Ʒurh ane godliese wude. in-to ane bare felde  
 Þe narewei is godes hes. þer forð-farð wel feuwe  
 þat buð Ʒa þe heom sculdeð Ʒeorne. wid eleche un-  
 Ʒeawe  
 Þos god un-iepe to-Ʒeanes þe eliu e aƷean þe heƷe hulle  
 348 þos leteð al here aƷen wil. for godes hese to fulle  
 Go we alle þene wei. for he us wulle bringe  
 mid þo faire feuwe men. be-foren heuene kinge  
 Þer is alre meruþe mest. mid englene songe  
 352 þe þis a þusent wintre þer. ne þineð him noht to longe  
 Þe þe lest haued. haueð so muchel. þat he ne bit no  
 more  
 þe Ʒe blisse for Ʒos for-lat. it him mai reuwe sore  
 Ne mai non vuel ne non wane. beon inne godes riche  
 356 Ʒeh þer beð wunienges fele. ele oþer vn-iliche  
 Sume þer habbet lasse murhðe. *and* sume habbed more  
 after þan þe hi dude her. after þan þe hi swonke sore  
 Ne scal þer ben bred ne win. ne oþer cunnes este  
 360 god one scal beo eche lif. *and* blisse. *and* eche reste  
 Ne scal þer beo fou ne grei. ne eunig ne ermine  
 ne ocquerne ne martres cheole. ne beuer ne sabeline  
 Ne scal þer beo seed ne scrud. ne woruld wele none  
 364 al þe murhðe þe me us bi-hat. al it scal beo god one  
 Ne mai non murhðe beo so muchel. so is godes sihte  
 he is soð sunne *and* briht. *and* dai a-buten nihte  
 He is elches godes ful. nis him noþing Ʒit vten  
 368 no god nis him wane. þe wunied him abuten  
 Þer is wele abute grame. *and* reste abuten swinche  
 þe mai *and* nele pider come. sore it him scal ofþinche  
 Þer is blisse abuten treƷe. *and* lif abuten deaþe  
 372 þe eure scullen wunien þer. blipe muwen ben eþe  
 Þer is ƷeoƷeðe bute ulde. *and* hele abuten vn-helðe  
 nis þer sorewe ne sor. ne neure nan vn-sealþe  
 Þer me scal drihte sulf i-seon. swa he is mid iwisse  
 376 he one mai *and* scal al beo. engle *and* manne blisse  
 And Ʒeh ne beod heore eƷe naht. alle iliche brihte

The narrow  
way is God's  
command-  
ments.

The narrow  
way leads to  
heaven.

In heaven  
there is no  
lack of good  
things ;

but these con-  
sist not in  
bread, wine, or  
other earthly  
dainties.

God alone is  
the bliss of the  
righteous.

In heaven  
there is rest  
and eternal  
life ;

youth and  
perfecthealth.

All in heaven  
have not  
equal bliss,

- Because they have not all alike of God's light ;  
 In this life they were not all of one virtue,  
 380 Nor shall they there have God by one measure.  
 Those shall see more of him who loved him more here,  
 And know and learn more of his might and of his mercy.  
 In him they shall find all that one may desire,  
 384 In Holy Book they shall see all that they were here ignorant of.  
 Christ alone shall be sufficient for all his darlings ;  
 He alone is much greater and better than all other things.  
 Enough he hath that hath him who ruleth all things ;  
 388 On him to look is no weariness, well is them that behold him.  
 God is so glorious and so great in his divine nature,  
 That all that is, and all that was, is worse than he and less ;  
 Nor may any man ever say with truth,  
 392 How much mirth those have that are in God's bliss.  
 To that bliss may God bring us, who reigneth without end,  
 When he our souls unbinds from the body's bonds.  
 May Christ grant that we may lead such a life here and have such  
 an end here,  
 396 That we may thither come when we wend hence. Amen.]

## XIX.

## AN ORISON OF OUR LORD.

Jesus, true God, [true] Son of God ! Jesus, true God, true man, and  
 true Virgin's child ! Jesus, my holy love, my sure sweetness !  
 Jesus, my heart, my joy, my soul-heal ! Jesus, sweet Jesus, my darling,  
 my life, my light, my healing oil (balm), my honey-drop ! Thou art all  
 that I trust in. Jesus, my weal, my winsomeness, blithe bliss of my  
 breast ! Jesus, teach me, thou that art so soft and so sweet, and  
 yet too so likesome (dear) and so lovely and so lovesome, that the

- 380 *ȝi nabbed hi nouht iliche. alle of godes lihte*  
*On ȝisse liue hi neren nout. alle of one mihte*  
*ne ȝer ne scullen hi habben god. alle bi one ȝilhte*  
*ȝo scullen more of him seon. ȝe luuede him her more*  
*and more ienawen and iwiten. his mihte and his ore*  
*On him hi scullen finden al ȝat man mai to lesten*  
 384 *hali boc hi sculle i-seon. al ȝat hi her nusten*  
*Crist scal one beon inou. alle his durlinges*  
*he one is muchele mare and betere. ȝanne alle oȝere ȝinges*  
*Inoh he haued ȝe hine haueð. ȝe alle ȝing wealdeð<sup>1</sup>*  
 388 *of him to sene nis no sed. wel hem is ȝe hine bi-healdeð*  
*God is so mere and swa muchel. in his godcunnesse*  
*ȝat al ȝat is. and al ȝat wes is wurse. ȝenne he and lesse*  
*Ne mai it neure no man oȝer segge mid iwisse*  
 392 *hu muchele murlȝe habbet ȝo. ȝe beod iune godes blisse*  
*To ȝere blisse us bringe god. ȝe rixlet abuten ende*  
*ȝenne he vre soule vn-bint. of lieames bende*  
*Crist ȝyue us leden her swile lif. and habben her swile*  
*ende*  
 396 *ȝat we moten ȝuder come. wanne we henne wende. Amen.*

for they have  
not all alike of  
God's light.

They who  
loved him  
most here,  
shall see more  
of him there.

<sup>1</sup> MS.  
wealded.

All things are  
inferior to  
God.

No man may  
tell of the joys  
of heaven.

Christ grant  
that we may  
go thither  
when we die.

## XIX.

## [ON UREISUN OF OURE LOUERDE.]

- [I] Hesu soð god. godes sone. ihesu soð goð. soð mon. Mon  
 Maidene bern. Ihesu min hali loue min sikere spet-  
 nesse<sup>2</sup>. Ihesu min heorte. Mi sel. mi saule hele. Ihesu swete.  
 ihesu mi leof. mi lif. mi leome. Min halwi. Min huniter. ȝu al  
 ȝet ic hopie. Ihesu mi weole mi wunne. Min bliȝe breostes  
 blisse. Ihesu teke ȝet tu art se softe. and se swote. ȝette to  
 swa leoflic. swo leoflic and swa lufsum. ȝet te engles .a. biholdeȝ

\* [Fol. 65b.]  
Jesus, true  
God!

<sup>2</sup> swetnesse.

Teach me  
whatthou art,  
so soft and  
sweet!

angels ever behold thee, and yet are never full (satisfied) to look upon thee. Jesus, all fair (beautiful) ! before whom the sun is but a shadow, even she that loseth her light and becometh ashamed of her darkness before thy bright face. Thou that givest her light and hast all that light, enlumine my dark heart. Give thy bower brightness, and brighten my soul that is sooty. Make her (moreover) worthy of thy sweet abode. Kindle me with the blaze of thy enlightening love. Let me be thy lemman (beloved), and teach me to love thee, the loving Lord. Woe is me that I am so estranged from thee ! But as thou bodily hast departed, separate me from the world, turn me heartily and turn me altogether to thee, with true love and belief. I have no communion nor fellowship, nor familiarity (privity) with the world ; for I know well, my darling, dare I so address thee, that carnal and spiritual love, earthly and heavenly love, cannot in one state dwell together in one breast. Whosoever hath long absence of spiritual grace, of heavenly mirth, it is because they have or long after comfort on earth, that is fickle and false, and all mingled with grief and with bitterness. There is no true bliss in anything external that is not dearly bought ; the honey that one eats therein is licked off thorns. But is he not a foolish chapman that buyeth dear a worthless article and refuses a precious thing which one offereth him for nothing, and even promises him a reward for accepting it ? Jesus, Lord of (my) life, thou offerest us thy grace all without a request, and thereafter promisest us, if we accept it, heavenly blisses ; and we turn us therefrom and buy worldly comfort and favour of man's speech, with many a bitter grief. Ah ! Lord Jesus, thy succour ! why have I any delight in other things than in thee ? why love I anything but thee alone ? O that I might behold how thou stretchedst thyself for me on the cross ! O that I might cast myself between those same arms, so very wide outspread ! He openeth them as doth the mother her arms to embrace her beloved child. Yea, of a truth ! And thou, dear Lord, goest spiritually towards us, thy darlings, with the same out-spreading (embrace) as the mother to her children. Each is beloved ; each is dear ; each places himself in thy arms ; each will be embraced. Ah ! Jesus, thy humility and thy great mercy ! O that I were in thy arms, in thy arms so out-stretched and outspread on the cross ! And may any one ever hope

þe. Ne beoþ heo neuer fulle. forto lokin on þe. Ihesu al feir a-  
 3ein hwam. þe sunne nis boten a schadwe. ase þeo *þet* leoseþ here  
 liht. and scomeþ a3ein þi brihte leor. of hire þesturnesse. þu *þet*  
 3euest hire liht *and* al *þet* leome hauest aliht mi þester heorte.  
 3ef þi bur brihtnesse. mi saule *þet* is suti 3et. make hire wurþe to  
 þi swete wunninge. Ontend me wiþ þe blase. of þi leitinde loue.  
 let me beo mi<sup>1</sup> leofmon *and* her<sup>2</sup> to loue þe. louie þe louende  
 louerd. wa [is me] *þet* ic am swa fremede. wiþ þe. Ah ase þu  
 licomliche iwend iwend me from the worlde. wend me. *and*<sup>3</sup>  
 heorte-liche. *and* turn me allunge to þe. wiþ soþe loue. *and*  
 bileue. Ich nabbe no mong. ne felawscipe. ne priuete. wiþ þe  
 world. for wel ich þat<sup>4</sup> mi leofmon dear ich swa clipien. *þet*  
 flehsliche loue. *and* gostliche eorþliche lou<sup>5</sup> *and* heouenliche. ne  
 mazen onone wise beddin in a breoste. hwa se euer haueð longe  
 wone of gastliche elne. of heouenliche murhðe hit is for-þi ha  
 haueþ. oþer wilneþ after cunfort on eorþe. *þet* is fikel. and fals.  
*and* al imengd wiþ balewsið. *and* wiþ bitterness. nis nan blisse  
 soþes inan þing *þet* is utewið. *þet* ne beo to bitter aboht. *þet* et  
 huni þer in beoþ liked of þornes. me nis he fol \*chapmon þe buþ  
 deore a wac þing. *and* for forsakeþ a deorwurþe þing. *þet* me  
 beodeþ him for naut *and* bi-hat him þer take mede. forto nimen  
 hit. Min ihesu liues louerd þu beodest us þin elming<sup>6</sup>. al wiþ  
 uthen<sup>7</sup> bune. *and* þer after bihastest<sup>8</sup> us wiþ þon *þet* we neomen  
 hit heouenliche blissen. *and* we wendeþ us þer from. *and* buggeþ  
 worldles froure. wiþ moni sori teone. *and* elne of monnes speche.  
 a ihesu louerd þi grip. hwi abbe ich eni<sup>9</sup> lieung in oþer þing þene  
 in þe. hwi loue ich eni<sup>9</sup> þing boten þe one. hwi ne bi-hold ich hu  
 þu stralstest þe for me on þe rode. hwine warpe ich me bitweone  
 þe ilke earmes. swa swiþe wide to-spradde. he openeþ swa þe  
 moder hire earmes hire leoue child for to cluppen. 3e soþes *and*  
 tu deorwurþe louerd. gostliche to us *and* to [þine] deorlinges wiþ  
 þe ilke spredunge gest. as þe moder to hire child. hwa leof. hwa  
 lif. hwa deþ him þe bitweonen. hwa wule beo bi-cluppet. a  
 ihesu þin eadmodnesse. and þin muchele milce. hwi nam ich in þin  
 earmes. In þin earmes swa istrahte. *and* isprad on rode. and  
 weneð ei to beon bi-clupped bi-twene þine blisfulle earmes. In

The sun  
darkens  
before thy  
light.

Give me thy  
light.

1 ? þi.

2 ? ler.

3 ? ec.

Turn me  
from the  
world.

4 read wat.

5 MS. louo  
for loue ?

This world is  
false and  
fickle.

\* [Fol. 66a.]

6 ? elnung.

7 sic.

8 sic.

The world's  
comfort is  
dearly  
bought.

9 MS. ein.

Thou, O Lord,  
openeth thy  
arms to re-  
ceive us, as a  
mother her  
children.



to be embraced between thy blissful arms in heaven, unless he previously here has cast himself between thy piteous arms on the cross? Nay, of a truth! nay, let no man ever expect it. Through this low (humble) embracing we may come to the exalted one. He who will embrace thee there, even such as thou art there, Lord of light, must previously embrace thee here, even as poor as thou madest thyself for us wretches; that is to say, whosoever will have lot with thee in thy bliss, he must share with thee thy suffering on earth. He is no true fellow who will not go scot in the loss as well as in the gain. He must pay equal scot who will be thy fellow. O loving Lord! he must follow thy steps through sore (trials) and sorrow to the abode of bliss and of eternal joy. Let no man think to ascend easily to the stars. Ah! sweet Jesus! O that I might embrace thee with arms of love so fast that nothing may thence tear away my heart! O that I might kiss thee sweetly in spirit in sweet remembrance of thy good deeds! O that were bitter to me all that my flesh delighteth in! O that each worldly thing might appear despicable to me in comparison with the great delight of thy sweetness! O that I might feel thee in my breast even as sweet as thou art! Why art thou so strange towards me? O that I could woo thee with sweet love, for of all things art thou the sweetest, and of all things the loveliest, and most worthy of being loved! Alas! alas! the bitterness of my venomous sins is the hindrance. My sins are the wall between me and thee. My sins deny me all this sweetness. My sins have grievously impaired me, and made me at enmity with thee, O lovely Lord, and that is little wonder, for I am with their pollution so filthily defiled, that I may not, nor dare, O lovesome God, come into thy sight. Ah! Jesu, thy mercy! What avails then thy blood shed on the rood? what avails then the large brook in thy soft side; the streams that ran down from thy precious feet and from thy blessed hands? Is it not for to wash sinful souls? Is it not to save the sick in sin? Who is there unwashed that hath this saving moisture within his heart? Who need be unsaved that hath so mighty a salvation as oft as he thereto hath true belief? My heavenly leech (physician), that for us makest of thyself so mighty a medicine, blessed be thou for ever! As my trust is thereto, let it be my healing, let it be my remedy. If my sin (evil) is great, the might (virtue)

heouene bute he warpe. er her bitweone þine rewfulle earmes on þe rode. Nai soþes. nai. Ne wene hit neuer no mon. þurh his lahe clupping. me mot come heh to þe þer<sup>1</sup> þe wule bi-cluppe. þe þear swilc. ase þu art þear louerd of leome. he mot cluppe þe ear her swilc. ase þu makedest te her wreche. for us wrechtes. þet is to suggen hwa se euer wule habbe lot wiþ þe of þi blisse: he mot deale wiþ þe of þine pine on eorþe. Nis na trewe ifere þe nule naut scottin in þe lure. ase in þe biȝete: he mot scottin efne after his euene. [þ]e wule beo þin felaze luyende louerd. he mot foleȝi þine steapes þurh sar. *and* þurh sorewe to to \*wunninge. of weole *and* of eche wunne. Ne wene na mon to stihen wið este to þe steorren. A swete ihesu hwi w[ið] earmes of luue ne cluppe ich þe swa faste. þet na þing ne þeonne ne mæȝe breide min heorte. hwine cusse ich þe sweteliche ine gaste wið swote munegunge. of þine god-deden. hwinis me bitter al þet mi flehs likeð. hwi nis me unwurþ elc wurþliche þing. aȝein þe muchel delit of þi swetnesse. hwi ne fele ich þe in mi breostes swo swote ase þu art. hwi art tu me swo fremede. hwine con ich þe woȝe wiþ swete luue. uor alle þinge swetest. alre þinge leofluccest. *and* luue wurðest. wei. wei. þe bitternesse of mine sunnen attri is þe lettunge. mine sunnen beoþ wal bi-tweone me *and* þe. Mine sunnen werneþ me al þis swotnesse. Mine sunnen habbeþ grimliche iwreþed me. *and* iueed me towart te luneliche louerd. *and* þet is lute wunder. for swa ich am wiþ hare hori fenliche ifuled. þet ich ne mai ne ne dear cume lufsum god in þin ehsihþe. A ihesu þin aore hwet deþ þenne þi blod isched on þe rode. hwet deþ þenne þe large broc of þi softe side. þe strunden þe striken adun of þine deorwurþe fet. *and* of þine edi honden. Nes hit for to waschen sunfulle saulen. Nes hit for to sauuin seke inne sunne. hwa is þenne unwaschen þe haueþ þis halwende wet inwið his heorte. hwa derf beon un-sauuet þe haueþ se mihti salue. ase ofte as he þer to haueþ trewe bileue. min heoueneliche leche. þet makedest us of þi seolf se mihti medicine. iblesced beo þu euer as mi trust is þer to. hit beo mi lechunge hit beo mi bote. ȝef min uuel is muchel. þe mihte þer of is more. as wis ase dieope<sup>2</sup> of þi deorwurþe<sup>3</sup> blod. mahte

In order to embrace thee in heaven, we must first embrace thee here.

1 ? þet, or þus.

We must share with thee thy sorrow.

\* [Fol. 66b.]

Why am I so estranged from Christ?

It is on account of my foul sins.

My sins have made me at enmity with thee.

Thy blood may wash me clean of sins.

<sup>2</sup> for drope.

<sup>3</sup> MS. deor-þurþe.

thereof is greater. As certainly as a drop of thy precious blood is able to wash away the filth of all folk, so indeed, O living Lord, may the five wells that from thy blessed body sprang and poured down streams of blood, wash my five wits (senses) of all bodily sins ; of all that I have seen amiss with my eyes, heard with my ears, spoken or tasted with my mouth, and smelled with my nose, felt amiss with any limb (member), or sinned with the flesh. Let thy wounds heal the wounds of my soul ; let thy death mortify in me the pleasures of the flesh and the bodily lusts, and cause me to live to thee, so that I may say then with St. Paul, that saith, "I live, not I, but Christ liveth in me ;" that is to say, I live not in the life that I lived, but Christ liveth in me through his abiding grace which quickeneth me. "Well was she born," Jesus may then plainly say to thee, "thou that art next to him, help of all helpless and heal of all sinful that put their trust in thee." Help me, queen of angels, heavenly lady Saint Mary, mother and maiden and beloved woman. For to save the sinful, Jesus Christ became thy son. For our sake thou, maiden, wast made mother of God. Thou wouldst not be what thou art, blessed above all, if sinful men were not as thine own sinful ones to address thee boldly, for whom thou hast thy bliss and thy great exaltation. Virgin mother ! and maiden ! and whose mother (art thou) ? His whose daughter thou art. His that wrought and ruleth all that is created. His that hath not either beginning or end, that is ever the same without diminution, that remaineth ever in one state without change. O great honour to be the mother of such a son with the chastity of a maiden, and to have him so subject to thee that he desireth that all thy will everywhere be furthered. For to show us this he stretched forth his right arm as he stood on the cross, and bowed down toward thee his precious head, as though he would say, "Mother, all that thou wilt (desirest), all will I." Ah, sweet lady ! Why, lady, why have I not ever before the eyes of my heart these three sufferings (of Christ)—thy son was fixed to the cross, his feet and hands were pierced through with blunt nails, and his side was bloody—and thy suffering, lady, and Saint John the Evangelist's, weeping on both sides with sorrowful sighs ? O that I might ever behold this in my heart, and think that it was to deliver me and other sinners from hell, and for to give us the

waschen a-wai alle folkes fulpe. ase wis lifes louerd þe \*ilke fif wallen þet of þi blisfulle bodi sprungen. *and* strike dun strondes of blode wasche mine fif wittes of alle bodi sunnen. of al þet ich abbe mis-seien mid eȝen. mid min eren iherd. mid muþ ispekin. oper ismaht. *and* wið neose ismelled. wiþ eini lim mis ifeled. *and* wið flehs isuneged. þine wunden healen þe wunden of mi saule. þi deap adeadi in me flehces licunge. *and* licomliche lustes. *and* do me liuien to þe. þer ich maȝe. seggen: wiþ seinte pawel þe seiþ. Ic liuie naut ic æ crist liueð in me. þet is to seggen. Ic liuie ic ilif þet ic leuede. ah crist liueþ in me þurh his wunende grace. þet acwikeð me wel wes ha iboren þo mai ihesu þis baldeliche segge to þe. þu þet ert eafter him alle helpleses help. *and* sunfulles hele þet to þe habbeþ hope. helpe me englene quene. heoueneliche leafdi seinte marie moder *and* maiden deorwurþ wimmon forto salui sunne ihesu crist bicom þi sone. for ure sake þu were maked maiden godes moder. Nere þu naut þet tu art edi ouer alle ȝef sunfulle neren for þi aȝen sunfulle to cleopien to þe baldeliche. for hwam þu hauest þin edinesse. *and* ti muchele heh-schiþe. maiden moder. maiden *and* hwas moder. his hwas dolter þu art. his þat wrahte. *and* walt [al] þat ischapien is. his þet naueþ nouþer ne biginnunge þet is euer ilic wiþ-ute truchunge. þet halt euer anon wiþ-ute sturunge. O. muchele menske to beon moder of swuche sone. mid holseipe of maiden *and* habben him swa abandun. þet he wule þet al þine wil ihwer beo iforped. forto schawen us þis he strahte forþ his riht earm ase [he] stod o rode. *and* bereþ<sup>1</sup> dun towart te his deorwurþe heaued ase þah he saide. Moder þet þu wult\* . . . . .

\* [Fol. 67a.]  
A drop of thy  
blood may  
wash away  
all filth.

Help me,  
queen of  
angels!

Thy sinful  
ones may  
address thee  
boldly.

<sup>1</sup> ? beieþ.

\* For remainder of text, see p. 203, ll. 10—21.

bliss of the kingdom of heaven! This thought would surely enkindle true love within me, let the heart be ever so cold. Where this burning may be, there should sin never have any further entrance. Ah, Jesus! whither shall I flee when the devil hunteth after me, but to thy cross?

## XX.

## A GOOD ORISON OF OUR LADY.

- Christ's meek mother, Saint Mary!  
 C My life's light, my beloved lady!  
 To thee I bow and my knees I bend,  
 4 And all my heart's blood to thee I offer.  
 Thou art my soul's light, and my heart's bliss!  
 My life and my hope, my safety therewith indeed!  
 I ought to honour thee with all my might,  
 8 And sing the song of praise by day and by night;  
 For thou hast holpen me in many ways,  
 And brought me out of hell into Paradise.  
 I thank thee for it, my beloved lady,  
 12 And will thank thee while I live.  
 All Christian men ought to worship thee,  
 And sing thee a song of praise with exceeding great joy,  
 For thou hast delivered them out of the devil's hand,  
 16 And sent them in bliss to angels' land.  
 Well ought we to love thee, my sweet lady!  
 Well ought we for thy love to bow down our hearts.  
 Thou art bright and blissful above all women,  
 20 And good thou art, and to God dear above all men.  
 All the company of maidens honour thee alone,  
 For thou art the flower of them all before God's throne.  
 There is no woman born that is like to thee,  
 24 Nor is any thy equal within heaven's kingdom.  
 High is thy royal seat above cherubim,  
 Before thy dear Son among seraphim.  
 Merry sing the angels before thy face,

## XX.

## ON GOD UREISUN OF URE LEFDI.\*

[Fol. 120b].

**C**ristes milde moder seynte marie.

Mines liues leome mi leoue lefdi.

To þe ich buwe *and* mine kneon ich beie.

To thee,  
Christ's meek  
mother, I  
bend my  
knees.

4 And al min heorte blod to ðe ich offrie.

þu ert mire soule liht. *and* mine heorte blisse.

Mi lif *and* mi tohope min heale mid iwisse.

Ich ouh wurðie ðe mid alle mine mihte.

8 And singge þe lofsong bi daie *and* bi nihte.

Vor þu me hauest iholpen aucole kunne wise.

And ibrouht of helle in-to paradise.

Ich hit þonkie ðe mi leoue lefdi.

I will sing  
unto thee by  
day and by  
night.

12 And þonkie wulle þe hwule ðet ich liuie.

Alle cristene men owen don ðe wurschipe.

And singen ðe lofsong mid swuðe muchele gledschipe.

Vor ðu ham hauest alesed of deoflene honde.

16 And i-send mid blisse to englene londe.

Wel owe we þe luuien mi swete lefdi.

Wel owen we uor þine luue ure heorte beien.

þu ert briht *and* blisful ouer alle wummen.

Thou hast  
released man-  
kind out of  
the devil's  
hand.

[Fol. 121a.]

20 And god ðu ert *and* gode leof ouer alle wepmen.

Alle meidene were wurðeð þe one.

Vor þu ert hore blostme biuoren godes trone.

Nis no wummon iboren þet ðe beo iliche.

24 Ne non þer nis þin efning wið-inne heoueriche.

Heih is þi kinestol onuppe cherubine.

Biuoren ðine leoue sune wið-innen seraphine.

Murie dreameð engles biuoren þin onsene.

Thou art  
honoured  
above all  
women.

Thy throne is  
above the  
cherubim.

\* Cotton. MS. Nero A xiv.



- 28 Playing, carolling, and singing between (at intervals).  
 Full well it pleaseth them to be before thee,  
 For they are never tired of beholding thy fairness,  
 Thy bliss may no one understand,
- 32 For all God's kingdom is under thy hand.  
 All thy friends thou makest rich kings ;  
 Thou givest them royal robes, bracelets, and gold rings.  
 Thou givest eternal rest, full of sweet bliss,
- 36 Where that death never comes, nor harm, nor sorrow.  
 There bloom in bliss blossoms, white and red,  
 Where never snow nor frost may hurt them,  
 There may none fade, for there is eternal summer.
- 40 No living thing there is weak or sorrowful.  
 There they shall rest who here do honour thee,  
 If they keep their life clean from all evil ;  
 There they shall never sorrow nor toil,
- 44 Nor weep, nor mourn, nor hell-stinks smell.  
 There shall they be presented with golden cups,  
 And have poured out to them eternal life, with angels' joy.  
 No heart may think nor aught imagine (reach),
- 48 Nor no mouth utter, nor tongue teach,  
 How much good thou preparest within Paradise,  
 For them that work day and night in thy service.  
 All thy household is clothed with white ciclaton,
- 52 And they all are crowned with golden crowns.  
 They are as red as the rose, as white as the lily,  
 And evermore they shall be glad, and sing throughout merrily.  
 With bright gemstones (jewels) their crown is all bedecked,
- 56 And they all do what pleaseth them, so that nothing thwarts them.  
 Thy dear son is their king, and thou art their queen.  
 They are never annoyed by wind nor by rain.  
 With them is evermore day, without night,
- 60 Song without sorrow, and peace without fight.  
 With them is mirths (joys) manifold, without trouble or annoy ;  
 Music and games, abundance of life's pleasure, and eternal play.  
 Therefore, dear lady, long will it appear to us wretches

- 28 Pleieð. *and* sweieð. *and* singeð. bitweonen.  
 Swuðe wel ham likeð binoren þe to beonne.  
 Vor heo neuer ne beoð sead þi ueir to iseonne.  
 Þine blisse ne mei nowiht understonden.
- 32 Vor al is godes riche an under þine honden.  
 Alle þine ureondes þu makest riche kinges.  
 Þu ham ȝiuest kinesscud beies *and* gold ringes.  
 Þu ȝiuest eche reste ful of swete blisse.
- 36 Þer ðe neure deað ne com; ne herin ne sorinesse.  
 Þer bloweð inne blisse blostmen. hwite *and* reade.  
 Þer ham neuer ne mei. snou. ne uorst iureden.  
 Þer ne mei non ualuwen. uor þer is eche sumer.
- 40 Ne non liuiinde þing woc þer nis ne ȝeomer.  
 Þer heo schulen resten þe her ðe doð wurschipe.  
 ȝif heo ȝemeð hore lif cleane urom alle queadschipe.  
 Þer ne schulen heo neuer karien ne swinken.
- 44 Ne weopen ne murnen ne helle stenchis stinken.  
 Þer me schal ham steoren mid guldene chelle.  
 And schenchen ham eche lif mid englene wille.  
 Ne mei non heorte þenchen ne nowiht arechen.
- 48 Ne no muð imelen ne no tunge tegen<sup>1</sup>.  
 Hu muchel god ðu ȝeirkest wið-inne paradise.  
 Ham þet swinkeð dei *and* niht iðine seruise.  
 Al þin hird is i-schrud mid hwite ciclatune.
- 52 And alle heo beoð ikruned mid guldene krune.  
 Heo beoð so read so rose so hwit so þe lilie.  
 And euer more heo beoð gled *and* singeð þuruhut murie.  
 Mid brihte ȝimstones hore krune is al biset.
- 56 And al heo doð þet ham likeð. so þet no þing ham ne let.  
 Þi leoue sune is hore king *and* þu ert hore kwene.  
 Ne beoð heo neuer i-dreaued mid winde ne mid reine.  
 Mid ham is euer more dei wið-ute nihte.
- 60 Song wið-ute seoruwe *and* sib wið-ute uihte.  
 Mid ham is murnhðe moniuold wið-ute teone *and* treie.  
 Gleobeames *and* gome inouh liues wil *and* eche pleie.  
 Þereuore leoue lefdi long hit þuncheð us wrecchen.

The angels  
sing and play  
before thee.

Thou givest  
them royal  
robes, brace-  
lets, and gold  
rings.

Those that  
honour thee  
and lead pure  
lives shall  
have rest in  
heaven.

[Fol. 121b.]

<sup>1</sup> ? techen.

All thy  
household are  
crowned with  
golden  
crowns.

Thy son is  
their king  
and thou art  
their queen.

- 64 Until thou from this poor life to thyself us fetch.  
We may never have perfect joy (gladship)  
Ere we to thyself come, unto thy high honour (worship).  
Sweet mother of God, gentle maiden and well-beloved,
- 68 Thine equal was never born, nor evermore shall be.  
Mother thou art, and virgin void of all vice !  
Throughout high and holy in angels' rest.  
All the host of angels and all holy things
- 72 Say and sing that thou art of life the well-spring,  
And they all say that thou art never wanting in mercy,  
Nor shall any man that worships thee ever be lost.  
Thou art my soul's (light) without leasing,
- 76 After thy dear son, most beloved of all things.  
All heaven is full of thy bliss,  
And so is all this earth of thy mercy.  
So great is thy mercy and gentleness,
- 80 That no man that earnestly prayeth thee may lack (miss) thy help.  
Each man that looketh to thee thou givest mercy and grace,  
Though he may have much offended and grieved thee sorely,  
Therefore I entreat thee, holy queen of heaven,
- 84 That thou, if it be thy will, hear my petition (boon).  
I entreat thee, lady, for the greeting  
That Gabriel brought thee from our heavenly King,  
And also I beseech thee for Jesus Christ's blood,
- 88 Which, for our benefit, was shed on the cross,  
For the great sorrow that was in thy mind,  
When thou at his death before him stoodest,  
That thou make me clean, outwardly and inwardly,
- 92 So that not any kind of sin may ruin me.  
The loathsome devil and errors of all kinds  
Banish from me far away, along with their foul filth.  
My dear life (love), from thy love shall nothing separate me,
- 96 For on thee depends my life, and my salvation also.  
For thy love I toil and sigh very often,  
For thy love I am brought into bondage,  
For thy love I forsook all that was dear to me,

- 64 Vort þu of þisse erme liue to ðe suluen us fecche.  
 We ne muwen neuer hebben fulle gledschipe.  
 Er we to þe suluen kumen to þine heie wurschipe.  
 Swete Godes moder softe meiden *and* wel icoren.
- 68 Þin iliche neuer nes ne neuermore ne wurð iboren.  
 Moder þu ert *and* meiden cleane of alle laste.  
 Þuruhtut hei *and* holi in englene reste.  
 Al englene were *and* alle holie þing.
- 72 Siggeð *and* singeð þet tu ert liues welsprung.  
 And heo siggeð alle þet ðe ne wonteð neuer ore.  
 Ne no mon þet ðe wurðeð ne mei neuer beon uorloren.  
 Þu ert mire soule wið-ute leasunge.
- 76 Efter þine leoue sune! leouest alre þinge.  
 Al is þe heouene ful of þine blisse.  
 And so is al þes middeleard of þine mildheortnesse  
 So muchel is þi milce *and* þin edmodnesse.
- 80 Þet no mon þet ðe ȝeorne bit of helpe ne mei missen.  
 Ilch mon þet to þe bisihð þu ȝiuest milce *and* ore.  
 Þauh he ðe habbe swuðe agult *and* i-dreaued sore.  
 Þereuore ich ðe bidde holi heouene kwene.
- 84 Þet tu ȝif þi wille is iher mine bene.  
 Ich ðe bidde lefdi uor þere gretunge.  
 Þet Gabriel ðe brouhte urom ure heouen kinge.  
 And ek ich ðe biseche uor ihesu cristes blode.
- 88 Þet for ure note was i-sched oðere rode.  
 Vor ðe muchele seoruwe ðet was oðine mode.  
 Þo þu et ðe deaðe him bi-uore stode.  
 Þet tu me makie cleane wið-uten *and* eke wið-innen.
- 92 So þet me ne schende none kunnes sunne.  
 Þene loðe deouel *and* alle kunnes dweoluhðe.  
 Aulem urom me ueor awei mid hore fule fulðe.  
 Mi leoue lif urom þine luue ne schal me no þing to-dealen.
- 96 Vor oðe is al ilong mi lif *and* eke min heale.  
 Vor þine luue i swinke *and* sike wel ilome.  
 Vor þine luue ich ham ibrouht in to þeoudome.  
 Vor þine luue ich uorsoc al þet me leof was.

Sweet mother  
of God, thou  
hast no equal.

Thou art the  
well-spring of  
life.

[Fol. 122a.]

Heaven is full  
of thy bliss.

Thou givest  
mercy to all  
that ask it.

Make me  
clean, within  
and without.

For thy love  
I toil and  
sigh.

- 100 And gave thee all myself. Dear life (love), think thou of that.  
That I have at times made thee angry, I am truly sorry.  
For Christ's five wounds do thou give me mercy and grace.  
If thou hast no mercy upon me, I know full well
- 104 That in hell-pain I shall swelter and burn.  
Full well thou sawest me, though thou wert silent,  
Where I was, and what I did, yet thou didst bear with me.  
If thou hadst taken vengeance upon my wickedness,
- 108 Truly I had wholly lost the bliss of Paradise.  
Thou hast yet borne with me for thy goodness,  
And now I hope to have full forgiveness.  
And now I hope never to fall into hell-pain,
- 112 Since I have come to thee and am thine own servant.  
Thine I am, and will be now and evermore,  
For on thee and on God's mercy depends all my life.  
My dear sweet lady, for thee I long exceedingly.
- 116 Unless I have thy help, I shall never be joyful.  
I thee entreat that thou come to my death,  
And chiefly then manifest thy love.  
Receive my soul when I depart from this life,
- 120 And shield me from sorrow and everlasting death's care (grief).  
If thou wilt that I thrive, take good heed to me,  
For I shall never prosper unless it be through thee.  
With very evil vices my soul is fast bound ;
- 124 Nothing so well as thou can heal my wounds.  
To thee alone is all my trust, after (next to) thy dear Son,  
For his holy name, of my life grant me the loan.  
Suffer not the devil (enemy) to touch me,
- 128 Nor to draw me into hell-pain.  
Take heed to me, so that, be what may, it will ever be best for me,  
For thine is the worship, if I, wretch, may well thrive.  
Thou forsakest no man for his wickedness,
- 132 If he is ready to repent and prayeth thee for forgiveness.  
Thou canst easily, if thou wilt, all my sorrow allay,  
And much better see (what is needful) for me, than I can say (ask).  
Thou canst easily requite my greeting (complaint),

- 100 And ȝef ȝe al mi suluen. looue lif iþench þu pes.  
 Þet ich ȝe wreðede sume siðe hit me reoweð sore.  
 Vor cristes fif wunden ȝu ȝif me milce *and* ore.  
 ȝif þu milce nauest of me þet ich wot wel ȝeorne
- 104 Þet, ine helle pine swelten ich schal *and* beornen.  
 Ful wel þu me iseie þauh þu stille were.  
 Hwar ich was *and* hwat i dude þauh þu me uorbere.  
 ȝif þu heuedest wreche inumen of mine luðernesse.
- 108 Iwis ich heuede al norloren paradises blisse.  
 Þu hauest ȝet forboren me uor þine godnesse.  
 And nu ich hopie habben fulle uorȝiuenesse.  
 Ne wene ich neure uallen in-to helle pine.
- 112 Hwon ich am to ȝe ikumen *and* am ȝin owune hinc.  
 Þin ich am *and* wule beon nu *and* euer more.  
 Vor oðe is al mi lif ilong *and* o godes ore.  
 Mi leoue swete lefli to þe me longeð swuðe.
- 116 Bute ich habbe þine help ne beo ich neuer bliðe.  
 Ich þe bidde þet tu kume to mine uorð-siðe.  
 And nomcliche þeonne þine luue kuðe.  
 Auouh mine soule hwon ich of þisse liue uare.
- 120 And i-schild me urom seoruwe *and* from eche deaðes kare.  
 ȝif þu wult ȝet ich iðeo gode ȝeme nim to me.  
 Vor wel ne wurð me neuer bute hit beo þuruh ȝe.  
 Mid swuþe luðere lasten mi soule is þuruh bunden.
- 124 Ne mei no þing so wel so þu healen mine wunden.  
 To þe one is al mi trust efter þine leoue sune.  
 Vor is holie nome of mine liue ȝif me lue.  
 Ne þole þu þene unwine þet he me arine.
- 128 Ne þet he me drawe in-to helle pine.  
 Nim nu ȝeme to me so me best a beo ȝe beo.  
 Vor þin is þe wurchipe ȝif ich wreeche wel iþeo.  
 Þu ne uorsakest nenne mon uor his luðernesse.
- 132 ȝif he is to bote ȝeruh *and* bit þe uorȝiuenesse.  
 Þu miht lihtliche ȝif þu wult al mi sor aleggen.  
 And muchele bet biseon to me þen ich kunne siggen.  
 Þu miht forȝelden lihtliche mine gretunge.

Give me  
mercy for  
the sake of  
Christ's five  
wounds.

[Fol. 122b.]

Thou hast  
borne long  
with my sins.

Without thy  
help I shall  
never be  
bliþe.

With vile  
sins my soul  
is fast bound.

Let not the  
devil touch  
me.

[Fol. 123a.]

Thou canst  
allay all my  
sorrow.



- 136 And all my labour, and my sorrow, and my kneeling.  
In me there is nothing fair to be seen,  
Nor anything that is worthy to be before thee,  
Therefore I pray thee that thou wash me and clothe,  
140 Through thy great mercy that spreadeth so very wide.  
It is not to thy honour that the devil should entice me (to sin) ;  
If thou wilt permit it, truly he will greatly rejoice (to do so),  
For he would never that thou shouldst have honour,  
144 Nor that any man that honoured thee should have gladness.  
Thou knowest full well that the devil hateth me,  
And chiefly because I worship thee.  
Therefore I entreat thee to guard and protect me,  
148 So that the devil may not trouble me, nor error harm me.  
So thou dost and so thou shalt for thy mercy,  
Thou shalt give me a fair portion of heavenly bliss.  
If I have broken (sinned) much, much will I repent,  
152 And perform my shrift, and fair thee pray,  
The while I have my life and health.  
From thy service shall nothing separate me.  
Before thy feet I will lie and cry,  
156 Until I have forgiveness of my misdeeds.  
My life is thine, my love is thine, my heart's blood is thine,  
And if I dare say it, my dear lady, thou art mine.  
All honour have thou in heaven, and also on earth,  
160 And all joy have thou as much as thou deservest.  
Now I beseech thee by Christ's charity (love),  
That thou thy blessing and thy love give to me ;  
Preserve my body in purity.  
164 God Almighty grant me, for his mercy,  
That I may see thee in thy exalted bliss,  
And that all my friends may be the better now to-day,  
That I have sung thee this English lay.  
168 And now I beseech thee, for thy holiness,  
That thou bring the monk to thy joy,  
That made this song of thee, my dear lady,  
Christ's meek mother, Saint Mary ! Amen.

- 136 Al mi swine *and* mi sor *and* mine kneouwunge.  
 Ine me nis noþing feier on to biseonne.  
 Ne no þing *þet* beo wurðe biuoren þe to beonne.  
 Pereuore ich þe bidde *þet* þu me wassche *and* schrude
- 140 Þuruh þine muchele milce *þet* spert<sup>1</sup> so swuðe wide.  
 Nis hit ðe no wurðscipe *þet* þe deouel me to-drawe.  
 ȝif þu wult hit iðanien iwis he wule ðurchut fawe.  
 Vor he nolde neuere *þet* þu hefedest wurðscipe.
- 144 Ne no mon *þet* þe wurðeð *þet* he hedde gledschipe.  
 Þu hit wost ful ȝeorne *þet* þe deouel hateð me.  
 And nomeliche pereuore *þet* ich wurðie þe.  
 Pereuore ich þe bidde *þet* þu me wite *and* werie.
- 148 *Þet* þe deouel me ne drecche ne dweolðe me ne derie.  
 So þu dest *and* so þu schalt uor ðire mild-heortnesse.  
 Þu schalt me a ueir dol of heoueriche blisse.  
 ȝif ich habbe muchel ibroken muchel ich wulle beten.
- 152 And do mine schrifte *and* þe ueire greten.  
 Þe hwule *þet* ich habbe mi lif *and* mine heale.  
 Vrom ðire seruise ne schal me no þing deale.  
 Biuoren þine uote ich wulle liggen *and* greden.
- 156 Vort ich habbe uorȝiuenesse of mine misdeden.  
 Mi lif is þin mi luue is þin mine heorte blod is þin.  
 And ȝif ich der seggen mi leoue leafdi þu ert min.  
 Alle wurðschipe haue þu on heouene *and* ec on eorðe.
- 160 And alle gledschipe haue þu al so þu ert wurðe.  
 Nu ich þe bi-seche ine cristes cherite.  
*Þet* þu þine blescinge *and* þine luue ȝiue me.  
 ȝeme mine licame ine clenenesse.
- 164 God almihti unne me vor his mild-heortnesse.  
*Þet* ich mote þe iseo in ðire heie blisse.  
 And alle mine ureondmen þe bet beo nu to dai.  
*Þet* ich habbe i-sungen þe ðesne englissee lai.
- 168 And nu ich þe bi-seche vor ðire holinesse.  
*Þet* þu bringe þene Munuch to þire glednesse.  
*Þet* funde ðesne song bi ðe mi looue leafdi.  
 Cristes milde moder seinte marie. amen. ~

<sup>1</sup> ? spret.

It is not to  
thy honour  
that I should  
fall into sin.

Preserve me  
from the devil  
and from all  
error.

Before thy  
feet I will cry  
until I have  
thy forgive-  
ness.

[Fol. 123b.]

Give me thy  
love and keep  
me pure.

Bring the  
author of this  
lay unto thy  
joy.

## XXI.

PIS IS ON WEL SWUÐE GOD UREISUN OF  
GOD ALMIHTI\*.

Jesus, true  
God, true son  
of God, true  
son of a  
virgin!

<sup>1</sup> MS. spet-  
nesse.

Jesus, my  
heart's and  
soul's joy!

The sun pales  
before thy  
light.

\* [Fol. 124v.]

Enkindle me  
with thy  
light.

Let me have  
no fellowship  
with the  
world.

Worldly  
riches are  
dearly  
bought.

Iesu soð god. soð godes sune. Iesu soð god. soð mon. *and* soð meidenes bern. Iesu min holi huue. Mi sikere swetnesse<sup>1</sup>. Iesu min heorte. mine soule hele. Swete iesu mi leof. mi lif. mi leome. min healewi. min humi ter. þu ert al þet ich hopie. Iesu mi weole. mi wunne. mi bliðe breostes blisse. Iesu teke þet þu ert so softe. *and* so swete. ȝet þerto þu ert so leoflich. so louelich. *and* so lufsum. þet te engles euer bi-holdeð þe. ne ne beoð heo neuer ful. forto logen on þe. Iesu al feir. a-ȝein hwam þe sunne nis buten ase a scheadewe. ase þeo þet leoseð hire liht; *and* schineð a-ȝein pine brihte leore uor hire þeosternesne. þu þet ȝeonest hire liht. *and* al ðet leome haueð. aliht mine þeostri heorte. ȝif mi bur brithnesse. *and* brihte mine soule \* þet is suti. *and* make hire wurðe to pine swete wuninge. Ontend me wið blase. of pine leitinde huue. Let me beon þi leofmon. *and* ler me for to louien þe liuiinde louerd. woa is me þet ich am so freomede wið þe. auh ase þu al hauest licamliche iwend me from þe worlde; wend me ec heortliche. *and* turn me allunge to þe. wið soðe huue. *and* mid bi-leaue. þet ich nabbe no mong. ne felauhschipe. ne speche. ne priuite wið þe worlde. for ich wot mi leofmon. der ich so cleopien þe. ðet fleshlich huue *and* gostlich. eorðlich huue *and* heouenlich; ne muhen onone wise bedden in one breoste. hwoa so cuer haueð longe wone of gostlich elne. of heouenliche murðe; hit is for-þi. ðet heo haueð. oðer wilmed; efter cumfort on eorðe. ðet is fikel. *and* fals. *and* al imengd wið baluhsið. *and* wið bitternesse. Nis no blisse soðes ipinge ðet is wtewið; ðet ne beo to bitter abowt. ðet tet uni ðer inne. ne beo ilicked of þornes. Me nis he fol chepmon. ðet buð deore awoc ping. *and* forsakeð a deorwurðe ping. ðet me

\* For Translation, see pp. 182-190.

beot him for nowt. *and* bihat him þer taken mede. for to nimen hit : Mi iesu liues louerd. þu beodest þin elning. al wið-ute bone. *and* þer efter bihotest us wið þen ðet we nimen hit. heouenliche blissen : *and* we wendeð us þer from. *and* buggeð worldes froure. wið moni sor. *and* teone. *and* elne of monnes speche : a : iesu louerd. þi grið. hwi habbe ich eni \*lieunge. in oðer þinge : þen i þe. hwi luuie ich ei þing bute þe one : hwi ne bi-hold ich hu þu streihtest þe for me on þe rode : hwi ne worpe ich me bi-tweonen þeo ilke ermes so swiðe wiðe to-spreddede. *and* i-openeð so þe moder deð hire ermes. hire leoue childe for to bi-eluppen : 3e soðes. *and* þu deorewurðe louerd gostliche to us *and* to ðine deorelinges. wið þe ilke spredunge 3eiest. ase þe moder to hire childe. hwo leof : hwo lif : hwo deð him her bitweonen : hwoa wule beon bi-elupped : a iesu þin edmodnesse. *and* þi muchele milce. hwi nam ich ipin ermes so istreihhte. *and* ispred on rode : *and* weneð ei to beon bi-elupped bitweonen þine blisfulle ermes in heouene. bute he worpe er him her : bi-tweonen þine rewðful ermes oðe rode : Nai soðes nai : ne wene hit neuer nomon. þuorh þis lowe eluppinge. me mot come to þe heie : þet wule bi-eluppen þe þer swuch : ase þu ert þer louerd of leoue. he mot eluppen þe er her : swuch ase þu makedest þe her. wrecche : for us wreeches. ðet is to seggen. hwoa so euer wule habben lot wið þe of þine blisse : he mot delen wið þe : of þine pine on eorðe. nis he nout treowe ifere þet nule nout scotten iþe lure : ase iþe bi-3ete. he mot scotten efne efter his euene. þet wule beon þi felawe : liuiinde louerd. \*he mot folewen þine steopes. þuruh sor. *and* þuruh seoruwe. to ðe wununge of weole : *and* of eche wunne. Ne wene nomon to stilhen wið este to þe steorren. A swete iesu. hwi mid ermes of luue ne cluppe ich þe so feste. þet no þing þeonne ne muwe breiden mine heorte : hwi ne cusse ich þe sweteliche ine goste. wið swete munegunge of þine goddeden : hwi nis me bitter. al þet mi flesch likeð. hwi nis me unwurð euerich wordlich þing a-3ein þe muchele delit of þine swetnesse : hwi ne iuele ich þe imine breoste so swete ase þu ert : hwi ertu me so freomede : hwi ne eon ich wowen þe. wið swete luue wordes alre þinge swetest. *and* alre þinge leoflu-

Thou, O Lord, offerest us thy grace without our asking for it.

\*[Fol. 124b.]

O that I might throw myself between thy arms !

We must suffer even as thou hast suffered.

We must share thy sorrows.

\*[Fol. 125a.]

We cannot ascend with ease to the stars.

Let me woo thee with sweet words.

My sins are a  
wall between  
me and thee.

Thy blood  
shed on the  
cross can wash  
our sinful  
souls.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

\*[Fol. 125b.]

Thou art our  
heavenly  
physician.

Wash my five  
wits from all  
sins.

Christ liveth  
in me through  
his grace.

\*[Fol. 126a.]

Help me, O  
mother and  
maiden, most  
precious of  
women.

kest *and* luue wurðest : wei wei. þe bitternesse of alle mine  
attri sunnen is þe lettunge. Mine sunnen beoð wal bi-tweonen  
me. *and* þe. Mine sunnen werneð me : al þis swotnesse. Mine  
sunnen habbeð grimliche iwursed me. *and* iueied me toward þe  
luueliche louerd : *and* þet is lutel wunder. forso ich ham wið  
hore horie fenliche ifuled : þet ich ne mei. ne ne der lufsum  
Godd : cumen ipine eihsihðe. a : iesu þin ore. hwat deið þeonne  
þi blod isched ope rode. hwat deið þeonne þe large broc of þine  
softe side. þe streames þet striden adun of þine deorewurðe uet.  
*and* of þine eadie honden. nes hit forto waschen sumfule<sup>1</sup> soulen :  
nes hit for to \*saluen seke ine sunnen : hwoa is þeonne un-  
weaschen. þet aueð þis halwende wet inwið his heorte : hwoa  
þerf beon unsalued. þet haueð so mihti salue. ase ofte ase he per-  
to haueð treoue bileue : Min heouenliche leche. ðet makedest us  
of þi seolf so mihti medicine. iblesced beo þu euer. ase min trust  
is þer to : hit beo mi lechnunge. hit beo mi bote. 3if min uuel is  
muchel : þe mihte þer of. is more. ase wis ase a drope of þine  
deorewurðe blode. mulite waschen awei alle folkes fulðe : ase  
wis liues louerd þeo ilke fif wellen of þine blisfule bodie sprungen  
*and* striken dun strundes of blode. weaschs mine fif wittes : of  
alle blodie sunnen. of al þet ich habbe mis-iseien mid eien. *and*  
mid min earen iherd. wið muðe ispeken. oðer ismauht *and*  
wið noese i-smelled. wið eni lim mis-iueld. *and* wið fleschs  
isuneged. þine wunden helen þe wunden of mine soule. þi  
deað : a-deadie in me flesches licunge : *and* licamliche lustes.  
*and* makien me liuien to þe ðet ich muwe seggen wið seinte  
powel ðet seið. Ich liuiee nout ich : auh crist liueð in me. ðet  
is to seggen. ich liuie nout ine liue þet ich liuede. auh crist liueð  
in me. puruh his wuniinde grace : ðet aewikeð me. wel was he  
ibeoren þet mei iesu þis baldeliche seggen to þe. : þu ðet ert efter  
him. alle helplease help. *and* sunfules hele þet to \*þe habbeð  
hope. help me englene cwene of heouene : heouenliche leafdi. seinte  
marie. Moder *and* meiden deorwurðe wimmon. for to saluen  
sunfule : iesu crist bi-com þi sunc. *and* for urc sake þu were  
inaked meiden : godes moder. Nere þu nout ðer þu ert. eadi  
ouer alle : 3if sunfule neren. for þi owe sunfule. for to cleopien

to þe baldeliche : for hwam þu hauest þin eadinesse. *and* þine  
 muchele heihschipe. Meiden, *and* moder. Meiden [*and*] hwas  
 moder [his hwas] dohter þu ert his þet wrohete *and* welt. al þet  
 ischeapen is. his þet naueð nouðer ende : ne biginnunge. þet is  
 euer i-liche. wið-ute sturiunge oþe muchele menske to boen<sup>1</sup>  
 moder of swich sune wið iholschipe of meiden. *and* habben him  
 so abaundune. ðet he wule ðet þin wille oueral beo i-uorðed. for  
 to scheawen us þis : he streccheð þene ritht<sup>2</sup> erm uorð. ase he  
 stont orode. *and* beieð adun toward þe. his deorewurðe heaued.  
 ase þauh he seide. Moder al þet þu wult : al ich wulle. aswete  
 leafdi. hwi leafdi hwi : nabe ich euer bi-foren mine heorte eihen.  
 þeo ilke þreo stondunges. þi sune was ituht on rode. þurh driuen  
 fet *and* honden. wið dultc neiles. blodi his side. *and* þi stondunge  
 leafdi. *and* sein iohanes ewangelistes weopinde otwo half wið  
 sorhfule sikes : hwi ne bi-hold ich þis euer in mine heorte. *and*  
 þenche ðet hit was for me. *and* for oðre sunfule \*to aredden of  
 helle. *and* forto ȝiuen us heoueriche blisse : þis þoht wolde siker-  
 liche ontenden so soð huue on me. Nere þe heorte so cold. þet  
 ne schulde neuer sunne habben forðer in-ȝong. þer þis brune  
 were. a iesu hwuder schal ich fleon hwon þe deouel hunteð efter  
 me bute to þine rode :

Thou art the  
 mother of him  
 who created  
 and ruleth all  
 things.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

May I ever  
 keep before  
 me the three  
 sufferings of  
 Christ, thy  
 suffering, and  
 that of  
 St. John.

\*[Fol. 126b.]



## XXII.

## A HYMN TO OUR LADY.

Sweet Lady Saint Mary, maiden above all maidens, that barest the blissful bairn (child) that raised up all mankind that had fallen down through Adam's sin. Through his holy passion he cast down the devil and harrowed hell. I, a sorry, sinful thing, ask thy mercy, that thou be my pleader against the foes of my soul, that they may not accuse it; but protect me and help me, merciful maiden, in all my necessities. My enemies have encompassed me about on every side, and seek the death of my soul. Wicked men and devils have pierced me with many wounds that kill my soul, except thou be my leech. I have oft been obedient to all my three foes—to the devil, and to the world, and to the sins of my flesh. I acknowledge myself guilty, and cry thee mercy, Lady, for I have made gates of all my five senses for the entrance of sinful vices. I have looked amiss, hearkened amiss, felt amiss, spoken amiss, loved sweet smells. Pride and desire of praise have sore wounded me; also wrath and envy, leasing, perjury, unfaithfulness, cursing, backbiting, and flattery. Sometimes I have had wrongful possession of other men's goods, and have given amiss, and received amiss, and often withheld amiss; quick to do evil, slow to do good; negligent and slothful; sometimes too playful, at other times too moody. I have sinned both in meat and in drink, and with the filth of the flesh defiled myself. Thus I am loathsomely hurt in body and in soul with sins of all kinds; for though the work was not in the body the will was in the heart. All this I acknowledge to thee, sweet Lady Saint Mary, highest of all saints. Intercede for me and protect me, for I am worthy of torment. Beseech thy blessed Son to show me kindness, mercy, and grace, for he may deny thee, maiden, who barest him, nothing of thy requests. I pray thee, and beseech thee, and entreat thee (if it be needful for me), by his conception in thy holy body, by his birth, by his humble fasting in the wilderness, by the

## XXII.

## [ON LOFSONG OF URE LEFDI.]

Swete leafdi seinte marie meiden ouer alle meidnes. *þet* here  
 ȝet blisfule bern. *þet* aredde<sup>1</sup> al moncun up. *þet* was adun  
 a-fallen. ȝet<sup>2</sup> puruȝ adames sunne. *and* ȝet<sup>2</sup> puruh his holi pas-  
 siun werp þene deouel adun. *and* heriede helle. ich on sori sunfule  
 þing : bidde þin ore. ȝet tu beo mi motild aȝeines mine soule  
 fon. *þet* heo hire ne muwen bitellen. auh were me. *and* help me  
 milzfule meiden : in alle mine neoden. Mine widerwines habbeȝ  
 biset me on euche half abuten : *and* seecheȝ mine soule deaȝ.  
 luȝre men *and* deoffen. heo habbeȝ monie wunden on me ifestned :  
*þet* aewelleȝ mine soule. bute þu beo mi leche. ich habbe ofte  
 ibuwen to alle mine þreo i-fon. to þe feond. *and* to þe world. *and*  
 to mine flesches sunne. ich icnowe me gulti. *and* creie þe leafdi  
 merci. for ich habbe imaked ȝetes of alle mine fif wittes. to sun-  
 fule unpeawas. mis i-loked. Mis iherened. Mis ifeled. mis ispeken.  
 iloued swote smelles. prude *and* wilnunge of pris : me habbeȝ  
 sore iwunded. \*ase wreȝȝe. *and* onde. lesunge. missware. vuele  
 i-holden treouȝe. eursunge. bae bitunge. *and* fikelunge : summe  
 tide. ich habbe iheuod of oȝer monnes mid woh. *and* mid unriht  
 iȝeuen mis. *and* inumen mis. *and* mis etholden ofte. tovel : spac.  
*and* slow : to Godl. ȝemeleas : *and* unlusti. sumehwile to pleiful :  
 to drupi oȝer hwiles. ich habbe i-suneged ine mete. *and* ine  
 drunche boȝe. *and* mid flesches fulȝe ifuled me. þus ich am lod-  
 liche i-hurt ine licame. *and* ine soule : wiȝ alle cunnes sunnen.  
 for þauh *þet* were nere i þe bodie : þe wil was in þe heorte. al  
 þis ich i-cnoulechie þe swete leafdi seinte marie. heiest alre hale-  
 wen. Nim mot for me *and* were me. for ich am pine wurȝe. bi-  
 seeh for me pine seli sune : Milce. *and* merei. *and* ore. for nout  
 ne mai he werne þe : maiden þe hine bere of alle pine bisocnen.  
 Ich bide þe *and* biseche þe *and* halsi ȝif me howeȝ lit : bi his  
 flech founge of pine eadie bodie. bi his iborenesse. bi his eadi

Sweet lady,  
 have mercy  
 upon a sorry,  
 sinful thing.

<sup>1</sup> ? aredde.

<sup>2</sup> Originally  
 ȝer.

Be my advo-  
 cate against  
 my soul's foes,

the world,  
 flesh, and the  
 devil.

I have sinned  
 with all my  
 five wits.

\*[Fol 127a.]

I have been  
 quick to do  
 evil, but slow  
 to do good.

Intercede  
 with thy son  
 for me.

hard injuries (hurts) and by the unworthy wrongs that he willingly suffered for us sinful creatures ; by his mortal agony, and by his bloody sweat ; by his blessed prayers in the hills by himself ; by his capture and binding ; by his leading forth ; by all that he was doomed to ; by his change of raiment, now red, now white, (put) on him in mockery ; by his scorning, and by his spitting and buffeting, and by his blinding ; by the crown of thorns ; by the sceptre of reed given him in scorn ; by his own cross, so hard dragging on his soft shoulders ; by the blunt nails ; by the sore wounds ; by the holy rood ; by the opening in his side ; by his bloody stream that ran in many places, in his circumcision, in his blood-sweating, in his pain through the crown of thorns ; (through the nails) first in his one hand and then in his other ; lastly in the piercing of his side, besides (other) sore wounds. Yet, some saints think that the true blood-stream was in his first capture, in the fast binding, when the blood was wrung out of his blessed nails. I entreat thee that thou beseech him, by his shame, by his sorrow, by his death on the cross ; by all that he said, did, and suffered on earth ; by the holy sacrament of his flesh and blood that the priest sanctifieth ; through the grace of baptism ; through all the other sacraments that Holy Church followeth and useth ;—through all these I beseech thee, God's precious mother, that their might may help me, and their strength go forth (prevail) where my offering faileth ; for my belief is that I, through them, shall be saved. Jesus, thy Son and God's Son, gave us himself altogether ; and all is ours—what he spake, and did, and suffered on earth. May his torment on the cross and his death destroy my sins ; and may his arising (resurrection) raise me into holiness of life ; and may his uprising (ascension) cause me to advance upwards in high and holy virtues, from high to higher (virtues) ever until I see in Zion, the high tower of heaven, the Lord of light, whom the angels ever behold and ever the longer (they behold him) the more they desire it. And because in that happy song is all we seek, Lady, through thy intercession make known my petition to thy blessed Son. Amen !

festunge iþe wilderness. bi þe herde hurtes *and* þe unwurðe  
wowes ðet he for us sunfule willeliche þolede. bi his deaðfule  
grure. *and* bi his blodie swote. bi his eadi beoden in hulles him  
one. bi his nimunge. *and* bindunge. bi his ledunge forð. bi al þet  
me him demde. bi his cloðes wrixlunge. Nu red. nu hwit. him  
on hokerunge. bi his scornunge. *and* bi his spotlunge. *and* bufet-  
tunge. \**and* his heliunge. bi þe þornene crununge. bi ðe kinezerde  
of rode.<sup>1</sup> him of scornunge. bi his owune rode. on his softe schul-  
dres. so herde druggunge. bi þe dulte neiles. bi þe sore wunden :  
bi þe holie rode. bi his side openunge. bi his blodi Rune þet ron  
inne monie studen. In umbe keoruunge. in his blod swetunge<sup>2</sup>.  
in his pine þornene crununge. erest in his one hond *and* seoððen  
in his oðer. olast in his side þurlunge wið-ute sore wunde. ðet  
ase halewen weneð. þet toðe<sup>3</sup> blod rune. was in his ereste.  
nimunge in þe feste bindunge. þet tet blod wrong ut et his eadie  
neiles. ich halsi þe þet ðu bi-seche him bi his schome. bi his sor.  
bi his deað on rode. bi al þet he seide wrohte *and* þolede in  
eorðe. bi þe holi sacrament of his flech *and* of his blod þet ðe  
preost sacreð. *þurh* þe grace of fuluht. *þurh* alle þe oðre sacre-  
menz. þet holi chirche foluweð *and* useð. *þurh* alle ich bi-seche  
þe godes deore-wurðe moder þet heore mihte helpe me. *and* hore  
strencðe go forð. þer min offringe wouteð. for min bileue is þet  
ich schal þuruh ham beon iboreuwen. iesu þi sune *and* Godes  
sune. 3if us al him suluen *and* al is ure þet he spec *and* wrohte  
*and* þolede in orðe. his pine on rode *and* his deað acwellen Mine  
sunnen. *and* his ariste arere me in lif holinesse. *and* his \*up  
ariste do me stepen upward in heie *and* holi þeawes. from heil  
*and* to herre euer ðet ich iseo in syon þe heie tur of heouene :  
þene louerd of leome. þet te engles euer biholdeð. *and* euer so  
lengrrre so heo 3irneð hit more. for iþet seli song is al þet me  
secheð. leafdi þurh þin erndinge tuðe<sup>5</sup> me mine bone to pine eadi  
sune amen.

I entreat thee  
by all his  
sufferings and  
wrongs,

\*[Fol. 127b.]

<sup>1</sup> = rede.

and by the  
stream of  
blood that  
ran in many  
places.

<sup>2</sup> A word  
erased.

<sup>3</sup> ? soðe.

I entreat thee  
by all his  
sorrows and  
shame.

May his death  
destroy my  
sins

\*[Fol. 128a.]

May his re-  
surrection and  
ascension  
cause me to  
advance  
higher and  
higher.

<sup>5</sup> ? cuðe.

## XXIII.

## A HYMN TO OUR LORD.

Jesus Christ, God's Son, true God and true man, born of the blessed maiden Mary, who is maiden and mother without a mate. I am of all sinful men, as I fear, the most defiled with sin. I pray and beseech thee with inward (true) heart through thy conception in the maiden's body of the Holy Ghost, and through thy birth without breach of her body; and through all that thou taughtest, and sufferedst for sinners upon earth; through thy five wounds and the blessed flood that flowed from them; through the iron nails and the crown of thorns; and through thy pains and shames, and thy precious death on the cross; and through the same cross, hallowed of thy precious limbs, upon which thou meekly outstretchedst thyself; and (through) thy mother's wail and St. John's sorrow when thou unitedst them as son and mother; for pity of thy pains; and through thy blissful arising the third day from death, and through thy honourable ascension into heaven; through the grace and gift of the Holy Ghost, whom thou on Whit Sunday sentest to thy beloved disciples and pouredst out upon those that rightly loved and believed upon thee; and through thy awful coming at Doomsday to judge both quick and dead; and through thy blessed flesh and thy blessed blood hallowed upon the altar; through the virtue of baptism; through all the other sacraments in which Holy Church believes; through thy great kindness and mercy, that is greater than all that is named, except the grace of the Holy Ghost, who is equal with thee and with thy blessed Father, God full of all good;—have mercy upon me, and hear my petitions through the blessed prayers of thy meek mother and St. John the Evangelist, and all thy saints. Forgive me my sins that are dreadful and horrible in thy eyesight. Lord, I view them in great dread of thine awe; behold thou them not, lest

## XXIII.

## [ON LOFSONG OF URE LOUERDE.]

Iesu crist godes sune soð godd *and* soð mon of þe eadie meiden  
 iboren maria. þet is meiden *and* bute make moder. ich of  
 alle sunfulle am on mest ifuled of sunne ase ich drede, ich bidde  
*and* bi-seeche þe wið inwarde heorte þurh þin akennednesse ine  
 meidenes licame of þe holi Goste. *and* þuruh þin iborenesse wið  
 uten brueche of hire bodie þuruh al þet þu tawhtest. *and* þoledest  
 for sunfule in eorðe. þurh þine vif wunden. *and* þe eadie flod  
 þet of ham fledde. þurh ðe irene neiles *and* þe þornene crune.  
*and* þurh þe pinen *and* þe schomen *and* þi deorewurðe deað oðe  
 rode *and* þuruh ðe ilke rode i-halewed of þine deorewurðe  
 limen. ðet þu on hire mildeliche streihtest. *and* þine moderes  
 ream *and* sein i[o]hanes soruwe þo þu somnedest ham ase sune  
*and* moder. uor rewðe of þine pinen *and* þurch þine blisfule  
 ariste þe þridde dai of deaðe. *and* þurh þine wurðful astiunge  
 into heouene. þurh ðe grace *and* þe zeoue of þe holi goste. þet  
 þu on lwite sune dai sendest þine deorewurðe \*deciples. *and*  
 zettdest to þeo þet rith luuieð þe *and* leued. *and* þurh þine  
 eisfule cume a domesdai to demen boðe cwike *and* deade. *and*  
 þurh þine eadi fleseche *and* þine iblescede blode i-sacred oðe  
 weouede. þurh þe milte of fuluht. þurh alle þe oðre sacremens.  
 þet holi chirche ileneð. þurh þine muchele milce *and* merci þet  
 is more þen al þet is inempued wið-ute þe grace of þe oli goste.  
 þet is efne wið þe *and* wið þin eadi feder. Godd of alle godd  
 ful. haue merci of me *and* iher mine bonen. þuruh þe selie  
 bonen of þine milde moder *and* seint iohannes ewangeliste. *and*  
 alle þine halewen. for-ȝif me mine sunnen þet ateliche beoð *and*  
 grisliche i þine eih sihðe. louerd ich i-seo ham wið muchel ugge  
 of þin eic. ne bi-hold þu ham nout leste þu wreoke ham on

Lord Jesus,  
 have mercy  
 upon me, de-  
 filed with sin.

I beseech thee  
 by thy pas-  
 sion, death,  
 resurrection,  
 and ascen-  
 sion ;

by thy gift of  
 the Holy  
 Ghost ;  
 \*[Fol.128b.]

by thy coming  
 at Doomsday ;

by the sacra-  
 ment of thy  
 flesh and  
 blood ;

hear my  
 petitions,  
 through the  
 prayers of thy  
 blessed  
 mother.



thou avenge them upon me in the furiousness of thy wrath. Lord, thy apostle saith thus, "If we condemned ourselves, we should not elsewhere be condemned." Meek merciful God, I judge myself before thee, after thy mercy that is greater than all my sins, as truly as a drop of thy precious blood that thou sheddest on the cross were enough to wash away the filth of all folk. Through the stark streams and the flood that flowed from thy wounds for to heal mankind, cleanse and wash my sinful soul; through thy five wounds opened on the cross, pierced through with nails, and sorrowfully filled up, heal me sore wounded through my five wits with deadly sins, and open them, heavenly king, toward heavenly things, and turn to the world thy precious cross upon which thou outstretchedst thyself. Be my shield and protection in every quarter against the darts of the devil, which he (the traitor) shooteth at me. Let thy passion quench the passion of sins that abideth within me. Let thy pains preserve me from the pains of hell, and let thy precious death keep me from the death that never dieth, so that thy death may mortify the deadly lusts of my body and the laws of my limbs. Let the world be (dead) to me, and me to the world. Through thy arising to life immortal, O Lord, raise me from the death of the soul; and give me life in thee; that I love not this world, but only thee, living Lord, and whatever is good before thee; that I may be dead to the world, and ever live to thee, so that I may say with St. Paul who saith, "I live, not I, but Christ liveth in me." Lord (grant me) thy mercy, since I have climbed so high with this same petition, and yet lie so low, and because earthly losses excite so much displeasure in my heart. Meek God, thy mercy! for hereby I die, who erewhile spake of such things, and (yet) sin deadly. High (exalted) Saviour, God, help me and heal my heart thereof. Dear Lord Jesu Christ, look toward me as I lie thus low and bemoan to thee of things that trouble me now most, next to my sins. High Saviour, bow thyself to me, and incline (thine ear) to my prayers. I have in me neither wisdom nor honour, and am devoid of counsel; I have not wherewith to lead my life in this world, and am helpless. I am in many wise disgusted in mind and heart, sick with sorrow, and have not any one to comfort me. Precious Lord, as thou art the counsellor of the

me iwodschipe of pine wreððe. louerd þin apostel seið þus. 3if  
 we ne forðemden us seoluen ne schulde we nout beon elles hwar  
 for-demed. milde merciable godd ich deme to þe: efter pine  
 milce þet is [mo]re þen al min [nu]el is: ase wis [as]e a drope  
 of pine deorewurðe blode þet tu o rode scheddest were i-nouh  
 to weaschen alle folkes fulðe. þeo sterke stremes *and* þet flod  
 þet fleaw of pine wunden. monenn uor to helen: clense *and*  
 waschs mine sunfule soule *þurh* pine fif wunden iopened o rode.  
 wið neiles uor-driuene *and* seoruhfulliche forðutte. hel me  
 norwunded \**þurh* mine fif wittes wið deadliche sunnen. *and*  
 opene ham heouenliche king touward heouenliche þinges. *and*  
 turn to þe worlde þi wurðfule rode þet þu spreddest þe on. beo  
 mi scheld *and* mi warant on euche half: azein þes feondes flon  
 þet he scheot to me on euche halue þe swike. þi passiuu aewenche  
 þe passiuu of sunnen þet wunieð wið inne me. pine pinen  
 buruwen me from þe pinen of helle. *and* þi dereowurðe<sup>1</sup> deað  
 from þene deað ðet neuer ne deieð. þet ði deað a-deadie þe  
 deaðliche lustes of mine licame. *and* te lawen of mine limen  
 beo ðe world [dead] to me. *and* me to þe worlde. *þurh* pine  
 ariste louerd to liue: bute deaðe. of soule deaðe arer me. *and*  
 3if me lif in ðe. þet ich ipisse worlde ne luue nout bute þe  
 liuinde louerd. *and* hwat so god is uor þe. þet ich to þe  
 world beo dead. *and* euer liue<sup>2</sup> to þe. þet ich muwe siggen  
 wið seinte powel þet seið. ich liue nout ich: auh crist liueð  
 in me. louerd þi merci ase ich ham heie iclumben wið þis ilke  
 bone. þet ligge so lowe. *and* uor eorðliche hren so muche  
 mislicunge hadde in mine heorte. Milde godd þi milce. for  
 herþurh ich deie þet spee er of swuche þinge. *and* deaðliche  
 sunegi. heie helinde godd help me. *and* hel herof mine heorte.  
 leone louerd iesu crist loke toward me ase ich ligge lowe. *and*  
 mone to ðe of þinge ðet me derueð mest nuðe efter mine sunnen.  
 heie helinde \*beih þe to me. *and* buh to mine bonen. Nabbich  
 nowðer in me wisdom ne wurschipe *and* am redleas nab ich  
 [h]waremide le[de]n mi lif i þis[se] worlde *and* am helples. ich  
 hadde on monie wise mislicunge of þonke *and* heorte see of  
 sorwe. *and* nabbe hwoa me froure. Deorewurðe drihten ase

I condemn  
myself before  
thee.

Wash my  
sinful soul in  
the blood of  
thy wounds.

\*[Fol. 129a.]

Be my shield  
against the  
darts of the  
devil.

<sup>1</sup> sic.

Let me be  
dead to the  
world and live  
to thee.

<sup>2</sup> A stroke  
too many in  
MS.

Look towards  
me as I lie  
thus low.

\*[Fol. 129b.]

I am without  
wisdom,  
devoid of  
counsel and  
help.

perplexed, counsel me that am helpless and uncertain what to do, how I ought to conduct myself and live on earth in maidenhood and purity of both soul and body. As thou art help of the helpless, behold, high Lord, how man's help faileth me. Let me receive thy help the more readily, so that I shall trust on thee alone, and confide (in thee) ever without end. Had I done so of yore, I know of a truth it would have been better for me than it is now. For the while that I trusted upon man thou saidst "Hold thee to them," and leftest me wholly ruined by those that I trusted upon, and they have become traitors to me, heavenly Lord, I believe, for my good. I honour and thank thee that thou hast deprived me of them, for thou sawest that trust in them deceived me, and thou desirest that I should hope and trust in thee alone. For to show me how this hope in thee alone shall avail me better than did previously the trust in the others, thou hast deprived me of man's help, for thou wilt give me thine. Blessed be he that thus turneth loss to gain. Truly all my woe on earth shall turn for me into joy if I love God with my true belief. Lord, I believe it, and love and will love thee more, Lord, through this affliction than I did previously in all my weal, for I know assuredly it would have wholly deceived me, if it were not, Lord, for the help of thy grace. Lord, I beseech thee with inward heart to give me neither too much nor too little, for through either many a man oftentimes sinneth ; but grant me that I may truly say with the maiden that saith of thee these words, "My beloved's left arm holdeth up my head," she saith, "and his right arm shall embrace me." Let me be thy beloved, and say as she saith, "Beloved, with thy left arm," that is, with thy worldly gifts, "hold up my head," that I through too much poverty fall not into the filth of sin. And "Beloved, with thy right arm," that is in heaven, with endless blessings, "embrace me," so that whatsoever I shall thenceforth, sweet gentle Lord, pray or desire, I may pray thee that I may receive in obedience, both poverty and wealth, according to thy good pleasure. Though I have not entirely all that I want, nor comest thou to me as soon as I desired it, I do not mistrust thee, but am confident that thou wilt take from me all that may do me harm, and give me, sweet merciful Lord, what is needful for me ; but thou that seest all things abidest thy time. Now

þu ert redlease red. red me þet am helples *and* redles. hu ich  
 sehule leden me *and* liuien on eorðe wið meidhod *and* ine  
 clennesses of soule. *and* of bodie boðe. ase þu ert neodfulles help  
 bi-hold heie louerd hu monnes help trukeð me. þin help beo  
 me þe 3arewere forto þe one ich ehulle trusten *and* hopien euer  
 buten ende. hefdlich 3are so idon me stode betere þen me deð  
 ich hit wot to soðe. uor þeo hwile ðet ich truste uppo mon  
 þu seidest. hold þe to ham *and* lettest me al iwarden wið þeo  
 þet ich truste uppon. *and* heo beoð me itrukede heouenlich  
 louerd. ich i-leue for mine selbðe ich herie þe *and* þonke. þu  
 ham hauest bi-nume me. uor þu iscihe. þet te hope of ham bi-  
 swoc me *and* wult þet ich hopie *and* truste to þe one. for to  
 schewen hu þis hope to þin ones help schal gon me betere ut.  
 þen dude er þe oðres. þu hauest binume me fulst of monne:  
 uor þu wult þin 3eouen me. Ibleseed beo þet þus went hure  
 to bi3eate. sikerliche al mi woa on eorðe schal turnen me to  
 ioie. 3if ich Godd luue mid treowe bileaue. louerd \*ich ilue  
 hit *and* luue *and* wulle luuien þe more louerd þurh þis wondred  
 þen er in al mine weole. uor ich wot to soðe hit wolde habben  
 al bi-swike me. 3if þe help nere louerd of þine grace. lonerd  
 ich bi-seche ðe wið inwarde heorte ne 3if þu me nouðer to  
 muchel ne to lutel. uor þurh eiðer moni mon suneggeð i-lome.  
 auh leue me ðet ich mote soðliche seggen wið ðe meiden þet  
 of þe seið þeors<sup>1</sup> wordes. Mi leofmonnes luft erm halt up min  
 heaued heo seið. *and* his riht erm schal bielupen me abuten.  
 let me beo þi leouemon *and* siggen ase heo seið. leof wið þi  
 luft erm. þet is. wið þine worldliche 3eouen hold up min heaued  
 ðet ich þurh to muche wone ne falle i fulðe of sunne. *and* leof  
 wið þin riht erm. þet is in heuene wið endelease blissen bi-clupe  
 me abuten. al schal beon þet ich wulle þeonne forð swete milde  
 louerd bidde oðer wilni ich bidde ðe ðet ich mote under-uon  
 in obedience boðe wone *and* weole þe ine cwemnesse. þauh ich  
 nabbe nout one al ðet me biheouede ne me ne cume nowt ase  
 sone ase ich wolde. ich ne mishopie þe nout auh am al siker  
 of ðet þu wult binime me ðet me wolde herni don. *and* 3ife me  
 þet me is biheue swete milzfule louerd. auh þu þet alle þing

Let me receive  
thy help.

Man's help  
faileth me.

Blessed be  
thou that  
turnest my  
woe into joy.

\* [Fol. 130a.]

Give me nei-  
ther too much  
nor too little.

<sup>1</sup> sic.

Support me  
with thy right  
arm.

Give me what  
thou deemest  
needful for  
me.

I have lost the comfort of all mankind, I know that thou wilt send me the Holy Ghost to comfort me, and advise me and help me and comfort me, better than all those might in whom I trusted ; for thus saith the Psalmist David in the Psalter, "The world hath forsaken me, and God hath received me." Again he saith elsewhere, "Have thy delight in God, and he will give thee the wishes (prayers) of thy heart ; make known to him the way that is thy desire, and he will accomplish it for thee." Thou knowest what I desire, omnipotent God, but of that as of all else, ever let thy will be done, for thou wilt soon enough do better by me than I may desire ; and I obediently beseech thee, Lord, not through anything I deserve from thee, but through this hope and in this trust in thy great mercy, that thou be now my counsel, my help, and my grace. But I will love thee now, before them that I previously loved, trusted, and hoped in. For now I understand how true it is what St. Austin saith in his book, "Unhappy is he that is with love tied to any earthly thing, for ever is that sweet dearly bought with a twofold of bitter ; but we understand it not ere that we lose it, and it turns to loss, from which quarter so ever it befalleth, before we least expect it."

Sweet soft Jesus, blessed be those that love thee and thy sure sweetness, that no one may lose except he lose faith in thy love. But without thy gifts none may love thee. With the flame, Lord, of the Holy Ghost, that is, thy Father's love and thine, inflame my heart and consume all that is hurtful therein, and feed it so forwardly that it may enlumine me ever in thy belief and in thy love, the longer the more so. My love and my counsel, all my help and my comfort, help me ever for good and turn me from sin, and give me will and might and wisdom to forsake every sin, and to work well. Precious Lord, thou owest not any man anything for his deserts, but doest all that thou doest through thy sweet grace, wholly unmerited by us. Make known in me what mercy is, and that grace is (of thy) grace and not of our works. But do so by me that my foes may grin (with rage), and good men may rejoice and bless thy name and honour it without end. What



isihst *ȝet* abidest his time. Nu ich habbe uorloren al moneunne  
froure ich wot \**pet* þu wult senden me þene holi gost to elnen  
me. *and* reden me *and* helpen me *and* froure me betere þen alle  
þeo ilke muhten *pet* ich on truste. uor þus seið þe salmwruhte  
dauð iþe sawter. þe world haueð for-let me. *and* godd haweð  
underfo me. eft elles hwar he seið. haue þi lieung ine godd *and*  
he wule ȝiuen þe bonen of þine heorte. vnwrih him þene wei *pet*  
is þi wilnunge. *and* he wule hit forðen. þu wost hwat ich wilni  
al weldinde Godd. auh of *pet* ase of helles hwat! iwurðe þi  
wille euer. uor þu wult inouhreðe don betere bi me þen is *pet*  
ich wilni. *and* ich buhsumliche bi-seche þe louerd þuruh non of-  
seruunge to ðe. auh þurh þis hope. *and* i þis trust to þine  
muchele milce. *ȝet* þu beo mi red nu. Min help *and* min elne.  
auh þe ich chulle huinen nu. uor ham *pet* ich huuede er *and*  
truste to *and* hopede. uor nu ich understonde hu soð hit is  
*ȝet* seint austin seið in his boc. uniseli is *ȝet* is wið hwe to  
eni eorðlich þing iteied. uor euer bið *ȝet* swete! aboutht mid  
twofold of bittre. auh me ne hit underȝit nout er þen me hit  
leose. *and* to lure hit bi-kumeð of hwuche half so hit falleð!  
er me lest wene.

I have lost the  
comfort of all  
mankind.

\* [Fol. 130b.]

Let my de-  
light be in  
thee.

Unhappy is  
he that is  
attached to  
earthly things.

**S**wete softe iesu iseli beoð *ȝet* þe huueð *and* þine siker swet-  
nesse. *pet* no mon ne mai leosen bute he þe trenlac of  
þine luue lete auh wið-uten þine ȝeoue ne mai þe non \*luuinen.  
wið þe lai louerd of þe holigost. *pet* is þi feder luue *and* þin.  
tend mine heorte *and* uorbern al þat is baluful. þer inne *and*  
fed hit so forðward. *pet* hit ontende me euere ipine bileaue  
*and* in þine luue. so lengre so more. Mi luue *and* mi red al  
min help *and* mi froure fulst me euer to gode *and* cher me  
from sunne. *and* ȝif me wil *and* mihte *and* wit to leten euch  
nuel *and* wel norto wurchen. deorwurðe drithen þu nowest none  
mon nowitht þurh his of-seruunge auh dest us al *pet* þu dest  
þurh þine swete grace al unofserued cuið in me hwat is milce  
*and* *pet* grace is grace nout hure werkes auh do so bi me.  
*pet* mine fon grennen *and* gode gladien *and* blescien þine nome.  
*and* herien buten hende. hwat mote ich milzfule louerd to þe

\* [Fol. 131a.]

Enkindle  
within me the  
love of thee.

Enlighten me  
ever with thy  
belief.

We deserve  
nothing at  
thy hands.

All we have  
is of thy grace.



may I do, merciful Lord, for thee that mayest and canst do all things and wilt well do, and desirest all that is good? All that is needful for me (give me), I beseech thee, God full of all good, with these three words, as thou mayest (art able) and canst and wilt. Merciful Lord, have mercy upon me and upon all Christian men. Amen.

### THE MINOR CREED.

**I** believe in God the Father Almighty, Creator of heaven and earth : and in Jesus Christ his only Son our Lord, who was conceived through the Holy Ghost, and born of the maiden Mary, suffered under Pontius Pilate, was nailed on the cross, was dead and buried, and he lighted into hell ; and the third day he arose from death to life, and ascended into heaven, where he sits on the right hand of God the Father Almighty ; thence he will come to judge the quick and the dead. I believe in the Holy Ghost, and in the holy church, and the communion of saints, the forgiveness of sins, the resurrection of the flesh, and eternal life after death. Amen.

## XXIV.

### ON THE BEGINNING OF CREATION.

**O**ur Lord Almighty God desires and commands us that we love him and think of him and speak of him, not for his benefit, but our advantage and help ; for to him may all creatures say, *Bonorum meorum non indiges*—Of my goods, O Lord, thou standest in no need. But as Saint Austin saith, “If no man thought of God, none would speak of him ; if none spake of him, none would love him ; if none loved him, none would come to him, nor would partieipate of his bliss, nor of his greatness.” It is most sweet to speak of him. Think ye that each word of him is sweet as if a honey-drop fell upon your hearts. He is heaven’s light and earth’s brightness, the welkin’s gleam, and gemstone (jewel) of all creation ; bliss of angels, and joy and hope of mankind ; the strength of the righteous and solace of the needy. He is the beginning of all things, and both beginning and end ; he is beginning for he was ever ; he is end without any ending ; he is King of all kings, and

*þet* alle þing meiht. *and* const. *and* wult wel don. *and* wult al  
*þet* god is. al *þet* me euer is neod. ich biseche þe godd of alle  
 godd ful wið þeos þreo wordes. ase þu meiht. *and* const. *and*  
 wult. Milzfulc louerd haue merci of me *and* of alle cristene  
 men. *amen*.

Have mercy  
 upon me and  
 all Christian  
 men.

## [þE LESSE CREDE].

**I**ch bileue on god feder al-miht. schuppare of heouene *and*  
 of eorðe. *and* on iesu crist his onlepi sune ure louerd.  
*þet* was ikenned þurh ðe holi goste. iboren was of ðe meidene  
 marie. ipined was under ponce pilate. ineiled was oðe rode.  
 dead *and* iburied. he lihto<sup>1</sup> in to helle. ðe þridde dei he a-ros  
 from deaðe to liue. *and* steih in to heouene. þer he sit o godes  
 rithond feder al-miht. þonene he kumeð to demen ðe quike *and*  
 ðe deade. Ibileue on \*ðe holi goste. *and* on holi chirche.  
 inennesse of haluwen. uorþiuennesse of sunnen. uleches up ariste  
 cche lif efter deað! *amen*.

I believe in  
 God the  
 Father,  
 Creator of  
 heaven and  
 earth;  
 in Jesus  
 Christ his  
 only son our  
 Lord;  
<sup>1</sup> read lihte.

in the Holy  
 Ghost; in the  
 holy Catholice  
 church, &c  
 \* [Pol. 131b.]

## XXIV.

## [DE INITIO CREATURE.\*]

\*[Pol. 54.]

**V**re hlaford almihtig god wile *and* ús hót. þat we hīne lufie.  
*and* óf him smáze *and* spece. naht him tó méde ac hús to  
 fremme *and* to fultúme. fór. him seíze alle hiscéfte. *Bonorum*  
*meorum non* [in]-digeð. hlaford to mine góde ne benícedeð þe. Ac  
 alswo *sanctus augustinus* cweð. Gif non mán ne þoht óf Góde.  
 non ne spece of him. Gif non óf him ne spece non hīne ne  
 lufede. Gif non hīne ne lufede. non to him ne cóme. ne delende  
 nére óf his eádlínesse. nóf his merhðe. Hit is wel swete of him  
 tó spécene. þenche 3ie ælc word of him swete. al swá án huni  
 t̃ar felle upe 3iure híerte. Héo is hefone liht. *and* eorðe briht-  
 nesse. loftes leom. *and* all hiseeft 3imston. anglene blisse. *and*  
 mancénne hiht *and* hope. richtwisen strenhepe. *and* nīedfulle  
 fróuer. Heo his ælra þinga angin. *and* hordfruma *and* ænde.  
 he his órd fór he wes efre. he is ænde buton ælcere 3iendunze.

God bids us  
 love, think,  
 and speak of  
 him.

The words of  
 St. Austin.

Each word of  
 God is sweet.

God is the  
 beginning of  
 all things.

Lord of all lords. He holdeth with his might heaven and earth and all creatures without toil. No creature may perfectly comprehend nor understand concerning God. He formed his creatures when he would. Through his Wisdom (the Son) he wrought all things, and through his Will (Holy Ghost) he endowed them all with life. This Trinity is one God, that is, the Father and his Wisdom (of himself ever begotten) and the Will of them both, that is, the Holy Ghost, that proceedeth of the Father and of the Son alike. He created ten hosts (or states) or companies of angels, that is *angeli* (messengers), *archangeli* (high messengers), *throni* (thrones), *dominationes* (lordships), *principatus* (chiefs), *potestates* (spirits of powers), *virtutes* (mighty spirits), *cherubim* (fulness of knowledge), *seraphim* (burning or inflaming). Wherefore they are thus named shall be told in another place. Here are nine orders (or states) or hosts of angels. They have no bodies, but they are all spirits, very strong and mighty and of great beauty, formed for the praise and honour of their Creator. The tenth order revolted and became evil (or as many as might have completed the number of the tenth host). God created them all good and let them have their own choice (discretion) to choose whether they would love their Creator or renounce him. Now the elder (chief) of the tenth order was beautifully formed, so that he was called "Light-bearing" (Lucifer). Then began he to be moody (grow proud) for the fairness that he had, and said in his heart that he would and easily might be equal to his Creator, and sit in the north part of the kingdom of heaven, and have power and dominion against God Almighty. Then he confirmed this counsel (resolve) with the order over which he presided, and they all were obedient to this resolve. When they all had determined upon this plan amongst themselves, then came God's wrath upon them all, and they all lost that fair hue (form) in which they were created, and became loathsome devils; and very rightly it so befell them when they would with pride be better than they were created, and their elder (chief) said that he might be equal to God Almighty. Then became he and all his companions more perverse and worse than any other creatures; and whilst that he meditated how he might share dominion with God, the Almighty Creator was preparing hell-torment for him and his fellows, and drove them all out of the mirth (joy) of heaven's kingdom and caused them to

heo is alra kingene king. *and* alra hlaforðen hlaforð. he hālt mid his mihte hefene *and* eorðe. *and* alle Ʒescefte buton Ʒe-swince. Ne mēƷ nan iscefte fulfremedlice smeāƷan ne under- stonden ēmbe god. heo Ʒescop Ʒesceafte þaða he wólde. þurh his wisdom (se sune) heo Ʒeworhte alle þing. *and* þurh his wille (ali gast.) he hi alle Ʒeliffeste. þeos þrimnis is an gód. þat is sē fader. *and* his wisdom. of him selfe efre acenned. *and* hare beire wille þat is sē hali gast. he gēð of þe fader *and* of þe sune Ʒelice. He Ʒescóp tȳen engle werod. (oðer hād.) oðer hapes. þat beoð. angeli (bóden.) archangeli. (hahboden.) Troni. (primsetles.) *Domina- tiones.* hlafordscipe. *Principatus* alderscipen. *Potestates.* an- wealda gastes. *Uirtutes.* mihti gastes. *Cherubim.* Ʒefildnesse of ýwitte. *Seraphim* birinde oðer anhelend. for wan hi beoð þuss iewéðe me seel sigge, an oðre stowe. Her beoð nizen anglen hapes. [oðer had.] oðer werod. Hi nabbeð nenne lichama. ac hi bæð alle gastes. swiðe strange *and* mihti an mucele feirnesse isceapen to lofe *and* to wurhmihte hare sceoppinde. þat teonðe werod abreað. *and* awende ón ýfele oðer al swa fele þe me mihte þat tioðe hape fullellen. Gód Ʒescop alle gode. *and* lét hi hi habben áƷen clūre. to cliesen Ʒief [h]y wolden hare sceappinde lufie. oðer hine ferleten. Þa wes þes tȳendes hapes alder swiþe feir isceapen. swa þat heo was Ʒehoten leoht berinde. Þa be-gan hē to modienne fer þere feirnesse. þe héo hafde. *and* cweð an his hēto. þat he wolde *and* eaðe mihte bien his sceoppende Ʒelic. *and* sitte án norðdele hefene riches. *and* habbe anwealda *and* riche anƷen godelmichti þa ýfesten[d]e [he] þisne red. wið þan hape þe [he] bewiste. *and* hi alle to rede gebuƷon. Þa þe li<sup>1</sup> alle hafeden þisne réð betwuxe ham Ʒefestnod. þa be-com godes grama ofer ham alle. *and* hi alle wurðon \*awende of þan fēƷre híwe þe hi anƷescapen were to loðlice deóflen. *and* swiðe richtlice ham swá bēlamp. Þáðe hi wolde mid modinesse beón betere þonne he Ʒesceapen wére. *and* cweð háre alder þat he mihte beón þam ælmihti gód Ʒelic. þa warð he *and* halle his iferen foreuðran *and* wursan þanne ænig oðer Ʒesceafte. *And* þa wile þe he sméade hu he mihte delen rice wið gód. þa wile Ʒeareode-se almihti sceappende him *and* his iferen helle wite. *and* hi alle adrefde of heofan rices

He is the king of all kings.

The Trinity is one God.

God created ten orders of angels.

Nine are good spirits.

The tenth rebelled against God.

Their leader Lucifer wanted to be equal to God.

<sup>1</sup> ? hi.

God's wrath came upon them,

\* [Fol. 54b.]

and they became loathsome devils,

and were driven out of heaven,

fall into the eternal fire that was prepared for them for their pride. Then forthwith the nine hosts (or orders) that were left, bowed to their Creator with all humility, and resigned their purpose to his will. Then strengthened the Almighty God the nine orders (hosts or states) of angels and established them so that they never afterwards might be able, nor desire, to depart from his will. Neither may they nor desire they to perpetrate any sin, but ever they are [meditating] about this alone—how they may obey and please God. So might also the others have done that there fell, if they had been willing; for God had created them great angels, and let them have their own will, and would never have inclined nor forced them to that evil counsel, neither to think nor to act wrongly. Then would God supply and make good the loss that had been suffered in the heavenly host (or state), and said that he would create man out of earth, so that the earthly man should prosper and obtain by humility the abode in heaven which the devil lost through his pride. And God wrought a man of loam (earth) and blew spirit into him, and endowed him with life, and he then became man formed in soul and in body, and God gave him the name of Adam, and he was for some time alone. God then brought him into Paradise and there lodged him and said to him: “Of all the things that are in Paradise thou mayest enjoy, and they are all given unto thee, except one tree that standeth in the midst of Paradise. Touch thou not this tree’s fruit, for thou shalt become deathly (mortal) if thou eatest this tree’s fruit.” Why would God, who such other great things assigned him, forbid him such a small thing? In order to make him understand that he was his Lord, and that he should be obedient to him, and observe his behests; as if he should say to him, ‘Forego thou the fruit of one tree and with this easy obedience thou shalt obtain the mirth of heaven’s kingdom, and the place from which the devil fell through disobedience. If thou breakest this little behest thou shalt perish by death.’ And then was Adam so wise that God brought unto him neat and deer-kind and fowl-kind, when he had made them, and Adam gave them all names. Then spake God: “It is not meet that this man be alone and have no helper; but let us make him a companion for his help and comfort.” And God then caused



mirh̃ðe. *and* lét befallen on þat éce fer þe ham ʒéarcod wás fer háre préde. Ða sona þe nigon werod [oðe hapes]. þe þer to lafon wére. búgon to hare seýppende. mid ælra ædmodnisse. *and* betéhton hare réd to his wille. Ða ʒefestnéde se ælmihti gód þa nigen ángle wærod [heapes. had.]. *and* ʒestepelfaste swa þat hi nefre ne milten ne noldan siððan. fram his wille ʒebugon. né hi múʒen ne hi nélleð nane sýnne ʒewércon. Ac hi efre beoð ýmbe þat án hu hi mugon gód hihersamian *and* him ʒeewemen. Swá michte æac þe oðre þe þer fellon dón ʒéf hi wolden. forði ðe gód lí ʒéworhte to meren anglen. *and* lét ham hábba agénne éire. *and* hi nefre ne bíde nane níede to þan ýfele réde. ne ýfel tó þence. né tó ðonne. Ða wolde god ʒefýllan *and* ʒeínnian þone lére þe forloren was. of þan hefenlice werode [vel hade.] *and* cweð þat he wolde wércan man of eórðan þat he eórðlice man seeolde ʒeðeon. *and* ʒeármian mid admodnisse. þ¹ wuniunge ón hefen rice. þe se deofel forwo[r]hte mid modinesse. *And* god þa ʒeworhte ænne man óf láme. *and* him on bleów gást. *and* hine ʒelífeste. *and* he wárð þá man ʒesceapen ón sáwle. *and* on lichame *and* god him sette nama. adam. *and* he wes tó sume wíle anstándende. Gód þa hine brohte into paradís. *and* hine ʒelógode *and* him to cweð. Ælra þara þinge þe on paradís beoð þu most brúce. *and* alle hi beoð þe betéhte. buton áne treówe þe stent on midden paradís. ne hrépe þu þes trówes westm. for þan þu wurst deaðlic. ʒéf þu þes trowes westm ʒéétst. Hwí wolde god swá lites þinges him forwerne. þe him swa mýeel oðer þing betohte? fórté don him understouden. þat he his hlaforð was. *and* þat he seeolde to him bugon *and* his ʒehése healde. Al se he to him cweðe. forgáng þu ones treówes westm. *and* mid þare æðelice hýrsumnesse. þu ʒearnest hefen rices merh̃ðe. *and* þane stéde þe se deofel of háfel? þurh uniheršanasse. Gif þu þanne þis litle bebód to breest. þu seealt deaðe sweltan. *And* þa was adam swa wís. þat god ʒeledde to him niátenu. *and* deorcén. *and* fugel eýn. þaða he ʒeseepen hafede. *and* adam ham alle námen ʒeseep. Ða cweð gód. Nis hit náht ʒedanfenlic. þat þes man ane beo. *and* nab[be] nemne fultume. æc uton wircan him ʒemace him to fultume *and* to froure². *And* go[d] þa ʒeswefede þat

and felt into hell.

The nine orders were strengthened so that they could neither commit or desire to commit sin.

God made good the loss of the tenth order by the creation of man,

1? þe or þa.

whom he created out of earth,

and called him Adam.

He forbade him to eat of the tree in the middle of Paradise.

Death was to be the penalty if he broke the command.

God said it is not meet for man to be alone,

² *As it is written above in the MS.*



Adam to fall asleep ; and when he slept he took a rib from his side, and made of that rib a woman ; and Adam named her Eva, that is, life, because she is mother of all living. All creatures God created and made in six days, and on the seventh day he ended his work, and then ceased and hallowed that day. All things God wrought through his word. But when he created man he said not, Let there be man, as of other creatures, but he said, "Let us make man in our likeness," and he then wrought man with his hands, and breathed into him a soul, wherefore man is better, if he does what is good, than other creatures, except angels ; for they all come to nothing (perish), and man is eternal in one part, that is, in his soul. The body is mortal through Adam's guilt, but nevertheless God will raise again the body to eternal things at doomsday. When the devil perceived that Adam and Eve were so created that they should obtain, through humility and obedience, the abode in heaven from which he fell for his pride, then took he much anger and envy towards man, and considered how he might ruin them. He afterwards came in an adder's form to the two men (persons)—first to the wife, and thus said unto her : "Why has God forbidden you this tree's fruit which stands in midst of Paradise?" Then said the woman, "God has forbidden us the fruit of this tree and said that we should die if we tasted of it." Then spake the devil, "It is not so, but God knows well enough that if ye eat of the tree then shall your eyes be opened, and ye shall know good and evil, and be like angels. They were not created blind, but God created them so innocent that they knew nothing of evil, neither in sight nor in speech nor in works." Then became the woman beguiled through the devil's lore, and took of the fruit of the tree and ate, and gave her husband and he ate. Then both became mortal and knew both good and evil, and they were then naked and ashamed thereat. Then came God and asked who broke his behest, and drove them out of Paradise and said : "Because thou, man, wast obedient to thy wife's words more than to mine, thou shalt with toil earn thy meat ; and the earth is accursed through thy works and shall yield thee thorns and brambles. Thou art taken from earth and thou shalt turn to earth. Thou art dust

*adam. and þa ðe he slep. þa ȝename he ribb of his sidan. and ȝeworhte of þane ribbe ana wifman. and adam hi nemmede. eua. þat his lif. for þa ðe hi is ælra libbinde moder. Ælla ȝescefte god ȝesceop and hiworhte on sýx dāgum. \*and on þa ðe seofeðan dēȝ he ȝeendode his wurc. and ȝesweac þá. and þane deȝ halgode. Ealle þing ȝeworhte god þurh his worda. ac þa ða ȝeworhte man. he ne cweð naht ȝewurðe man. alse of oðere sceafte. ac he cweð. Uton ȝewurcan man to ure anlienesse. and he worhte þa þane man mid his handen. and him anbléow sáwle. forði is se man betere ȝéf he gód ȝeðihð þanne oðre ȝesceafte buton englen. for þan þe hi alle ȝewrðeð to nachte. and se man is ēce on ane dele. þat his an þer sáwle. Se lichame is deadlic þurh adames gylt ac þeahweðe[r] god arerð eft þane licame to écene þingum adomes dēȝ. Þa onȝeat se deofel þat adam and eua weron toði ȝesceapene. þat hi sceoldan mid edmodnisse and mid hersamnisse ȝearnie þa wunianȝe on hefe rice þe hé of aféol. for his upahefdenesse. Þa nam hé mulcene grámen and ándan toðan mannum. and smeade hu he hi fordon mihte. he com þa anédren híwe toðam twám mannum. crést toðan wífe. and hir to cweð. Hwī for-bead ȝéu god þes trówes westm. þe stent on midden paradis? Þa cweð þat wif. God hus for-bead þes trówes westm. and cweð. þat wé sceoldon deað swelten. ȝif. we his abirizdon. Þa cweð se deofel. Nis hit naht swa. ac god wot ȝenoh ȝéare ȝif ȝé of <sup>1</sup> þan treówe ætét. þanne beoð ȝiure eágen ȝeopened. and inugon ȝecnówen eíȝðer god and euyl. and beoð englen ȝélice. Nare hío blinde ȝesceapene. ac god hi ȝesceop swa bilewitte þat hi ne cuðan nan þing eueles. naðor ne an isélhðe. ne on sprece. ne on weorce. Warþ þa þat wif for-spannen þurh þe deoffles lare. and ȝenam of þes trówes westm. and æát. and ȝiáf hire were and he æt. Þa weran boðe deadlice. and cuðon ȝéider god and yfel. and hi þer <sup>2</sup> þa nacode. and ham þas scamede. Þa com gód and ácsode. þe his bebod to bréce. and adrefde hi út of paradis. and cweð. for þan þe were hihersam. þines [? wifes] wordum mor ðan mine. þu scealt mid ærfeðnesse þe metes tylian. and se eorðe his awirigd on þine weorcum. sýlðe þornes and brembles. þu éart of eorðe ȝenumc. and þu awénst to eorðe. þu æart dust. and þu*

so he created  
Eve out of  
Adam's ribs.

\* [Fol. 55a.]

God made  
man in his  
own likeness.

The body is  
mortal  
through  
Adam's sin.

Satan plots  
how he may  
ruin Adam  
and Eve.

He persuades  
Eve to eat of  
the forbidden  
fruit.

<sup>1</sup> MS. os.

<sup>2</sup> or wer.

God drives  
them out of  
Paradise.

and thou shalt turn to dust." God made them garments of skins and they were clothed with the skins. Adam was then dwelling in this life in toil; and he and his wife then begat children, both sons and daughters; and he lived nine hundred and thirty years, and afterwards died, as was foretold, on account of his guilt; and his soul went to hell. Then soon there sprang up a great people, and very many led evil lives and displeased God with various crimes, and chiefly with fornication. Then waxed God so wroth through man's crime that he said that it repented him that he had ever created mankind. At that time, however, there was a righteous man before God whose name was Noah. Then said God to him, "I will destroy all mankind with water for their sins, but I will hold (preserve) thee in safety, both thy wife and thy three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japhet, and their three wives, because thou art righteous and acceptable to me (unto me). Make thee now an ark, three hundred fathoms long and fifty fathoms wide and thirty fathoms high. Roof it all, and daub all the seams with tar, and go afterwards therein with thy family. I shall gather unto thee of deer-kind (animals) and of fowl-kind by pairs (mates together), that they may afterwards multiply. I will send a flood over all the earth." He did as God commanded him, and God locked them within the ark and sent down a rain from heaven forty days together, and opened therewith also all well-springs and water-springs of the great deep. The flood then increased and bore up the ark, and it passed above all the hills. Then was every living thing drowned, except those within the ark, by whom was again established all the earth. Then God promised that he would never again destroy all mankind with water, and said to Noah and to his sons, "I will set my covenant betwixt me and you (as a token) of this promise, that when I arch over heaven with clouds, then shall my rainbow appear in the firmament, and I shall be mindful of my covenant that I will not henceforth drown men with water." Noah lived, in all his life, nine hundred and fifty years, and he then died. For some time after the flood God's awe (fear of God) was upon mankind and there was one language amongst them all. Then said they betwixt themselves that they would make a city and a tower (steeple) within the city so high that its

awénst to duste. God ham 3eworhta þa reāf of fellan *and* hi were mid þan fellen 3escridde. Adam þa wes wniende on þeses life mid 3eswince. *and* heo *and* his wif þa bearn 3estriende. 3edēir sunen *and* dochtren. *and* he lefede nigon hundred 3ēre. *and* xxx<sup>ti</sup>. *and* siððan swealt. swa swa him ær be-haton wes forðam gylte. *and* his sǣwle 3īwēnde to helle. Þa wearð þa redlice micel mennisc 3ewexon. *and* wēre swiðe manēge on ýfele awende. *and* 3egremeden god mid mistlicum leahtrum. *and* swiðost mid for-lizere. Þo warð god toðan swiðe 3egremed þurh manna mandede þat he cweð þat him of-þuhte þat hē efre mancinn 3esceop. þa wes hweðere an man richwis et-foran gode. þe wes Nōe 3ehaten. þa cweð god to him. ic wille fordon al mancinn mid wātere for hare sinnum. ac ic wille halden þe ennen *and* ti wif. *and* pine þreo sunes. sem. cham. iafet. *and* hare þreo wif. for þan þe þu art richwis *and* me 3eeweme. Wrec þe nu an arc. þreo hund fedme lang. *and* fifti fedme wid. *and* þritti fedme heah. Géref hit all. *and* iclem hall þ[e] seames mid tirwan. *and* ga inn seðen mid pine hīwūn. \*Ic 3egāderi in-toðe of dierecynne. *and* of fugel cynne simle gemācan. þat hi eft to fōstre bien. Ic wille senden flod ofer ālne middennard. Hē dede þa swa him god behead. *and* god be-leāc hi binnan þan arce. *and* asende rēn of heofene. xl. dāgas to-gēdere. *and* 3eopenede þer to 3ēanes alle well-springes. *and* wēter þēotan of þer mycele nīwelnisse. Þat flod wex þa. *and* aber up þan arc. *and* hit ofer-stah ælle duna. Wearð þa ēlc þinz cuces adrenct. buton þa þe binnon þane arce were. Of þan wearð eft 3estapeled eall middenard. Þa be-heot god þat he nolde nefre eft. al mancyn mid water acwellan. *and* cweð to nōe. *and* to his sunum. Ic wille settan mi wed betwuxe me. *and* eow. to þisan behate. þat is. Þanne ic ofe[r]-tēo hefenes mid wlene. þanne bið atāwed min rēn bōge. betwuxe þan folce [vel wlene]. þanne beo ic 3emenēzed mines weddes. þat ic nelle henon forð mancyn. mid watere adrenche. Noe lefede on all his life nigon hund 3eare. *and* fifti. *and* he þa forðferde. Þa wes þa sume hwille godes 3ēie. on 3emancynne. efter þa flode. *and* wes on 3ereard an ham āllen. Þa cweðen hi betwxe ham þat hi woldan weren ane burch. *and* enne stepel binnan para birie.

After Adam died his soul went into hell.

The world waxed wicked,

and it repented God that he had made man.

God tells Noah that he will destroy the whole world.

\* [Fol. 55b.]

Noah makes an ark.

The flood comes and drowns all flesh.

The covenant of the rainbow.

After Noah's death, for awhile men feared God.

roof (top) should reach to heaven, and they began to work. Then came God thereto when they were most busily at work and gave each man that was there a separate language, and none of them knew what the other said; and they then ceased their building and were scattered over all the earth. Afterwards mankind became deceived through the devil and turned aside from belief in God, so that they wrought for themselves likenesses, one of gold, another of silver, a third of stone, a fourth of wood, and gave them names and offered them gifts (sacrifice); and the devil came into these forms and dwelt therein and spake to men, as though they were gods, and deceived men. Then this error spread abroad over all the earth, and the true Creator, who alone is God, was despised and dishonoured. There was (at this time), nevertheless, a tribe which never bowed down to a devil-idol, but ever honoured the true God. It sprang from Noah's eldest son, who was called Shem, and his son was called Arphaxad, and his son was Sala; and Sala begat a son called Heber (of whom sprang the Hebrew folk whom God loved), and from this tribe (kin) came all the patriarchs (high fathers) and prophets who spake of Christ's coming to this life, that towards the end of this world he would become man for our redemption—he who was ever God with the heavenly Father. And to this folk God gave and established laws, and led them dry-footed over the sea, and fed them forty winters with heavenly loaf (bread), and wrought many wonders among the folk, because from this race he would choose him a mother. Then at last, when the time came which God foreshowed, he sent his angel to a maid named Mary. Then came the angel unto her and greeted her with God's words, and showed her that God's Son should be born of her without intercourse of man, and she believed then his words and became with child. When her time came, she brought forth [a child] and yet remained a maiden. The Child is twice begotten: he is begotten of the Father in heaven without any mother; and again, when he became man, when he was born of a pure maiden, without any earthly father. God the Father wrought all mankind and all creatures through the Son, and afterwards when we were lost, he sent that same Son for our redemption. He was born without sin, and his life was wholly without sin. He performed, however, no wonder (miracle) openly until he was thirty winters in his



swa háhene *þat* his rof ástiȝe up to hefenne. *and* begunnon *þa* to woreen. *þa* com god *þer* to. *þa* *þa* hi swiðest worhtan. *and* ȝiáf ælce man *þe* *þer* was sunderlice sprece. *and* har non neste wat oðer eweð. *and* hi *þa* iswicon hare timbringe. *and* tó-ferden ofer alne middenarde. *þa* siððan wearð mancyynn. þurh deofol beswice. *and* awendan fram godes ȝelafen. swa *þat* hi worhtan ham anlicnessen sum of golde sum of selfre. of stane. of<sup>1</sup> tréwe. *and* sceope ham naman. *and* lác offreden. *and* eom se deofel to har anlicnesse *and* *þer* an wnode *and* to mannen sprece swice hi godes wére. *and* beswicene mennise. *þa* asprang þis ȝedwéld ofer all middenard. *and* was se soðe sceppende se *þe* ane is god forsewen *and* ȝeunwurðed. *þa* wes hweðere an meȝie cȝynn *þe* nefer ne abealh to nane deofel ȝyld. æ efer wurðade þane soðne god. Se asprang of nōés ȝlste sune *þe* wes ȝehotan sem. *and* his sune hete arfaxat. *and* his sune sale. *and* þes sale ȝestrienede enne sune *þe* wes ȝehaten heber. of þan asprang *þat* eberisce fole. *þe* god lufede. *and* of þa cȝynn come alle *þe* heahfederes. *and* witȝen. þaðe cyddon Christes to-cyme to þis life. *þat* heo wolde man beon for nean en ende pissere wuold. for ure alysendnisse. se *þe* efre wes god mid þan hefonlice feder. *and* þes cenne god sælde *and* ȝesette æ [vel laga]. *and* he hi ledde ofer sé mid dreie fote. *and* he hi afedde feortiȝ wintre mid hefenlice hlafe. *and* fele wundre onðam folce ȝeworhte. fer þan *þe* he wolde of þise cȝynne him moder ȝeceosen. *þa* et nextan *þa* se time cōm *þe* god fore-seewede. *þa* sende he his ængel to áne mede *þe* was Maria ȝeháten. *þa* com se ængel to hire *and* ȝégrette hi mid godes wordon. *and* eydde hyre. *þat* godes sune sceolde beon acenned of hire. buton weres ȝemánan. *and* hi *þa* ȝelifd his wordum *and* warð mid cyldre. þaða hire time com hi acennede *and* þurh-wúnedo meden. *þat* eild his twies acenned. he is acenned of *þe* feder on hefene buton elcer moder. *and* eft þaðe he man ȝéwarð. *þa* was he acenned of *þe* clene meidene buton elce eorðlice federe. God fader ȝeworhte mancīn. *and* ælle ȝesceafte þurh þane sune. *and* eft þaðe we forwyrhte were *þa* sende þan ilee sune to ure alisendnesse. heó was buton senne acenned. *and* his lif was all buton synne. Næ worhte he \*þah nane wndre openlice. er þan

The building of Babel and the confusion of tongues.

The origin of idolatry.

<sup>1</sup> MS. os.

The race of Seth worshipped the true God.

The Hebrews sprang from Seth.

God gave them laws, and led them dry-footed over the Red Sea.

Of this people came the Saviour, God's Son.

He was born of a pure maiden, and his whole life was sinless.

He worked miracles,

\* [Fol. 56a.]



humanity. Then afterwards he chose him disciples, first twelve (whom we call apostles, that is, messengers), and subsequently two-and-seventy that are called disciples (learning-knights). Then performed he many miracles, that men might believe he was the Son of God. He turned water into wine, and passed dry-footed over the sea ; he calmed the winds by his behests, and he gave sight to blind men, right gait to the halt and lame, and smoothness to lepers and health to their bodies. To the dumb he gave speech and to the deaf hearing ; to the devil-sick (those possessed with devils) and mad he gave sense and drove out the devils, he healed all sickness, and dead men he raised from their tombs to life. He taught the folk to whom he came with great wisdom, and said that no man could be saved unless he rightly believed in God, were baptized, and adorned his belief with good works. He shunned every sin and all leasing, and taught righteousness and truth. Then the Jewish folk took offence at his doctrine (lore) and plotted how they might put him to death. Then became one of Christ's twelve attendants, who was called Judas, a traitor through the devil's instigation ; he went to the Jews and plotted with them how he might betray Christ to them. Though all men were gathered together, they might not destroy him, if he himself did not will it. Wherefore he came to us because he desired to suffer death for us and with his own death to deliver all mankind that believed on him from hell-torment. Christ then permitted that the blood-thirsty men should take him and bind, and, hung on a cross, put him to death. Lo (then) two believing (faithful) men honourably entombed him, and Christ in the meanwhile descended into hell and subdued the devil and took from him Adam and Eve and that portion of their offspring that erewhile pleased him, and he arose from the dead with this great host on the third day of his passion. He came then to his apostles and comforted them, and for the space of forty days dwelt with them, and the same lore that he erewhile had taught them he afterwards repeated, and commanded them to go over all the earth preaching baptism and true belief. The Lord then, on the fortieth day of his resurrection, ascended to heaven before the sight of them all with the same body in which he had suffered, and

þe he was þritti wintre an þara mennisnisse. þa seððen aceas he him leorninchnihtes. erest twelf. þa we hatað apostles. þat bið erndracene. *And siððan twa and sefentiȝe. þa beoð ȝenammed. discipuli. leorninchnihtes. Þa werete he fele wundra. þat men mihten ȝelefen. þat he was godes bearn. He awende water to uine. and éode ofer sê mid drôie fotum. and hê ȝestilde windes mid his hêsne. and he forȝiaf blinde manne ȝesechðe. and halten and lamen richte gang. and hreoffin smiðnesse. and hêle hare lichame. dumben he forgeaf. getoennisse. and deafum hercuunge. Déofel seocun and wodan h[e] ȝeaf ȝewitt. and þa deoffen to drefde. and ælc untrumnisse heo ȝehelde. Déaðe men he arerde of hare berieles to life. and lerde þat folc þe he to com mid mucelene wisdom. and cweð þat naman ne mái bien ȝehalden. buton he rich[t]lice ȝelife on gôd. and þat he beo ȝefulled. and his ȝeleafen mid goden wreon ȝeȝlenge. heo onscúnede elc unricht and alle leasunge. and tochte richwisnesse. and soðfestnesse. Þa nam þe iudeisce folc micel anda onȝean his lare. and smeadan hu hi michte hine to deaðe ȝedon. Þa warð an þera twelf *Christes* þeigne se þe was iudas ȝehaten. þurh diofles tihtinge beswicen. and heo ȝéde to þan iudeiscan folce. and smeade wið him hū hē *Christ* heom beléwen michte. þah al mennisc were ȝegadered. ne michti hi alle hin acwelle. ȝef he sylf nold. for þi he com tú ús. þat he wolde for hus deað þrowian. and swa al manecyn. þaðe ȝelyfad. mid his aȝen deaðe alyse fram helle wite. Crist þa ȝeðafode. þat þa wel reowén hine ȝenuman [vel á<sup>1</sup>] and ȝebunden. and an róde heneġene acwealdon. Hwet þa tweȝen ȝelefde men him arwrðlice bebýriddon. and crist on þare wile. to helle ȝewende. and þane deofel ȝewilde. and him of ánam. adam and enam. and hare ofspring þane del. þe him ær ȝecwemde. and arás of deaðe mid þam mucellum werode. an þan þridde deize. his þrowunge. Com þa to his apostlen and hi ȝefrefrode. and furtie dāȝen firste hām mid wneðe. and þa ilce lare. þe he ham ér tochte eft ȝeedlehte<sup>2</sup>. and het hi faren ofer all middennárd bodiende fulluht. and soð ȝeleafen. Drilten þa an þa furteohthe deȝe his æristes astah to heofene. et-for har. alra ȝesychðe. mid þan ilce licama þe he onþrowode and sit an þar swiðeran halfe*

so that men might believe that he was God's Son.

He healed the sick,

raised the dead,

and taught the folk how they might be saved.

The Jews sought to put Christ to death.

Christ permitted them to do so.

<sup>1</sup> i.e. or ȝenāman.

He died, was buried, and on the third day rose from the dead.

<sup>2</sup> MS. ȝeedsehte. On the fortieth day after his resurrection he ascended into heaven, where

sitteth on the right hand of his Father, and ruleth over all creatures. He hath opened to all righteous men entrance to his kingdom, and those that altogether despise his behests shall be sunk into hell. Verily he shall come at the end of this world, and all that have ever received a soul shall arise from death to meet him, and each be rewarded according to his deserts.

## XXV.

## A PARABLE.

**I**t happened that there was a rich king who was strong and mighty; his land stretched far and wide; his people were innumerable; his subjects on all sides remained under his sway. Then it so chanced that a thought occurred to him that he would know in all his dominions who were friends or foes, well-disposed or hostile; and he resolved to prepare a great feast and thither to call all his subjects so that they at one (set) time should come to his court (city); and he appointed a day that they all at the latest should be there on that day. But this difference he had set (made) between friends and foes, that when they came promiscuously to the court, if he were a friend, he was to be respectfully called aside and made to wash and take his first-meat, so that he would not think it very long to await, until noon, the lord's arrival (entrance); if he were a foe, he was to be met forthwith at the gate with good cudgels and strong whips and straitly be surrounded and bound hand and foot and cast into darkness, and there abide until all his fellows were assembled, that they might be all together clean imprisoned for ever. Then the king sent his messengers from five quarters to all his subjects to invite this folk. Wherefore, without exception, they came, some earlier, others later, some as friends, others as foes, and it was done unto them as I before said was bidden. When the time came that the lord should come into the hall with his honoured guests, with earls and princes, with knights and thanes, then he said, "Ere we with our friends go to meat, let us see these uncouth men, our foes." When they came before him, then turned he to

his faðer. *and* alre sceafte Ʒewalt. He haueð Ʒerimed rihtwisan mannan infer to his rice. *and* þa þe his bebode allunge for-seoð beð an helle besencte. Witodlice he cumð an ende þisser wrld. *and* alle þaðe sawle efre underfengon. ariseð of daðe him to- Ʒeanes. *and* elc Ʒéelt efter his Ʒearnunge.

he sits at his Father's right hand.  
He hath opened a way to his kingdom for all those who keep his behests.

## XXV.

[AN BISPEL.\*]

\* [Fol. 56b.]

[H]it Ʒelamp þat an rice king wes. strang *and* mihti. his land gēlest wide *and* side. his folc was swiðe ærfeð-telle. his under-þéoden Ʒéwēr on his cyne rice wuneden. Þa be-fel hit swa þat him a þance befēll to underƷeite wā an alle his cyne rice him were frend oðer fend. hold oðer fā. *and* he nam him tō rede þat heom wolde Ʒearceon anæ grate laðienge. *and* þider Ʒeclepien all his underþeód. þat hi bi éne féce to his curt [berie] come sceolde *and* sette ænne dēƷie. þat hi alle be þe látst to þa deƷie. þer were. Ac þis Ʒesceod he hadde isétt bi-tweone frend *and* fend. þat þan hi come mistlice to berie. Ʒef he frend wére. me hine sceolde derewrllice forð clepien. *and* do hine wasse. *and* Ʒiefe him his formemete. þat him to lang ne þuhte to abiden of fe<sup>1</sup> laford to þe none inn come. Gief he fend wére. me sceolden ánon eter<sup>2</sup> gat Ʒemete mid gode repples *and* stiarne swépen. *and* stiarne hine besíe. *and* binde him hand *and* fêtt. *and* do hine into piester- nesse. *and* þer abide of<sup>3</sup> all his Ʒeferen were Ʒegadered. þat hi alle clone. símlc belócen were. Þa sende se king his ærndraches of fif ceðen to alle his underþeoden. to Ʒelaðie þis folc. hwet bute ícome sūm cōfer sum láter sum frend sum fend. *and* was idon bi haīm al swā ær cweðe þat isett was. Þa hit þer to com. þat se hlaford into þar halle come. mid his dierewurd Ʒeferede. mid ærlen *and* aldren. mid cnihten mid þeinen. þa cweð se hlafor[d] to his. Æér þanne we mid ure frienden toðe mete gó. scepie<sup>4</sup> we þes uncoðe mæn ur Ʒefó. þa hi to-for him cōmc. þa wēnte he hin to

A parable of a rich king,

who invited friends and foes to his court.

His friends were courteously received and feasted.

<sup>1</sup> read oð se.

<sup>2</sup> = et þer.

His foes were beaten and imprisoned.

<sup>3</sup> ? of=oð.

When the lord came into the hall he sent for his foes.

<sup>4</sup> ? scewie.

them, and thus said, "Wretched men, what caused you to raise up in all my dominions hatred and strife and war against me, and to bow (do homage) to my foes? As (truly as) I enjoy my kingdom ye shall not eat (bite) of my meat; but they shall that have merited it with my love." When this was said, quickly were they then thrust into darkness, that they died of hunger; and the lord betook himself to his friends, and ate and drank and made himself very joyful with them; and there they had bread and wine and seven dishes. Now, good men, understand this parable. This king is our Lord God Almighty, who is King over all kings and Lord over all lords. Strong he is and mighty, for he created all things of nought, and no thing may (be) against his will or withstand him. Wherefore to him saith the prophets, *Qui cœlorum continet tronos, &c.*—that is, Lord of Might, thou holdest the thrones of heavens, and thou beholdest the deep which is under the earth; and thou weighest the hills with thy hand. He is truly mighty, because there is no might but from him. His land is all this earth, for he created and established it all without labour. He is our King and Creator and Father and Lord—King, for he in righteousness created all things, man and angel, good and evil; Creator, for he made us bodies and breathed souls into them; Father, for he feedeth and clotheth us and reared us up as children; Lord he is, because his awe (fear) and dread is over us, and ought to be. He is our Father; he giveth us his earth to till and corn to sow. His earth produces for us corn, fruits, neat (cattle), and deer-kind (beasts). His light produces for us light and life. His water produces for us drink and fishes. His fire is for manifold services. The sun, moon, stars, rain, dew, wind, wood, produce for us innumerable favours. All that we have, we have from this Father, from whom we all have our bliss. May we, ween we, call him at all our Mother? Yea, we may. What doth the mother to her child? First she showeth and blesseth it by the light, and afterwards she putteth her arm under it, or covers his head, that he may sleep and rest. This does the Lord of you all. He rejoices us with the daylight; he sends us to sleep with the dark night. Yet for another reason God made the night. He knoweth well that many men are so full of covetousness, that might they always see, they would never control themselves (in endeavouring) to beget worldly goods, wherefore God hath created



ham *and* þus cweð. Unwraſte man wat lacede 3ēu an alle mīre rice þat 3īe hatrede *and* widerwardneſſe a3ēnes me 3e win ſceolde. *and* to mine fā 3ebugon. Swā i3rūce ic mine rice ne ſcule 3īe mine mete ibite. ac ſcule þa þe hit mid mīre luſe 3earnede. Þa þis was iſēgd. þa were cōfe abruden into peſterneſſe. þe hi ſturfe hungre. *and* ſe hlaford nam hit him to iſ frenden *and* et *and* dranc *and* macede hine wel blīðe mid his *and* þer hi hadden brad *and* win. *and* vii. ſandon. ¶ [N]u gode menn underſtandeð þis biſpel. Þeſ king iſ ure hlaford almihti god þe iſ king ofer alle kingen. *and* hlaford ofer alle hlaforden. S[t]rang he hiſ *and* michti. for he 3eſceop allē þing of nahte. *and* na þing ne mā3i ā3enes hiſ wille. ne him wiðſtande. for þan him ſeigd ſe wi33e. *Qui celorum continet tronos et cetera.* þat iſ. hlaford of mihte þe alſte hefenen þrimſettle. *and* tō neowelneſſe þe under eorðe iſ be-locēſt. in. pon<sup>1</sup>. þe dunan þu awiðhſt eorðe beluſt<sup>2</sup> mid þina hand; he iſ iwiſſ mihti for þan þe non mihte niſ buton fram him. Hiſ land iſ all þeſ middenard. for he alle 3eſceop. *and* all dihte wið-ute ſwince. He uſ iſ. king. *and* ſceppend. *and* fader. *and* hlaford. King for he mid rihtwiſneſſe diht man *and* engel god *and* euel. ſceppende. for he uſ machede lichame *and* ſawle ableow. feder for he uſ fett *and* ſered. *and* forðſteh al ſe iſ cyldren. hlaford for þan þe iſ 3ēie *and* dredneſſe iſ ofer huſ. *and* [vel aſ] āh to bienne. He iſ hure fader. he lenð uſ hiſ eorðe tō tolie. he corn to ſawe. hiſ eorðe uſ werpð corn *and* weſtm. niatt. *and* dierchin. hiſ loht leōem *and* lif. hiſ wāter. drench *and* fiſc3ynn. hiſ fēr manifeald þenīnge. hiſ ſōnne. mone. ſterren. rien. dāw. wind. wude. unitald fultume al þat we habbeð of þēſe feder we habbeð. of<sup>3</sup> wam we alle *and* uſ ſielpe habbeð. Mū3e we ahet clepeien hine moder wene we. 3īe mu3e we. hwat deð ſi moder hire bearn. formeſ hi hit cheteð *and* bliſſið be þe lichte. *and* ſepe hi dieð under hire ārme \*oðer hiſ hafed heleð tō don him ſlepe. *and* reſte. Þiſ deð all 3ūre drihte. he bliſſeð huſ mid d3ēieſ<sup>4</sup> licht. h[c] sweueð huſ mid piſtre nicht. Giet for an oðre þing god 3eſcop þa niht. He wat wel þat manī3e men bieð ſa ful of 3ēſeung. mihti efre iſi. Nā 3ewōld ham ſelfe. to bigeten wrldlic ēchte. þer for god hafd 3eſcepe ham reſte.

*and enquired the cause of their enmity.*

*Not a bite, he said, should they have of his meat, but should be thrust into darkness; but with his friends he made merry.*

*This king is Almighty God,*

*the lord of heaven and earth.*

<sup>1</sup> ? upon.

<sup>2</sup> in. pou þe dunan eorðe beluſt ſeems to be an interpolation of the scribe.

*He is our father, for he feeds and clothes us.*

*His earth gives us corn. His water gives us drink and fishes.*

<sup>3</sup> MS. os.

*May we also call God our mother? We may.*

\* [Fol. 57a.]

*God sends us to sleep with the dark night.*

<sup>4</sup> sic.

*The night was also created on account of man's covetousness.*



rest for them, though sometimes (it be) against their wish. Moreover, he spake a wonderful word to the soul by the prophet Isaiah, *Numquid potest mulier oblivisci infantem suum ut non misereatur filii uteri sui*, that is, Is there, beloved! any mother that can so forget her own child as not to have compassion upon the child of her own womb? and if she forgetteth, yet will I not forget thee, saith the Lord. And since he is Father and Lord, he himself hath said by the prophet, *Si ego pater ubi est honor meus, si dominus ubi est timor meus*; that is, If I am Father, where is my honour? if I be Lord, where is my awe (fear)? Therefore, good men, to our King we owe honour, to our Creator all that we are, to our Father true love, to our Lord fear. And this is the King who will know among all his subjects, who love him and who hate him, who is friend and who is foe, and therefore he hath summoned all his folk on a certain day, that is, doomsday, that they all finally should be there. We said first that these messengers were sent from five regions—so they are. These five regions are five laws, because God is known through these. The first law is the natural law that God first set in the heart of man, that is, that no man should do unto another but what he would that a man should do to him. No man possessed of reason is without this law. Messengers of this law were Abel, Seth, Enos, Noah, and such like good men. Since this earth was established (from the first man unto the last that shall be at this world's end) there has been no time, nor shall there be, that God hath not sent good men to invite his folk to his kingdom. But this law was soon corrupted through abominable crimes and manifold sins. Thereafter God raised up the law through Moses, the leader of his people whom he had then chosen, and he wrote it himself upon tables of stone; and it lasted for some time (and thereof were Moses, Aaron, Samuel, and many others, teachers and inviters), so long that this law also was soon perverted and corrupted, through disobedience, until the time came that God sent the holy prophets, and they revived by their writings, through the gift of the Holy Ghost, the good law, and corrected the folk, as far as they were able, and foretold the coming of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, who should write his own will in our hearts, through the gift of his Holy Ghost, and make us with his might what book-learning could not. And in this law of the prophets were many preachers; but afterwards within a while

súme wile hares unþances. 3eiet he cweð a wunder worder to þar sawle bi þa witie ysaia. *Numquid potest mulier obliuisci infantem suum ut non misereatur filii uteri sui.* þat is la lief maȝie wiman forȝeten his oge cild. þat hi ne milsi. hire bārn of hire ogen innoð. and ȝief hi forȝiet þah hwēðer nell ic forȝete þe cweð drihten. be þam þe he fader is and lafōrd he him selþ cwed be þe witie. *Si ego pater ubi est honor meus. si dominus ubi est timor meus.* þat is. gif ic fader ham. wer his mi manscipe. ȝif ic. hlaford wer his<sup>1</sup> mine aȝeie? þer fore. G. m. ure king. we oȝeð wṛhmint. hur sceappend al þat we bieð. ure fader soðe lufe. ur hlaford drednesse. And þis is sēo king þe wile wite an alle his underpeode wā hine lufeð and hwa hine hateð. hwā him is frend oðer fend. And þer for he hað ȝelaðed alle fol[c]. to ane dȝeie. þat is domes dȝeie. þat hi alle þer beon be þe latst. hwē seden ærst þat þes ærndraces wer isent of fif cheðen. swa ibeoð. þas fif cheðen beoð fif lāgan. for þan þe god is þurh þesen ȝecnōwē. Si forme lage þat is si ȝécēnde lāge. þe god sett formest an þes mannes heorte. þat is þat non man ne don oðere. buton þat þe he wolde þat me ded him. Wið-ute þeser lāge nis man þe ȝescod habbe. Ærndraces of þisser lage wer<sup>2</sup> abel. Seth. enoc. Nōe. and swice gode man. Seðe þes middenard was ȝestapeled fram þa forme man to þa latst þe wrð ét þes wrldes ende. nas tid ne tȝme ne ne wrð. þat god ne send gode mænn his fole forte ȝelaðie to his rice. Ac si lāge sōne adiligde. þurh unwreaste Leahtrum and manifald sēnne. Þer efter arerde god þas lage þurh moȝsen þe heretoch of his folce þe he þa ȝecās. and wrāte his him self in stanene wax bredene. and si ȝeleste sume wile. and þer of were larþawes and ȝelaðieres Moises and aaron. and samuel. and fele oðre. Swa lāge<sup>3</sup> þat si alswa swið abreað. and adilȝede. þurh unhersamnesse. wat hit com to þa time þe god sende þe halie witȝe. and hi þa arērdon mid hare wite þurh þes halie gastes gife þa god lage. and rihtleceden þat fole swase hi mihten. and bodeden ures hlafordes to-cȝme ses helendes ihesu cristes. þe sceolde his aȝēn wille. þurh his gastes ȝife in ure heorte wite. and don ús mid his mihte þat stef creft ne mihte. and an þesser lāge of þe witȝin. wer laðieres mēche. Eft bine fece and þes lare and lage swiðe

The words of  
Isaiah.

God is Father  
and Lord,

wherefore we  
owe him our  
love, fear,  
and honour.

<sup>1</sup> MS. hss.

On Doomsday  
God will take  
note of friends  
and foes.

The five  
messengers  
denote five  
laws.

The natural  
law in men's  
hearts.

<sup>2</sup> MS. þer.

This law  
became cor-  
rupted, then  
came the  
Mosaic law,  
which in its  
turn became  
corrupted.

<sup>3</sup> or lānge.

The prophets  
revised the  
Mosaic law,

and foretold  
the coming of  
Christ.

this lore and law greatly cooled through manifold sins, and frequently through false gods that each nation made for itself, some of gold, some of silver, of wood, and of stone, and turned God's praise and honour from the Creator to the creature, so that when our Saviour was born of the unspotted maiden Saint Mary, all the earth was possessed with sin, and all folk went into the devil's mouth, except a very few from whom his dear mother was descended. He then restored all goodness and set (established) his holy laws, and gave them moreover might and strength, through the gift of his Holy Ghost, to fulfil his behests and to follow no other laws. And understand how. Three corruptions were in mankind ere the advent of Christ. Our birth was foul, our life was wretched, and our death horrible. He came and brought instead (in opposition) three things. He was born of the pure maid, who ever remained a virgin ; his life was holy, and his death full of mercy. His pure birth cleansed our foul birth, his holy life set right our unholy life, his meek death overcame and destroyed alike our sorrow and death. This is the fourth law, and in this were messengers and preachers, the apostles and the disciples ; and after our Saviour's ascension into heaven, the apostles and their younglings (disciples) ; and after them came holy men and the head men (prelates) that are now in holy church, and shall be until doomsday. Through the gifts of the Holy Ghost, and as our Saviour instructed them, they (the apostles) taught the people many things for their advantage. And this is the fifth law. In this are messengers and inviters, that is, archbishops, bishops, priests, and their company. But though we name five it is all (one) in God's will, and each of them raiseth up and perfects the others. Of these five kinds, and of their apostles, we have (already) spoken to you ; of the folk, we say that they come constantly from the beginning of the world (for as many as are dead so many are come to the city), whether friend or foe, and each day thickly press on. But if ye have understood what we before said to you, at the gate they are discerned and there they are separated. The gate is each man's dying day, when he steps out of this life into the other. But we also told you that if he were a friend he should receive his morning-meat, so that the better he might await the greater meat. So is it here. When the good man, that hath followed God's love, cometh to his end, assuredly, without delay, there come the holy

acolede þurh manifeað fénne<sup>1</sup>. *and* hur *and* hur þurh false gódes þe ælc þiode ham selfe mácede. sume of golde. sým of silure. of treowe. of stane. *and* awente godes lof *and* wrhmiute fram þe sceappende to þare zesceafte. swa þat þa ure halende wes accenned of þam unwenmede mede sante Marie. al se middenard was mid senne begripe. *and* al fole ȝede in to þes diefles muðe. buton wel feáwe of wam his lefe moder wes istriened. he þa arerd alle godnisse. *and* sette his halie láge. *and* þat þe móre his. ȝiaf miht *and* strence þurl<sup>2</sup> þe gief of his gaste his hesne to fulforðie. þat non oðre laze ne mihte. *and* understandeð hwu. Þri ampres were an mancyn ær his to-cyme. Ure acenneng wes ful. un<sup>3</sup> lif unwreast. ur deað grislic. he com *and* brochte þri þin[g] þer aȝén. he wes acénde of þe clene mede. þe efer þurh lefede mede. his lif was halize. his deað ful of milce. his clene acennende clénséde ure fule acennende. his hali lif rihtlecede ure unwreaste lif. his admoded deað ofer com. *and* fordede ure sorize *and* ȝelice deað. þis is \*si fierðe láge. An þisser were ærndraces *and* ȝelaðieres þa apostles *and* þe leorninchihtes. þer efter ures helendes upstize to heuene. þa apostles *and* hare iunglenges þe[r] efter come halie men *and* þe hafedmen þe nu beoð in halie cyrce. *and* wrðeð of<sup>4</sup> domes dēȝe. þurh þes hali gastes ȝife. *and* al swa ure helende ham leórde. manize þing ehten þa folce to freme. *and* þis is si fiste lage. An þisser beoð bedeles *and* laðieres to berie archebiscopes. *and* biscopes. prestes. *and* hare ȝegeng. Ac þah we fif næmmie. alle hit on godes wille. *and* élc of ham ȝestrenð *and* fulfellþ oðre. Of peses fif ceþen *and* of hare bedeles we habbeð ȝéu ȝéséd. Of þe folce we siggeð þat hit cump fastlice. fram middenardes anginn also fele also deade beoð also fele beoð to berie icóme. wat frend. wat fá. *and* elce deȝie píce þringeð. Ac ȝief ȝé habbeð understande þat we ȝiu er séde. eter gate me his seȝft. *and* þer me hi to zesceodeð. Si gate þat is elces mannes endede. þat he stepð ut of þese life into þan oðre<sup>5</sup>. Ac we sede ȝehw. þat ȝief he frend were me sceolde ȝief him his mǫrȝe mete þat he þe bet mihte abide þane more mete. Swa hit is here. þat se gode man þe godes lufe hað ȝefolged to is ende cump. witetlice wið-ut mǫantruce þer cumeð þe hali engles him tó. *and* ȝéf hað abte uniwasse oðer hit

<sup>1</sup> read sénne.

At the time of Christ's birth all the world was smitten with sin.

Christ restored all goodness.

<sup>2</sup> ? þurh.

There corruptions of mankind.

<sup>3</sup> ? ur.

How healed by Christ.

The messengers of the fourth law.

\* [Fol. 57b.]

<sup>4</sup> ? oð.

The messengers of the fifth law.

These five are all one in God's purpose.

At the gate the foes are distinguished from the friends.

The gate is the day of each man's death.

<sup>5</sup> MS. ddðre.

Angels come for the soul of the righteous,

angels unto him, and if he hath aught unwashen, either it shall be washed in the death-pain in which he here suffers, or after (death) with a slight delay, and then the soul is led to the festive hall ; that is, the morning-meat, the bliss that he hath in the soul ; for ye know well that no holy man hath his perfect bliss ere he receive again his body at doomsday, that shall be the perfect meat when the man with soul and body shall receive the assurance of eternal bliss. And what happeneth if it is an enemy that cometh to the gate ? May God, through his great mercy, let us never experience what it is. But, nevertheless, if he is an enemy, wretched man ! there shall be at hand only the accursed ghosts who shall roughly receive him with stern blows. As many vices and sins as he had upon him, so many fiends shall he there meet to receive him and to put him into darkness ; again on doomsday shall all God's enemies be cut off together from his sight, and they shall receive their reward that long shall last. Thus hath it been, and is, and shall be until doomsday. But when it cometh to pass that the Lord on the great day shall come to see both friends and foes, then shall come all his subjects before him, where he sitteth with his beloved company, with nine orders of angels, with the unspotted maiden his mother, with his apostles, with the high fathers (patriarchs), and the holy prophets, with martyrs, with holy confessors, with holy maidens, with all those that, for his love, cast aside the goods of this world and lawfully serve him here. What awe and what dread shall there be when the fire comes before him that shall burn the earth ; when all the earth shall quake ; when the stars shall fall ; when the sun and moon shall darken before God's brightness ; when the welkin shall vanish, and when the sign of the holy rood (cross), with the spear and with the nails, shall be brought forth by the angels ! When the angels shall quake, and the righteous shall sore dread, what shall the sinful do who shall see there his righteous judge, whom none may contradict nor deceive ? He himself is witness and judge. What shall the wretch do who seeth above him his Lord whom he hath displeased, and under him hell's mouth open, about him all folk, and himself openly convicted of various sins. No friend may there help another ; each shall have enough to do for himself. Then shall God Almighty say unto them, the guilty men, "Ye sinned in your eternity, and ye shall burn in my eternity. Ye sinned as long as ye lived, and ye shall



wrð ȝewasse iȝer pine of þe deaðe þe he her ȝáleð. oðer efter  
 mid eðelice lette. *and þan* lat me þa sawle to merchestowe. *þat*  
 his se morȝemetete si blisse þe he hað an þar sawle. *þat* wite ȝe  
 wel. nan halege nað his fulle blisse er he underfó adomes deie his  
 licame. *þat* wrð se fulle mete. *þan* se mann mid sawle *and* mid  
 licame underfangð sicernesse of écer blisse. *And* wat belimpð  
 hit ȝief he fend his þe to þare gate cump? God þurh his mucele  
 milce ne letes us nefer fandie. Ac napeles ȝief he fend his an  
 unwreast mann þer beoð anú ȝeréðie. þe weregede gastes þe hine  
 uniredlice underfangeð min stiarne swupen. Also fele unpeawes  
 also hade upe him *and* sennenn. al swa fendes he þer ȝemet. hine  
 to underfó. *and* to don hine into piesternesse. oft a domes dȝei  
 alle godes fend simle fram his ȝesecðe abroden bienn. *and* hi to  
 hare lean ham þe lange seel ȝeleste. Þus hit hað ibi *and* is. *and*  
 wrð oft domesdei. Ac þanne hit þer to cump *þat* se hlaford á þe  
 mucele deie. cump forté ísí *and* frend *and* fend. þann cump all  
 his underþiede him to-fore. þer he sit mid his derewrþe ȝefered  
 mid nȝen anglene had. mid þer unwēmmēd meide his moder.  
 mid his apostlen. mid þa hāgefaderen. *and* þo halȝe witiē. mid  
 martiren. mi[d] hali *confessoren* mid halie meiden. mid al þan þe  
 þer midenarde for his lufe werpeð abéc. *and* lagelice her him  
 þenið. wie ȝeie. wie drednesse wurð þer. þan þat fer to for him  
 abernð *þat* middernad<sup>1</sup>. þan si eorðe alle cwāced þan þe sterren  
 falleð. si sunne *and* se mone aȝestreð for godes brietnesse. þe  
 wlene to gað. *and* si hali rode taene mid þe spere *and* mid þe  
 neiles þurh angles beoð forð ibrocht. þanne þe angles cwaciað. *and*  
 tó richtwise ham adredeð. wat sceol se senfulle don. þe isecȝð  
 þer his richtwise deme. þe non ne maie bechece. non beswice. he  
 his him self witiisse *and* deme. Wat sceol se wrecece don. þe  
 bufon iséȝð his hlaford þe he ȝegremed áfeð. under him helle  
 muð open. abuuten him all folc. him selfe bi sandlice senne  
 beswapen. þer ne mái non frend oðre helpe. ælc had innóh to  
 donne an him selfe. þan seied ham god þe geltȝ mannen ȝe  
 seneȝeden. an ȝeur écenesse. *and* ȝe scule \*birne an mire écenisse.  
 ȝe seneȝden also lange also ȝé lefede *and* ȝe scule birne also longe  
 as ic lefie. Witeð into éce fer. þe is ȝæarced mine fó *and* his

and take it  
to the mirth-  
stead.

The full meat  
is the assur-  
ance of  
eternal bliss.

Devils shall  
meet the  
sinner and  
thrust him  
into darkness.

On Doomsday  
all shall come  
before God.

<sup>1</sup> sic.

The stars  
shall fall, the  
sun and  
moon shall  
darken before  
God's bright-  
ness.

God's word  
to the wicked.  
\*[Fol. 58a.]



burn as long as I live. Depart into eternal fire, which is prepared for my foes and their fellows." Immediately they shall depart from his sight, and then at once shall the Lord go with his friends to his meat, that is, to his pleasures, as is said in holy writ, *Delicie mee sunt esse cum filiis hominum*, that is, "My delights are to dwell with the sons of men." But we said to you a little before that they should have good bread and wine, and seven dishes; they shall have the bread spoken of in the Gospel. *Ego sum panis vivus qui de caelo descendit*, that is, "I am the living bread that descended from heaven," saith our Lord; "he who eateth of this bread shall never die." This bread was made of a grain of wheat, as he also said in the Gospel, *Nisi granum frumenti, et cetera*. This corn was sown through the angel's mouth into the ear of the Virgin Mary, in the city of Nazareth. This corn came first in Bethlehem, that speaks to us of bread; it waxed and flowered in Judæa, and it ripened in Jerusalem, and the wicked folk, the Jews, reaped it, and placed it on the cross also, as between two millstones. It was afterwards put into the tomb as into an oven. Thence it was brought up into heaven to the high Lord's table, where it feedeth angels and mankind for ever, and this is their bread. Where shall we find the wine? Even as he said, *Ego sum vitis vera, et cetera*.

## XXVI.

## PUT ON THE ARMOUR OF GOD.

Our lord (master) Saint Paul, who is teacher of the Gentiles, reminds and informs us of certain weapons to be wielded, thus saying, *Induite vos armatura dei*. No man taketh up a weapon except to fight therewith, and no one fighteth except with his enemies. Let us now see what are the foes, and what weapons we shall use against them. Each Christian man, so soon as he steppeth out of the font, where he is baptized of his sins, maketh to himself three foes; for it is written, *Nemo potest duobus dominis servire*—No man can serve two masters who are at enmity together. These three foes are—the

ʒegen[g] Son hi wīðeð abroden of his ʒesecþe. *And* þan sone<sup>1</sup> geð se hlaford mid his frenden to his mete. þat his to is esten. þe seið an þan hali write *Delicie mēē sunt esse cum filiis hominum*. þat is. Mine esten beoð wunian mid mannen bearnen. Ac

<sup>1</sup> MS. fone.

we [habbeð ʒe-] sed ʒiu litl her þat hi sceolden abben god brad *and* uin. *and* vii. sonden. hi sculen habe þat brad þe seið iþe godspel. *Ego sum panis uiuus qui de celo descendit*. Þet is. Ic am cwuce bread þe astah fram hefene. seʒð ure helende. Se þe of pese brad ett. ne sterfeð he nefer. Þis bread was imaced of ane hwete corne. al swa se he cweð ʒeðe godspelle. *Nisi granum frumenti*. et cetera. þis corn was ʒesawen þurh þes ængles muð into ðes meidenes ære Marie. in þare burh of nazareth. þis corn côm<sup>2</sup> ferst inne bethleem. þat cweð us of breade. hit wex *and* bleówu. in iudea. hit ripeðe in ierusalem. Iudas *and* þat leoðre fole hit rēpēn. *and* deden hit an þar rode alswa also betwene melstanent. Sede hit was idon into þer berien. alswa into hōfne. þanen hit was ibroht up into heofene to þes habes hlafordes borde. þer hit fet. *and* engles. *and* mancinn in ēcenisse. *and* þis is hare bread. hwer scule we win finden? Al swa se he cweð. *Ego sum uitis uera*. et cetera.

God's pleasure is to dwell with the sons of men.

Christ is the living bread.

<sup>2</sup> MS. cōn. Bethlehem reminds us of bread.

This living bread is on the high Lord's table. Christ is the true vine.

## XXVI.

## [INDUITE UOS ARMATURA DEI.]

[U]<sup>r</sup> hlaford *sanctes paulus* þe is peoden lareaw. us maneð *and* menezð of sume wepne to nemene þus cweðende. *Induite uos armatura dei*. Nan man ne nemð wepne buto to fihten mide. ne nanman ne fiht buton wið his ifōmenn. Ute we nu isi wice bioð ure ifō. *and* wice wepne we scule nemen aʒenes ham. Ælc cristen mán ánon se stepð up of<sup>3</sup> þe funte wer he ifulled his. ipicches he maceð him pri ifōn. for þan þe hit is iwrite. *Nemo potest duobus dominis seruire*. Nan ne mai twan hlaforde þe wranschte bien sāmod þówie. þas pri ifon beð. Se

[Fol. 58b.]

Of the weapons of the Christian warrior.

<sup>3</sup> MS. os.

Each Christian man hath three foes.

devil and his host, the second is this earth, the third is very near the Christian man, that is, his own flesh. These three, like three robbers, fight against each believing man as long as we wander in the wilderness of this world. Therefore said the holy Job, *Militia est vita hominis super terram*—Knightship is man's life upon earth. In the Devil's school, his host of accursed spirits and sins and abominable crimes fight against us. In this earth's school (army) are both prosperity and misfortune. In the flesh's school are evil thoughts and foul lusts. Of the first speaketh St. Paul, *Non est nobis coluctatio aduersus carnem et sanguinem, et cetera*. Of the second speaks St. John the Evangelist, saying, *Nolite diligere mundum nec ea que in mundo sunt*. Of the third speaks St. Paul, *Caro concupiscit aduersus spiritum*. Strong are these foes and treacherous, so that with them we may not make peace nor fellowship; either they overcome us, or we them. If they overcome us, they take from us neither gold nor silver, but our bane (death). If we overcome them, we shall all be praised as good soldiers, and be rewarded with a high reward. But he who goeth to fight without a leader may soon come to mishap. [ Let us now see who shall be our leader, and afterwards what shall be our weapons. Our leader is the Holy Ghost, and our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath said, *Sine me nihil potestis facere*. Thou oughtest to have eight kinds of weapons, which are, shield, helmet, habergeon, sword, spear, steed, two spurs, and a smart staff. What shall be our shield, St. Paul thus tells us, *In omnibus sumentes scutum fidei, in quo possitis omnia tela nequissimi ignea extinguere*.

## XXVII.

## THE FOURTH SUNDAY AFTER PENTECOST.

**E**rant appropinquantes, et cetera. The holy Gospel saith to us that lepers and sinful men approached the Saviour and desired to hear his doctrine. Then the Pharisees and the Scribes of the Jewish

forme is se deofel. *and* his igēng. Se oðer þes middennard. Se þridde is wel nich þe cristen men. þat is his aȝon flese. Þas þri fihteð agen elcen ileafful man also longe se we iðese westen of þesser woruld wandrið. also þri reafes. Þer for sede se hali iob. *Milicia est uita hominis super terram.* Cnihtseipe is mannes lif upen eorðe. In þes deofles heriscole fihteð agén ús his iferred ȝewerged gastes. *and* unpeawes. *and* unwraste lahtres. In þes middeneardes iscole. selðen *and* uniselðen. In þes flesces iscole. euel ȝeþanc *and* fule lustes. Of þe formen seiðð *sanctus paulus.* *Non est nobis coluctatio aduersus carnem et sanguinem. et cetera.* Of þan oðren cweðð *sanctus Iohannes* se godspellere. kuū<sup>1</sup>. *Nolite diligere mundum nec ea que in mundo sunt.* Of þe þridde queðð *sanctus paulus.* *Caro concupiscit aduersus spiritum.* S[t]range bieð þes ifó. *and* swice wið wam we ne muȝe grið ne sibbe mácie. oðer hi ofer cumeð us oðer we him. Gif hi us ofercumeð ne ceped hi of hus gold ne selfer bute ure bane. Gif we ofercumed heom. we scule bien ímersed alle gode cempen *and* imeaded mid heahere mede. Ac se þe geð into fihte wið-ute heretoche. him mai sone mislimpe. Vte we nu isi wa scel beon ur heretoche. *and* seðe wice ure wepne bien scu[l]e. Ur heretoche is se haligost. *and* ure laford ihesu crist þe seiðð. *Sine me nichil potestis facere.* Þu ahst to habben ehte wepnecin. þa beoð sceold. helm *and* brenie. swrd *and* spere. Stede *and* twei sporen. *and* ane smearte ȝerd. Hwic scule beon ure sceld. *sanctus paulus* hus seiðð. *In omnibus sumentes scutum fidei. in quo possitis omnia tela nequissimi [igne]a extinguere.*

the world, the flesh, and the devil.

They are like robbers.

(1) the devil's school,  
(2) the world's school,  
(3) the flesh's school.

<sup>1</sup> ? kueðinde.

Our foes are strong and treacherous.

If we overcome them we shall be regarded as good soldiers.

Our leaders are the Holy Ghost and Jesus Christ.

Eight weapons are necessary to carry on this warfare.

## XXVII.

[DOMINICA IIII. POST PENTECOSTEN.]

[*E*]rant *appropinquant*es. et cetera. þet háli godspell ús seiðð. þat hi-rêfen *and* sýnþulle<sup>2</sup> mēn ȝeneahlehton þan helende. *and* woldan his lāre ȝeliran. Þa cēarodon þa sunder hālȝān *and*

[Fol. 59b.]  
Lepers and sinners desired to hear Christ's lore;  
<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

people were grieved, because the Saviour received the sinful and had fellowship with them. Then spake the Saviour to the Pharisees and Scribes this parable, Which of you having a hundred sheep, if he lose one of the sheep, does not leave the nine and ninety in the wilderness, and goes seeking the one that is lost? If he findeth it he beareth it on his shoulders to the flock, or the fold, rejoicing. When he cometh home, he inviteth his friends and neighbours unto him, and saith, Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which I lost. I say unto you greater joy is in heaven for one sinner if he be sorry for his sins with amendment, than for the ninety and nine righteous that need no repentance.

## XXVIII.

### SOUL'S WARD (OR THE CUSTODY OF THE SOUL).

*Si sciret paterfamilias qua hora fur venturus esset; vigilaret utique et non sineret perfodi domum suam.* Our Lord, in the Gospel, teaches us through a parable how we ought warily (cautiously) to guard ourselves against the devil of hell, and from his devices. "If the lord (master) knew," he saith, "when and what time the thief would come to his house, he would watch, nor would he suffer the thief to break into it." This house which our Lord speaketh of is man's self within; the man's wit within this house is the house-lord (master of the house), and the untoward wife may be called Will. Should the house go after her (obey her) she bringeth it all to ruin, except Wit, as lord, chastise her for the better, and deprive her of much of what she would. And yet would all her household follow her everywhere if Wit forbad them not; for all these are untoward and reckless servants, unless he directs them. And what are those servants? Some are without, and some within. Those within are the man's five wits—sight, hearing, smelling, tasting, and the feeling of each limb. These are the servants under Wit, as under the house-

þa boceras þer heðen þeode. for ðan þe se helende under-feng þa sinfullan. *and* ham mid imône hafede. Þa sede se helende þa sunder halȝe *and* þa bôcere þis bispell. Hwile eower hefð an hu[n]dred sceap. Gif he fo[r]list ān þara sceape. la hūne forlet hē neȝon *and* hun neoȝontie a westene *and* geð seeende þat an þe him losede ? Gif he hit þan ȝemet. he hit berð an his eaxlun to þara eowde. oder falde blissiende. Þan he ham cȝmð he ȝelaðeð his frend *and* niehi-bures him to *and* eweð. Blissiað mid me fo[r]þan þe ic imête mi sceap þe me losede. Ic sege eow þat mare blisse bið an hefene be anun sȝnfulle man. ȝif he his sȝnnen mid dedbote bereuðeð. þan him si be nigon *and* hund negontie rihtwisen þe ne beofiað naure ded bote.

and the Scribes and Pharisees were angry with Jesus. The parable of the Lost Sheep.

Greater joy in heaven over one repentant sinner than over ninety and nine that need no repentance.

## XXVIII.

## HER BIGINED : SAWLES WARDE.\*

*Si sciret paterfamilias qua hora fur uenturus esset : uigilaret utique et non sineret perfodi domum suam. Ure lauerd* i þe godspel teacheð us þurh abisne. hu we ahen wearliche to biwiten us seoluen wið þe unwiht of helle. *ant* wið his wrenches<sup>1</sup>. ȝef þes lauerd<sup>2</sup> wiste he seið. hwenne *ant* hwuch<sup>3</sup> time. þe þeof walde cume to his hus : he walde wakien. ne nalde he nawt polien þe þeof forte breoken hire. Þis hus þe ure lauerð spekeð of : is seolf þe mon inwið þe monnes wit. I þis hus. is þe huse lauerd. *ant* te fulitohe wif : mei beon wil ihaten. þat ga þe hus efter hire : ha diht hit al to wundre. bute wit ase lauerd chasti hire þe betere. *ant* bi neome hire muchel of<sup>4</sup> þat ha walde. *ant* tah walde al hire hird folhin hire ouer al : gef wit ne forbude ham. for alle hit<sup>5</sup> beoð untohene. *ant* rechelese hinen : bute ȝef he ham rihte. *Ant* hwueche beoð þeos hinen : Summe beoð wið vten. *ant* summe wið in nen. þeo<sup>6</sup> wið vten beoð. þe monnes fif wittes. Sihðe. *ant* herunge. smechnunge. *ant* smeallunge. *ant* euch limes felunge. þeos beoð hinen vnder wit. as under huse

Our Lord teaches us how to guard ourselves against the devil.

<sup>1</sup> MS. wernches.

If the master of the house knew when the thief were coming, he would ever be on the watch.

The house is man's wit (conscience) ; the wife is will.

<sup>2</sup> þe huse-bonde.

<sup>3</sup> i hwuch.

<sup>4</sup> ofte of.

The servants under her are reckless.

These hinds are our five wits.

<sup>5</sup> ha.

<sup>6</sup> þeos.

\* Bodleian MS. 34, collated with Royal MS. 17 A. 27.



lord; and where'soever he is negligent, there is none of them but what often conduct themselves untowardly, and trespass often, either in foolish cheer or in evil deeds. Within are his servants in so many divers thoughts to please well the house-wife against God's will; and they swear together readily that they will do after her will. Though we hear it not, we may feel their murmuring and their untoward noise until Wit comes forth and, both with awe (fear) and love, has disciplined them for the better. Never is his house well guarded on account of these hinds, when that he is asleep or goeth anywhere from home (that is, when man forgetteth his wit) and letteth them be together. But it behoveth not that this house be robbed, for there is therein the treasure that God gave himself for, that is, man's soul. For to break this house after (for the sake of) this treasure, that God bought with his death, and for which he gave up his life on the cross, there is many a thief about, both by day and by night, invisible ghosts with all wicked devices; and against each good virtue that guardeth God's dear chattel in this house under Wit's direction, who is the houselord, there is ever its (opposite) vice that seeketh entrance about the walls to murder it (the soul) therein. The head thereof is the fiend (devil) that heads (is master of) them all against him and his keys. The husband, that is, Wit, guardeth his house thus:—Our Lord hath given him four of his daughters, which are, to wit, the four cardinal virtues. The first is called Prudence, and the second is called Spiritual Strength, and the third is Moderation. Righteousness is the fourth. Wit, the husband, God's constable, calleth Prudence forth, and maketh her door-keeper, so that she should warily take heed whom she lets in and out, and that she may behold afar off all that are coming, those that are worthy to have entrance, or to be excluded. Strength stands next her; so that if any will come in without the consent of Prudence (Prudence being unwilling), Strength, that is her sister, may be warned thereof and turn them out. The third sister is Moderation; he (Wit) maketh her mistress over his wilful household, of which we have previously spoken, so that she may teach them moderation, which is also called  
 4 measure, the mean between two evils (*or* things); for in every place it is a virtue to observe moderation; and she cautioneth them all that none disobey her anywhere through excess or intemperance, nor go beyond moderation. The fourth sister, Righteousness (equity), sitteth highest as judge, and beateth those that offend, and crowneth those that do well, and doometh each one his doom according to his deserts. For

lauerd. *ant* hwer. se he is ȝemeles: nis hare nan þe ne feareð  
ofte untoheliche. *ant* gulteð ilome. oðer ifol semblant: oder in  
vuel dede. In wið beoð his hinen. in se moni mislich þonc to  
cwemen wel þe husewif: aȝein godes wille. *ant* swerieð sonet  
reaðliche. *þat* efter hire hit schal \*gan. þah we hit ne here nawt:  
we<sup>1</sup> mahen ifelen<sup>2</sup> hare nurhð<sup>3</sup>. *ant* hare untohe bere. a þet hit<sup>4</sup>  
cume forð. *ant* ba wið eie. *ant* wið luue tuhte ham þe betere.  
Ne bið neauer his hus for þeos hinen wel iwist. for hwon *þat* he  
slepe. oðer ohwider<sup>5</sup> from hame. *þat* is hwen mon forȝet his wit.  
*ant* let ham iwurðen. ah ne bihoueð hit nawt. *þat* tis hus beo  
irobbet. for þer is inne þe tre[sur] *þat* godd ȝef him seolf fore. *þat*  
is monnes sawle. forte breoke þis hus efter þis tresor. *þat* godd  
bohte mid his deað. *ant* lette lif o rode: is moni þeof a buten  
ba bi dei *ant* bi niht. vnseheliche gasttes wið alle unwreaste  
þeawes. *ant* aȝein euch god þeaw. þe biwiteð ipis hus godes deore  
castel<sup>6</sup>. vnder wittes wissunge *þat* is huse lauerd. is eauer hire  
unþeaw forte sechen in ȝong abute þe wahes to a murðrin hire  
þrinne. *þat* heaued þrof is þe feont. þe meistreð ham alle aȝeines  
him *ant* his keis. þe husebonde *þat* is wit. warneð his hus þus.  
vre lauerd haueð ileanett him froure<sup>7</sup> of his dehtren. *þat* beoð to  
vnderstonden þe fowr heaued þeawes. þe earste is warschipe  
icleopet. *ant* te oþer is ihaten gastelich strengðe. *ant* te þridde is  
meað. rihtwisnesse þe feorðe. **W**it þe husbonde godes cunestable  
cleopeð war\*schipe forð. *ant* makið hire durewart. þe war-  
liche loki hwam ha leote in *ant* ut. *ant* of feor bihalde alle þe  
cuminde. hwuch beo wurðe inȝong to habben: oðer beon bistek-  
en þrute. Strengðe stont nest hire. *þat* ȝef ei wule in: war-  
schipes<sup>8</sup> vn þonkes. warni strengðe fore. *þat* is hire suster: *ant*  
heo hit ut warpe. þe þridde suster *þat* is meað. hire he makeð  
meistre ouer his willesfule hirð<sup>9</sup> *þat* we ear of speken. *þat* ha  
leare ham mete<sup>10</sup>. *þat* me<sup>11</sup> meosure hat. þe middel of twa ueles<sup>12</sup>.  
for *þat* is þeaw in euch stude *ant* tuht forte halden. *ant* hateð  
ham alle *þat* nan of ham aȝein hire: nohwer wid vnmeoð: ne ga  
ouer mete. þe feorðe suster rihtwisnesse. sit on<sup>13</sup> hest as deme<sup>14</sup>.  
*ant* beateð þeo þe aȝulteð. *ant* cruneð þeo þe wel doð. *ant*  
demeð euchan his dom efter his rihte. for dret<sup>15</sup> of hire nimeð his<sup>16</sup>

These hind  
seek to please  
the house-  
wife.

\* [Fol. 76vº.]

<sup>1</sup> omitted.

<sup>2</sup> MS. iþþlen.

<sup>3</sup> murð.

<sup>4</sup> wit.

They are not  
to be trusted  
by the master.

<sup>5</sup> ohwider

fare.

In this house  
is the soul,  
God's trea-  
sure.

Vice seeks  
entrance to  
murder the  
soul.

<sup>6</sup> chatel.

The head of  
these enemies  
is the devil.

<sup>7</sup> fowre.

Four cardinal  
virtues guard  
this treasure.

Prudence is  
door-keeper.  
\* [Fol. 77rº.]

Strength  
stands next.

<sup>8</sup> omitted.

The third is  
Moderation.

<sup>9</sup> hinen.

<sup>10</sup> meðe.

<sup>11</sup> omitted.

<sup>12</sup> ȝing.

The fourth is  
Equity.

<sup>13</sup> hom.

<sup>14</sup> demere.

<sup>15</sup> dred.

<sup>16</sup> þis.

dread of her, this household, each according to what he is, keepeth watch and ward—the eyes theirs, the mouth its, the ears theirs, the hands theirs, and each of the other wits, so that anent them no vice shall come in. When this is thus done and all is still therein, Prudence, that is ever vigilant, is afraid lest some prove unfaithful and fall asleep and neglect to keep watch, and she sendeth them in a messenger, whom she knows well, come from afar, for to frighten those that are over hardy (confident) and those that are negligent (reckless), and to keep them more vigilant. He is received in and quickly beheld by them all; for he is lank and lean, and his countenance is deathly and black and livid, and each hair appears to stand erect upon his head. Prudence bids him tell before (them) who he is, and whence he has come, and what he seeks there. “I may not speak anywhere,” he says, “unless I have good audience; therefore listen to me. I am called Fear, and am the messenger of death, and reminder of death, and I am come before her to warn you of her coming.” Prudence, that knows best how to beset her words and also her works, speaketh for them all and asketh whence she shall come and what company she brings with her. Fear answers her, “I know not the time, for she told it me not; but ever be watching when (she shall come), for her custom is to come by stealth, suddenly and unexpectedly, when one least expects. Of her household, concerning which thou makest enquiry, I will answer: she alighteth wheresoever she comes with a thousand devils, and each one bears a great book all written over with sins, with small black letters, and an immense fiery gleed-red chain for to bind and to draw into the midst of hell whomsoever he may prove guilty through his book, in which is described each sin that he hath wrought with will, or with word, or with work, in all his lifetime, except he have previously repented of it with true shrift and amendment.” And Prudence asketh him, “Whence comest thou, Fear, admonition (reminder) of death?” “I come,” he saith, “from hell.” “From hell,” saith Prudence; “and hast thou seen hell?” “Yea, truly,” saith Fear, “often and frequently.” “Now then,” saith Prudence, “upon thy troth tell us truly what hell is like, and what thou hast seen therein.” “And I will, blithely,” saith Fear, “upon my troth; nevertheless, not according as it really is, for no tongue may tell that, but as far as I may and can I will discourse thereof.

hirð euch<sup>1</sup> efter þat he is warde to<sup>2</sup> witene<sup>3</sup>. þe ehnen hare. þe muð his. þe earen hare. þe hondon hare. *ant* euch<sup>4</sup> als wa<sup>5</sup> of þe opre wit<sup>6</sup> þat onont him ne schal nan un-þeaw cumen iN. **A**s þis is ido þus. *ant* is al stille þrinne: warschipe þat *au* is waker is offearet lest sum for truste him. *ant* feole o slepe. *ant* forþeme his warde. *ant* send ham. in a sonde. þat ha wel enaweð. of feorren icumen. forte offearen þeo þe beoð \*ouer hardi. *ant* þeo þe jemelese beoð: halden ham wakere. he is underuon in. *ant* swiðe bihalden of ham alle. for lone he is. *ant* leane<sup>7</sup>. *ant* his leor deaðlich. *ant* blae *ant* elheowet. *ant* euch her puncheð þat stont in his heaued up<sup>8</sup>: warschipe hat him tellen<sup>9</sup> biuoren<sup>10</sup> hwet he beo *ant* hweonene he comme *ant* hwet he þer seche. Ne mei ich he seið. nohwer spoken. bute ich halbe god lust: lustnið me þenne. fearlac ich hatte. *ant* am deaðes sonde. *ant* deaðes munegunge *ant* am icumen biuore hire to warnin ow of hire cume. warschipe þat best con bisetten hire wordes. *ant* ec hire werkes: spekeð for ham alle. *ant* freineð hweonene he cume. *ant* hwuch hird ha leade. fearlac hire ontswereð. Ich nat nawt þe time: for ha ne seide hit me nawt ah eauer lokið hwenne. for hire wune is to cumen bi stale ferliche *ant* unmundlunge hwen me least weneð. of hire hird þat tu easkest Ich þe ondswerie. ha lihteð hwer se ha eauer kimeð wið a þusent deoflen. *ant* euch an bereð a gret boe al of sunnen iwrten wið swarte smeale leattres. *ant* an unrude raketehe gled read of fure. forte binden *ant* to drahen in to in warde helle. hwuch se he mei preoouin þurh his boc þat is on euch sunne enbre\*uedt<sup>11</sup>. þat he wið wil. oðer wið word. oðer wið were. wrahtte in al his lif siðe. bute þat he haueð i-bet earþon wið soð schrift. *ant* wið<sup>12</sup> deadbote. *ant* warschipe hire easkes. Hweonene<sup>13</sup> cumest tu<sup>14</sup> fearlac deaðes<sup>15</sup> munegunge. Ich cume he seið of helle. Of helle ha seið warschipe. *ant* hauest tu isehen helle: 3e seið fearlac witerliche. ofte. *ant* ilome. Nu seið þenne warschipe for þi trowðe treoweliche tele us hwuch is helle. *ant* hwet tu hauest isehen þrin. *ant* ich he seið fearlac omi trewðe bluðeliche. nawt tah efter þat hit is. for þat ne mei na tunge tellen<sup>16</sup>. ah efter þat ich mei *ant* con: þer towart ich chulle readien<sup>17</sup>. **H**elle is [wid] wið

Each watch has his proper duties.

<sup>1</sup> omitted.

<sup>2 3</sup> omitted.

<sup>4</sup> eucian.

<sup>5</sup> al swa as.

<sup>6</sup> wið þ wit.  
Prudence sends a messenger to the house to arouse its inmates.

\* [Fol. 77v.]

He comes from afar, and is horrible to behold.

<sup>7</sup> feier has been erased before leane.

<sup>8</sup> euh er in his heanet puncheð þat stont up.

<sup>9</sup> to telle.

<sup>10</sup> biuoren ham.

He is called Fear, the messenger of Death.

Death, he says, is coming suddenly,

with a thousand devils,

to draw sinners into hell.

\* [Fol. 78r.]  
<sup>11</sup> libruet.

<sup>12</sup> oðer.

<sup>13</sup> hweonne.

<sup>14</sup> MS. to.

Fear says he comes from hell.

<sup>15</sup> þu deaðes.

Prudence bids him describe the place of torment.

<sup>16</sup> omitted.

<sup>17</sup> rodien.

> Hell is wide without measure, and deep and bottomless ; full of incomparable fire, for no earthly fire may be compared therewith ; full of stench intolerable, for no living thing on earth might endure it ; full of unutterable sorrow, for no mouth may, on account of the wretchedness and of the woe thereof, give an account of nor tell about it. Yea, the darkness therein is so thick that one may grasp it, for the fire there gives out no light, but blindeth the eyes of them that are there with a smothering smoke, the worst of smokes. And nevertheless in that same black darkness they see black things as devils, that ever maul them and afflict and harass them with all kinds of tortures ; and tailed drakes, horrible as devils, that devour them whole and spew them out afterwards before and behind ; at other times they rend them in pieces and chew each gobbet of them, and they afterwards become whole again, such as they previously were, to undergo again such bale without recovery, and full well they see themselves very horrible and dreadful ; and to increase their pains the loathsome hell-worms, toads, and frogs that eat out their eyes and nostrils, and adders and water-frogs, not like those (that we see) here, but a hundred times more horrible, sneak (creep) in and out at the mouth, ears, eyes, navel, and at the hollow of the breast, as maggots in putrid flesh, ever-yet (always) thickest. There is shrieking in the flame, and chattering of teeth in the snowy waters. Suddenly they flit from the heat into the cold, nor ever do they know of these two which is worse for them, for each is intolerable. And in this marvellous mingling the latter through the former tormenteth the more. The fire consumes them all to dead coals : the pitch boileth them until they are altogether melted, and revives them anon to undergo again all that same and much worse, ever without end. And this same wanhope (despair) is their greatest torment, that none have never any more hope of any recovery, but are sure of every ill, to continue in woe, world without end, ever in eternity. Each chokes the other, and each is another's torment, and each hateth another and himself as the black devil ; and even as they loved them the more in this world, so the more shall they hate them there. And each curseth another, and gnaws off the other's (arms), ears, and nose also. I have begun to tell of things that I am not able to bring to any end, though I had a thousand tongues of steel, and told until they were all worn out. But



ute met. *ant* deop wið ute grunde. ful of brune uneuenlich<sup>1</sup>. for ne mei nan eorðlich fur euenin þer towart. ful of stench unþolelich. for ne mahte in eorðe na cwic þinge hit þolien. ful of sorhe untalelich. for ne mei na muð for wrecchedom ne for wa : rikenin hit<sup>2</sup> ne tellen. Se<sup>3</sup> picke is þrinne þe posternesse : þat me<sup>4</sup> hire mei grapin. for þat fur. ne ȝeueð na liht. ah blent ham þe ehnen. þe þer beoð wið a smorðrinde smoke smeeche forcuðest. *ant* tah ipat ilke swarte þeosternesse swarte þinges ha iseoð as deoffen þat ham meallið *ant* derueð *ââ* *ant* dreecheð wið alles cunnes pinen. *ant* iteilede draken grisliche ase<sup>5</sup> deoffen þe forswolleð ham ihal. *ant* speoweð ham \*eft ut biuoren *ant* bihinden. oðer hwile torendeð ham *ant* to cheoweð ham euh greot. *ant* heo eft iwurðeð hal. to a swuch bale bute bote. as ha ear weren. *ant* ful wel ha i seoð ham to grisle *ant* to grure. *ant* to echen hare pine. þe laðe helle wurmes. tadden *ant* froggen. þe freoteð ham ut te ehnen. *ant* te nease. gristles. *ant* snikeð in. *ant* ut neddren. *ant* eauraskes<sup>6</sup>. nawt ilieh þeose her : ah<sup>7</sup> hundret siðe grisluiker et muð. *ant* et earen. ed ehnen. *ant* ed neauele. *ant* ed te breoste holke as meaðen<sup>8</sup> iforrotet flesch eauergete pickest. þer is remunge<sup>9</sup> ipe brune. *ant* toðes hechelunge ipe snawi weattres. ferliche ha flutteð from þe heate : in<sup>10</sup> to þe chele. Ne<sup>11</sup> neauer nuten ha of þeos twa : hweðer ham puncheð wurse. for eiðer is unþolelich. *ant* ipis ferliche mong þe leatere þurh þe earre derueð þe mare. þat fur ham forbearneð al to colen calde. þat pich ham forwalleð aðet ha beon for mealte. *ant* eft acwikeð<sup>12</sup> anan to drehen al þat ilke : *ant* muchedeale wurse *â* wið uten ende. *Ant* tis ilke unhope is ham meast pine. þat nan naueð neauer mare hope<sup>13</sup> of<sup>14</sup> nan a couerunge. Ah<sup>15</sup> aren sikere of euh uuel to þurh leasten iwa from world in to worlde *ââ* on echnesse. Euh aprusmeð oðer. *ant* euh is oðres pine. *Ant* euchan heateð oðer. *ant* him seoluen as \*þe blake deouel. *ant* eauer se ha i þis world luueden ham mare : se ha þer heatieð ham swiðere. *ant* eiðer curseð oðer. *ant* fret of þe oðres earen<sup>16</sup>. *ant* te<sup>17</sup> nease als wa. Ich habbe bigunne to<sup>18</sup> tellen of þing þat ich ne mahte nawt bringe to eni ende. þah ich hefde a þusent tungen of stele *ant* takde aðet ha weren alle forwerede. Ah þencheð nu her<sup>19</sup> þurh hwuch þe measte

Hell is immeasurably wide and bottomless, full of stench and unutterable sorrow.

<sup>1</sup> unwerilich.

<sup>2</sup> omitted.

<sup>3</sup> so.

<sup>4</sup> omitted.

The darkness there may be felt.

A smothering smoke blinds the eyes of the damned.

Devils beat the wretched souls.

<sup>5</sup> as þe.

\*[Fol. 78vº.]

They eat and afterwards vomit them.

In hell are horrible toads and frogs, which gnaw the wicked souls.

<sup>6</sup> eauraskes.

<sup>7</sup> an.

<sup>8</sup> me deð.

<sup>9</sup> MS. renninge.

<sup>10</sup> omitted.

Heat and cold alternately torment them.

<sup>12</sup> acwickenenð.

And worst of all is their despair.

<sup>13</sup> <sup>14</sup> omitted.

<sup>15</sup> ah aa.

Each wretched soul hates the other, and himself, as the devil.

\*[Fol. 79rº.]

They curse each other.

<sup>16</sup> oðeres

earm. earen.

<sup>17</sup> omitted.

<sup>18</sup> forto.

<sup>19</sup> hwer.



think now by this what the greatest pain is ; for the least pain is so hard, that had a man slain both my father and mother, and all the remnant (end) of my kin, and done to me all the shame and the harm that a living man might endure, yet if I saw this man in the least pain that I see in hell I would, if it might be, endure a thousand deaths to rid (release) him out thereof, so horrible and piteous is that sight to behold ; for though there were never any other pain, except to see the wretched spirits and their horrible forms ; to look on their grim and dreadful faces, and to hear their roaring, and how they in scorn reproach and upbraid each other with their sins ; this infamy, and the horror of them, would be immeasurable pain ; and moreover to endure and to bear their immense blows with steel mallets, and with their awls (hooks) gleed-red, and their buffetings, as though it might be a pileh-clout, each one toward the other in divers pains. O hell, death's house, abode of woe, of dread, and of groaning ; horrid home, and hard dwelling of all miseries ; city of bale, and the abode of every bitterness, thou most loathsome land of all, thou dark place, filled with all dreariness ! I quake with dread and fear, and each bone quivereth within me, and each hair bristles up at the thought of thee ; for there is no voice between the damned but woe me ! woe is me ! and woe is thee ! and woe is thee ! And woe they cry, and woe they have ; nor shall they ever have any lack of whatever is woeful. It were well for those that earn (merit) this abode through any temporary bliss here in this world that they were never born. By this ye may somewhat understand what hell is like, for, of a truth, I have seen therein a thousand times worse (than I have told you). And from thence cometh death with a thousand devils hitherward, as I have said ; and I came thus," quoth Fear, "for to warn you thereof, and to tell you these tidings." "Now, Lord God !" quoth Prudence, "guard and preserve us, and direct and advise us what we ought to do, and that we may be the more cautious and vigilant to keep ourselves safe on each side under God's wings. If we well guard and keep our house and God's dear treasure that he has entrusted to us, let death come whenever he will, we need not be in dread of her nor of hell ; for our death will be precious to God, and entrance into heaven. Of this treacherous world, or of her false bliss, let us never take any heed, for all that is on the earth is but a shadow ; for all turneth to nought

pine beo ! for þe leaste pine is se heard þat hefde a mon i slein  
 ba mi feader. *ant* mi moder *ant* al þe<sup>1</sup> ende of<sup>2</sup> mi cun. *ant* i do  
 me seoluen al þe scheome *ant* te hearm þat ewie mon mahte  
 polien. *ant* ich iseh þes mon i þe ilke<sup>3</sup> leaste pine. þat ich<sup>4</sup> iseh  
 in helle ! Ich wakde ȝef hit mahte beon. polien a þusent deaðes  
 to a rudden him ut þrof. swa is þe sihðe grislich *ant* reowðful  
 to bihalden. for<sup>5</sup> þah neauer nere nan oðer pine bute to i seon  
 eauer þe unseli gastes. *ant* hare grisliche schape. biscon on hare  
 grimfule. *ant* grurefule nebbes. *ant* heren hare rarunge. *ant* hu  
 ha wið hokeres edwiteð *ant* up breideð euch an his sunnen. þis<sup>6</sup>  
 schenðlac *ant* te grure of ham were unimete pine ! *ant* hure  
 polien *ant* a beoren hare unirude<sup>7</sup> dundes wið mealles istelet. *ant*  
 wið hare eawles gled reade hare dustlunges. as þah hit were  
 a pilehe clut euchan towart oðer imisliche pinen. O helle  
 deaðes hus. wununge of wanunge. of grure *ant* of granunge.  
 heatel \*ham. *ant* heard wan. of alle wontreaðes. buri of bale.  
*ant* bold of eauer euch bitternesse<sup>8</sup>. þu laðest lont of alle. þu dore  
 stude ifullet of alle dreorinesses. Ich cwakie of grisle<sup>9</sup>. *ant* of  
 grure. *ant* euch ban sehokeð<sup>10</sup> me. *ant* euch her me rueð<sup>11</sup> up of<sup>12</sup> þi  
 munegunge. for nis þer na steuene bitubhe þe forðemde bute  
 wunme. *ant* wa is me. and wa beo þe. *ant* wa beo þe. wa ha  
 ȝeieð. *ant* wa ha habbeð ne of al þat eauer wa is ! ne schal ham  
 neauer wontin. þe swuch wununge of earneð. for ei hwilinde  
 blisse her o þisse worlde ! wel were him ȝef<sup>13</sup> þat he neauer ibore  
 nere. bi þis ȝe mahen sumdel witen hwuch is helle. for i wis ich  
 habbe þrin isehen a þusent siðe wurse. *ant* from þeonne kimeð  
 deað wið a þusent deoffen hiderwart as ich seide. *ant* ich<sup>14</sup> com  
 þus quoð fearlac forte warnin ow fore ! *ant* tellen ow þeos<sup>15</sup>  
 tidinges. Nv lauerd godd quoð warschipe wardi us *ant* werie.  
*ant* rihte us. *ant* reade hwet us beo to donne. *ant* we beon þe<sup>16</sup>  
 warre *ant* wakere to witen us on euch half under godes wengen.  
 ȝef we wel werieð *ant* witeð ure hus *ant* godes deore tresor þat  
 he haueð bitaht us ! cume deað hwen he wule<sup>17</sup>. Ne þurue we  
 nowðer beon of dred for hire. ne for helle. for ure deað bið deore  
 godd *ant* in-ȝong in to heouene. of þeos fikeline world ! ne of  
 hire false<sup>18</sup> blisse : ne neome we neauer ȝemc. for al þat is on eorðe.

I would suffer  
 a thousand  
 deaths to  
 deliver the  
 wretched soul  
 from the least  
 pain of hell,  
 though he  
 had slain all  
 my kin.

<sup>1 2</sup> omitted.

<sup>3 4</sup> omitted.

<sup>5</sup> omitted.

It would be an  
 immeasurable  
 pain only to  
 behold the  
 tortures of the  
 damned.

<sup>6</sup> wið.

<sup>7</sup> unrude.

O hell, abode  
 of woes,

\* [Fol. 79v<sup>o</sup>.

<sup>8</sup> bold eauer  
 euch bitter-  
 nesse is of.

I quake and  
 quiver when  
 I think of  
 thee !

<sup>9</sup> grissen.

<sup>10</sup> sorheð.

<sup>11</sup> runeð (or  
 runeð).

<sup>12</sup> for.

There is never  
 any lack  
 there of all  
 that is sor-  
 rowful.

<sup>13</sup> omitted.

<sup>14</sup> omitted.

I come to  
 warn you of  
 these things.

<sup>15</sup> o is blotted  
 or erased.

The advice of  
 Prudence.

<sup>16</sup> omitted.

<sup>17</sup> ha eauer  
 wule.

Trust not this  
 false world.

<sup>18</sup> fahe.

except that dear treasure, God's precious fee, that is entrusted to us to be kept safely. I have therefore sore care, for I see," saith Prudence, "how the devil, with his host, as a raging lion, goeth about seeking eagerly how he may devour it (God's treasure); and thus I may," saith Prudence, "guard you against his enmity (malice) and his devices, but I may not guard you against his strength (violence)." "Do now tell us, sister Prudence," quoth Strength, "what befalleth to thee, and warn us of his wiles; for of all his strength we have not any dread; for his strength prevails not, except wheresoever he finds them poor and weak, unwarned (unguarded) by true belief. The apostle saith, 'Resist the devil and he will flee forthwith.' Should we then flee from him? Nay! Is not God our shield, and all our weapons are of his dear grace? and God is on our side, and standeth by us in battle. If he shooteth towards me with the wealth and bliss of the world, with the delights of the fleshly lusts, I might care somewhat for these soft (nesh) weapons; but no hard things may terrify me, nor may any harm nor any loss make my heart false, nor impair my belief toward him that gives me all my strength (powers)." "For it behoves me," quoth Moderation, "both for the severity of harm and for lack of bliss, to have dread and care (sorrow); for many, on account of the too great hardship of woe that they suffer, forget our Lord, and nevertheless more, through softness (prosperity) and the lusts of the flesh, become oftentimes reckless. Between hard and soft—between woe of this world and too much joy—between much and little, in every earthly thing, the middle way is the golden (one). If we hold to it, then go we safely, nor need we fear death or the devil. Whatever may be of hardships I dread, but not of softness (prosperity); for no weal nor fleshly lusts nor bodily pleasure may cause me to overstep the middle (mean) of measure and of moderation." Righteousness (Equity) speaks now and says, "My sister Prudence, that hath wit and discerneth between good and evil, and knoweth in everything what is to be chosen and to be shunned, adviseth us and teacheth us for to take little heed to perishable things, and to keep prudently those that shall last for ever, and saith, as she truly saith, that through ignorance she may not sin, and yet she is not so confident about the strength of the devil, but esteems herself weak though she have much power; and the eyes of us all deem her to be powerless, as to herself, to withstand his devices, and she acts

nis bute as a schadewe ! for al wurðeð<sup>1</sup> \*to noht bute þat deore  
 tresor godes deorewurðe feh þat is us. bitaht to witene. Ich  
 habbe þernore sar care for ich iseo seið warschipe hu þe unwhiht  
 wið his ferd ase liun iburst. 3eað<sup>2</sup> abuten ure hus sechinde<sup>3</sup> 3eorn-  
 liche hu he hit forswolbe. *ant* tis ich mei seið warschipe warnin  
 ow of his lað *ant* for his wrenches. ah ich ne mei nawt a3cines  
 his strengðe. Do nu quoð strengðe. warschipe suster þat te  
 limpet to þe *ant* warne us of his wiheles. for<sup>4</sup> of al his strengðe  
 ne drede we nawiht. for nis his strengðe noht wurð bute hwer  
 se he ifindeð eðeliche. *ant* wake unwarnede of treowe bileaue.  
 þe apostle seið. Etstont. þen feont. *ant* he flið anan riht. schulde  
 we þenne fleon him ! 3enis godd ure scheld. *ant* alle beoð ure  
 wepnen of his deore grace. *ant* godd is on<sup>5</sup> ure half. *ant* stont bi  
 us ifehte. 3ef he schute towart me wið weole *ant* wunne of þe  
 world. wið este of flesches lustes. of þulliche nesche wepnen ich  
 mahte carien summes weis. ah ne mei me na þing hearðes  
 offearen. ne nowcin. ne na wone<sup>6</sup> falsi min heorte ne wursi mi  
 bileaue towart him þat 3eueð me alle mine strengðen. For ba  
 me ah. quoð meað. *ant* for heart<sup>7</sup> of nowcin. *ant* for wone of  
 wunne dreden. *ant* carien for moni for to muchel heard of wa  
 þat he dreheð. for3et ure lauerl. *ant* ma þah for nesche *ant* for  
 flesches licunge for \*3emeð ham ofte. bituhhen heard *ant* nesche.  
 bituhhe wa of þis world *ant* to muche wunne. bituhhe muchel  
*ant* lutel is in euch worldlich þing þe middel wei 3uldene. 3ef we  
 hire haldeð þenne gawe sikerliche ne þerf us nowðer for deað ne  
 for deouel dreden. hwet se beo of hearðes ne drede ich nawiht  
 nesches for ne mei na wunne. ne na flesches licunge ne<sup>8</sup> licomlich  
 este bringe me ouer þe midel of mesure. *ant* of mete. Riht-  
 wissnesse spekeð nu. Mi suster ha seið warschipe þe haueð wit.  
*ant* schad bituhhe god. *ant* uuel. *ant* wat hwet is in euch þing  
 to cheosen *ant* to schunien ! readeð us *ant* leareð forte 3eme  
 lutel alle fallinde þing. *ant* witen warliche þeo þe schulen á lesten.  
*ant* seið as ha soð seið þat þurh unweotenesse<sup>9</sup> ne mei ha nawt  
 sunegin. *ant* tah nis nawt siker of þe unwihtes strengde as þeo  
 þe halt hire wac þah ha beo muche wurð. *ant*<sup>10</sup> ure alre ehnen  
 demeð hire unmihti onont hire seoluen to etstonden wið his.

\* [Fol. 80r<sup>o</sup>.]<sup>1</sup> wurcheð.I can guard  
you against  
wiles of the  
devil.<sup>2</sup> geð.<sup>3</sup> sechinde in  
song.<sup>4</sup> from for to  
nawiht  
omitted.<sup>5</sup> on ont.Strength says  
that she fears  
only worldly  
prosperity.<sup>6</sup> MS. wode.Moderation  
fears worldly  
poverty and  
hardships.<sup>7</sup> hard.\* [Fol. 80v<sup>o</sup>.]The mean  
between two  
extremes is  
the golden  
way.<sup>8</sup> ne of.Equity praises  
the words of  
Prudence.<sup>9</sup> unwitting.  
ness.<sup>10</sup> to.

as the wise (do). My sister Strength is very bold, and saith that no hardships may frighten her ; but yet she would not trust on her own weapons, but on God's grace, and that I deem to be right and wisdom so to do. My third sister, Moderation, speaketh of the middle path, between right and left, that few can observe ; and saith, that in prosperity (softness) she is bold, and hardships may terrify her, and therefore boasteth she of no confidence, and doth as the wise (do). My business is to act and to decide equitably ; and I deem myself so that I, through myself, may do it (sin) not ; for all the good that we have here is of God. Now it is right, then, that we deem ourselves ever weak to guard and to keep ourselves in safety, or to hold fast any good without God's help. The righteous God will that we deem ourselves poor and low, though we be never such, for then he deemeth us of much worth and good, and esteems us as his daughters. For though my first sister is aware of each evil, and my second sister is strong against everything injurious, and my third (sister is) temperate in all kinds of pleasures, and I act and decide rightly ; except we be mild (meek) with all this, and esteem ourselves weak, God may rightly condemn us for all this, through our pride, and therefore is it a right doom (decision) that we for all our good thank Him alone." Wit, the husband, God's constable, hears all their words, and thanks God earnestly with very glad heart for so rich a loan as are these sisters his four daughters, that he hath lent him as a help to guard well and protect his castle and God's precious fee, which is enclosed therein. The wilful housewife keeps herself quiet ; and all that household, that she was accustomed to draw after her, turn then faithfully to Wit, their lord (master), and to these four sisters. For a while Prudence again speaketh, and saith, "I see a messenger coming, very glad in cheer, fair and joyful, and lovely attired." "Let him in," saith Wit ; "if God will, he bringeth us glad tidings, and that we have much need of, for Fear, death's messenger, hath with his (tidings) terrified us very much withal." Prudence lets him in, and he greeteth Wit the lord and afterwards all the household with a laughing cheer ; and they return him his greeting, and all are, it seems to them, relieved and gladdened by his appearance ; for all the house shineth and shimmereth (glistens) with his light. He asketh them if they would like to hear him a while. "Yea," quoth Righteous-



turnes *ant* deð ase þe wise. Mi suster strengðe is swiðe bald. *ant* seið þat<sup>1</sup> nawiht hearðes ne mei hire offearen. ah þah ha ne trust nawt on hire ahne wepnen ! ah deð o godes grace *ant* þat ich demi riht *ant* wisdom to donne. Mi þridde suster meað spekeð of þe middel sti. bituhhe riht *ant* luft þat lut cunnen halden. \**ant* seið i nesche ha is bald. *ant* heard mei hire offearen. *ant* for þi ne zelped ha of na sikernesse *ant* deð as þe wise. Mi meoster is to do riht forte demen *ant*<sup>2</sup> ich deme me seolf þat ich þurh me ne do bit nawt ! for al þat god is of godd þat we her habbeð. Nu is riht þenne þat we demen us seolf eauer unmihtie to werien *ant* to witen us oðer ei god to halden wið ute godes helpe. Þe rihtwise godd wule þat we demen us seolf eðeliche *ant* lahe. Ne beo we neauer swucche ! for þenne demeð he us muche wurð. *ant* gode *ant* halt for his dehtren. for þah mi forme suster war beo of euch uel. *ant* min oðer strong beo to ʒeines euch nowcin ! *ant* mi þridde meaðful in alles cunnes estes ! *ant* ich do riht *ant* deme. bute we wið al þis milde beon *ant* meoke ! *ant* halden us wake. godd mei mid rihte fordemen us of al þis þurh ure prude. *ant* for þi is riht dom þet we al ure god þonkin him ane. Wiit þe husebonde godes cunestable hereð alle hare sahen *ant* þonkeð god ʒeorne wið swiðe glead heorte of se riche lane as beoð þeos sustren his fowr dehtren þat he haueð ileanet him on helpe forte wite wel *ant* werien his castel. *ant* godes deorewurðe feh. þat is biloke þrinne. Þe willesfule husewif halt hire al stille. *ant*<sup>3</sup> al þat hird þat ha wes i wunet to dreaien<sup>4</sup> efter hire ! turneð \*ham treowliliche to wit hare lauerd. *ant* to þeos fowr sustren. Vmben ane stunde spekeð eft warschipe. *ant* seið ich iseo a sonde cumen swide gledd icheret. feier *ant* freolich *ant* leofliche aturnet. let him in seið wit ʒef godd wule he bringeð us gleade tidinges. *ant* þat us were muche neod. for fearlac deaðes sonde haueð wið his ! offearet us swiðe mid alle. warschipe let him in. *ant* he gret wit þen lauerd. *ant* al þat<sup>5</sup> hird seoðen. wið lahhinde chere. *ant* ha ʒeldeð him his gretunge. *ant* beoð alle ilihitet *ant* igleadet ham þuncheð of his on-silðe. for al þat hus schineð. *ant* schimneð of his leome. he easkeð ham<sup>6</sup> ʒef ham bilueð to heren him ane hwile. ʒe quod ha rihtwisnesse.

Strength is  
praised for  
trusting in  
God,

<sup>1</sup> þat ha.

and  
Moderation  
for not being  
too confident.

\* [Fol. 81r.]

Equity's  
advice to the  
three sisters.

<sup>2</sup> to don riht  
*ant* riht fon  
*ant* demen.

Wit thanks  
God for the  
loan of the  
three sisters.

<sup>3</sup> þa

<sup>4</sup> dreien.

\* [Fol. 81v.]

Prudence  
announces the  
coming of  
another  
messenger,

<sup>5</sup> his.

who gladdens  
them all by his  
appearance.

<sup>6</sup> omitted.



ness, "it pleaseth us well, and it is well and right that we listen to thee attentively." "Hearken now then," he saith, "and truly understand that I am the messenger of mirth, and the admonition of eternal life, and am called the 'Love of Life,' and I come straight from heaven where I have seen now and oft before the bliss that no man's tongue may tell of. The blessed God saw you terrified and somewhat cast down through what Fear told you of death and of hell, and hath sent me to gladden you, not because that it is not all truth that he hath said, and that shall all evil men experience and find (true). But ye, with the help of God, need not fear anything, for he that sitteth on high is your help, and he is the all-ruling one who hath you in his keeping." "Ah!" saith Prudence, "welcome Love of Life; and for the love of God himself, if thou ever saw him, tell us somewhat of him and of his eternal bliss." "Yea, truly," quoth Love of Life, the messenger of mirth, "I have seen him oft, yet not as he is, for against (compared with) the brightness and the light of his countenance the sun-gleam is dark and seemeth a shadow; and therefore I was not able to look toward nor behold the gleam of his countenance, except through a bright mirror between me and him, that shielded my eyes. So have I often seen the holy Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, three and indivisible. But only for a little while was I able to endure the gleam, but somewhat (longer) I was able to behold our Lord Jesu Christ, God's Son, that redeemed us on the cross—how he sits blissful on the right hand of his Father, who is almighty, and ruleth in that eternal life without cessation. So marvellous is his beauty that the angels are never satiated in beholding him. And moreover I saw plainly the places of his wounds, and how he showeth them to his Father, to make known how he loved us, and how he was obedient to him who sent him thus to redeem us, and he (Christ) beseecheth him ever for mankind's heal (salvation). After him I saw on high, above all heavenly (hosts), the blessed Virgin his mother, called Mary, sitting on a throne so very bright, adorned with gems, and her face so joyful that every earthly light is darkness in comparison with it. There I saw how she entreats her precious Son so earnestly and so inwardly (truly) for those that serve her, and he grants her blithely all that she beseecheth. When I could no longer endure that light, I looked towards the angels and archangels

wel us biluueð hit. *ant* wel is riht þat we þe liðeliche lustnin.

**H**erenið nu þenne he seið. *ant* ȝeornliche understondeð. [I]ch am murðes sonde. *ant* munegunge<sup>1</sup> of eche lif. *ant* liues luue i haten *ant* cume riht from heouene þat ich habbe isehen nu *ant* ofte ear þe blisse þat na monnes tunge ne mei of tellen. þe iblescede godd iseh ow offruhte. *ant* sumdel drupnin<sup>2</sup> of þat fearlac talde of deað. *ant* of helle. *ant* sende me to gleadien ow. nawt for þi þat hit ne beo al soð þat he seide. *ant* þat schulen alle uuele fondin. *ant* ifinden. Ah ȝe wið þe fulst of godd ne þurue na þing dreden for he sit on \*heh þat is ow on helpe. *ant* is al wealdent þat haueð ow to witene. **A** seið warschipe welcume

liues. luue. *ant* for þe luue of godd seolf ȝef þu eauer sehe him : tele us sumhwet of him. *ant* of his eche blisse. ȝe iseoð *quod* liues luue : Murhdes sonde. Ich habbe isehen him ofte nawt tah als wa as he is : for aȝein þe brihtnesse *ant* te liht of his leor. þe sunne gleam is dosc. *ant* þuncheð aschadewe<sup>3</sup>. *ant* for þi ne mahte ich nawt aȝein þe leome of his wlite lokin ne bihalden : bute þurh a schene schawere<sup>4</sup> bitulhe me *ant* him þat schilde mine ehnen. Swa ich habbe ofte isehen þe<sup>5</sup> hali þrunnesse<sup>6</sup>. feader *ant* sune. *ant* hali gast. þreo an unto-dealet. ah lute hwile ich mahte þolie þe leome. ah summes weis ich mahte bihalden ure lauerd ihesu crist godes sune þat bohte us o rode. Hu he sit blisful<sup>7</sup> on his feader riht half þat is al wealdent rixleð i þat eche<sup>8</sup> lif bute linnunge. se unimete feier : þat te engles ne beoð neauer ful on him to bihalden. *ant* ȝet ich iseh etscene<sup>9</sup> þe studen of his wunden. *ant* hu he schaweð ham his feader to cuðen hu he luuede us *ant* hu he wes buhsum to him þe sende him swa to alesen us *ant* bisecheð him a for moncunnes heale.

**E**fter him ich iseh on heh ouer alle heouenliche þe eadi meiden his<sup>10</sup> moder marie i-nempnet sitten in \*a trone se swiðe briht wid ȝimmes i-stirret. *ant* hire wlite se weoleful<sup>11</sup>. þat euch eorðlich liht : is þeoster þe[r] o ȝeines. þear ich iseh as ha bit hire deore wurðe sune se ȝeornliche. *ant* se inwardliche for þeo þat hire seruið. *ant* he hire ȝetteð blideliche al þat ha bi secheð. **Þ**et liht þa ich ne mahte lengre þolien<sup>12</sup> : Ich biseh to þe engles *ant* to þe archangles *ant* to þe oðre : þe beoð buuen ham. iblescede<sup>13</sup>

He says that he is called Love of Life, and comes straight from heaven.

<sup>1</sup> muneg.

<sup>2</sup> durenin.

\* [Fol. 82<sup>ro</sup>.]

Prudence beseeches him to tell them somewhat of God and of heaven.

<sup>3</sup> þuncheð dosc, *ant* as aschadewe.

<sup>4</sup> schadewe.

The Love of Life tells how he saw the Holy Trinity

<sup>5</sup> him. þe.

<sup>6</sup> or þrunnesse.

and the Son of God sitting at the Father's right hand.

<sup>7</sup> wonderful.

<sup>8</sup> riche.

<sup>9</sup> ȝet is eðsene.

I saw, he says, the holy Maiden, his mother, sitting on a bright throne,

<sup>10</sup> *ant*.

\* [Fol. 82<sup>vo</sup>.]

<sup>11</sup> meiful.

and the angels and archangels ;

<sup>12</sup> na mare of hire iþolien.

<sup>13</sup> iblesce.

and to the others that are above them, blessed spirits who are ever before God and ever serve him, and sing ever unweariedly. Nine hosts there are, but how they are ordered and severally placed, one above the other, and each one's duties, would be long to tell. So much mirth I had of the sight that I was unable for a long while to look elsewhere. After them I looked towards the patriarchs and the prophets, who make such mirth because they are now in that same land of bliss, which they had afar wept for previously on earth, and they see now all that become verified which they had long before prophesied of our Lord, as he had showed them in spiritual vision. I saw the Apostles (that were) poor and low on earth, filled and possessed all with extraordinary blisses, sitting on thrones, and all that is high in this world under their feet, ready to judge, in the day of doom, kings and kaisers, and all kindreds of all kinds of nations. I beheld the martyrs and their marvellous mirth, who suffered here tortures and death for our Lord, and esteemed lightly all kinds of harms and earthly torments as compared with the bliss to come that God manifested to them in their hearts. After them I beheld the assembly of confessors, who lived in good life and died holy, that shine, as do the stars, in the eternal bliss and see God in his glory, who hath wiped all tears from their eyes. I saw the shining and bright company of the blessed maidens most like to angels, and most participating with them in their blisses and joys ; who living in the flesh surpass the laws of the flesh and overcome nature, who lead a heavenly life on earth, and so they win their mirth and their bliss. The beauty of their features, the sweetness of their song, no tongue may tell. All sing who are there, but their song none may sing but they. So sweet a smell followeth them whithersoever they go, that one might live ever by the sweetness. Whomsoever they intercede for is certainly saved ; for at their prayers God himself ariseth, who sitting heareth all the other saints." "Very much," quoth Prudence, "pleaseth us what thou sayest ; but now thou hast so well spoken of every order of the blessed severally, say to us somewhat now what bliss is common to all alike." And the Love of Life answereth her, "The common bliss is sevenfold—length of life, wisdom and love, and because of the love a gladness without measure (bounds), pleasant songs of praise, lightness (or swiftness), and security is the seventh." "Though I," saith Prudence,

gastes þe beoð a biuore godd *ant* seruið him eauer. *ant* singeð  
 a unwerþeð. Nihe wordes þer beoð. ah<sup>1</sup> hu ha beoð i-ordret  
*ant* sunderliche isette. þe an buue þe oðre. *ant* euchanes meoster  
 were long to tellen. Se muche murhðe ich hefde on hare on  
 sihðe ! þat ne mahte ich longe hwile elles hwider lokin. *Efter*  
 ham ich iseh towart te patriarches. *ant* te prophetes þe makied  
 swuch murhðe þat ha aren nuðe i þat ilke lont of blisse þat ha  
 hefden of feor igret ear<sup>2</sup> on eorðe *ant* seoð nu al þat isoðet. þat  
 ha hefden longe ear icwiddet of ure lauere as he hefde ischawed  
 ham igastelich sihðe. Ich iseh þe apostles poure<sup>3</sup>. *ant* lah on  
 eorðe. ifullet *ant* biȝoten al of unimete blisse sitten i trones. *ant*  
 al under hare uet þat heh is i þe worlde. ȝarowe forte demen i þe  
 dei of dome kinges *ant* keiseres. *ant* alle cunreadnes<sup>4</sup> of alle  
 cunnes ledenes. \*Ich biheolt te Martyrs. *ant* hare unimete  
 murhðe þe þoleden her pinen. *ant* deað for ure lauere. *ant* liht-  
 liche talden to alles cunnes neowcins. *ant* eorðliche tintreohen  
 aȝeines þe blisse þat godd in hare heorte schawede ham to cumene.  
*Efter* ham ich biheolt þe cunfessurs hird þe liuden igod lif. *ant*  
 haliche deiden. þe schineð as doð steorren iþe eche blissen. *ant*  
 seoð<sup>5</sup> godd in his wlite þat haueð alle teares iwipet of hare ehnen.  
 Ich iseh þat schene. *ant* þat brihte ferreden of þe eadi meidnes  
 ilikest towart engles. *ant* feolohlukest wið ham blissin *ant*  
 gleadien. þe libbinde iflesche onergað flesches lahe *ant* ouercumeð  
 cunde þe leadeð heouenlich lif in eorðe as ha wunieð hare murhðe.  
*ant* hare blisse. þe feierlec of hare wlite. þe swetnesse of hare  
 song ! ne mei na tunge tellen. Alle ha singeð þe<sup>6</sup> þer beoð. Ah  
 hare song ne mahe nane buten heo singen. Se swote smal ham  
 folheð hwider se ha wendeð. þat me mahte libben aa bi þe swot-  
 nesse. hwam se heo bisecheð fore ! is sikerliche iborhen. for  
 aȝein hare bisoenen ! godd him seolf ariseð þat alle þe oðre  
 halhen<sup>7</sup> sittende ihereð. Swiðe wel quod warschipe likeð us þat  
 tu seist. Ah nu þu hauest se wel iseið of euch a<sup>8</sup> setnesse ! of þe  
 seli sunder-lepes sumhwet sei us nu hwuch blisse is to alle iliche  
 meane ! *ant* liues luue hire ondsweðeð. \*Pe imeane blisse is  
 seouenfold. lengðe of lif. wit. *ant* luue. *ant* of þe luue a gleadunge.  
 wið-ute met murie. loft song. *ant* lihtschipe. *ant* sikernesce. is

nine hosts of  
 angels,  
<sup>1</sup> *ant*.

and the holy  
 patriarchs and  
 prophets.

<sup>2</sup> igreðet.

I saw also the  
 Apostles  
 sitting on  
 thrones.

<sup>3</sup> þat poure  
 weren.

<sup>4</sup> cunreðs.

I beheld the  
 martyrs,  
 \* [Fol. 83<sup>ro</sup>.]

the holy  
 confessors,

<sup>5</sup> iseoð.

and the holy  
 company of  
 virgins.

<sup>6</sup> from þe to  
 singen omit-  
 ted.

Whomsoever  
 they intercede  
 for is saved.

<sup>7</sup> he walden.

<sup>8</sup> euchan to.

\* [Fol. 83<sup>vo</sup>.]

Description of  
 the bliss  
 shared by all  
 in heaven.



“understand somewhat of this, thou must reveal this more plainly, and explain to these others.” “And it shall be so, Prudence,” saith Love of Life, “as thou desirest. They live ever in a splendour that is sevenfold brighter and clearer than the sun, and ever in a strength to perform, without any toil, all that they wish, and evermore in a state, in all that ever is good, without diminution, without anything that may harm or ail, in all that is ever soft or sweet. And their life is the sight of God and the knowledge of God, as our Lord hath said. ‘That is eternal life,’ he said, ‘to see and know the true God and him that he hath sent, Jesus Christ our Lord, for our redemption.’ And they are therefore, like him, in the same form that he is, for they see him as he is, face to face. They are so wise that they know all God’s counsels, his mysteries, and his dooms (judgments), which are secret and deeper than any sea dingle. They see in God all things, and learn concerning all that is and was and ever shall be, what it is, why and whereto, and whereof it began. They love God without measure, because they understand how he hath done by them, through his great goodness, and how they ought to requite his precious mercy, and each one loveth another as much as himself. So glad they are of God that all their bliss is so great that no mouth may make mention of it, nor any speech discourse of it. Because that each one loveth another as himself, each one hath of another’s good (bliss) as much joy as of his own. By this ye may see and know that each one severally hath as many joys as they are many in number; and each of these same joys is to every one as great a joy as his own in particular. Yet above all this, since each one loveth God and then all the others more than himself, the more glad are they of God[’s bliss], without any ailing (grief), and that of all the others than of his own joy. Take heed now then, if the heart of no one is ever able to contain in herself her own special joy, so marvellously great is the one bliss, how shall she accept so many and so great blisses? Therefore our Lord said to those that had pleased him, *Intra in gaudium Domini sui*—‘Go,’ quoth he, ‘into thy Lord’s bliss.’ Thou must go therein altogether and be altogether possessed therein, for in thee may it in nowise enter. Thercof they praise God, and ever unwearied, ever

þe seoueðe. þah ich þis seið warschipe sumdel understonde : þu most unwreo þis witerluker *ant* openin to þeos oðre. *ant* hit schal beon seið liues luue warschipe as þu wilnest. **H**a liuieð *ā* in awlite. *þat* is brihtre seoueualeð. *ant* schenre þen þe sunne. *ant* eauer in a strengðe to don buten euch swinc al *þat* ha wulleð. *ant* eauer mare in a steal in al *þat* eauer god is wið ute wonunge. wið uten euch þing *þat* mahe hearmin<sup>1</sup> oðer eilin. in al *þat* eauer is. softe oðer swote. *ant* hare lif is godes sihðe. *ant* godés . . .<sup>2</sup> cnawlechunges as ure lauereð seide. *þat* is quod he<sup>3</sup> eche lif to seon *ant* cnawen sod godd. *ant* him *þat* he sende ihesu crist ure lauereð to ure alesnesse *ant* beoð for þi ilich him ipe ilke wlite *þat* he is. for ha seoð him as he is. nebbe to nebbe. **H**a beoð se wise *þat* ha witen alle godes reades. his runes *ant* his domes<sup>4</sup> þe derne beoð. *ant* deopre þen eni sea dingle. ha seoð igodd alle þing. *ant* witen of al *þat* is *ant* wes *ant* eauer schal iwerden. hwet hit beo. hwi. *ant* hwerto *ant* hwer of hit bigunne<sup>5</sup>. **H**a luuieð god wið ute met. for *þat* ha understondeð hu he haueð bi ham idon þurh his muchele godlec *ant* hwet ha ahen his deorewurde milce to zelden. *ant* euch an luueð oðer ase muchel as him seoluen. **S**e gleade ha beoð of godd : *þat* al is hare blisse. se muchel \**þat* ne mei hit munne na muð. ne spealie na speche for þi *þat* euchan luueð oðer as him seoluen. Euchan haueð of odres god ase muche murhðe as of his ahne<sup>6</sup>. bi þis 3e mahen seon *ant* witen. *þat* euchan haueð sunderlepes ase feole gleadschipes : as ha beod monie alle. *ant* euch of þe ilke gleadschipes is<sup>7</sup> to eauer euch an ase muche gleadunge : as his ahne sunderliche. 3et ouer al þis. hwen euchan luueð godd mare þen him seoluen. *ant* þen alle þe odre : mare he gleadeð of godd wið uten ei etlunges<sup>8</sup> þen of his ahne gleadunge. *ant* of alle þe oðres. Neomeð nu þenne 3eme 3ef neuere anes heorte ne mei in hire [und]<sup>9</sup> eruon hire ahne gleadunge sunderliche [iseide. so unim]ete muchel is þe<sup>10</sup> anlepi blisse. *þat* ha nimeð i[n] hi[re] þus monie. *ant* þus muchele. for þi seide ure lauereð to þeo þe him hefden icewemet. *Intra in gaudium. et cetera.* Ga quoð he in to þi lauereð blisse<sup>11</sup>. þu most al gan þrin. *ant* al beon bigotten þrin for in þe ne mei hit nanesweis<sup>12</sup> neomen in. her of ha herieð godd *ant* singeð

They live in a glory seven times brighter than the sun.

<sup>1</sup> hearmin.

<sup>2</sup> a word erased here in MS.

<sup>3</sup> he seið.

Eternal life is the sight of God.

They know all God's secret counsels.

<sup>4</sup> godes runes. *ant* his reades.

They love God without measure.

<sup>5</sup> beginne.

\* [Fol. 84r<sup>o</sup>.]

<sup>6</sup> as him seoluen.

<sup>7</sup> beoð.

Each loves other better than himself.

<sup>8</sup> ei eilung.

<sup>9</sup> MS. torn.

<sup>10</sup> þen.

The bliss is so great that they go into it—it cannot enter them.

<sup>11</sup> hus.

<sup>12</sup> o nane wise.



alike joyful, they sing this song of praise, *Beati qui habitant, &c.*—Blessed are those, O Lord, who dwell in thine house ; they shall praise thee, world without end. They are all as light and as swift as the sun-gleam that shooteth from east unto west as thine eyelid openeth and shutteth ; for wheresoever the spirit will be there is the body at once without delay, for nothing may withstand them, for one is mighty enough to do all that he desires, yea, to make heaven and earth quake with one of his fingers. Sure they are of all this life, of this wit, of this love, and the joy thereof, and of this bliss, which shall never more become less or be impaired, nor come to an end. This little I have said of what I saw in heaven, but neither saw I all, nor of what I saw can I tell the half.” “Truly,” quoth Prudence, “well we understand that thou hast been there and truly hast spoken thereof, according to thy sight ; and well is him that is prudent and takes forethought how he may best keep his house, in which is God’s treasure, against God’s enemy who warreth ever against it with immorality, for that shall bring him thither where he shall participate and enjoy all that thou hast spoken of, and a hundredfold more of bliss without any sorrow.” Quoth Strength, “Since it is so, what may separate us from the God and hold us back then ? I am confident in God that neither life nor death, nor woe nor weal, shall separate us and his love. But all this he hath prepared for us, if we as true treasurers guard well his treasure which is entrusted to us to be kept, as we shall full well under his wings.” Quoth Prudence, “Cast out Fear, our foe ; it is not right that one house hold these two : for where Mirth’s messenger is and true love of eternal life, Fear is a fugitive.” “Now, Fear, go out,” quoth Strength, “thou shalt no longer remain in our quarters.” Quoth (Fear), “Now what I have said I have said all for your good, and though it was not pleasant, yet my tale was not less true nor less needful to you than that of Mirth’s messenger, though it may not be so delightful nor so pleasant.” (Quoth Moderation), “Each of you hath his time to speak, nor is the tale of either of you to be shunned (disregarded) at its proper time. Thou warnest of woe, he telleth of weal. Much need is there that we should attentively listen to both of you. Flit (depart) now, Fear, while the Love of Life is herein. Bear with even heart the doom of Righteousness, for thou shalt full blithely be received herein, as often as Love of Life ceaseth to speak.

á un werget eauer iliche lusti in þis loft songes. as hit iwriten is. *Beati qui habitant. et cetera.* Eadi beoð þeo lauerd. þe ipin<sup>1</sup> hus  
 wunieð ha schulen herien þe from [worlde into worlde]. **H**a  
 beoð alle ase li[hte *ant* as swifte as þe sunne] gleam þe se[heot  
 from est into west. ase þin] \*eche-lid tuneð ant openeð for hwer  
 se eauer þe gast wule þe hodi is anan riht wið ute lettunge. for  
 ne mei ham na þing azeines etstonden. for each an is al<sup>2</sup> mihti  
 to don al þat he wule. 3e makie to ewakien heouene ba *ant* eorðe  
 wið his an finger. **S**ikere ha beoð of al þis of þulli lif. of þulli  
 wit. of þulli luue *ant*<sup>3</sup> gleadunge prof. *ant* of þulli blisse. þat hit  
 ne me neauer mare lutlin ne wursin. ne neome nan ende. þis lutle  
 ich habbe iseid of þat ich iseh in heouene ah nower neh ne neh  
 ich al. ne þat zet þat ich [iseh. ne] ne con ich half<sup>4</sup> tellen. **W**iter-  
 [liche quoð] warschipe. wel we understondeð þat tu hauest ibeo  
 þear *ant* soð hauest iseid trof. efter þi silðe. ant wel is him  
 þat is war. *ant* bisið him hu he mahe beast halden his hus þat  
 godes tresor is in azeines godes unwine þe weorreð þer towart  
 a wið unþeawes. for þet. schal bringen him þider as he schal. al  
 þis þat tu hauest ispeken of an<sup>5</sup> hundret siðe mare of blisse buten  
 each bale<sup>6</sup> folhin *ant* ifinden. *Quoð* strengðe hwen hit swa is :  
 hwet mei tweamen us from godd *ant* hald[en us þeonne. ih] an  
 siker ine godd. [þat ne schal lif ne deð : ne wa] ne wunne nowðer  
 [to dealen us ant his luue. ah al þis] us haueð igarc<sup>7</sup>[ket 3ef we as  
 treowe tresures witeð wel his tresor þat is bitaht us to halden.  
 as we schulen ful wel under his wengen. **W**arpeð ut quoð  
 warschipe : farlac ure fa. nis nawt riht þat an hus halde þeos  
 tweien. for þer as murðes sonde is : *ant* soð luue of eche lif.  
 farlac is fleme. nu ut quoð strenðe farlac ne schaltu na lengere  
 leuen in ure ende. nu quoð ich seide for god al þat ich seide. *ant*  
 þah hit muri nere nes na lessere mi tale þen wes murðes sondes  
 ne unbihefre to ow. þah hit ne beo so licwurðe ne icweme.  
 Eiðer of ow haueð his stunde to speokene. ne nis incker noðres  
 tale to schunien in his time. þu warnest of wa. he telleð of  
 wunne. muche neod is þat me ow ba 3eornliche hereni. Flute  
 nu farlac þah. hwil liues luue is herinne. *ant* pole wið efne  
 heorte þe dom of rihtwisnesse. for þu schal[t]. ful bliðeliche beon

They have  
 great  
 strength,  
 and live in  
 perfect  
 security.

<sup>1</sup> in þis.

\* [Fol. 84v.]

<sup>2</sup> as.

<sup>3</sup> a.

Happy is he  
 who keeps  
 safe God's  
 treasure.  
 The words of  
 Prudence.

<sup>4</sup> al.

<sup>5</sup> *ant*.

Strength  
 says that  
 nothing shall  
 separate them  
 from God.

<sup>6</sup> wið uten  
 balesið.

<sup>7</sup> Bodl. MS.  
 34 ends here.

Prudence  
 proposes that  
 Fear should  
 be cast out.

Moderation  
 addresses the  
 two mes-  
 sengers.

Now is Will the housewife quite still ; and she who erewhile was so wilful, is now wholly subject to the direction of Wit, who is the husband. And all the household keep themselves still, who were wont to be untoward, and to do after the will of their mistress, and not after Wit ; they listen now to his lore, and each one endeavours to do what befalleth him to do, through these two messengers whom they have heard, and as the four sisters have taught in addition thereto, for against each vice's entrance is ward to be kept and guarded faithfully. Thus ought each man to think often and frequently, and with such thoughts to arouse his heart, which in negligent sleep forgetteth its soul's heal, after (the words of) these two messengers, and from the sight of hell to look to the bliss of heaven—to have fear of the one and love to the other, and to lead himself and his hinds, that is, all his limbs, not after (that which) Will, the untoward mistress, and his (own) lust teacheth, but after what Wit desireth, who is the husband that disciplines and instructs, so that Wit should ever go before and teach Will after him to perform all that he ordains and commands to be done ; and with the four sisters, which are the four cardinal virtues, Prudence, Strength in God, Moderation, and Righteousness, to guard God's treasure, that is, his own soul in the house of the body, from the thief of hell. Such thoughts make a man to flee all vices and inflame his heart towards the bliss of heaven, which may our Lord give us through his holy mercy, that with the Father and the Son and the Holy Ghost reigneth in trinity ever without end. Amen !

*Par sainte charite* pray a *pater noster* for John who wrote this book !

Whoso hath read this writing  
 And Christ hath so (thereby) prospered him,  
 I pray, *par sainte charite*,  
 That ye pray often for me  
 A *Pater noster* and *Ave Maria* ;  
 That I may so lead my life  
 And well please our Lord,  
 In my youth and in my old age,  
 That I may yield my soul to Jesus Christ. Amen.

under-fon in as ofte as liues luue stinteð<sup>1</sup> forto spekene. **N**v is wil þat husewif al stille. þat er wes so willesful. Al ituht efter wittes wissunge þat is husebonde. *ant* Al þat hird halt him stille. þat wes i-wunet to beon fulitohen *ant* don efter wil hare lefdi. Ant nawt efter wit! lustneð nu his lare. *ant* fondeð euer euchan efter þat him limpeð to. þurh þeos twa sonden. þat ha i-herd habbeð. *ant* þat fowr sustren lerden þruppe for euch unþeawes in 3ong his warde te witene. ant te warden treowliche. **P**v s al mon te þenchen ofte Ant ilome. Ant wið þulliche þohtes awecchen his heorte. þe islep of 3emeles for-3et hire sawle heale. efter þeos twa sonden. From helle sihðe biseon! to þe blisse of heouene. To habben farlac of þat an! luue toward þat oðer. ant leaden him ant hinen. þat beoð his limen alle. nawt efter wil þe untohe lefdi *ant* his lust leareð. ah efter þat wit wule þat is husebonde tuhten *ant* teachen þat wit ga euer biuore ant teache wil efter him. to al þat he dihteð *ant* demeð to donne. ant wið þe fowr sustren! þer fore þe fowr heued þeawes. Warschipe. Strencðe in godd. Ant Með. Ant Rihtwisnesse. witen godes treosor þat is his alne sawle. iþe hus of þe bodi! from þe þeof of helle. þulli þoht makeð mon te fleon alle unþeawes ant ontent his heorte toward þe blisse of heouene. þat ure lauerd 3eue us þurh his hali milce þat wið þe feder. ant e sune *ant* e hali gast rixleð in þreo had á buten ende. AMEN.

<sup>1</sup>MS. stutteð.

The whole household now become subject to Wit.

Each man should attend to the words of the two messengers,

and guard his soul from the thief of hell.

Par seinte charite biddeð a pater noster for iohan þat þeos boc wrat.

Pray a paternoster for John who wrote this book,

**H**wa se þis writ haueð ired.  
 Ant crist him haueð swa isped.  
 Ich bidde par seinte charite.  
 Þet 3e bidden ofte for me.  
 Aa pater noster. ant aue marie.  
 Þet ich mote þat lif her drehen.  
 Ant ure lauerd wel icwemen.  
 I Mi 3uheðe *ant* in min elde.  
 Þet ich mote ihesu crist mi sawle 3elden.]

so that he may lead a good life here and yield his soul to Christ at death.

AMEN.

## XXIX.

## THE WOOING OF OUR LORD.

Jesu, sweet Jesu, my love, my darling, my Lord, my Saviour, my honey-drop (nectar), my balm! sweeter is the remembrance of thee than honey in the mouth. Who is there that may not love thy lovely face? what heart is there so hard that may not melt at the remembrance of thee? Ah! who may not love thee, lovely Jesu? For within thee alone are all the things united that ever may make any man worthy of love to another. Beauty, and lovesome face, flesh white under clothing make many a man the rather and the more to be beloved. Gold and treasures and wealth of this world cause some to be beloved and praised. Others (are loved) for their generosity and liberality, that prefer graciously to give than niggardly to withhold. Some (are loved) for their wit and wisdom and worldly prudence, and others for might and strength, (so as) to be distinguished and brave in fight for to maintain their rights. Some are loved for their nobility and highness of birth, others for virtue, and politeness, and faultless manners. Some for kindness, and meekness, and goodness of heart and deed; and yet, above all this, nature causes friends of kin to love one another. Jesu, my precious darling, my love, my life, my beloved, my most worthy of love, my heart's balm, my soul's sweetness, thou art lovesome in countenance, thou art altogether bright. All angel's life is to look upon thy face, for thy cheer is so marvellously lovesome and pleasant to look upon, that if the damned that well (boil) in hell might eternally see it, all that torturing pitch would appear but a soft warm bath; for, if it might be so, they had rather well (boil) evermore in woe and evermore look upon that blissful beauty, than be in all bliss and forego the sight of thee. Thou art so sheen (bright) and so white, that the sun would be pale if it were compared to thy blissful countenance. If I then will love any man for fairness (beauty) I will love thee, my dear life, mother's fairest son. Ah, Jesu, my



XXIX.

HER BIGINNES ÞE WOYUNG OF URE LAUERD.\*

\* MS. Cotton  
Titus D. 18.

**I**hesu swete ihesu. mi druþ. mi derling. mi drihtin. mi healend.  
mi huniter. mi haliwei. Swetter is munegunge of þe þen  
mildeu o muþe. Hwa ne mei luue þi luueli leor? Hwat herte  
is swa hard þat ne mei to-melte i þe munegunge of þe? Ah hwa  
ne mei luue þe luueliche ihesu? for inwiþ þe ane arn alle þe  
þinges igedered þat eauer muhen maken animon luuewurði  
to oþer. feirnesse *and* lufsum neb. flesh hwit under schrud makes  
moni mon beo luued te raþer. *and* te mare. Summe gold *and*  
Gersuin *and* ahte of þis worlde makes luued *and* heried. Sume:  
fredom *and* largesce þat leuer is menskli to ȝiuen þen ewedli to  
wiþ halde. Summe: wit *and* wisdom *and* ȝapschipe of werkde.  
Summe: maht *and* strengþe to beo kid *and* kene ifiht his  
riht for to halde. Summe: noblesce. *and* helnesse of burþe.  
Summe: þeaw. *and* hendeleie *and* lastelese\* lates. Summe:  
menske *and* mildeschipe *and* debonaite of herte *and* dede.  
And ȝette ouer al þis: kinde makes sibbe frend echan to luuen  
oþer. Nu mi derewurþe druþ. mi luue. mi lif. mi leof.  
mi luueleuest, mi heorte haliwei. mi sawle swetnesse. Þu art  
lufsum on leor. þu art al schene. al engles lif is ti neb to bihalden.  
for þi leor is swa unimete lufsum *and* lusti on to loken: þat ȝif  
þe forwariede þat wallen in helle mihten hit echeliche seon:  
al þat pinende pik. ne walde ham þunche bote a softe bekinde  
baþ. for ȝif hit swa mihte beon: leuere ham were eauer mare  
in wa for to welle *and* o þat welefule wlite eauer mar to loken:  
þen in alle blisse beon *and* forgan þi sihþe. Þu art swa schene  
*and* swa hwit: þat te sunne were dosk ȝif hit to þi blisfule bleo  
mihte beo euenet. Þa ȝif þat iwile animon for feirnesse luue:  
luue iwile þe mi leue lif, moder sune feirest. A ihesu mi swete

Jesus pos-  
sesses all the  
qualities  
which make  
him worthy  
of being  
loved.

The qualities  
for which one  
may be loved.

\* [Fol. 127b.]

Christ is  
beautiful and  
bright.

The sun pales  
before him.



sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee be all my delight. But now I will choose my lemman (beloved) for wealth, for everywhere with chattels one may buy love. But is there any one richer than thou, my beloved, that reignest in heaven, thou that art the renowned kaiser that hast created all this world? for as the holy prophet David says, "The earth is the Lord's and all that fills it, the world and all that lives therein;" heaven with the mirths and the immeasurable blisses, all is thine, my sweet one, and all (this) thou wilt give me, if I love thee aright. I cannot give my love to any man for (the sake of) a sweeter possession. I will hold then to thee, my beloved, and love thee for thyself, and for thy love forsake all other things that might draw and turn my heart from thy love. Ah! Jesus, sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee be all my delight. But what is wealth and world's weal worth without freedom (liberality)? And who is more free than thou, for first thou didst make all this world and didst put it under my feet, and didst make me lady over all thy creatures that thou didst create on earth, but I miserably lost it through my sins. Ah! lest I should lose all thou gavest thyself for me, to deliver me from (hell-)pain. If I will love then any one for liberality, I will love thee, Jesu Christ, most free beyond all others; for other liberal men give these external things, but thou didst give thyself for me, (so) that thou couldst not withhold thy own heart's blood. A dearer love-token gave never any lemman (beloved) to another. And thou that gavest me first all thyself, thou hast promised me, my beloved, the gift, all to myself, to reign on thy right hand, crowned with thyself. Who is then more generous than thou? who, for largess, is better worthy of being beloved than thou, my dear life? Ah! Jesu, sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee be all my delight. But largess is worth little when wisdom is lacking. And if that I will love any man for wisdom, there is none wiser than thou, that art called the wisdom of thy father in heaven; for he through thee, that art wisdom, created all this world and ordereth it and divideth it, as it seemeth best. Within thee, my dear love, is hidden the hoard of all wisdom, as the book bears witness. Ah! Jesus, sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee may be all my delight. But many a man through his strength and bravery also makes himself beloved and esteemed. And is any so hardy as thou art? Nay; for thou alone dreadedst not with thy own dear body to fight against all the awful (terrible) devils of hell; that whichever of them is least loathsome and horrible,

ihesu leue þat te luue of þe beo al mi likinge. Bote nu iwile for  
 ahte lefmon chese for aihwer wið chatel mon mai luue cheape. A man is  
loved for his  
riches.  
 Ah is ani ricchere þen þu mi leof þat rixles in heuene. þu art Christ is  
richer than  
any man.  
 kid keiser þat al þis werld wrahtes. for as te hali prophete dauid  
 ewiddes. drihtines is te eorðe. and al þat hit fulles werld and  
 al þat trin wuneð. Heuene wið þe murhðes and ta unimete  
 blisses. Al is tin mi sweting. and al þu wilt ȝiue me ȝif i þe riht  
 luue. Ne mai i na man ȝiue mi luue to swettere biȝete. Halde  
 iwile þa to þe mi leof for þe self luue þe seluen. and for þi luue  
 leten alle oðre þinges þat min herte fram þi luue mihte drahe  
 and turnen. A Ihesu swete ihesu leue þat te luue of þe beo al  
 mi likinge. Bote \*hwat is ahte and weorldeð wele wurð wið-  
 uten freedom? And hwa is frerre þen þu? For first þu mades al þis  
 werld and dideð hit under mine fet. and makedes me lauedi  
 ouer alle þine schaftes þat tu schop on eorðe. Bote Ich hit  
 rewli fordide þurh-hut mine sunnes. Ah lest ine al forlesede þu  
 ȝef þe seluen for me to lese me fra þine Þenne ȝif i ani wile for  
 largesce luue: luue iwile þe ihesu crist largest ouer oðre. For  
 oðre largemen ȝiuen þise uttre þinges. bute þu swete ihesu for me  
 ȝef þe seluen. þat tin ahne heorte blod ne cuðes tu wið-halde.  
 Derre druri ne ȝef neauer na lefmon to oðer. And tu þat erst  
 me ȝef al þe seluen: þu hafdes me heht mi lefmon to þe ȝiue  
 al me seluen. to rixlen o þi rihtthond crunet wið þe seluen. Hwa  
 is ta largere þen þu. Hwa for largesce is betere wurð to beo  
 luued þen þu mi luue lif. A ihesu swete ihesu leue þat te luue  
 of þe beo al mi likinge. Bote largesce is lutel wurð þer wisdom  
 wontes. And ȝif þat iwile animon luue for wisdom: nis nan  
 wisere þen þu þat art wisdom cald of þi fader in heuene. For  
 he þurh þe þat wisdom art al þis world wrahte and dihteð hit  
 and dealeð as hit best semeð. Inwið þe mi leue lif is hord  
 of alle wisdom hid as te bok witnesses. A ihesu swete ihesu  
 leue þat te luue of þe beo al mi likinge. Bote moni man þurh  
 his strengðe and hardschipe ek makes him luued and ȝerned.  
 And is ani swa hardi swa artu? Nai. for þu þe ane dreddes nawt  
 wið þin anre deore bodi to fihte aȝaines alle þe ahefulle deueles  
 of helle. þat hwuch of ham swa is lest laðeliche. and grureful.

\*[Pol. 128a.]

Christ is to  
be loved for  
his liberality.He gave him-  
self for  
sinners,and withheld  
not his heart's  
blood.Christ is to  
be loved for  
his wisdom.He is the  
hoard of all  
wisdom.Christ is to  
be loved for  
his bravery.

if he might, such as he is, show himself to man, all the world would be afraid to behold him alone, for no man may see him and remain in his wits, unless the grace and the strength of Christ embolden his heart. Thou art moreover herewith so immensely mighty that, with thy precious hand nailed on the rood, thou boundest the hell-dogs, and bereftest them of their prey which they had greedily grasped, and held it fast on account of Adam's sin. Thou keen (brave) renowned warrior (champion) robbedst hell-house, and deliveredst thy prisoners, and broughtest them out of the house of death, and leddest them with thyself to thy jewelled (gemmed) bower (hall), the abode of eternal bliss ; wherefore of thee, my beloved, was it truly said, "The Lord is mighty, strong and keen (brave) in battle." And therefore if a stalworth lemmann please me, I will love thee, Jesu, strongest over all, so that thou mayest fell the strong foes of my soul ; and that the strength of thee may help my great weakness, and thy boldness embolden my heart. Ah ! Jesus, sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee may be all my delight. But noble men and gentle and of high birth often obtain the love of women at a very small cost, for oftentimes many a woman loses her honour through the love of a man that is of high birth ; then, sweet Jesu, upon what higher man may I set my love ? where may I a more gentle (noble) man choose than thee, that art the king's son, that wieldest this world, and art king equal with thy father, king over kings and lord over lords ? and yet with respect to thy manhood born thou wast of Mary, a maiden meekest of mood (mind) ; child of royal birth, of king David's kin, of Abraham's race. No higher birth than this is there under the sun. I will love thee, then, sweet Jesu, as the most gentle (noble) life that ever lived on earth, and also because in all thy life never was any vice found, my dear faultless beloved one ; and that came to thee of (thy) birth and of (thy) nurture, because thou didst ever dwell in the court of heaven. Ah ! my precious lord ; so gentle (noble), and so gracious ; suffer me never to settle my love on churlish things, nor to desire earthly things nor fleshly things in preference to thee, nor to love against thy will. Ah ! Jesus, sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee be all my delight. Meekness and mildness (humility) make a man everywhere to be beloved ; and thou, my dear Jesus, for thy great meekness was compared to a lamb, because anent all the wrong and the shame that thou sufferedst, and anent all the woe and the painful wounds, thou never openedst thy mouth to grudge (murmur)

mihte he swuch as he is to monkin him scheawe: al þe world  
 were offeard him ane to bihalde for ne mihte na mon him seo  
*and in his wit wunie. bute 3if þe grace \*and te strengðe of* \* [Fol. 128b.]  
*crist baldede his heorte. þu art 3ette her wið swa unimete mihti*  
*þat wið þi deorewurðe hond nailet on rode: þu band ta helle* Thou didst  
*dogges. and refstes ham hære praire þat tai hefden grediliche* bind the hell-  
*gripen and helden hit faste for adames sunne. þu kene kidde* dogs,  
*kempe robbedes helle hus. lesedes tine prisuns and riddes ham* and harriedst  
*ut of ewalm hus and leddes ham wið þe self to þi 3immede bur.* hell's house,  
*bold of eche blisse. forþi of þe mi lefmon was soðliche quiddet.*  
*Drihti[n] is mahti strong and kene ifihte. And for þi 3if*  
*me likes stalewurðe lefmon: luue iwile þe ihesu strongest ouer* therefore I  
*alle. þat þi malit felle mine starke sawle fan. and te strengðe of* will love thee  
*þe helpe mi muchele wacnesse. and hardischipe of þe balde min* as a stalworth  
*herte. A ihesu swete ihesu leue þat te luue of þe beo al mi* lenman.  
*likinge. Ah noble men and gentile and of heli burðe ofte*  
*winnen luue lihtliche cheape. for ofte moni wummon letes hire* Noble men  
*mensket þurh þe luue of wepmon þat is of heli burðe. þenne* may buy  
*swete ihesu up o hwat herre mon mai i mi luue sette. hwer mai i* women's love  
*gentiller mon chese þen þe þat art te kinges sune þat tis world* cheaply.  
*wealdes. and king and euene wið þi fader. king ouer kinges*  
*lauerd ouer lauerdes And 3ette onont ti monhad born þu wes* I cannot  
*of marie meiden mildest o mod. kine bearn of burðe. of dauiches* choose a  
*kin þe king. of Abrahames streone. Hehere burðe þen þis nis* nobler one  
*nan under sunne. Luue iwile þe þa swete ihesu as te gentileste* than thee,  
*lif þat eauer liuede on eorðe. als wa for in al þi lif neauer na*  
*leaste nes ifunden. mi deore lefmon lasteles. and tat com þe* child of royal  
*of burðe. and of foster als wa. þu þat eauer wunedest i þe hurd* birth, of  
*of heouene. \*A mi deorewurðe druð swa gentile and swa* David's kin.  
*hende. ne þole me neauer mi luue nohwer to sette o karlische*  
*þinges. ne eorðli þing ne fleschli azaines te 3erne ne luue azain* I will love  
*þi wille. A ihesu swete ihesu leue þat te luue of þe beo al mi* thee as the  
*likinge. Mekuesse and mildschipe makes mon eihwer luued.* noblest that  
*and tu mi leue ihesu for þi mikle meknesse to lamb was euenet.* ever lived.  
*For azaines al þe woh and te schome þat tu þoledest. and azaines*  
*al þe wa and te pinfule wundes: neauer ne opnedes ti muð*

\* [Fol. 129.]

Meekness and  
 kindness  
 cause a man  
 to be loved.



against it ; and yet the shame and the wrong, that the sinful each day do unto thee, thou sufferest meekly ; nor dost thou take vengeance (upon us) immediately after our sins, but long awaitest (our) repentance through thy mercy. Since thy goodness may cause thee everywhere to be beloved, therefore is it right that I love thee and leave all others for thee, for thou hast shown great mercy toward me. Ah ! Jesu, sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee be all my delight. But because friends of kin naturally love one another thou shroudest thyself with our flesh ; tookest man of her flesh, born of a woman. Thy flesh took of her flesh without commerce of man ; took fully, with that same flesh, man's nature to suffer all that man may suffer, to do all that man doth, except sin alone ; for thou hadst neither sin nor ignorance. Then against nature goes each man who loveth not such a kinsman, and leaveth (all others). Seeing that truer love ought to be amongst brethren, thou becamest man's brother of one father, with all those that sing Pater noster in purity ; but thou [art a son] through nature (and we through grace), and man of that same flesh that we bear on earth. Ah ! whom may he love truly who loveth not his brother ; then whosoever loveth not thee is a most wicked man. Now, my sweet Jesu, I have left for thy love flesh's kinship, and yet born-brothers have cast me aside, but I reckon of nothing whilst I hold thee, for in thee alone may I find all friends. Thou art to me more than father, more than mother. Brother, sister, or friends, none are to be esteemed as anything in comparison with thee. Ah ! Jesu, sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee be all my delight. Thou then with thy beauty, thou with thy riches, thou with thy liberality, thou with wit and wisdom, thou with thy might and strength, thou with nobleness (of birth) and graciousness, thou with meekness and mildness and great gentleness, thou with kinship, thou with all the things that one may purchase love with, hast bought my love ; but above all other things thou makest thyself worthy of love to me, through those hard horrible injuries, and those shameful wrongs that thou didst suffer for me. Thy bitter pain and thy passion, thy sharp death on the rood, rightly tells upon all my love, and challenges (claims) all my heart. Jesus, my life's love, my heart's sweetness, three foes fight against me, and yet may I sore dread for their blows ; and it behoves me, through thy grace, prudently to guard myself against the world, my flesh, and the devil. The world endeavours to make

to grucchen azaines. *and* zette þe schome *and* te woh þat te sunefule of þe world euch dai don þe: mildeliche þu polest hit. ne wrekes tu þe nawt sone after ure Gultes Bote longe abides bote þurh ut ti milce. Þenne þi deboneirschipe mai make þe eihwer lured. *and* for þi is riht þat i luue þe. *and* leaue alle oðre for þe. for muchel þu haues ti milce toward me scheawed. A ihesu swete ihesu leue þat te luue of þe beo al mi likinge. Bote for þi þat sibbe frend kindeliche euchan luues oðer: þu schruddes te wið ure flesch. nam of hire flesch mon born of wummon þi flesch nam of hire flesch wið uten meane of wepmon. nam wið þat ilke flesch fulliche monnes cunde to þolen al þat mon mai pole. Don al þat mon deð wið uten sunne ane. for sunne *and* unwitschipe ne hafdes tu nowðer. Þenne azaines kinde Gað hwa þat swuche kinsemon ne luueð *and* leueð. And for þi þat trewere luue ah beo imong breðre þu monnes broðer bicom of an fader wið alle þoa þat cleneliche singen. Pater noster. Bute þu þurhut kinde. *and* we þurhut grace. *and* mon of þat ilke flesch þat we beren on eorðe. A. hwam mai he luue treweliche hwa ne luues his broðer. Þenne hwa se þe ne luues: he is mon unwreastest Nu mi swete ihesu. leaued haue i for þi luue flesches sibnesse\* *and* zette borne breðre hauen me forwurpen. bote ne recches me na þing hwils þat i þe halde. for i þe ane mai ich alle frend finden. þu art me mare þen fader. mare þen moder. Broðer suster. oðre frend narn nawiht azaines te to tellen. A ihesu swete ihesu leue þat te. &c. Þenne þu wið þi fairnesse. þu wið richesce. þu wið largesce. þu wið wit *and* wisdom. þu wið maht *and* strengðe. þu wið noblesce *and* hendeleic. þu wið meknesse *and* mildeschipe *and* mikel debonairte. þu wið sibnesse. þu wið alle þe þinges þat man mai luue wið bugge: haues mi luue chepet. Ah ouer alle oðre þinges makes te luuewurði to me þa harde atele hurtes. þa schomeliche wohes þat tu poledes for me. þi bittre pine *and* passiun. þi derue deað o rode telles riht in al mi luue. calenges al mi heorte. Ihesu mi liues luue. min herte swetnesse. þre fan fihten azaines me. *and* zet mai ich sare for hare dundes drede. *and* bihoues þurh þi grace ȝapliche to wite me. þe werld mi flesch. þe deuouel.

Thou en-  
durest all the  
wrongdoing  
of man,

therefore will  
I leave all  
others for  
thee.

Kinsmen love  
one another;

thou art of  
our kin,

wherefore we  
should leave  
all others for  
thee.

I have left  
all for thee.  
\*[Fol. 129b.]

Thou art  
more to me  
than all my  
kin.

Thou hast  
caused me to  
love thee  
through thy  
pain and pas-  
sion and  
death on the  
cross.



me its slave ; my flesh to make me a whore ; the devil, through these two, to draw me to hell. Fearful I was myself, and sorrowful, and nigh down-fallen (dejected), and my foes bold, so blustering, and so keen (fierce), that when they saw me so weak and so fearful and so yielding towards them, the more they assaulted me and weened to have made me, wretch, all their own, and had indeed made (me so), had not (thy) help been the nearer to me. They grinned for gladness each one toward the other, as mad wolves that rejoice over their prey. But thereby I understand that thou wilt have me for thy beloved (lemman) and for thy spouse, so that thou didst not permit them fully to rejoice over me, nor altogether to have cast me into shame and sin, and thereafter into (everlasting) torment. But where the bale (danger) was greatest of all, there was succour nearest. Thou beheldest all this, and thou also sawest that I was unable to stand against their wilful wiles through wisdom or strength that was in myself, but nearly had I fully yielded to all my three foes. Thou camest to help me, undertookest to fight for me, and riddest (deliveredst) me from the sorrow of death's house and the pain of hell. Thou baddest me behold how thou foughtest for me, that I may not be afraid of worldly poverty, nor shame of wicked men's mouth, guiltlessly, nor sickness of my body, nor bodily pain, when I behold how thou wast poor for me, how thou wast disgracefully and shamefully treated for me, and at the last, with torturing death, hanged on the rood. Jesu, my life's love, rich art thou as Lord in heaven and earth, and yet thou becamest for me poor, destitute and wretched. Poor wast thou born of the maiden, thy mother, for in thy birth-time in all the city of Bethlehem thou foundest not house-shelter wherein thy tender child's limbs might rest, but (wast born) in a wall-less house in the middle of the street. Poor thou wast, wrapped in rags and clouts, and coldly lodged in a beast's crib. But as thou grewest older thou becamest even poorer ; for in thy childhood thou hadst the breast (paps) for thy food, and thy mother was ready when thou yearnedst for the breast ; but when thou becamest older, thou, that feedest the fowls in (their) flight, fish in the flood, and people on the earth, sufferedst for lack of meat many a sharp (pang of) hunger, as clerks indeed read in the Gospel ; and thou that wroughtest the heaven and earth, and all this world, hadst not in all this world of thine

þe world to make me þewe. Mi fles<sup>1</sup> to make me hore. þe  
 deuel þurh ut þise twa to drahe me to helle. Arh ich was  
 meself *and* wah *and* neh dune fallen. *and* mine fan derue.  
 swa buchede *and* swa kene þat hwen þai sehen me swa wak  
*and* swa forhuhande *and* buhanded toward ham. þei swiðre  
 sohten uppo me. *and* wenden of me wrecche haue maked al  
 hare ahen *and* hefden forsoðe maked. nere helpe nere þe  
 nerre. þai grennede for gladschipe euchan toward oðer as  
 wode wulues þat fainen of hare praie. Bote þer þurh under-  
 stonde i þat tu wult haue me to lefmon *and* to spuse. þat tu  
 ne þoledes ham noht fulli fainen of me. *and* alle gate haue  
 wurpen me in schome *and* in sinne. *and* ter after in to pine.  
 Bote þer þe bale was alre meast. swa was te bote nehest.  
 þu biheld al þis *and* tu allegate seh þat ine mihte stonde  
 azain hare \*wilfulle crokes þurh wit oðer strengðe þat wes in  
 me seluen. Bot neh hefde i fulliehe buhed til alle mine pre  
 fan. þu com me to helpe. feng to filte for me. *and* riddes me  
 fram deaðes hus sorhe *and* pine of helle. þu biddes me bihalde  
 hu þu faht for me. þat i pouerte of worlde ne schome of wicke  
 monnes muð for uten mine Gulte. ne seenesse of mi bodi. ne  
 flesches pine drede. hwen þat i bihalde hu þu was poure for  
 me. hu þu was schent *and* schomet for me<sup>1</sup> *and* atte laste wið  
 pineful deað henged orode. Ihesu mi liues luue riche ar tu as  
 lauerd in heuene *and* in eorðe. *and* tah poure þu<sup>1</sup> bicom for me.  
 westi *and* wrecched Poure þu born was of þe meiden þi  
 moder. for þenne ipi burð tid in al þe burh of belleem ne fant  
 tu hus lewe þer þine nesche childes limes inne mihte reste.  
 Bot in a waeles hus imiddes þe strete. Poure þu wunden  
 was irattes *and* i elntes *and* caldeliche dennet in a beastes  
 cribbe. Bote swa þu eldere wex<sup>1</sup> swa þu pourere was. For  
 i þi childhad hafdes tu þe pappe to þi fode. *and* ti moder  
 readi hwen þu pappe 3erndes. Bote hwen þu eldere was. þu  
 þat fuhel ofluht. fisch iflod fole on eorðe fedes<sup>1</sup> þoledes for  
 wone of mete moni hat hungre as clerkes witerliche in god-  
 spel reden. *and* tu þat heuene *and* eorðe *and* al þis werld  
 wrahtes. naucedes in al þis werld hwer þu o þin ahen þi heaued

My foes, the  
 world, flesh,  
 and the devil,  
 wellnigh  
 gained the  
 upper hand  
 over me ;

they rejoiced  
 over me as  
 wild beasts  
 over their  
 prey,

but thou saw-  
 est my weak-  
 ness,  
 \* [Fol. 130.]

and didst  
 fight for me.

Thou that  
 wast rich  
 didst become  
 poor for me,  
<sup>1</sup> MS. þi.

and wast born  
 in a wall-less  
 house.

The older  
 thou didst  
 grow the  
 poorer thou  
 becamest.

own where thou mightest rest thy head ; but both young and older always thou hadst (not) wherewith thou mightest cover thy bones. But at the last (period) of thy life, when thou for me so piteously didst hang on the rood, thou hadst not, in all this world, wherewith thou mightest cover and hide thy blissful bloody body. And so my sweet beloved one, poor thou thyself wast ; and thou choosest the rather to be poor, for poverty thou didst love, and poverty didst teach (enjoin) ; and thou hast given perpetually thy everlasting bliss to all those that willingly endure, (wholly) cleanly for thy love, hardships and poverty. Ah ! why should I be rich and thou, my beloved, so poor ? Therefore, sweet Jesu Christ, will I be poor for thee, as thou wast for the love of me, so that I may be rich with thee in thine eternal bliss ; for with poverty and with woe shall weal be purchased. Ah ! Jesu, sweet Jesu, grant that the love of thee be all my delight. But poverty with honour is easy to be endured ; but thou, my beloved, wholly for my love, with all thy poverty was shamefully ill-treated ; for how often they said to thee shameful words, and hateful scoffings ; which it would take long to tell them all ! But much shame thou didst suffer when thou, that never didst sin, was taken as an untrue (traitor), brought before sinful men, those heathen hounds, by them to be doomed, thou that art the judge of (all) the world. There thou, the saviour of mankind, wast shamefully condemned (to death), and the murderer was released from the doom (sentence) of death ; for, as it is written in the Gospel, they all cried after the manner of mad wolves, “ Hang, hang that traitor Jesus on the rood ; hang him on the rood, and release to us Barabbas ; ” a thief was that Barabbas that had seditiously killed a man in the city. But more shame thou didst endure when that the sinful men spat in thy face. Ah, Jesu ! who might endure more, Christian or heathen, than when one spitteth in scorn upon his beard ? And thou, in thy pleasant face, in that love-some cheer (countenance) didst endure such shame ; and yet for the love of me it all seemed honour to thee, so that thou mightest with that spittle, that so besmeared thy face, wash my soul and make it white and shining and seemly in thy sight. And therefore thou biddest me think upon this. *Scito, Quoniam propter te sustinui opprobrium : operuit confusio faciem meam.*—Understand, thou sayest, and heartily think that I, for the love of thee, didst endure shame and scorn, and shameful spitting of unworthy ribalds ; the heathen hounds covered my face for thee. As though he should say, “ Dread

mihtes reste. Bote baðe 3ung *and* eldre alle Gate þu hafdes  
 hwer þu mihtes wrihe þine banes. Ah atte laste of þi lif hwen  
 þu for me swa rewliche hengedes on rode. ne hafdes in al þis  
 world hwer wið þat blisfule blodi bodi þu mihtes hule *and* huide.  
*and* swa mi swete lefmon poure þu þe self was. *and* te poure<sup>1</sup> þu  
 raðeste cheas. pouerte þu luuedes. pouerte þu tahtes. *and* 3iuen  
 þu haues echeliche þin endelese blisse. til alle þat clenli for þi  
 luee mesaise *and* pouerte wilfulliche polien. A hu schulde i beo  
 riche. *and* tu mi leof swa poure! for þi swete \*ihesu crist wile i  
 beo poure for þe! as tu was for þe luee of me. for to beo riche  
 wið þe i þin eche blisse. for wið pouerte *and* wið wa schal mon  
 wele buggen. A ihesu swete ihesu leue þat te &c. Bote po-  
 uerte wið menske is cað for to polien. Ah þu mi lef for mi  
 luee wið al þi pouerte was schomeliche heaned. for hu mon þe  
 ofte seide schomeliche wordes *and* haðfule hokeres. long weren  
 hit al to tellen. Bote mucche schome þu þoledes. hwen þu þat  
 neauer sunne dides! was taken as untreowe. Broht biforen  
 sinfule men þa heaðene hundes of ham to beo demet. þat demere  
 art of werlde. Þer þu bote of mon kin schomeliche was demed.  
*and* te monquellere fra deðes dom was lesed. For as i þe  
 godspel is writen. alle þai crieden o wode wulues wise Heng  
 heng þat treitur ihesus on rode. Heng him o rode. *and* lese us  
 Baraban. was tat barabas a þeof þat wið tresun i þe burh hafde a  
 mon cwelled. bote mare schome þu þoledes hwen þat te sunefule  
 men i þi neb spitted. A ihesu hwa mihte mare þolen cristen  
 oðer heaðen! þen mon him for schendlac i þe beard spitted.  
 And tu i þi welefulle wite. i þat lufsume leor swucche schome  
 þoledes. And al þe menske þuhte for þe luee of me. þat tu  
 mihtes wið þat spatel þat swa biclarted<sup>2</sup> ti leor wasche mi sawle.  
*and* make hit hwit *and* schene *and* semlike i þi sihte. *and* for þi  
 þu biddes me her up on penche. *Scito, quoniam propter te sus-  
 tinui oprobrium operuit confusio faciem meam.* Vnderstond þu  
 seist *and* herteliche þenke þat i for þe luee of þe þolede schome *and*  
 bismere. *and* schomeliche spateling of unwurði ribauz þa heaðene  
 hundes hilede mi neb for þe. As tah he seide. ne dred tu nawt

Even when on  
 the cross thou  
 hadst no  
 covering for  
 thy body.

<sup>1</sup> MS. boure.

How should I  
 then be rich  
 and thou so  
 poor!

\*[Fo1.130b.]

For my sake  
 thou wast  
 shamefully  
 treated,

doomed to  
 death, and  
 hung on the  
 cross as a  
 traitor.

On thy heard  
 they spat,

and with that  
 spittle thou  
 didst wash  
 my soul white  
 and clean.

<sup>2</sup> MS. biclar-  
 ied.

thou not therefore to endure for me worldly shame, although guiltless." But shame above shame thou didst endure when thou wast hanged between two thieves, as though one might say, "He is more than thief, and therefore as their (chief) master he hangs between them." Ah! Jesu, my life's love, what heart is there that may not break when he thinketh hereof; how thou, that art the honour of all mankind, and the remedy for all bales (sorrows), didst endure such shame for to honour mankind. They speak often of wonders and of marvels, divers and manifold, that have befallen, but this was the greatest wonder that ever befell on earth. Yea! wonder above wonders, that that renowned kaiser, crowned in heaven, creator of all creatures, in order to honour his foes, would hang between two thieves! Ah! Jesu, sweet Jesu, thou that wast shamefully treated for love of me, grant that the love of thee be all my delight. Sufficient were poverty and shame, without other torments; but it seemed never to thee, my life's love, that thou mightest fully purchase my friendship whilst life lasted thee. Ah! a dear bargain hadst thou in me; never was so unworthy a thing bought so dearly. All thy life on earth was in affliction for my sake, ever longer the more so. But before thy death so infinitely thou wast afflicted and so sorely, that thou didst sweat red blood; for, as St. Luke saith in the Gospel, thou wast in so great an affliction that the sweat, as drops of blood, ran down to the earth. But what tongue may tell, what heart may think, for sorrow and for ruth, of all the buffets and the grievous blows that thou didst suffer in thy first capture, when that Judas Iscariot brought the hell-bairns (children of hell) to take and to bring thee before their princes; how they bound thee so cruelly fast that the blood was wrung out at thy finger-nails (as saints believe), and led thee sorrowfully bound, and struck harsh blows on thy back and shoulders, and before the princes buffeted and beat thee; how afterwards before Pilate thou wast bound naked and fast to the pillar, so that thou mightest nowhere turn (wrench thyself) from the blows. There thou wast, for love of me, with knotty whips beaten, so that thy lovely body might be torn and rent asunder; and all thy blissful body streamed in one blood-stream. Afterwards on thine head was set the crown of sharp thorns, so that with every thorn the red blood poured out from thine holy head. Afterwards also wast thou buffeted and struck on the head with the sceptre of reed, that was previously in thine hand



for þe of me to þole schome of worlde wið ute þine Gulte. Bote schome ouer schomes \*þoledes tu hwen þu wes hanged bituhhe twa þeofes. As hwa se seie. He þis is mare þen þeof. And for þi as hare meister he henges ham bituhhen. A ihesu mi liues luue hwat herte ne mai to breke hwen ha herof þenches hu þu þat menske art of al mon kin. of alle bales bote. mon for to menske swuch sehome þoledes. Mon spekes ofte of wundres *and* of selcūces þat misliche *and* monifald hauen bifallen. bote þis was te measte wunder þat eauer bifel on eorðe. 3a wunder ouer wundres þat tat kidde keiser cruned in heuene. schuppere of alle schaftes. for to mensken hise fan. walde henge bituhhe twa þeoues. A ihesu swete ihesu þat tu wes schent for mi luue leue þat te luue of þe &c. Inoh were pouerte *and* schome wið uten oðre pines bote ne þuhte þe neauer mi liues luue. þat tu mihtes fulliche mi frendschipe buggen hwils<sup>1</sup> þe lif þe lasted A. deore cheap hefdes tu on me. ne was neauer unwurði þing chepet swa deore. Al þi lif on eorðe wes iswink for me swa lengre swa mare Ah bifore þin ending swa unimeteliche þu swane *and* swa sare þat reade blod þu swattes for as. seint luk seið i þe godspel. þu was i swa strang a swing þat te swat as blodes dropes eorn dune to þe eorðe. Bute hwat tunge mai hit telle. hwat heorte mai hit þenche for sorhe *and* for reowðe of alle þa buffetes *and* ta bali dundes þat tu þoledest i þin earst nimminge hwen þat iudas scharioth brohte þa helle bearnes þe to taken *and* bringen biforen hare princes. hu ha þe bunden swa \*hetelifaste þat te blod wrang ut at tine finger neiles as halhes bileuen *and* bunden ledden rewli *and* dintede unrideli o rug *and* o schuldres. *and* bifore þe princes buffeted *and* beten. Siðen bifore pilat hu þu was naket bunden faste to þe piler. þat tu ne mihtes nowhwider wrenehe fra þa dundes. þer þu wes for mi luue wið enotti swepes swungen swa þat ti luueliche lich mihte beo to torn *and* to rent. *and* al þi blisfule bodi streamed on a Girre blod. Siðen o þin heaued wes set te crune of scharpe þornes. þat wið eauriche þorn wrang ut te reade blod of þin heali heaued. Siðen 3ette buffetet *and* to dunet i þe heaued wið þe red 3erde þat te was ear in honde 3iuen þe on hoker-

\*[Fol. 131.]

He was hung between two thieves, as if he were the greatest malefactor.

Was not this the greatest of all marvels!

<sup>1</sup> MS. hwilf.

All thy life was in sorrow for my sake.

Thou didst sweat drops of blood in thy great agony.

The Jews so bound thee that the blood gushed out at thy finger nails.

\*[Fol. 131b.]

Thou wast so scourged that the blood streamed from thy body.



given thee in scorn. Ah ! what shall I do now ? Now my heart may break, my eyes flow all with water. Ah ! now is my beloved doomed to die. Ah ! now they lead him forth to mount Calvary to the place of execution. Ah, lo ! he bears his rood upon his bare shoulders ; and would that those blows had struck me with which they battered and thrust thee quickly forward toward thy doom ! Ah ! beloved, how they follow thee ; thy friends sorrowfully with lamentation and sorrow, and thy enemies mockingly in scorn and to bring trouble on thee. Ah ! now they have brought him thither. Ah ! now they raise up the rood, and set up the accursed tree. Ah ! now they strip my beloved. Ah ! now they drive him up with whips and with scourges. Ah ! how can I live for grief, seeing my beloved upon the cross, and his limbs so drawn asunder that I may tell each bone in his body. Ah ! how do they now drive the iron nails through thy fair hands into the hard rood, [and] through thy gracious feet. Ah ! now from those hands and feet so lovely, streams the blood so ruefully. Ah ! now they offer my beloved, that saith he thirsts, eisel, sourest of all drinks, mixed with gall, that is the bitterest thing (two bale-drinks in blood-letting, so sour and so bitter), but he drank not of it. Ah ! now sweet Jesu, yet in addition to all thy woe they increase it by shame and mockery, they laugh thee to scorn where thou hangest on the rood. When thou, my lovely beloved, with outstretched arms, hangedst on the rood, it was rueful to the righteous, but laughter to the wicked. And thou, before whom all the world might dread and tremble, wast a laughing-stock and a mockery to the wicked folk of this world. Ah ! that lovely body that hangest so sorrowfully, so bloody, and so cold ! Ah ! how shall I now live, for my beloved dies now for me upon the dear cross. He hangs down his head and his soul departs. But it seems to them that he is not yet fully tormented, nor will they let the sorrowful body rest in peace. They lead forth Longius with the broad sharp spear. He pierces his side, cleaves the heart, and there comes flowing out of the wide wound the blood that redeemed [us] and the water that washed the world from guilt and from sin. Ah ! sweet Jesu, thou openest for me thy heart, that I may know (thee) truly and read therein true love-letters, for there I may openly see how much thou lovedest me. With wrong should I refuse thee my heart, since thou hast bought heart for heart. Lady, mother, and maiden, thou didst stand here full nigh and sawest all this sorrow upon thy precious son.

ringe. A hwat schal i nu don? Nu min herte mai to breke.  
 min ehne flowen al o water. A nu is mi lefmon demd for to  
 deien. A nu mon ledes him forð to munte caluarie to þe cwalm  
 stowe. A lo he beres his rode up on his bare schuldres. *and*  
 lef þa dundes drepen me þat tai þe dunchen *and* þrasten þe  
 forðward swiðe toward ti dom. A lefmon hu mon folhes te.  
 pine frend sariliche wið reming *and* sorhe. pine fend hokerliche  
 to schome *and* wundren up o þe. A nu haue þai broht him  
 þider. A nu raise þai up þe rode. Setis up þe warh treo. A  
 nu naenes mon mi lef A. nu driuen ha him up wið swepes *and*  
 wið schurges. A hu liue i for reowðe þat seo mi<sup>1</sup> mi lefmon  
 up o rode. *and* swa to drahen hise limes þat i mai in his bodi  
 euh ban tellen. A hu þat ha nu driuen irnene neiles þurh pine  
 feire hondes in to hard rode þurh pine freoliche fet. A nu of þa  
 bonden *and* of þa fet swa luueli. streames te blod swa rewli.  
 A nu beden ha mi leof þat seið þat him þristes: aisille surest  
 alre drinch menged wið galle þat is ping bittrest. Twa<sup>2</sup> Bale  
 drinch i blodleting swa sur *and* swa bittre. bote ne drinkes  
 he hit noht. A nu swete ihesu. zet up on al þi wa ha eken  
 schome *and* bismer. lahhen þe to hokere þer þu o rode hengest.  
 þu mi luueliche lef þer þu wið strahte \*earmes henges o rode:  
 was reowðe to rihtwise. lahter to þe luðere. And tu þat al þe  
 world fore mihte drede *and* diuere: was unwreste folk of world  
 to hoker lahter. A þat luuelike bodi þat henges swa rewli swa  
 blodi *and* swa kalde. A hu schal i nu liue for nu deies mi lef  
 for me up o þe deore rode? Henges dun his heaued *and* sendes  
 his sawle. Bote ne þinche ham nawt zet þat he is ful pinet. ne  
 þat rewfulde deade bodi nulen ha nawt friðie. Bringen forð  
 longis wið þat brade scharpe spere. He þurles his side cleues  
 tat herte. *and* cumes flowinde ut of þat wide wunde. þe blod þat  
 bohte. þe water þat te world wesch of sake *and* of sunne. A  
 swete ihesu þu oppnes me þin herte for to cnawe witerliche *and*  
 in to reden trewe luue lettres. for þer i mai openlich seo hu  
 muchel þu me luuedes. Wið wrange schuldi þe min heorte  
 wearnen siðen þat tu bohtes herte for herte. Lauedi moder *and*  
 meiden þu stod here ful neh *and* seh al þis sorhe vpo þi deore-

Thou wast  
 led to mount  
 Calvary,

amidst the  
 weeping of  
 thy friends  
 and the scorn  
 of thy  
 enemies,

Up the cross  
 they drove  
 thee with  
 whips;  
 1 ? nu.

into thy  
 hands and  
 feet they  
 drove the iron  
 nails.

2 MS. Ewa.  
 They gave  
 thee vinegar  
 to drink  
 mixed with  
 gall.

\* [Fol. 132.]

They mocked  
 at thy suffer-  
 ings.

Thy spirit  
 departed,

but thy body  
 they left not  
 in peace.

Longius with  
 a spear  
 pierced thy  
 side.

Open thou  
 my heart to  
 know thee  
 truly.

Thou wast inwardly martyred within thy motherly heart when thou sawest his heart cloven asunder with the spear's point. But, lady, for the joy that thou hadst of his resurrection the third day thereafter, grant me to understand thy sorrow and heartily to feel somewhat of the sorrow that thou then hadst; and that I may help thee to weep because he so bitterly redeemed me with his blood, so that I, with him and with thee, may rejoice in my resurrection at doomsday, and be with thee in bliss. Jesus, sweet Jesu, thus thou foughtest for me against my soul's foes; thou didst settle the contest for me with thy body, and madest of me, wretch, thy beloved (lemman) and spouse. Thou hast brought me from the world into the bower of thy birth, enclosed me in thy chamber where I may so sweetly kiss and embrace thee, and of thy love have spiritual delight. Ah! sweet Jesu, my life's love, with thy love hast thou redeemed me, and from the world thou hast brought (taken) me. But I now may say with the Psalmist, *Quid retribuam domino pro omnibus quæ retribuit mihi*—Lord, what may I requite thee for all that thou hadst given me! What may I suffer for thee for all that thou didst endure for me! But it is needful for me that thou be easy to satisfy. A wretched (poor) body and a weak (one) I bear on earth, and that, such as it is, I have given thee, and will give to thy service. Let my body hang with thy body nailed on the rood, and enclosed transversely within four walls; and hang I will with thee, and never more from my cross come until I die; for then shall I leap from the rood into rest, from woe to weal and into eternal bliss. Ah! Jesus, so sweet it is with thee to hang; for when I look on thee that hankest beside me, the great sweetness of thee bereaves me of many pains. But, sweet Jesus, what is my body worth in comparison with thine? for if I might a thousandfold give thee myself, it would be nothing compared to thee that gavest thyself for me; and yet I have a heart, vile and unworthy, and destitute and poor of all good virtues; and that, such as it is, take to thyself now, dear life, with true love, and suffer me never to love anything against thy will, for I may not set my love better anywhere than on thee, Jesu Christ, that didst redeem it so dearly. There is none so worthy to be loved as thou, sweet Jesu, that hast in thyself all things for which a man ought to be love-worthy to another. Thou art most worthy of my love, thou that didst die for the love of me. Yet if I offered my love for sale and set a value

wurðe sune. was wiðinne martird iþi moderliche herte. þat  
 seh to cleue his heorte wið þe speres ord. Bote lafdi for þe  
 Ioie þat tu hefdes of his ariste þe pridde dai þer after? leue me  
 vnderstonde þi dol *and* herteli to felen sum hwat of þe sorhe  
 þat tu þa hefdes *and* helpe þe to wepe. þat i wið him *and* wið  
 þe muhe i min ariste o domes dai gladien *and* wið 3u beon  
 i blisse þat he me swa bitterliche wið his blod bohte. Ihesu  
 swete ihesu þus tu fahst for me azaines mine sawle fan. þu me  
 derennedes wið like. *and* makedes of me wreeche þi leofmon  
*and* spuse. Broht tu haues me fra þe world to bur of þi burðe.  
 steked me i chaumbre. I mai þer þe swa sweteli kissen *and*  
 cluppen. *and* of þi luue haue gastli likinge. A swete ihesu  
 mi liues luue wið þi blod þu haues me boht. *and* fram þe world  
 þu haues me broht. Bote nu mai i seggen wið þe salmewrihte.  
*Quid retribuam domino pro omnibus que retribuit michi.*  
 Lauerd hwat mai i 3elde þe for al þat tu haues 3iuen me. Hwat  
 mai þole for þe for al þat tu þoledes for me? Ah me \* bihoueð  
 þat tu beo eað to paie. a wreeche bodi *and* a wac bere ich  
 ouer corðe. *and* tat swuch as hit is haue 3iuen *and* 3iue wile to  
 þi seruise. Mi bodi henge wið þi bodi neiled o rode. sperred  
 querfaste wið inne fowr wahes *and* henge i wile wið þe *and*  
 neauer mare of mi rode eume til þat i deie. For þenne schal  
 i lepen fra rode in to reste. fra wa to wele *and* to eeche blisse  
 A. ihesu swa swet hit is wið þe to henge. for hwen þat i seo o þe  
 þat henges me biside? þe mucle swetnesse of þe? reaues me  
 fele of pine. Bote swete ihesu hwat mai mi bodi azaines tin for  
 3if ich mihte a þusand fald 3iue þe me seluen nere hit nowt  
 onout te þat 3ef þe seluen for me. And 3et ich haue an heorte  
 unwrest *and* unwurði *and* westi *and* poure of alle gode þeawas  
*and* tat swuch as hit is? tac hit to þe nu leue lif wið treowe  
 luuenesse. *and* ne þole me neauer nan oðer þing azain þi wille  
 luue for ne mai ich nowhwer mi luue bettre sette þen o þe  
 ihesu crist þat bohtes hit swa dere. nis nan swa wurði to beo  
 luued as tu swete ihesu þat in þe haues alle þing hwer fore mon  
 ah beo luuewurði to oðer. þu art best wurð mi luue þat for mi  
 luue deidest. 3ette 3if þat i mi luue bede for to selle. *and* sette

Mother of  
 Christ, aid me  
 to bewail with  
 thee the suf-  
 ferings of thy  
 son.

Thou, Jesus,  
 didst fight for  
 me against  
 my foes,  
 and hast  
 made me thy  
 spouse.

What can I  
 give thee in  
 return for thy  
 kindness?

\* [Fol. 132b.]

May my body  
 hang on the  
 cross till I  
 die.

But what is  
 my body  
 worth aiant  
 thine?

Yet have I a  
 heart void of  
 all good—  
 take it to  
 thee.

Thou art best  
 worthy of my  
 love.

thereupon, as high as ever I will, yet thou wilt have it, and moreover to what thou hast given thou wilt add more ; and, if I love thee aright, wilt crown me in heaven to reign with thyself, world without end. Ah ! Jesu, sweet Jesu, my love, my beloved, my life, my dearest love, that didst love me so much that thou didst die for the love of me, and hast separated me from the world, and hast made me thy spouse, and all thy bliss hast promised me, grant that the love of thee be all my delight.

Pray for me, my dear sister. This have I written thee because that [such] words often please the heart to think on our Lord. And therefore, when thou art in ease, speak to Jesu and say these words ; and think as though he hung beside thee bloody on the rood ; and may he, through his grace, open thine heart to the love of him, and to ruth of his pain.

feor þer upon swa hehe swa ich eauer wile? ȝette þu wult hit  
 habbe *and* teken al þat tu haues ȝiuen? wil tu eke mare. *and*  
 ȝif i þe riht luue. wilt me crune in heuene wið þe self to rixlen  
 werld in to werlde A ihesu swete ihesu mi luue. mi lef. mi lif.  
 mi luue leuest þat swa muchel luedes me þat tu deides for luue  
 of me *and* fra þe world haues broht \* me. *and* ti spuse haues  
 maket me. *and* al þi blisse haues heht me? leue þat te luue  
 of þe beo al mi likinge.

Prei for me mi leue suster. þis haue i writen þe for þi þat  
 wordes ofte quemen þe heorte to þenken on ure lauerd And  
 for þi hwen þu art on eise carpe toward ihesu *and* seie þise  
 wordes. *and* þenc as tah he heng biside þe blodi up o rode.  
 And he þurh his grace opn[e] þin heorte to his luue *and* to  
 reowðe of his pine.

If I will price  
 myself ever so  
 high, thou  
 wilt purchase  
 it.

\* [Fol. 133.]  
 Sweet Jesus,  
 grant that the  
 love of thee  
 be all my  
 delight.

Dear sister,  
 pray for me,  
 and say these  
 words.

May Christ  
 open thine  
 heart to his  
 love and  
 to sorrow of  
 his pain.



## APPENDIX.

---

### A MORAL ODE.\*

- Ic æm elder þanne ic wæs. a winter and a lore  
ic wælde more þanne ic dude. mi wit ah to ben more  
Wel lange ic habbe child iben. a worde *and* ec a dede  
4 þech ic beo a wintre eald. to zung ic eom at rede  
Vunvyt lyf ic habbe ze-læd. *and* zuet me þinh ic lede  
þanne ic me bi-þanche. wel sore ic me adrede  
Mest al þæt ic habbe ydon ys idelnesse and chilce  
8 wel late ic habbe me bi þoht. bute me god do milce  
Fele ydele word ic habbe i-queþen syðen ic speke cupe  
and fele zuinge deden i-do þat me of-þinchet nuþe  
Al to lome ic habbe a-gult. a werche *and* ec a worde  
12 al to muchel ic habbe i-spend. to litel y-leid an horde  
Mest al þat me likede ær. nu it me mys-liked  
þe muchel folzeþ his y-wil. him sulfne he bi-swikeð  
Ic mylhte habbe bet i-don hadde ic þer y-selpe  
16 nu ic wolde, ac ic ne mai. for elde ne for un-helpe  
Elde me is bi-stolen on. ær ic hit a-wuste  
ne myht ic isen be-fore me. for smeke ne for myste  
Arze we beoþ to done god to vuele al to þriste  
20 more eie stont man of manne. þanne him det of criste  
þe wel ne dep þe hwile he mei wel oft hit hym scæl ruwen  
þenne hy mowen seulen *and* ripen. þer þe hi ær seowen  
Don ec to gode wet ze muze þa hwile ze buð a life  
24 ne hopie no man to muchel to childe ne to wyfe  
þe him selue for-zut for wyfe oþer for childe

\* Egerton MS. 613, fol. 7-12.

- he sæl comen on vuele stede. bute hym god be milde  
 Sende ee sum god be-foren hym. þe wyle 3e ben aliue  
 28 for betere his on almesse before. þanne ben after vyue  
 Ne beo þe leure þan þi self þi mei ne þi mo3e  
 for sot ys þat ys oþer mannes frond. betre þanne his o3e  
 Ne hopie wif to hyre were. ne were to his wife  
 32 lue for him selue æfrech man. þe wyle he bo alife  
 Wis is þe him sulf be-þenþ þa hwile þe he mot libbe  
 for sone willet him for-3yten. þe fræmden and þo sibbe  
 Þe wel ne deþ þe wile he mai. ne seal he wanne he wolde  
 36 mani mannes sor 3e-swynch. habbet ofte alle vn-holde  
 Ne solde no man don a ferst. ne selakien wel to done  
 for mani man bi-hotet wel. he it for3ytet sone  
 Þe man þe wule siker ben. to habbe godes blisse  
 40 do wel him silf þe wile he mai. þanne haued he it midywise  
 Þos riche men wened ben sikere. þurh walles *and* þurh diche  
 he ded his eitte on sikere stede. þe hi send to heuene-riche  
 For þer ne þarf he ben of-drad. of fure ne of peve  
 44 þer ne mai it hym bi-nimen. þe loþe ne þe leue  
 Þer ne þerf he habbe kare. of wiue ne of childe  
 þider we sended suuel and bred. to lutel and to selde  
 þider we solden drawen and don. wel oft *and* wel 3e-lome  
 48 for þer ne seal me us nout bi-nimen. mid wronge ne mid wo3e  
 þider we scolde 3erne drawen *and* don. wolde 3e me ileue  
 for þer ne mai hit ou bi-nimen. þe king ne þe scirreve  
 Al þat beste þat we habbet. þider we scolde sende  
 52 for þer we it muwen finden eft. *and* habben abuten ende  
 Þe þe her det ani god. for to habben godes ore  
 al he it scal finden þer. *and* hundred felde more  
 Þe þe ehte wile healden wel. þe wile he mai his welden  
 56 3iue his for godes luue. eft heo hit scullen a-finden  
 Vre iswinch *and* ure tilþe. is ofte iwuned to swinden  
 ae þat we dot for godes luue. eft we it scullen a-finden  
 Ne seal non vuel ben vn-bout. ne non god vn-for-3olde  
 60 vuel we doð al to muchel. *and* god lasse þanne we scolde  
 Þe þe mest deð nu to gode. *and* þe þe lest to laðe



- þer sculle ben deofles swo fele. þe wulled us for-wreien  
 nabbet hi noþing for-ȝyte. of al þat hi ere seȝen  
 Al þat we mis-duden her. hit wullet cuþe þere  
 100 buten we habben it ibet. þe wile we her were  
 Al hi habbet an here i-write. þat we mis-duden here  
 þei we it nusten ne i-seien. hi weren vre i-fere  
 Hwet scullen horlinges do. þe swikele þe for-sworene  
 104 wi swo fele beod i-cleped. swa feuwe beod i-corene  
 Wi hwi were he bi-ȝite. to wan were hi i-borene  
 þe sculle ben to deþe i-demd. *and* eure mo for-lorene  
 Elch man scal him sulne þar. bi-clepiean *and* ec demen  
 108 his aȝe were *and* his ipanc. to witesce he scal temen  
 Ne mai hym na man al swa. wel demen ne al sa rithte  
 for nan ni-enawed him swa wel. buten one dritte  
 Elc man wot him sulue best. his were *and* his i-wille  
 112 þe þe lest wot. seit ofte mest. *and* þe þe it wot is stille  
 Nis no witesse al so muchel. so mannes howe heorte  
 hwa se segge þat he beo al. him self wat best his smerte  
 Elc man scal him suelf demen. to deþe oþer to liue  
 116 þe witesse of his owe were. to oþer ȝis him scal driue  
 Eal þat eure ilc man haued i-do. sutþe<sup>1</sup> he com to manne  
 swile hit seie on boc i-writen. he scal it þenche þanne  
 Ac drithte ne demed nanne man. after his bi-ginninge  
 120 ac his lif scal beo swule. se bued his endinge  
 Ac ȝif þe ende is uel, al it is uuel. *and* al god, ȝif god is ende  
 god ȝuue þat nre ende beo god. *and* wite þet he us lende  
 þe man þe nele do no god. ne neure god lif leden  
 124 aer ded *and* dom come to his dure. he mai sore a-dreden  
 þat he ne muwe þenne bidde ore. for it itit ilome  
 þi he is wis þe bit. *and* be-ȝit. *and* bet be-fore dome  
 þenne ded is ate dure. wel late he biddet ore  
 128 wel late he leted vuel weorc. þe hit ne mai do na mare  
 Sunne let þe *and* þu naht hire þanne þus ne miht do no more  
 for-þi he is sot þe swa abit to habbe godes hore  
 þeh hweðer we it iluuet wel. for drihte sulf hit sede

<sup>1</sup> MS. fufþe.

- 132 a wulche time so eure þe man. ofþinchet his misdede  
 Oper later oper raper. milce he scal i-meten  
 ac þe þe nout naued ibet. wel muchel he scal beten  
 Mani man seid wo recke of pine. þe scal habben ende  
 136 ne bidde ic no bet beo a-lused. a domesdai of bende  
 Lutel wat he hwat is pine. *and* lutel he it icwoweð<sup>1</sup>  
 wile hete is þer soule wunet. hu biter wind þer blouwet  
 Hædde he ibeon þer anne dai. oper twa bare tide  
 140 nolde he for al middæn eard. þe þridde þer abide  
 Þæt habbet ised þat comen þanne. þit wuste midiwisse  
 uuēl is pine seoue 3er. for seoue nihtes blisse  
 And ure blisse þe ende hafh.<sup>1</sup> for endeliese pine  
 144 betre is wori water to drinke. þenne atter i-menge mid wine  
 Swunes brede is swuþe swete. so is of wilde dere  
 ac al to duere he i-buzed. þat 3ined þere-fore his swere  
 Ful wombe mai liht-liche speken. of hunger *and* of fasten  
 148 swa mai of pine þe naht not. hu hi scullen ilesten  
 Hædde he ifonded sume hwile. he wolde al seggen oper  
 eð-lete him were wif. *and* child. suster. *and* fader. *and* broþer  
 Al he wolde operluker don. *and* operluker þenche  
 152 3anne he bi-þoulhte on helle fur. þe nowiht ne mai aquenehe  
 Eure he wolde inne wa her. *and* inne pine wunien  
 wid þan þe mihte helle pine. bi-fluen *and* bi-scunien  
 Eð-lete him were al woruldes wele. *and* al eordliche  
 156 for to þe muchele mureð cume. þat is heuenriche  
 Twulle nu comen eft to þe dome. þat ic eow er of sede  
 on þat dai. *and* at þe dome. us helpe crist *and* rede  
 Þper we mazen beon eðe of-drad. *and* harde us adrede  
 160 þer elc sceal i-seo bi-foren him. his word *and* ec his dede  
 Eal scal ben þanne eud. þat man lu3en her *and* stelen  
 al scal ben þer vnrwien. þat men wru3en her *and* helen  
 We scullen aþre manne lif. ienawe þer al so vre owe  
 164 þer sculle heueninges ben. þe hei3e *and* þe lou3e  
 Ne scal þei noman scamien þer. ne þerf he him adrede  
 3if him here of-þinched his gult. *and* beted his misdede

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

- For heom ne scamet ne ne gramet. þe sculle beon iboruwene  
 168 ac þe oþre habbet scame *and* grame. þat sculle beon forlorene  
 Þe dom scal sone ben idon. ne last he nowit longe  
 ne scal him noman mene þer. of strengþe ne of wrange  
 Þo scullen habbe hardne dom. þe here weren herde  
 172 þa þe euele heolden wreche men. *and* vuele lazes rerde  
 Ac after þan þe he haued idon. he scal þer beon idemed  
 blipe mai he þanne buen. þe god haued iquemed  
 Alle þo þat isprunge beð. of adam *and* of eue  
 176 ealle he sculle þuder come. for soþe we it ileued  
 Þo þe habbed wel idon. after heore mihte  
 to heuenriche he scullen. ford mid vre drihte  
 Þo þe nabbeð god idon. *and* þer-inne beð ifunde  
 180 he scullen falle swiþe raþe. in to helle grunde  
 Þær-inne he scullen wunie. buten ore *and* ende  
 ne brecð neuereuft crist helle dure. to lese hem of bende  
 Nis no sellie þei heom beo wo. *and* hem beo vueþe  
 184 nele neureit crist þolie deð. for lesen heom of dieþe  
 Enes drihte helle brae. his frend he ut broutte  
 him self he þolede dieð for hom. wel dore he us bouhte  
 Nolde it mouwe don for meý. ne suster for broþer  
 188 nolde it sune don for fader. ne noman for oþer  
 Ure lauerd for his þreles. ipined was on rode  
 ure bendes he unbond. *and* bouht us mid his blode  
 We ȝieued vneþe for his luue. a sticche of vre brede  
 192 ne þenche we nout þat he scal deme. þo quike *and* to dede  
 Muchele luue he us cudde. wolde we it understonde  
 þat vre eldrene mis-duden. we habbet vuele an honde  
 Dieð com in þis middenerd. þurh þe ealde deofles onde  
 196 *and* synne *and* sorþe *and* ȝe-swinch. a watere *and* ec alonde  
 Vres formes faderes gult. we abigget alle  
 al his of-sprung after hym. in herme is bi-falle  
 Þurst. *and* hunger. chule. *and* hete. eche *and* al unelþe  
 200 þurh died com in þis middenerd. *and* oþer vnisalþe  
 Niere no man elles died. ne sic. ne non vn-ysele  
 ac mihten libbe curc mo. a blisse *and* on hele



- Lutel iþenchð mani man. hu muchel wes þe synne  
 204 for þan polied alle died. þe comen of here cunne  
 Here synne *and* ec vre owen. sore us mai of-pinche  
 for in synne we libbet alle. in sorewen *and* in swinche  
 Sudþe god nam swa muchele wreche. for ane misdede  
 208 we þat so muchel *and* swa oft mis-doð. mužen vs sore adrede  
 Adam *and* his of-spring. for one bare sunne  
 was fele hundred wintre in helle. in pine *and* in vuwunne  
 And þo þe leded here lif mid vuriht *and* mid wronge  
 212 bute it godes milce do sculle beo per wel longe  
 Godes wisdom is wel muchel. *and* al swa is his mihte  
*and* nis his milce nawiht lasse. ac bi ðes ilke wihte  
 More he one mai for-ziuen. þeune alfole gulte cunne  
 216 Deofel suelf mihte habbe milce. ȝif he it bidde gunne  
 Þe ðe godes milce sechð. iwis he mai is finde  
 ac helle king is oreles. wið þa þe he mai binde  
 Þe ðe deð his wille mest. he haueð wurst mede  
 220 his beað scal beo wallinde pich. his bed berninde glede  
 Wurs he deð his gode wines. þene his fulle feonde  
 god sculde alle godes frend a wiht seuche freonde  
 Neure on helle ic ne com ne comen ic þer ne reche  
 224 ðeh ich elches wurldes wele. þer-inne mihte fecche  
 Þeh ic wulle seggen eow. þat wise men us sede  
 and aboke it is i-write. þer me mai it rede  
 Ic it wulle segge heom þe hem self it nusten  
 228 *and* warnen heom wit heore hearme. ȝif hi me wulled lusten  
 Vnder-stondet nu to me. æidi men *and* earme  
 Ic wulle telle of helle pine. *and* warnie ow wið herme  
 On helle is vnger *and* þerst. vuele tuo ifere  
 232 þos pine polied þo þe were. mete niþinges here  
 Þor is woninge *and* wop. after eche strete  
 hi fared fram hete to þe chele. fram chele to þe hete  
 Þanne hi beod in þe hete. þe chele ðinchet blisse  
 236 þenne hi comeð eft to chele. of hete hi habbed misse  
 Aþer hem deð wa inou. nabbet hi none lisse  
 nuten hi weper heom ded wurst. mid neure non iwisse

- Hi walked eure *and* sechet reste. ac hi ne muzen imeten  
 240 for-þi hi nolden þo wile hi mithten here sunne beten  
 Hi seched reste þer non nis. ac þi ne muwen ifinde  
 ac walked weri up *and* dun. al se water deð mid winde  
 Þis beod þo þe weren her. on þonke vn-stedefaste  
 244 *and* þo god bi-heten auht. *and* nolden it ilaste  
 Þo ðe god weore bi-gunne. *and* ful-enden hit nolden  
 þe weren her *and* nuþe þer. *and* nusten wet he wolden  
 Þere is pich þat eure wealð. þat sculle bapien inne  
 248 þo þe ladde vuel lif. in feoh end in iginne  
 Þer is fur þat eure barnð. ne mai hit nawiht quenche  
 her-inne beod þe wes to lef. wrecche men to swenche  
 Þer is fur þat is vndredfelde hatere þanne beo vre  
 252 ne mai it quenchen salt water. nauene strien ne sture  
 Þo þe were swikele men. *and* fulle of vuele wrenche  
 þo þe ne mihte euel don. *and* lef was it to þenche  
 Þo þe luueden reuing *and* stale. hordom. *and* drunke  
 256 *and* þe on þes deofles weorkes blipeliche swunke  
 Þo þe were so lease. þat me hi ne mihte ileuen  
 med ȝeorne domes men. *and* wrancwise reuen  
 Þe oþre mannes wif wes lef. his awene eð-lete  
 260 *and* þo þe sunegede muchel. on drunke *and* on ete  
 Þe wrecchen bi-nemen hure ehte. *and* leiden huere on horde  
 þe lutel leten of godes bode. *and* of godes worde  
 And of his owen nolde ȝiuen. þer he sei þe nede  
 264 ne nolde i-huren godes sonde. þer he sette his beode  
 Þo þe weren oþeres mannes þinc. leure þanne it scolde  
*and* weren al to gredi. of suelfer *and* of golde  
 And þo þe vntreunesse deden. ȝam hi ahte ben holde  
 268 *and* leten þat hi scolde don. *and* duden þet hi wolde  
 Þo þe ȝysceres weren of þis woruldes ehte  
*and* dude þat þe loþe gost. hem tihte *and* ec tauhte  
 And alle þo ðen eni wise. deoffen her iquemde  
 272 þo beoð nu mid him an helle for-don *and* for-dempde<sup>3</sup>

<sup>3</sup> For remainder see Text, pp. 175-183.

## APPENDIX II.

### DE OCTO VITIIS. ET DE DUODECIMI. ABUSIUIS.

#### GRADUS :—

**O**mnia Nimia nocent. et temperantia mater uirtutum. dicitur; Ðæt is on engliſc. ealle oſeþdone þingc ðeƿiað. 7 ƿeo ƿemetegung is ealƿa mæƿna moðop; Se oſeplýra on æte 7 on ƿæte ðeð þone man unhalne 7 hiſ ƿaple ƿode læðetteð. ƿƿa ƿƿa upe ðriþ on hiſ ƿoðƿelle cƿæð; Eft þæƿ togeanes unƿemetƿoð ƿæƿten. 7 to mýcel ƿoþhæƿðnýrr on æte 7 on ƿæte ðeð þone man unhalne. 7 on mýcelþe ƿƿeceðnýrre ƿeþƿinƿð ƿƿa ƿƿa uſ ƿecƿað þéc. þ ƿume men ƿæƿtan ƿƿa þ hi ƿeƿpencton hý ƿýlþe ƿoþþeaple. 7 nane meðe næƿðon þæƿ mýccan ƿeƿƿinceƿ ac þæƿ þe ƿýrr ƿæƿon ƿrom ƿoðeƿ miltƿunge; Eaðe mæƿ ƿe man ƿinðan hu he hine ƿýlþne amýrre. ac ƿe ƿceolan ƿitan þ nan ſýlþƿala. þ is aƿenƿlaƿa. ne becyð to ƿoðeƿ ƿice; Nu ƿýnðon eahte heaƿoðleahƿar þa<sup>1</sup> uſ onƿinnað ƿƿiðe; An is ƿecƿeden ƿula. þ is ƿiƿeƿnýrr on engliſc; ſeo ðeð þ man ýtt æƿ tīman 7 ðƿincð. oððe he eft to mýcel nimð. on æte oððe on ƿæte. ƿeo ƿoþðeð æƿðeƿ ƿe ƿaple ƿe lichaman. ƿoþ þam þe heo macað þam menn mýcele untƿumnýrre. 7 to ðeaðe ƿeþƿinƿð. mid opmætum ðƿencū. heo ƿoþðeð eac þa ƿaple. ƿoþþan þe he ƿceal ſýnƿian of þoñ he ſýlþ nāt hu he ƿæƿð ƿoþ hiſ ƿeondlicū ðƿencū; Se oðeƿ leahƿeƿ is ƿoþliƿeƿ. 7 unƿemetƿoð ƿalnýrr. ſe is ƿehaten ƿoþnicatio. 7 he beƿýlð þone mannan. 7 macað of cƿiſteƿ himū mýlteſtƿena lima. 7 of ƿoðeƿ temple. ƿƿamena ƿununge; Se þƿiðða is auaritia þ is ſeo ýſele ƿitƿung. 7 ƿeo is ƿýrtƿuma ælcepe ƿohnýrre. heo ƿemacað ƿeaƿlac 7 unƿihte ðómar. ƿtala 7 leaƿunga 7 ƿoþƿoþnýrre heo is helle ƿelíc ƿoþ þam þe hi habbað bútu unafýlleblíce ƿƿæðigneƿrre. þ hi ƿulle ne beoð næƿre; Se ƿeoþða leahƿeƿ is ƿa ƿehaten. þ is on engliſc ƿeamoðnýrr. ſe

<sup>1</sup> 'a' and 'c' written over one another.

deð þ þe mann. nah his mōðer ȝepealb. 7 macað manrlýhtaȝ 7  
 mýcele ýfelu; Se fýrtai 7 tpiɾɿɿia þ is þiɾpe populde únpoɿnýȝȝ.  
 þonne ȝe mann ȝeunpoɿɾað ealles to ȝɾiðe ɾop hiȝ æhta lýpe þe  
 he luɾode ȝɾiðe. 7 cýt þonne ɾið ȝoð. 7 hiȝ ȝýnna ȝeeacnað; Tpa  
 unpoɿnýȝȝa sýnð: an is þeop ȝýele. oðer is halpenðe. þ man ɾop  
 his ȝýnnum ȝeunpoɿɾiȝe; Se ȝýxta leahter is accidia ȝeháten.  
 þ is aɾolcennýȝȝ oððe ȝlæpð on engliȝc. þonne þam men ne lýȝt  
 nan ȝóðð don on his life. 7 bið him þonne micel ýfel þ he ne  
 mæȝe nan ȝóðð don; And bið æppe unȝeru to ælcepe ðuȝoðe;  
 Se ȝeoɾða leahter is iactantia ȝeháten. þ is iðelȝýlþ on  
 engliȝcpe ȝppáccé. þonne ȝe man bið loȝȝeoɾn 7 mið licetunȝe  
 fæpð. 7 deð ɾopȝýlpe ȝiȝ he hɾæt ðælan ɾýle. 7 bið ȝe hlisa his  
 eðlean þæpe ðæde. 7 hýȝ ɾiȝe andbiðað on þæpe topeapðan  
 populde; Se eahtoða leahter iȝ supbia ȝeháten. þ is on  
 engliſc moðiȝnýȝȝ ȝecpeben seo is opð 7 enðe ælcepe ȝýnne seo  
 ȝeoɾȝe englaȝ to atolicum ðeoɾflum. 7 þone<sup>1</sup> mann macað eac  
 ȝiȝ he moðeȝað to ȝɾiðe. þæȝ ðeoɾfles ȝeȝeɾan. þe ɾeoll æȝ þuph  
 hi; Nu ȝýnðon eahta heaɾoðmæȝna þe maȝon oȝeȝɾiðan þaȝ  
 ɾopesæðan ðeoɾflu þuph ðɾihteȝe ɾultum; An is temperantia þ  
 is ȝemetetunȝ on engliſc. þ man beo ȝemetetȝað. 7 to mýcel ne  
 þiȝe. on æte. 7 on ɾæte. ne æȝ tɿman ne ȝeȝeoɾðiȝe; Nýtenu  
 etað ȝpa æȝ ȝpa hi hýt habbað. ac ȝe ȝeȝceaðɾiȝa mann ȝceal  
 ceɾan hiȝ mæleȝ. 7 þonne hýȝ ȝeȝetnýȝȝe mið ȝeȝceaðe healðan.  
 þonne mæȝ he oȝeȝɾiðan ȝpa þa ȝiȝeɾnýȝȝe; Seo oðer miht is  
 caɾɿitaȝ. þ is clænnýȝȝ on engliſc. þ ȝe læpeða hine healðe  
 buton ɾóplȝȝe on ɾihteum ȝeȝiȝɾiȝe mið ȝeȝceaðɾiȝnýȝȝe. 7 ȝe  
 ȝehaðoða ȝoðer þeopa healðe hiȝ clænnýȝȝe. þoñ bið oȝeȝɾiðeð  
 seo ȝalnýȝȝȝ; Seo þɾiððe miht is lapȝitaȝ. þ is cýȝtiȝneȝ on  
 engliſc. þ man ɾiȝlice aȝpenðe. na ɾop populðȝilpe þa þiȝ þe him  
 ȝoð lænðe. on þiȝum life to bɾucenne; Loð nele þ ȝe beon  
 ȝɾæðiȝe ȝiȝeȝaȝ. Ne eac ɾop populðȝilpe ɾoppoɾpan upe æhta.  
 ac ðælan hi mið ȝeȝceaðe. ȝpa ȝpa hiȝ ðɾihte liciȝe. 7 ȝiȝ ȝe  
 ælmýȝȝan ðoð. ðon hi butan ȝilpe. þonne maȝe ȝe ɾopðon. ȝpa þa  
 ðeoɾfollican ȝiȝeȝunȝe; Seo ȝeoɾþe miht is patientia. þ is ȝeþýlð

<sup>1</sup> 'þo ne,' between which an erasure.

gecpeden. ꝥ je man beo gefýlbiz 7 þolmoð for Ʒode. 7 læte æfre  
 hƷ Ʒerit Ʒefýlþe þonne hƷ ýrpe. forþam þe je hælenð epæð  
 þuƷ on hƷ ƷoðƷpelle; In patientia ūra porƷiðebitƷ animar ūrar;  
 Ðæt is on engliŷpe Ʒppæce. On eorþū gefýlþe Ʒehabbað  
 eorpe rapla soðlice Ʒehealbene; Se heofonlica Ʒiððom epæð. ꝥ ꝥ  
 ýrpe hæfð pununƷe on þæƷ ðýƷeƷan boƷme þonne he bið to hpæð-  
 moð. 7 je eall paldenða ðema ðemð æfre mið ƷmýltnƷƷe 7 pe  
 Ʒceolan mið gefýlþe ofepƷƷiðan ꝥ ýrpe. Se Ʒiŷte miht is ƷƷi-  
 talƷ lætitia. ꝥ is Ʒeo ƷaƷelice bliƷƷ. ꝥ man on Ʒoð bliƷƷƷe  
 betƷux unƷotnýƷum þƷƷeƷe þeðan Ʒopulþe ƷƷa ꝥ pe on unƷe-  
 limpum oƷmoðe ne beon. ne eft on ƷeƷælðum to ƷƷiðe ne  
 blissian. 7 ƷiƷ pe ƷopleoƷað þaƷ lænan Ʒeopulð þinƷ. þonne Ʒceole  
 pe Ʒitan ꝥ upe pununƷ niƷ na hep. ac iƷ on heofenum ƷiƷ pe  
 hoƷiað to Ʒóðe; þýðer pe Ʒceolan eftan of þƷƷeƷe eapƷoðnýƷe  
 mið ƷaƷelice bliƷƷe. þonne bið seo unƷotnýss mið ealle  
 ofepƷƷiðeð mið upum gefýlþe; Seo Ʒýhte miht is inƷtancia boni  
 oƷepis. ꝥ iƷ anpæðnýƷ Ʒóóðer ƷeopceƷ. ƷiƷ pe beoð anpæðe on  
 Ʒóóðum Ʒeopcū. þonne maƷon pe ofepƷƷiðan þa aƷolcennýƷe.  
 ƷƷá forþam þe hýt bið lanƷum býƷmoƷi ƷiƷ upe liƷ býð unnýt  
 héƷ; Seo ƷeoƷoðe miht is Ʒeo soðe luƷu to Ʒóðe. ꝥ pe on  
 Ʒoðum<sup>1</sup> Ʒeopcū Ʒoðer luƷe céƷan. Na iðeƷ ƷýlƷeƷ þe hým is  
 anbƷæte; Æc uton ðón ælmeƷƷan ƷƷa ƷƷa he uƷ tæhte Ʒoðe to  
 lóƷe. Na us to hliƷan. ꝥ Ʒoð Ʒý ƷeheƷoð on upum Ʒóóðum Ʒeopcū  
 7 je iðela ƷilƷ uƷ beo æfre unpƷrð; Seo ahtofe miht is Ʒeo soðe  
 eaðmoðnýƷ. Ʒe to Ʒoðe Ʒe to mannū mið moðes hlutƷoƷnýƷe.  
 forþam se ðe ƷiƷ bið. ne ƷýƷð he næƷpe moðiz; On hpam mæƷ  
 je mann moðizian þeah ðe he Ʒille. ne mæƷ he on ƷeþinƷcðum.  
 forþam þe Ʒela Ʒýnð ƷeþunƷenƷan. Ne mæƷ he on hƷ æhtū.  
 forþam þe he hýƷ enðe ðæƷ nāt. Ne on nanum þinƷum he ne mæƷ  
 moðizian ƷiƷ he Ʒis bið. Nu Ʒe habbað ƷehýƷeð hu þaƷ halƷan  
 mæƷnu ofepƷƷiðað þa leahtƷaƷ. þe ðeopol beƷáƷð on uƷ. 7 ƷiƷ pe  
 nellað hi ofepƷƷiðan. hi beƷencað uƷ on helle; þe maƷon þƷƷh  
 Ʒoðer Ʒultum þa feonðlican leahtƷaƷ mið Ʒecampe ofepƷƷinnan ƷiƷ  
 pe cénlice feohtað. 7 habban uƷ on enðe þone écan ƷƷrðmýnt.

<sup>1</sup> Erasure 'god um.'

á mið zode yǫlfū zif þe ƿincað nu hēp ! Nu ƿýnð tƿelf abuyſiua. ꝥ ƿýnð tƿelf unþeapaf. þa þe eop ƿecgað on leðen. 7 ƿýððan on engliſc. Duodeci abusiua ƿunt ƿch. hoc eſt ƿapienſ ƿine opib; boniſ; Senex. ƿine religione; Adoleſcenſ. ƿine oboeſientia. Diueſ. ƿine aelemoſina; Femina. ƿine pudicitia Domiuſ ƿine uirtute; Xpianuſ. contentioſuſ; paup. ƿupbuſ; Rex. iniquuſ; Epiſcopuſ. Neglegenſ; plebſ. ƿine diſciplina; populuſ. ƿine lege et ƿic ſuffocatur iuſtitia dī; Tƿelf unþeapaf ſýnðon. on þýſſere ƿopulde. to heáſme eallum mannū. zif hi móton ƿicsian. 7 hi alecgað ƿihtƿiſnýſſe 7 þone zeleaſan amýſſað 7 mancýnn zebƿingað zif hi móton to helle; ꝥ is zif ƿe ƿita bið butan zóððū ƿeopcū. 7 zif ƿe ealða butan eapſeſtenýſſe. 7 ƿe ƿelega butan ælmaſſeðeðū. ƿiſ butan ƿýðeſulnýſſe. 7 hlaſopð butan mihte. 7 zif ƿe cƿiſtena bið ſacſfull 7 zif þeapfa bið modig. zif ſe cýningz bið unƿihtƿiſ 7 ƿe biſcop zýmeleaſ. ꝥ folc butan ƿeoſe oððe butan æ; Nu zif ƿe ƿita bið butan zoððū ƿeopcū ƿe ðe oþpū mannū ƿceolde ſýllan zóðe býſne. hu ne bið . . .<sup>1</sup> ƿona hiſ lāp þam læpeðum mannū unƿýpð zif he ƿýlf nele ðon. ƿpa ƿpa he hým to ðonne tæcð; Ne bið ƿe lapeopðóm þam læpeðum ƿremfull. zif ƿe lapeop mið ƿeopcum toſýpð hiſ bodunge; Eft zif ƿe lapeop ðelað hpa bið hiſ lapeop ƿýððan. 7 zif ꝥ eaze ablinðað. ne bið ƿeo hand locienðe; Se ealða mann þe bið butan eapſeſtenýſſe. bið þam ƿeoſe zelic. þe leaſ býpð 7 bloſtman. 7 nænne ƿeſtm ne býpð. 7 bið unƿupð hiſ hlaſopðe; Hƿæt bið æſſe ƿpa ƿtuntlic. ƿpa ꝥ ƿe ealða nelle hiſ mod to zóðe apéndan. mið zóððum innzehýðe. þonne hiſ līma hým cýðað ꝥ he ne bið cucu lange; Iungū mannū mæz tƿýnian hƿæðeſ hi motan libban. 7 ƿe ealða mæz ƿitan zepiſſ him þone ðeað; Ðam ealðū<sup>2</sup> is to ƿapnienne ƿið þa ýſrelan zehóhtaf. ƿoſþam þe ƿeo heopte ne ealðað. Ne eac ƿeo tunge. ac þaſ tpezen ðelaſ ðeſiað oft þam ealðum. ƿite ƿoſþi ƿe ealða hƿæt hiſ ýlðe zedafenige. 7 þa þingz ƿoſſeo þe hiſ ſaple ðeſiað; Se þriðða unþeap is on þýſſere ƿopulde ꝥ ƿe iungza mann beo butan zehýpſumnýſſe; Unƿýpðe bið ſe on ýlðe ꝥ him oðpe menn þenion ſe þe on iuguðe nele hiſ ýlðpū zehýpſumian; Upe

<sup>1</sup> 'sona his' written twice and the first erased.

<sup>2</sup> MS. 'ealdūn.'



hælenð on hīȝ iugoðe ƿæȝ ȝ[eh]ýȝȝū hīȝ maȝon ȝ hīȝ heoƿonlican  
 ƿæðeƿ he ȝehýȝȝumode oð ðeað; Ðƿa ȝƿa þā ealðan ȝeðafeniað  
 ðuȝenðe þeapȝ ȝ ȝeƿiƿoð ȝýȝeƿnýȝȝ. ȝƿa ȝeƿiȝt þam iunȝan ꝥ he  
 hæbbe ȝehýȝȝumnýȝȝe ȝ unðeƿþeoðnýȝȝe; Goðeȝ æ být eac ꝥ  
 man aƿƿu[ȝ]ȝiȝe sýmble hýȝ ƿæðeƿ ȝ moðoƿ. mið mýcelpe unðe-  
 þeoðnýȝȝe ȝ ȝiȝ he hi ƿýȝiȝð he býð ƿýȝðe ðeaðeȝ; Ðe ȝeoƿþa  
 unþeap is ꝥ ȝe ƿeȝa mann beo butań ælmeȝðaðum ȝ beðiȝȝiȝe  
 hýȝ ȝeoħ. ȝ ȝeoƿnlice healðe hým to helle ƿiȝe; Unȝesælȝ bið ȝe  
 ȝiȝȝeȝe. þe þuƿh hýȝ ȝesælþa loȝað. ȝ ƿoƿ þam ȝeƿiȝenðlicū  
 þiȝum ƿoƿþýȝð ā on ecnýȝȝe; And ȝeȝælȝe beoð ȝýmle þa  
 miððeoƿtan ƿoƿþam þe hi ȝemetað þa miððeoƿtnýȝȝe eȝt se þe  
 ðælð ælmýȝȝan ƿoƿ hīȝ ðƿiħtneȝ luȝan ȝe behýt hiȝ ȝoðhoƿð on  
 heoƿonan ƿice. þæȝ nan ȝceaða ne mæȝ hiȝ maðmaȝ ƿoȝȝetelan. ac  
 hi beoð be ĥunðƿealðum ȝehealðene ĥim þæȝ; On manezum  
 ƿiȝum man mæȝ ƿýȝcan ælmýȝȝan. on æȝte ȝ on ƿæȝte ȝ on ȝe-  
 ƿæðum eac ȝ on cumliðnýȝȝe. ꝥ man cuman unðeƿƿó. ȝ ȝiȝ man  
 ȝeoċne ȝenéoȝað. oððe ȝaȝiȝne ƿƿeȝƿað. oððe bliȝðne læt. oððe  
 býȝð ƿanħalne. oððe unħalne ȝelacnað. ȝiȝ he læceðóm cān oððe  
 ȝiȝ he ƿæð tæcð þam þe ƿæðeȝ behóȝað. oððe ȝiȝ he miȝtȝað þam  
 menn þe ĥim abealh. oððe ȝiȝ he ȝeħeȝȝoðne of<sup>1</sup> æȝtnýðe  
 ȝeðeð. oððe ȝýȝ he ƿoȝðȝapene ȝeƿað to býȝȝene; Eall þiȝ bið  
 ælmýȝȝe. ȝ eac ꝥ man beȝȝiȝe þone ȝtuntan ƿoƿ ȝteoƿe. se þe  
 ȝtýȝan ȝceal. ƿoƿþam þe he ðeð miððeoƿtnýȝȝe. ȝiȝ he þone mann  
 ƿiħtælæcð; Ne ĥiȝe on þiȝū ĥoƿðe ꝥ þā ĥaȝenleȝan mæȝe  
 ƿƿemian to biȝȝiȝte. ƿoƿ þā þe þu ne bȝýȝȝt ana þiȝpa ƿelena  
 þeah þu ƿoȝice healðe; Ðu ȝaðeƿaȝt mā ȝ mā. ȝ menn cƿelað ĥunȝne.  
 ȝ þiȝe ƿelan ƿoƿƿoȝiað ætƿoƿan þiȝum eazum; Doð ȝƿa ȝƿa  
 ðƿiħten cƿæð. ðælað ælmýȝȝan. ȝ ealle þiȝ eoƿ beoð clāne. þiȝ  
 he cƿæð on hīȝ ȝoðȝeȝle; Ðe ȝiȝte unþeap is ꝥ ƿiȝ beo unȝýðe-  
 full; Unȝýðeƿulnýȝ bið ȝceamu ƿoƿ ƿoȝulðe. ȝ ꝥ unȝýðeƿulle ƿiȝ.  
 bið unƿuȝð on liȝe. ȝ eȝt æȝt liȝe nan eðlean næȝð æt ȝoðe;  
 Þiȝðóm ȝeƿiȝt ƿeȝū ȝ ƿiȝum ƿoƿþam ȝeo ȝiðeƿulnýȝȝ ȝeȝcýȝt  
 ĥi ƿið unþeapȝ; Þæȝ þæȝ ȝeo ȝiðeƿulnýȝȝ bið ðæȝ bið<sup>2</sup>  
 eac seo clānnýȝȝ. ȝ ꝥ ȝiðeƿulle ƿiȝ onȝcunað ȝiȝȝunȝe ȝ ceȝȝte ne

<sup>1</sup> An erasure in MS.

<sup>2</sup> 'ðær bið' omitted but supplied in a later hand.

aſtýpað. ac ȝeſcild ȝraman ȝ forſihð ȝalnýſſe ȝ ȝræðignýſſe  
 ȝemetegað. heo hi ƿapnað ƿið ðruncennýſſe. ȝ ƿorðlunge ne  
 luſað. ƿiðodlice se ȝiðefulnýſſȝ ȝeƿýlt ealle unþeapaf. ȝ ȝóðbe  
 þeapaf heo hýlt þe ȝode hiciað ȝ mannū; Seo ȝýxta unþeap is. ꝥ  
 ȝe ðe to hlaforðe bið ȝeſét. ꝥ he for móðleaſte ne mæȝe hiȝ  
 mannū ðón ȝtéope. ac bið him ȝƿa mihteleaſ on hiȝ modeȝ ȝſcēce.  
 ꝥ he hiȝ undeſþeoddan eȝerian ne ðeap. ne to nanū ȝýðome hi  
 ȝerȝſſian nele; Sum e hlaforðaf ȝenealæcað þuþ heopa hlaforð-  
 ȝcipe to ȝóðe. ȝƿa moýſes ȝe aƿƿiðða þe to þæm ælmihtȝan  
 ſƿiþæc. ȝ ȝume on heopa anƿalðe þone ælmihtȝan ȝremiað.  
 ȝƿa ȝƿa ȝaul ðýðe. þe foreah<sup>1</sup> ȝodeȝ hæse; Se hlaforð ȝceal beon  
 liðe þam ȝóðbū. ȝ eȝefull þam ðýȝeȝum. ꝥ he heopa ðýȝȝ alecȝe.  
 ȝ he ſceal beon ƿorðfæȝt. ȝ ƿitan hƿæt he clýȝȝe. hine man  
 ȝceal luſian for hiȝ liðnýſſe. ȝ þa ðýȝeȝan ȝceolon onðræðan  
 hýne ȝýmle; Elleȝ ne bið hiȝ ȝefaðung ne fæȝt ne langȝum;  
 He ȝceal beon ȝƿa ȝeƿorht. ꝥ him man mote ƿið ȝƿiēcān. ȝ ȝƿa  
 hƿæt ȝƿa he ƿiece. ƿiece for ȝihteȝnýſſe. na for hiȝ aȝenū ýȝpe.  
 ac for ȝodeȝ eȝe; Hýt is aƿrieten on bódū. ꝥ ȝe bið eall ȝƿa  
 ȝcýlðȝ. se þe ýfel ȝeþafað. ȝƿa ȝƿa þe ðe hýt ðeð. ȝýf he hýt  
 ȝebetā mæȝ. ȝ ýmbe þa bódce ne hóȝað. He ȝceal hýne ȝeþeodan  
 mid þeapfæȝtnýſſe to ȝóðe. forþam þe he nane mihte habban ne  
 mæȝ to ȝihte. butan ȝodes fýlȝte; ȝƿa ȝƿa ȝod ȝýlf cƿæð; Se  
 hlaforð ȝceal hogian ꝥ he hæbbe ȝodeȝ fultū. ȝ he oȝȝiȝiān e  
 ȝceal ahpæp be ȝodeȝ fultume; Eriȝ ȝod bið hiȝ ȝefýlȝta. ne bið  
 hiȝ miht forȝeƿen. forþam þe nān miht nis butan of ȝode seðe  
 ahefð of meohȝe þone mann þe he ƿile. þeah þe he ƿæbla ƿæpe. ȝ  
 ƿýpcð hine to ealðpe; He aƿýƿpð þa modȝan of heopa mihte-  
 ȝeale. ȝ ahefð þa eaðmodan. ꝥ eall midðaneapð heo ȝode undeſ-  
 þeod ȝ beþuſe hiȝ ƿulðneȝ; Se ȝeofoða unþeap is ꝥ ȝe cȝiȝtena  
 mann beo ȝacfull; Of cȝiȝteȝ naman is cȝiȝtianuȝ ȝeƿeðen. ꝥ  
 is se cȝiȝtena mann þe on cȝiȝte is ȝefulloð. ȝiȝ he þonne bið  
 ſacfull. ne bið he ȝoðlice cȝiȝten; Niȝ nan man ȝihtelice cȝiȝten  
 butan ȝe ðe cȝiȝte ȝeefenlæcð; Cȝiȝt ȝýlf nolde flitan. ȝƿa ȝƿa  
 hiȝ fæðeȝ cƿæð be hým; Eſne heȝ is min cild þe me is ȝƿiðe  
 leof ȝ ic ȝette minne ȝaȝt soðlice ofeȝi hine. ne flit he mid

<sup>1</sup> Read forseah.

ceaſte. Ne ſace ne aſtýpeð Ne on ſcraetum ne gehýrð ænig mann hýr ſtemne; He cpað eac on hýr zodýpelle. ꝥ þa beoð zodeſ bearſ þa þe geſibſume beoð. 7 ſace ne aſtýpiað; Ðra ſpa þa geſibbſuman beoð ſoðlice zodeſ bearſ. ſpa beoð eac þa ſacfullan deofleſ bearſ; Ealle we clýpiað to zode 7 cpeðað. pater nſr. þu ure fæder þe eaſt on heofonū ac we ne maſon habban þone heofonlican eþel buton we ſſam eallū ſacum oſſoroſe beon; Se eahtoða unþear is. ꝥ we þearfa beo moðig; Menig mann næfð æhta. 7 hæfð moðignýſſe ſpa þeah. 7 is eaſum for ſoſulde 7 unſeſæliz for zode. þonne he aſaſrð hiſ mōð mið moðignýſſe onſean zob. 7 nele on hýr ſſumðe eaðmoðnýſſe healðan; Cſiſt cpað on hýr zodýpelle be þam ſaſtlican þearf-um; Beati paupereſ ſſſu. qm̄ ipſorum eſt regnū celoru; Eaðize ſýnð þa þearfan þa þe on ſaſte ſýnð þearfan. forþam ðe hým bið forſiſen heofonan ſiſeſ mýſihðe; Ða beoð þearfan on ſaſte. þa þe fori zodeſ luſan beoð eaðmode. forþam þe þæſ mōðeſ eaðmoðnýſſ mæſ beſitan zodeſ ſiſe hſoðoſ þonne ſeo haſenleaſt. þe of hýnþum beſýmð; ſiſoðlice þa ſiſcan. þe ſiſtlice hſbbað maſon beon ſetealbe beſpux zodeſ þearfum. ſiſ hi eaðmoðnýſſe habbað 7 ofeſſlopednýſſe forlætað ſpa ſpa ðauið cýning cpað be him ſýlfum; Ego uero egenuſ et paup ſum dñ adiuua me; Ic eom pæðla 7 þearfa. Ðob ſýlſt þu me; Se moðiza þearfa. fori hýr moðeſ upahefeðnýſſe. is to ſiſcan ſetealb ſiſtlice on bocum. 7 we eaðmoða ſiſca þeah ðe he æhta hæbbe. mæſ beon zodeſ þearfa ſiſ he zode ſecpemeð; Se niſoþa unþear is ꝥ we cýning beo únſiſteſiſ; Se cýning bið ſecopen to þam þe him cýð hýr nama; Rex we cpaðað cýning ꝥ is ſecpeðen ſiſſiſzenð. forþam þe he ſceal ſiſſiſzan mið ſiſðome hýr ſolce. 7 unſiſt aleſzan. 7 þone ſeléfaſan aſaſſian 7 þonne býð hiſ eaſumlic. ſiſ he bið únſiſteſiſ. forþam þe he ne ſeſiſtliceað nænne. ſiſ he únſiſteſiſ bið ſýlf; þæſ cýningeſ ſiſteſiſſiſſiſ aſaſrð hýr cýne-ſetl. 7 þæſ ſolceſ ſceope ſeſtaþelað hýr ſoðſæſtſiſſiſ; ꝥ is cýningeſ ſiſteſiſſiſſiſ ꝥ he mið ſuccetepe ne ofſiſte. ne eaſumne ne eaðizne. ac ælcum ðeme ſiſt; He ſceal beon bepeſizenð ſýðepena 7 ſceopſiðða. 7 ſtala aleſzan. 7 ſoſiſzeſiſ ſeſiſtſian. 7 þa aſileafan aſiſaſan of hýr eaſiðe. mið ealle ſiſceſſaſt aleſzan. 7

wíðlungre ne gýman; ƿitan hým ſceolan mæðan 7 he ne ſceal  
 beon peamod; Godeſ mýnſtrea he ſceal. mundian æfre. 7 feðan  
 þearfan. 7 fæſtlice ƿinnan ƿið onſiðenðne here. 7 healðan hiſ  
 eðel; He ſceal ſoðfæſte menn ſettan hým to ðerefan. 7 for  
 ðode lýbban hýr hiſ ƿihtlice 7 beon on earfoðnýſſe anſwæðe 7  
 eaðmoð on ſtilnýſſe. 7 hiſ ofſprýnðe ne ðeþariðe ꝥ hý ápleaſe  
 béon; He ſceal hýne ðeþiððan on aſettum tidum. 7 ær mæltiðū  
 metes ne abitan. forþam þe hit is aƿriten. ꝥ þa þære leode þar  
 ſe cining bið cild; 7 þar þa ealðormenn eðað on ærnumeſzen  
 unearfæſtlice; Eif ſe cýning ƿile mið carfulnýſſe healðan þaſ  
 forweaðan beboda. þonne býð hiſ ƿice ðerunðfull on liſe. 7 after  
 liſe he móð faran to þā ecan<sup>1</sup> for hiſ aſwætunýſſe; Eif he  
 þonne forſýhð þas ðeſetnýſſa 7 laſe. þonne býð hiſ earð  
 ðeýrmed for ofe. æððer ðe on heregungre ðe on hunðre. ðe on  
 cƿealne. ðe on ungerýðerū. ðe on ƿilðeormum; ƿite éac ſe cýning  
 hu hýt is ðeƿeden on bócum 7iſ he ƿihtſiðnýſſe ne hýlt ꝥ ſƿa  
 ſƿa he ahaſan is on hiſ cýneſeðle toforan oðrū mannū. ſƿa he  
 bið eft ðenþeþað on þam nýþemeſtam ƿitū undeſ þam un-  
 ƿihtſiſū. þe he unſwðlice ðeheold; ðe teoða unþear is ꝥ ſe  
 biſceop beo gýmeleaſ; Eþs is ðeſe nama. ꝥ is on leðen  
 ſpeculator. 7 on engliſc ſceapeſe. forþam þe he is ðeſet to þam  
 ꝥ he ofeſſceapian ſceole mið hýr gýmene þa læweðan. ſƿa ſƿa ðoð  
 ſýlf cƿæð. to ezechiele þā ƿitegan; Speculatoriem dedi te domui  
 iſrl; Ic þe ðeſette to ſceapeſe. ſoðlice minū folce iſraheler  
 hiweðe ꝥ ðu ðehýne mine ƿorð 7 of minū muðu mine ſƿiæce  
 hým eýðe; Eif þu þam apleaſan nelt hýr apleaſnýſſe ſeðan.  
 ƿoñ ſƿýlt ſe apleaſa on hiſ apleaſnýſſe. 7 ic ofganðe æt þe mið  
 gnaman hiſ blóð; Eif þu þonne ƿaſnaſt þone apleaſan ƿer. 7 he  
 nelle ðecýppian fram hiſ ſýnnū þurh þe. he ſƿýlt on hýr un-  
 ƿihtſiſnýſſe 7 þin ſapul bið alýðeð; Eif ſe biſceop bið gýme-  
 leaſ þonne he ðoðer býðel iſ. 7 to laſeope ðeſet þam læweðū  
 folce. þoñ loſiað ſela ſapla 7 he ſýlf forið mið. for hiſ gýmeleaſte.  
 ac ꝥ folc bið ðeſæliz þurh ſnotorine biſceop. þe him ſeðð ðoðer  
 laſe. 7 healt hý undeſ ðoðe ſƿa ſƿa ðoðð hýrðe. ꝥ hi beon  
 ðehealdeðe 7 he hæbbe þa mæðe; ðe endlýfta unþear is. ꝥ folc

<sup>1</sup> 'rice' probably omitted.

beo butan ƿteope; Fela beoð ƿtuntnýƿra þær nán ƿteop ne  
 bið. 7 þær þ̅ ðýrɿz bið opƿorh 7 þ̅ Ʒeðrýlb ƿcƿað þær bið ýfel to  
 punienne ænɿgum ƿisan men. be þam cƿæð ƿe sealmpýrhta þɿrum  
 ƿorðum clýrienbe; *Adprehendite discipulam.* ne quando irascatur  
 ðñ 7 pereatɿ de uia iurta; þ̅ is. unðerfōð ƿteope þe læƿ þe Ʒōð  
 ýƿrɿze ƿið eop 7 Ʒe þonne loƿian of þā ƿihtan ƿeƷe; Eac pauluƿ  
 se apoƿtol cƿæð on hiƿ ƿɿtole. þurhƿuniað on ƿtéope. 7 Ʒepitod-  
 lice beoð ƿƿýlce ƿorhɿgeas. Ʒɿ Ʒe libbað butan ƿteope; *Εῖς* ƿe  
 ƿiteƷa isaiaƿ be þam ilcan cƿæð; *Quiſcite agere puerje diſcite*  
*bene facere;* *Εγρίκαð* þƿýrlicra ðæða. 7 leorniað Ʒōðs to  
 ƿýmcanne; *Dauib* cƿæð eac; *Declina a malo & fac bonum;* Buh  
 ƿram ýfele 7 ðo Ʒōðs; *Liƿ* þu unƿcēððɿz ɿ Ʒeƿcýlb þe ƿið ýfel.  
 7 Ʒɿ þu ƿcēððɿz ƿæpe Ʒepenð þe ƿram ýfele þý læƿ þe þu ƿteop-  
 leas lóɿze on ende; Se tƿelfta unþeap is. þ̅ folc beo butan æ.  
 ƿe ne<sup>1</sup> moton nu healban moýƿeƿ. æ. on þa ealban ƿɿan æfter ƿpeƿ  
 hælenðeƿ tocyne. ac ƿe ƿceolan Ʒeƿýllan ɿƿa ƿe ƿýmoyt maƷon  
 þæƿ hælenðeƿ beboba. 7 þa beoð uƿ ƿon æ. ƿorþam þe ƿe beoð  
 butan him Ʒɿ ƿe hýƿ beboba ne healbað; *ManeƷa* ƿeƷaƿ sýnb  
 ɿƿa ɿƿa se ƿɿðom clýpað. þe mannum þingað ƿihtce. ac hi ɿƿa  
 ƿeah Ʒelæbað to ðeaðe on ende. þa þe hým ðýrlice ƿolɿiað; Se þe  
 Ʒodeƿ. æ. ƿorlæt ƿeo þe is uƿe ƿeƷ. ƿe ƿceal mɿhlce ƿapan on  
 maneƷū Ʒeðrýlbū; *Cɿuƿt* ɿýlf is ƿe ƿeƷ. ɿƿa ɿƿa he ƿæbe bē hým;  
*Ego* ɿum uia & ueritaƿ. & uita; *Ic* ɿýlf eom ƿe ƿeƷ 7 ɿoð-  
 fæstnýƿ. 7 liƿ; *Nan* man ne mæƷ becum to minū heofonlican  
 ƿæbeƿ. buton þurh me. ac ƿe beoð þurh cɿuƿt to heopenum  
 Ʒebrohte Ʒɿ ƿe his biƷƷenzay healbað; Ða þe butan Ʒodes. æ.  
 7 Ʒodeƿ Ʒeƿetnýƿrum libbað. þa beoð butan Ʒobe æƿpe punizenbe;  
*Drihten* ɿýlf behēt þɿ þam þe healbað hýs beboba; *Ecce ego*  
*uobiſcum* ɿum omnib; ðieb; uƿq; ad conſumationē ɿch; *Ic* ɿýlf  
 beo mid eop ɿoðlice eallum ðagum. oð ƷeenðunƷe þɿƿpeƿe ƿopulbe;  
 Se hælenð ús Ʒeƿɿɿɿze to hýƿ ƿillan ɿýmble. þ̅ uƿe ɿapla moton  
 ɿiðian eft to him æfter ƿɿum liƿe. to þā ēcan liƿe. þ̅ he uƿe  
 ɿapla unðerfō. þe hi aƷende to þā lichaman; Sý him á ƿulðop 7  
 ƿuðmýnt *Amen*;

<sup>1</sup> 'ne' supplied in later handwriting.



## APPENDIX III.

ROYAL MS. 17 A 27, FOL. 70.

*Her cumseð þe oreisun of seinte Marie.*

SWETE lefdi seinte marie meiden ouer meidnes þu bere þat blisfule bern. þe arerde mon cun þat wes adun ifallet þurh adames sunnen. ant þurh his hali passiun weorp þen deouel adun *ant* herehede helle. Ich a sari sunful þing bidde þin are. þat tu beo mi motild aþeines mine sawle fan. þat ha hire ne bitellen. ah were me ant help me milzfule meiden. in alle mine neoden. ha habbeð monie wunden o me nunan ifestnet. þe acwelleð mi sawle bute þu beo mi leche. ich habbe ofte ibuhen to alle mine þreo fan. to þe feont.\* ant te þeo world. *ant* to mi flesches \* Fol. 70 b. sunne. ich enawe me schuldi. *ant* crie lefdi merci. for ich habbe imaket ȝeten of alle mine fif wittes to sunfule unþeawe. Misloket. Misherenet. Misispeken. Misifelet. Misiliket swote smelles. prude ant wilnunge of pris me habbeð sare iwundet. als wa wreððe. *ant* onde. leasunsunge.<sup>1</sup> Missware. ueele halden <sup>1</sup> So in MS. treowðe. cursunge. bacbitunge. *ant* fikelunge summe tide. ich habbe ihaued of oðer monnes mid woh. *ant* wið unrilhte. iȝeue mis. iunne mis. *ant* ethalden ofte. spac to uuel. *ant* slaw to god. ȝemeles ant unlusti. sum time to pleiful to drupi oderhwiles. ich habbe isuneget in mete ant idrunch baðe. wið flesches fulðe ifulet þat ich am ladliche ihurt ilicome ant isawle wið allescunes pinen of sunnen for<sup>2</sup> þah þe were nere in þe bodi þe wil wes in þe <sup>2</sup> MS. sor. heorte. al þis ich enawlechi to þe swete lefdi seinte marie. hehest alre halehen. Nim mot for me *ant* were me. for ich am pine wurðe. bisech for me þi milde sune Milce. Merci. are. for nawt ne mei he wernen þe? moder þat<sup>3</sup> him bere. of alle þine bisocnen. <sup>3</sup> Or? þe. ich bidde *ant* biseche þe. *ant* halsi ȝef me haheð hit. bi his flesh founge of þin edi bodi. bi his ibornesse. bi his edi uestunge iþe wilderness. bi þe harde hurtes. ant te unwurðe wokes þat he for us sunfule willeliche . . . .

[The rest is lacking.]



## NOTES AND EMENDATIONS.

---

P. 3, l. 2. *heste dei* = an ordinance day, a day to be kept holy by *behest* or command.

l. 3. *sed*. The *d* is written for *ð*; and the same occurs in *god*, l. 6; *finded*, l. 7; *unbinded*, *leaded*, l. 8; etc.

P. 5, l. 11. Þus makede ure helende his holie procession fro Betfage to Jerusalem. and elhc cristene man makeð þis dai procession fro chirche to chirche. and eft agen. and [hit] bi-toctned þe holie procession þe he makede þis dai. (MS. in Trinity Coll., Camb.)

l. 17. *þat assa*, probably an error for *þa assa*. See p. 3, l. 1 from bottom, p. 5, ll. 18, 21, and p. 9, l. 1.

l. 18. *hi hered* = *ihered* = *ihered*, hear.

l. 22. *nes* = *ne se*, not.

l. 23. *ifuled of* = ? *ifoled of*, foaled of.

l. 25. *ouer stohwenesse*. I have connected this in the translation with *ouer-stigen*, to exceed; but I now believe it to be an error for *ouer-flowendnesse* = superfluity. 'Manega Lazaras ge habbað nu licgende æt eowrum gatum, biddende eowre *ofer-flowendnysse*' = Many Lazaruses ye have now lying at your gates, begging for your superfluity. (*Ælfric's Homilies*, vol. i. pt. iii. p. 334.)

l. 26. *sterc ne wemod*, literally harsh and passionate. 'ac *ða stiðnyssa his stearcan bigleofan* . . . *geheold*' = But held to the severities of his harsh diet. (*Ælf. Hom.* vol. ii. pt. vii. p. 148.) 'Se feorða [heafod-leahter is] *weamet*' = The fourth cardinal sin is passion. (*Ibid.* vol. ii. pt. vii. p. 218.)

l. 27. *pes þe* . . . *mare*, so much the more.

l. 36. *sulen*, an error for *sculen*.

P. 7, l. 13. *þe þe salm scop* = who composed the Psalms. *þe* may be for the A.S. *se þe* (see p. 109, l. 3), who; but if we regard the first *þe* as redundant, we must read *salm-scop* = psalmist.

l. 22. *unfrit* = *unfrið*, discord, war.

l. 25. *litnie*. This is perhaps another form of *litnie*, to regard, look to. (See *Orm.* i. 211.) In the Moral Ode, p. 161, l. 22, it is written *lipnie*; but in the Egerton copy we find *hopie*.

l. 27. *rencas*. Bosworth quotes *idele rænca* = vana superbia, inanis corporis cultus. But in A.S. *renc* is feminine; however, *rincas* = men, would not suit the context.

P. 9, l. 23. *anulsed* = A.S. *gefylsted*, assisted.

l. 24. *perƿ*, need.

P. 11, l. 19. *breode* does not here signify *breadth*, but is merely given as the English rendering of *tables*. A.S. *bred*, pl. *bredu*. See l. 1 from bottom, and p. 13, l. 2.

l. 1 from bottom. *oðre* = first (of two), is quite correct. 'Lamech nam twa wif. *oper* wæs Ʒenemned Ada and *oper* Sella.' (Genesis.)

P. 13, l. 7. *bi sunt* = *bismit*, defile, besmut.

l. 11. *ƿurƷes* = *ƿinges*, things. *aƷc* is very much like *aƷe* in the MS., the *e* being imperfect; *aƷe* would signify *may possess*. Perhaps we ought to read, *ƿe oðer mon aƷe ut mare ƿenne ƿu* = which another man may have more than thou; *agan ut* in A.S. is to have or to find out.

l. 18. *murðhe*, probably an error for *merðe*, prosperity. See p. 21, l. 1, where *murðhe* occurs for *merðe*, wonders, glories.

l. 28. *ƿorð* = *ƿorh* = *ƿurh*, may signify through; so that *westmes ƿorð*, &c. = your fruits shall frequently come to nought *through* destructive (evil) tempests. But *ƿurh* governs an *accusative*, and *wedere* would be required instead of *wederas*; but see p. 7, l. 22.

l. 30. *to prisune* = for (as) prisoners. See Genesis and Exodus, l. 2044.

l. 36. *ƿeorð* = *weorð*, the pres. tense of *weorþan*, to be.

P. 15, l. 13. *uuelien*, to do evil to, hurt, afflict.

l. 14. *isegge ƿet sceamie*, &c. = should say what might put us to shame.

l. 24. *puttest* has here the same signification as the O.E. *ƿultest*, thrustest, pushest. This is the earliest appearance of the word *put* in this sense.

l. 36. *wið-stewen* = restrain, put a stop to. *Stewen*, to stop, cease, occurs in St. Marharete, p. 6: 'Stute nu ant *stew* ƿine unwittie wordes.'

P. 17, l. 1 from bottom. *towaarð* = *towarde*. *ð* is here written instead of the ordinary contraction for *de*. This is not at all uncommon in Old English MSS.

P. 19, l. 22. *forlaze*. This perhaps should be written *for laze*. The modern word *furlough* is the Du. *verlof*, leave, permission. Perhaps *laze* (law) is here used in the sense of sanction.

P. 21, l. 9. *alre coste*, always. It appears to be a compound like O.E. *needes-coste* (Chaucer) = O.E. *needes-weyes*, of necessity.

l. 15. *be hit* = *bet hit*, amend it, repent of it.

ll. 24, 25. *tomarƷan hit him is awane* = the morrow is lacking for him; i.e. he may not live until to-morrow.

l. 32. *nule* = ? *wule* = *wule* or *wile*, will.

P. 23, l. 1 from bottom. *miht*, mayest, not mightest.

P. 25, ll. 2-8. 'Se man ƿe æfter dædbote his manfullan

dæda ge-edniwað, se gegremað God, and hé bið þam hunde gelic, þe spiwð and eft étt þæt þæt hé ær aspaw.' (Ælf. Hom. vol. ii. pt. x. p. 602.)

l. 9. þurzeð = þinzeð, seems. See p. 13, l. 11, where þurzes = pinzes, things.

P. 26, l. 10. *in him*, i.e. in the *body*.

P. 27, l. 2. þa halinesse, like O.E. *halidom*, here signifies the *housel* or *host*.

l. 7. *his ezane on-siht* = the sight of his eyes; but *his azene on-siht* = his own presence,—*on-siht* being equivalent to A.S. *onsion*, *onsyn*, face, countenance, sight.

l. 33. *witicrist*, an expletive, 'By Christ!' *Witi Christ* may have originally signified 'So help me Christ.'

P. 29, l. 8. *cweðen in his þonke þar hi bið*. Perhaps for *in his þonke* we ought to read *his þonkes*, and the meaning will be, 'to say willingly where he is,' &c.

*in his þonke þar hi* [? *he*] *bið* = in his mind where he is. *In his þonke* is equivalent to *on his mode*, in his mind, that is, to himself.

l. 12. *Rubberes* = *rupperes*, riflers, house-breakers.

l. 14. *iuguleres* = jesters; but here used for idle talkers, gossip-mongers. Chaucer uses *jonglerie* for idle talk.

P. 31, l. 1. *ouereake* = A.S. *ofer-eca*, overplus, remainder.

l. 8. *foxliche smepien* = fox-like gloze.

l. 15. *3e-forðian*, offer, afford. The later forms, *avorthi*, *aforthi*, show that *ge-forðian* is the representative of the modern verb *afford*.

P. 33, l. 6. *agultes* for *agultest*. Verbal forms in *-es* are not used in this work.

l. 14. *graming*. We ought perhaps to read *granung*, groaning.

l. 20. þa *twa sunne*. The two sins, i.e. of whoredom and gluttony.

l. 25. *3euenesse*, not forgiveness, but *indulgence* = A.S. *for-3ufennes*.

l. 32. *frumðe*, beginning, commencement. For *þet* we ought perhaps to read *a þet*, until.

l. 34. *unprizedest* for *unwrizedest*. The verb *unwri3en* is properly a *strong verb*. Instead of *uncoveredst*, I think the true meaning here is *glancedst*, *winkedst*, or *peepedst* (with thine eyes upon thy riches).

l. 36. *he ne bið*, he is not. We ought perhaps to read *heo* for *he*, so that *heo ne bið* would refer to *þeos weorlð*, mentioned in l. 35.

P. 34, l. 2. For *why are we evil*, i.e. *why do we act wrongfully*.

P. 35, l. 10. þa *hit were min* = though it should be mine.

l. 18. *luð*, not hateful, but loathsome.

l. 33. *i-escad* = learnt by inquiry.

P. 37, l. 20. *on ward* may be A.S. *on weard*, opposed to. It appears however to be *on wane*, wanting, lacking. See p. 29, l. 24.

l. 24. *lipnie*. This seems to be the same word as *litmie*, p. 7, l. 22.

ll. 27–36 to p. 39, ll. 1–3.

‘Thre maner peyne man fangeth

For hys senne nede;

Senne (sorrow) hys that one, that other fastyng,

The thrydde hys almesdede;

Ac woste,

Senne (sorrow) hys and edbote yset

For senne do ine goste.

For senne in flesche

Vestyng heth the flesche lothe;

Ac elmesdede senne bet

Of gost and flesche bothe;

For thencheth,

*Thet almesdede senne quenkeþ*

*Ase water that fer aquencheth.*

. . . . .

Knewelynge, travayl, bar-uot go,

Welle-ward (= wolward) and wakyunge,

Discipline and lyte mete,

Thes longeth to vestyng;

And here,

Pelgrymage and beddyng hard,

Flesch fram lykyng te arere.

ȝeve, and lene, and conseil,

Clothyng, herberȝ, and fede,

Vysyty seke and prysones,

And helpe povere at nede;

Muknesse,

For to vor-ȝevne trespas,

Tak dedes of elmesse.’ (Shoreham, pp. 37, 38.)

P. 39, l. 17. *inwarliche* = *inwardliche*, inwardly, truly. Chaucer uses *inly* in this sense.

ll. 32–34. Ælfric has the same idea: ‘*ƿa ælmeſſan ȝe of reaflace beoð geſealde ſind Gode ſwa gecwéme, ſwilce hwa acwelle oðres mannes cild, and bringe ðam fæder ȝæt heafod to lace.*’ (Hom. vol. ii. pt. vi. p. 102.)

l. 33. *con* . . . *pong* (= *ponc*), acknowledge an obligation. (Havelok the Dane, l. 160.)

l. 36. *for nis þer nan feng on* = for none of these things (i.e. stealing and rapine) are acceptable (to God). ? *feng on* = A.S. *anfeng*, fit, acceptable.

P. 41, l. 4. *earnie*, strive to deserve, merit.

l. 5. *upplican*, above. 'On ðære tide was micel smyltnys in ðære *upplican lyfte* (= in the air above). (Ælf. Hom. vol. ii. pt. x. p. 496.

l. 11. *fredome*, privilege. See Ayenbite of Inwit, p. 41.

l. 32. *earming*, probably an error for *earman* or *earmen*—the correct form of the definite adjective. *Earning* is properly a noun.

P. 43, l. 6. *un-aneomned* may be rendered 'unmentionable' as well as 'innumerable.'

ll. 6, 7. *feðer fotetl* is evidently an error for *fīðer-foted*. A.S. *fyfþer-fot*, four-footed, quadruped.

l. 8. *epem* = A.S. *epm*, breath, vapour. Ger. *athem*.

'zang þonne swa.

oð þæt þu þone ymbhwyrft.

alne cunne. and ærest amet.

ufan to gründe. and hu sīd.'

sc swarta eðm seo.' (Cædmon, p. 309, l. 4.)

'hreðer æðme weoll' = his breast heaved with breathing.

(Beowulf, l. 5180.)

l. 11. *Summe swa deor lude remeð* = some as (wild) animals roar loudly.

l. 26. *motien*, treat, dispute. 'Man mote on earnest *motian* wið his drihten.' (Ælf. Test. p. 29, l. 22.)

l. 27. *dringan*. I have translated this as if it were an error for *ðringan*. *Dringan* would at first sight appear to be for *drincan*, to drink; but this sense does not suit the context.

l. 32. *Elmeszeorn nes heo nefre* = Willing to give alms was she never. Bosworth makes *elmeszeorn* = alms-giver; but (as in such compounds, as *lof-zeorn* = greedy of praise, vainglorious) it is an adjective, signifying desirous, so that *lof-zeorn* = willing to give alms, charitable.

l. 36. *on wunres liche* = *on þunres liche*, in the similitude of thunder; but it is probably an error for *on þunres slege*, in a clap of thunder, which phrase occurs in the Gospel of Nicodemus, p. 13, 3.

P. 45, l. 25. *chirche bisocnie* is evidently equivalent to A.S. *cyrice-socn* = O.E. *chirche zong*, church-going. *Socn* = a seeking, visiting, visitation, as in Beowulf, l. 3558: 'Ic þære *socene* singales wæg mōd-ccare micle' = I for that visitation constantly have borne great mental care. 'On *land-socene*,' = In search of land. (Cædmon, p. 100, l. 17; p. 102, l. 12.) In some Early English works we find *bisocnie* used in the sense of 'to beseech.'

P. 47, l. 1. *wurðliche* = *wurðliche*, estimable, valuable.

P. 49, l. 19. *tunes*. For a note on this word see Notes on the Glossary to Ormulum, vol. ii. p. 653.

P. 53, l. 11. *itimien* sometimes signifies to manage, contrive. It here signifies to act with moderation.

l. 18. *þeos ʒeolewe clapes* = clothes stained with saffron. 'Hire wimpel [maked] wit oðer maked geleu mid saffran.' (Homilies in Trinity Coll. Library, Camb., quoted in Bishop Percy's Folio MS. vol. ii. pt. i. p. 179.)

*helfter* = *helster*. This is used by Chaucer for covert, hiding-place.

l. 20. *tilden* = to set a trap, to bait.

l. 24. *blanchet*, a kind of wheaten flour used by ladies for improving their complexion.

'With *blaunchette* and other flour  
To make thaim qwyttre of colour.'

(R. de Brunne, MS., Bowes, p. 20, in Halliwell.)

l. 26. *hindene* = ? *hid-ern*, a hiding-place. Some foolish people try to deter vain children from admiring themselves in the mirror by telling them that if they look over-long in the glass they will see the devil peeping over their shoulder.

P. 55, l. 9. *wið him misdon*. *misdo* (sin) against him.

l. 11. *nið*, hatred, malice arising from envy.

l. 13. *blenchen*, not to terrify, but to deceive, lead astray, turn aside. O. Norse *blekkja*. See *Ancren Riwele*, pp. 276, 242.

l. 17. *Bute we bileuen*, &c. Except, unless, we *forsake*, &c. We must transpose the punctuation of ll. 16 and 17.

P. 57, l. 36. *onimis* = *on-mis* = amiss.

l. 42. *trouðe*, gen. sing. Perhaps *trouðe lef* = *trouðe lei* = law of truth, or *trouðe be* = be *thou* true.

l. 44. *Godere hele* = advantage, welfare, happiness. Cp. O.E. *wrothere-hele*, misfortune, ruin.

'Pat quene was of Engelond, as me aþ er ytold,  
Pat *goderhele* al Engelond was heo evere ybore.'

(Robt. of Gloucester, Spec. E. Eng. p. 70, l. 247.)

l. 45. *monsluht* is properly homicide, manslaughter.

l. 60. *iliche swiðe* = even as great (is it now).

l. 64. *blecen* = *blessen*, preserve, deliver.

'Therewith upon his crest

With rigor so outrageous he smitt,

That a large share it hewd out of the rest,

And glauncing downe his shield from blame him fairly *blest*.'

(Spenser's F. Q. I. ii. l. 18.)

P. 59, l. 71. *loð* = *lod* = *leod*, the common folk.



l. 85. *æt-agan*. I have here translated it as if an error for *æt-earwan*; but if not for *of-gan* = to proceed, we ought to read *eft agan* = long ago.

l. 88. *Onlete* = A.S. *andwite*, form, face. In the Ormulum we find *onndlætt*, *onndlæt*, countenance.

‘Ant ure Laferrd lēt hemm sen  
Hiss *onndlæt*.’ (Vol. ii. p. 95.)

l. 90. *lete*, not = A.S. *leotan*, *lutan*, to stoop, bend; but = A.S. *wite*, face, form. *Lazamon* has *læte*, *lete*, look, glance.

P. 61, ll. 113, 114.

That he may be (our) father and we his sons,  
To him is the advent of us all.

*To cumes* and *synes* should perhaps be written *to-cume* and *sune*; *to-cume* = A.S. *to-cyme*, advent, coming to.

l. 115. *eðele* = A.S. *ēthel*, native country, patrimony, inheritance.

l. 130. *for-men* = to commence, begin to do.

P. 63, l. 162. *wisliche* = the same, as *gewisliche*, truly, certainly. We also find the simple form *wisse*, as in the Ormulum and the Canterbury Tales.

P. 65, l. 175. *unskile*, folly, indiscretion, sins. See Orm. vol. i. p. 12.

l. 177. *ure sunnen*, &c., the sins against us, &c. See l. 193.

P. 67, l. 223. *þing*, sake, account. ‘To hwam ætwite þu me ær þæt þu hi forlure for minum *þingum*’ = Why didst thou, just now, upbraid me that thou hadst lost them on my account (or for my sake.) (Boeth. vii. 3.)

l. 230. *fond* = *feond*, enemy, the devil. (See p. 69, l. 1.)

P. 69, l. 251. *wrihte*, accusation, blame. The devil is represented as the *accuser* of mankind. For the form *wrihte*, see Orm. i. 136, 286; ii. 10, 339, 341; and Gloss. to Gen. and Exod.

l. 265. *lete* = conduct, as well as speech. Cp. the O.N. *lât*, *læti*, gestus, sonitus. See Orm. i. 39, 40, 348.

l. 268. *inhed* = A.S. *ingehyd*, intention.

P. 71, l. 278. *waning*, qy. for *woning* or *wuning*, abode.

l. 292. *him* refers to *scrift*, which is masculine. *habben* . . . *inume*, may have received (shrift); but *habben* . . . *imune* = may have remembered.

l. 294. *do in firste* = put off, grant respite.

P. 75, l. 2. The Trinity MS. reads, ‘Ne noman ne agh werne þanne me him for nede þar to bit’ = Nor ought any man to refuse (to teach) when any one in need thereto entreats (him).

l. 35. *alde*, an error for *halde*. The Trinity MS. has *healde willen* = are willing to receive.

l. 36. *þopnunge* = *þoftnunge* = O.E. *chesunge*, adoption, election.

P. 77, l. 3. *wacste*. The Trinity MS. has *westme*, which is also used for *strength*.

‘Ac hie be *wæstnum* wig[an] curon.’

(Cædmon, p. 193, l. 8.)

= For they, according to his *strength*, chose each warrior.

l. 11. *studed* = *studeð* = helpeth. A.S. *studu*, a support.

P. 79, l. 5. *half quic*. The A.S. *sam-cucu*, *healf-cwic* corresponds to the phrase ‘half-dead,’ but it is here literally rendered on account of the distinction drawn by the author of this homily on p. 81, l. 3.

l. 9. *werue*.—*Werf* (= A.S. *weorf*) signifies properly an ass; but in p. 85, l. 3, *werue* is given as synonymous with *mare*.

l. 16. *Ierusalem . . . griþes sihþe*. ‘Jerusalem *visio pacis* . . . Finitâ viâ habitabimus in illâ civitate, quæ numquam ruitura est, quia et Dominus habitat in eâ, et custodit eam; quæ est *visio pacis* æterna Jerusalem.’ (St. Aug. Enarr. in Ps. cxxxiv. § 26.) ‘Hierusalem, on pære is symle *sibbe gesihð*.’ (Ælf. Hom. i. 210.) See Orm. vol. ii. pp. 274, 429.

l. 21. *wrechede* = *wrech-hede*, crime, wickedness.

l. 23. *scrude*. I have rendered this by *produce*, as if it were an error for *strunde* (A.S. *strynd*, stock, *strain*, tribe).

ll. 26–28. It was a prevailing notion that sin caused the inferior creatures to become *hostile* to man. See Gen. and Ex. p. 6.

P. 81, l. 4. *aquenched*, extinguished.

l. 9. *his flesc awelden*, keep in subjection the lusts of the flesh.

l. 15. *holde mode*, a well-disposed (favourable) mind. ‘Beheald mīn gebed *holdum mōdē*’ = with a *gracious* mood. (Ps. v. 1.) ‘ƿe him *hold* ne wæs’ = who was not favourable (friendly) to him. (Cæd. 217, 2.) ‘Beheald me *holdlice* (favourably) and gehýr me eac.’ (Ps. liv. 1.)

l. 28. *sexe*, a short knife. ‘And (seo) hyre *seaxe* geteáh’ = she drew out her poniard. (Beow. l. 3095.)

l. 32. *elelendis*, foreign. In A.S. we have the forms *elelend*, and *elelendisca*, as well as *ellend* and *ellendisca*.

‘Ac me tó sange symle hæfde,

hú ic þīne sôðfæstnysse sélest heólde,

þær ic on *elelande* áhte stówe. (Ps. cix. 54.)

l. 35. *com flon*, ‘came flying’. The infinitive after verbs of motion is very common in A.S., but is not so frequently used by later writers, who prefer the present participle, which we have also in the Saxon English. ‘Ða comon þær *fleogende* twégen fægre englas.’ (Ælf. Hom. vol. ii. pt. v. p. 504.)

l. 36. *fepor-home*. This properly signifies ‘*vestis plumis constructa*,’ but it is also used for *wings*.

‘ And [he] hæfde cræft mid him.  
 þet he mid *feðer-hóman*. (= wings).  
 fleogan meahhte.’ (Cæd. p. 27, l. 13.)  
 ‘ geseo ic him his englas.  
 ymbe hweorfan.  
 mid *feðer-haman*’ (with feathery wings).  
 (Ibid. p. 42, l. 6.)

*Home* or *hame* is found in the Romance of Kyng Alisaunder,  
 p. 21, l. 391.

‘ Of he caste his dragouns *hame*.’

P. 83, l. 31.

‘ The schryft-pader that varth aryȝt  
 Schal be wel debonayre and loȝe ;  
 He schal wyslyche thy senne hele,  
 Bet thane he wolde hys owe.  
 ȝef he the schel anoye aȝt,  
 Hyt wyle of-þenche hym sore ;  
*And otherwyle anoye he mot,*  
*Wanne he scheweth the lore of helthe,*  
*Ase mot the leche ine voule sores*  
*Wanne he royneth the felthe.’*

(Shoreham, pp. 35, 36.)

P. 85, l. 3. *unorne* may here be rendered bold, wayward. Its more ordinary meaning is, simply, rough, old ; *unorne mare þet bitacneð ure unorne fleis*. Cp. the following from the Vision of Piers Ploughman, ed. Wright, vol. ii. p. 354 :—

‘ For he seigh me that am Samaritan  
 Suwen Feith and his felawe  
*On my capul that highte caro,*  
 Of mankynde I took it.’

l. 25. *wurpinge*, dung, ordure. See a good note on this word in Cockayne’s *St. Marherete*.

P. 87, ll. 5, 6. *of elchan hiwscipe*. The original has *æt ælcum hiwisce*.

l. 10. *londe*. The original has *leodscipe*.

l. 13. *ledde*. The original has *mid* ; but perhaps the scribe of the Lambeth MS. intended to write *and ledde*.

l. 21. *þe ner*. The original text has *þa clypod God þone moysen him to*.

l. 25. *deðpe*. The original has *slege*.

P. 89, l. 21. *edmodliche*. The A.S. text has *ánmodlice* = unanimously.

l. 22. *onbodinde*. The A.S. text has *anbidigende*.

l. 25. *upfleunge* = *upfleringe*, upper flooring.

l. 27. *spechen*. The A.S. text has *gereordum*.

l. 29. *troufeste*. The A.S. text has *eawfeste*.

l. 31. *eclicnew*. The A.S. text has *ælc oncnnew*.  
*abluied*. The A.S. text has *ablicged*.

P. 91, l. 10. *forð*. The A.S. text has *oðpæt*. Old English writers also employ *for-te* or *forto* = until.

l. 11. *þa iturn[d]e*. The A.S. text has *ða wurdon hi onbryrde* (stimulated), and *cwædon*, &c.

l. 17. *mid sibsumnesse*. The A.S. text has *on annysse*.  
*salden* = The A.S. text has *beceapodon*.

l. 23. *wone* = lack. The A.S. text has *wædla* = poor person.

l. 24. *apostlas fotan*, the feet of the apostle (St. Peter). The A.S. text has to *þæra apostolu fotum*. See l. 26.

l. 27. *reðe* = A.S. *hræðe*.

l. 32. *Heo nomen*, &c. The A.S. text has *Namon ða to ræde*,  
*þæt him wærligor wære*, *þæt hi sumne dæl heora landes wurðes*  
*æthæfdon*, *weald him getimode*.

P. 93, l. 9. *selt*. The A.S. text has *settle*. But *seld* or *scald* is a seat or chair. 'Ic wolde of selde sunu meotodes drihten adrifan.' (Cæd. p. 275, l. 17.)

l. 13. *mid þere annesse*. The A.S. text has *mid þære gehealsumnysse*, *þæt hi drohtnian on mynstre*, *be heora ealdres dihte*.

l. 15. and *heom 3ef*, &c. The A.S. text has *and him forgeaf ingehyd calra gereorda*; *forðan ðe se eadmoda heap ge-earnode æt gode þæt iū ær þæt modige werod forleas*.

l. 22. *to drefile* = A.S. *tostencte*.

l. 23. *þi bileafden* = *þa bileafden*. The A.S. text has *Hī ða geswicon ðære getimbrunge* = they then ceased from the building.

l. 24. *to dreofden*. The original has *to-ferdon*, departed.

*þeððan*. The A.S. text has *seððan*, and this shows that *þeððan* is an error for *seððan*. In the Northern dialect of the fourteenth century we find *þeþen* = thence.

l. 26. *Nu eft*, &c. The original has *Nu eft on ðisum dæge*,  
*purh ðæs Halgan Gastes to-cyme*, *wurdon ealle gereord ge-anlahte*  
*and geðwære*; *forðan ðe eal se halga heap*, *Cristes hyredes wæs*  
*sprecende mid eallum gereordum*; *and eac þæt wunderlicor wæs*,  
*ðaða heora an bodade mid anre spræce*, *ælcum wæs geðuht*, *ðe*  
*ða bodunge gehyrde*, &c.

l. 29. *bodeden*, plural, by attraction to *apostlum*.

l. 33. *iemedede* = A.S. *ge-earnode* = gained. See *iarnede* in l. 35.

l. 35. *isezen* = A.S. *æteowed*.

P. 95, l. 3. *wit-utan laðe* = A.S. *unscæððig*.

l. 11. *dreikhinde* = A.S. *drohtnigende*.

l. 12. *mid nane laðnesse* = A.S. *mid unscæððignysse*.

l. 13. *ne of bitere speche nes* = A.S. *ne he biterwyrd næs*.

l. 14. *forbere*, if not in the subj. mood, is an error for *forber*; the A.S. is *forbær*.

l. 15. *ercan* may be read *ertan*, which is probably miswritten for *erstan* (first). The A.S. text has *cerran* = former.

*liðegedde þan sunfullen to þere godnesse*. The A.S. text has *liðegode, þam synfullum to gecyrrednysse*, which Thorpe renders 'mitigated, for the conversion of the sinful.' *liðegien* = to moderate, act gently towards, soften.

l. 16. *forsunegede*. The A.S. text has *reccleasum* = to the reckless.

l. 20. *murliðe*, not mirth, but an error for *merðe*, greatness. See note, p. 307, l. 18. The A.S. text has *mærða*.

l. 25. *forðnimeð* = *fornimeð*, consumes.

l. 27. *itend* = A.S. *onbryrd*.

*Erest*, &c. The A.S. text has *ærest on him sylfum ælcne leahter adwæscan*, and *siððan on his underðeoddum* = first extinguish every sin in himself, and afterwards in those under his care.

l. 30. *wið-utan ufelnesse* = A.S. *on unscaððignysse*.

l. 31. *3if* = *3ife*. The final *e* has probably been dropped as it was in reading, before the following word commencing with a vowel.

l. 32. *godes icwime* = A.S. *gode gecweme*.

l. 35. *riht-wissnesse*. The first *s* is dotted out in the MS., and should therefore be *riht-wisnesse*.

P. 97, l. 2. *un-cladnesse*. The A.S. text has *unscaððignysse*. The scribe perhaps intended to write *unlaðnesse*; for on p. 95, l. 3, he has written *wiðutan laðe* for the older *unscaððig*.

*itenð* is for *itende* (pl. form of the p. p.) The A.S. text has *onælede*.

l. 3. *niminde*. The A.S. text has *fornymende*.

l. 14. *for3ifnesse and huht*. The A.S. text has *forgyfnysse hiht* = hope of forgiveness.

l. 15. *3eomerinde*. The A.S. text has *unrotan*.

l. 17. *3if*, an error for *3ifð*. The older text has *forgifð*.

*iðonc*. The A.S. text has *ingehyd* = knowledge.

l. 19. *gast*, for *gaste*. The A.S. text has *gasta*.

l. 26. *het*. The A.S. text has *hatte*.

l. 27. *gode*. The A.S. text has *mærum*, great.

ll. 28, 29. *paul þet hermede cristene men*. The A.S. text has *Paulus ehte cristenra manna*.

l. 30. *cachepol*. The original has *tollere*.

l. 32. *hi neren aferede of nane*, etc. The A.S. text has *hi forsawon ealle*, &c.

l. 33. *wið-utan fore* = A.S. *orsorhlice*, fearlessly.

l. 34. *hehnesse* = A.S. *wurðmynt*.

*heriane* = A.S. *mærsigenne*.

l. 35. *hine seoffimede mede*. The A.S. text has *gedemedode hine sylfne*.

l. 36. *isundian*. The original has *geneosian*, to visit.



P. 99, l. 2. *godes*. The original has *godas*, gods.

l. 21. *nehstan*! *al swa he heom er bihet*. The original has *nehstan swa swa hī sylfe*. *He sende efte, swa swa hæc ðer behet*.

l. 29. *onlihte*. The original has *onbryst*.

l. 31. *mid gode dedan*! *and trewfestnesse*. The A.S. text has *mid ingehyde and arfestnysse*.

l. 33. *blisse*. The A.S. text has *geðinaðe*, honour.

P. 101, l. 3. *iferende*. The A.S. text has *werod*.

l. 6. *godnesse* is an error for *godcundnesse*, and should have been translated 'godhead,' as the A.S. text has *godcundnyss*.

l. 7. *un-to-delendlich*. The A.S. text has *unascyrigendlice*.

l. 9. *itacned*. The original has *geswutelod*, manifested.

l. 10. *cahte*. The A.S. text has *gestreon*.

l. 11. *iponc on his ehte*! *he bið þes deofles bern buten he hit iswike*. The original has 'hiht on his gold hord he bið swa swa se apostol cwæð þam gelic þe deofolgyld begað.'

P. 121, l. 5 from bottom, *þah ne nedde he*, to p. 123, l. 24, *fowertene niht*. The whole of this passage is taken from Ælfrie's Homily for Palm Sunday. (See Thorpe's edition of Ælfrie's Homilies, vol. i. part ii. pp. 215, 217.)

'*Peah-hwæðere ne nydde he na þat Iudeisce folc to his cwale, ac deofol hī tihte to ðam weorce, and God þat geðafode, to alysednysse ealles geleaffulles mancynnes*.

'We habbað oft gesæd, and gīt seegað, þat Cristes rihtwisnys is swa micel, þat he nolde niman mancyn neadunga of ðam deofle, buton he hit forwyrhte. He hit forwyrhte ðaða he tihte þat folc to Cristes cwale, þæs Ælmihtigan Godes; and ða þurh his unscaððigan deað wurdon we alyseðe fram ðam ecan deaðe, gif we us sylfe ne forþerað. Þa getimode ðam reðan deofle swa swa deð þam gredigan fisce, þe gesihð þæt æs, and ne gesihð ðone angel ðe on ðam æse sticað; bið þonne gredig þæs æses, and forswyleð þone angel forð mid þam æse. Swa wæs þam deofle: he geseh ða menniscnysse on Criste, and na ða godcundnysse: ða sprytte he þat Iudeisce folc to his slege, and gefredde ða þone angel Cristes godcundnysse, þurh ða he wæs to deaðe aceocod, and becnæmed ealles mancynnes þara ðe on God behyfað. . . .

'Þa Iudei genámon hine on frige-æfen, and heoldon hine ða niht, and ðæs on merigen hī hine gefestnodon on rode mid feower nægelum, and mid spere gewundodon. And ða embe nōn-tid, papa hē forðferde, þa comon twegen gelyfede men, Ioseph and Nichodemus, and bebyrigdon his lic ær æfene, on nūcere ðryh, mid deorwyrðum reafum bewunden. And his lic læg on brygene þa sæter-niht and sunnan-niht; and seo godcundnys wæs on ðære hwile on helle, and gewrað þone ealdan deofol, and him of-anam Adám, þone frumsceapenan man, and his wif Euan, and ealle ða ðe of heora cynne God ær gecwæmdon. Þa gefredde se deofol þone angel þe he ðer grædelice forswaeth. And Crist



*arás of deaðe þone easterlican sunnan-dæg, þe nu bið on seofon nihtum.*

I here add Thorpe's translation, which corrects one or two inaccuracies in that of mine :—

‘*Yet did he not compel the Jewish people to slay him, but the devil instigated them to the work, and God consented to it for the redemption of all believing mankind.*

‘We have often said, and yet say, that the justice of Christ is so great, that he would not forcibly have taken mankind from the devil, unless he had *forfeited them*. He *forfeited them* when he instigated the people to the slaying of Christ, the Almighty God; and then through his *innocent* death we were *redeemed* from eternal death, if we do not destroy ourselves. Then it befell the cruel devil, as it does the greedy fish, which sees the bait, and sees not the hook which sticks in the bait; then is greedy after the bait, and swallows up the hook with the bait. So it was with the devil: he saw the humanity in Christ, and not the divinity: he then *instigated* the *Jewish* people to slay him, and then felt the hook of Christ's divinity, *by which he was choked to death, and deprived of all mankind who believe in God.* . . . .

‘*The Jews took him on Friday evening, and held him that night, and on the morrow fixed him on a cross, with four nails, and with a spear wounded him. And then about the ninth hour, when he departed, there came two believing men, Joseph and Nicodemus, and buried his corpse before evening in a new tomb, enwrapt in precious garments. And his corpse lay in the sepulchre the Saturday night and Sunday night, and the Divinity was during that while in hell, and bound the old devil, and took from him Adam, the first created man, and his wife Eve, and all those of the race who had before given pleasure to God. Then was the devil sensible of the hook which he had before greedily swallowed. And Christ arose from death on the Easter Sunday, which will now be in seven days.*’

P. 123, l. 8 from bottom. *alesde*, redeemed, set loose or free.

P. 127, l. 9. *hwen*. I have read the contraction as *n*, it may be *m*. See *hwen*, l. 5 from bottom of the same page.

P. 133, l. 17. *al freosze* = ? *afreosze*, for *gefreesge*, from A.S. *freolsian*, to keep holy day. ‘*Freolsiaþ Drihtnes restedæg*,’ Lev. xxv. 2.

P. 135, l. 20. *eðeliche dede*, a [good] deed of little value in itself, because *easily* done. *Eðeliche* = A.S. *eaðelic*, easily, from *eað*, easy.

l. 28. *bihazeð* is merely another form of *onhazeð*, is convenient to, from A.S. *onhazian*, to have an opportunity to do a thing, to be convenient. Bosworth quotes the phrase, ‘*gif me onhagað*’ = if convenient to me.

P. 137, l. 4. *for godes loue* does not mean for the love of God ; *loue* = sake. Cp. 'þe of his *lunan* adreæg' = who for his sake had endured. (Legend of St. Andrew, ed. Kemble, p. 10, l. 328.) *Godes* = of a recompense, reward, or benefit. Cp. 'manig oþerne *gódum* gegrétan,' = many a one greets another with benefits. (Beowulf, l. 3726.) 'Wene Ic þæt he mid *gode* gyldan wille uncran eaferan,' = I ween that he will repay our offspring with recompense or requital. (Ib. l. 2372.)

P. 141, l. 33. *ilokene*, (pl.) closed, shut.

P. 145, l. 4. *dunge wið-uten prikunge*. If *dunge* = *ʒenunge*, we may translate '*feasting* without satiety.'

l. 11 from bottom. *uuel*, evil, hard or difficult.

P. 147, l. 22. *het-halde* = *ethalde*, retain.

P. 151, ll. 1, 2. This passage seems to be quoted from one of the Apocryphal Gospels. *N.* (in l. 9 from bottom) is perhaps *Nicodemus* and not *Nathaniel*.

P. 155, l. 2. *þet erre weren to-gedere*, that previously was united. The Trinity MS. has *er*.

P. 157, l. 11. *þurþ*, an error for *þurh*, through.

l. 21. *utþiwiste*, out-dwelling. 'To heuen, that bese the beste bewyste.' (Met. Hom. p. 69, l. 5.)

l. 22. *ituped* seems to be another form of the A.S. *getiðed* = permitted, from *getiðian*, *tiðian*, to allow, permit.

P. 161, l. 21. *Do he to gode*, etc., let him do for God what he can while he is alive. In the translation I have followed the Egerton MS.

l. 36. *Monies monnes sare iswinc*, etc. The rendering in the text is only right on the supposition that *unholde* = *unhale*. We ought, I think, to place a comma after 'would' in line 35, and so connect it with what follows :—'He who does not well while he may, shall not be able when he would, for many a man's hard affliction (i.e. grievous sickness) hath [been] often unfavourable' (i.e. has prevented him from amending his evil life). Here *unholde* will have its proper signification, from A.S. *hold*, favourable, friendly.

P. 163, l. 40. *his* = her, i.e. 'blisse.' This form is common in the Ayenbite of Inwyte.

l. 45. *ʒelde*, requital, recompense.

l. 46. *solf*. The Egerton MS. reads *suuel*, which may be rendered 'dainties.' It properly signifies anything in addition to the ordinary diet ; anything eaten with bread—sauce, meat. The Trinity MS. B 14, 52, reads, *þider we sendeð and ec bereð to litel and to selde*.

ll. 55, 56. *es*, *hes* = her, and refers to *echte*. See note on l. 40.

P. 165, l. 94. *of-dred* is an error for *of-dredde*. The Trinity MS. has *of-draddde*.

l. 95. *mid hom*, probably for *mid hwom*. The Trinity MS. has *mid hwan*.

l. 103. *ordlinghes* = *orlinges* = *horlinges*, whoremongers.

P. 167, l. 108. *temen*. See Lazamon, vol. i. p. 54, and Early Eng. Allit. Poems, p. 38.

l. 118. *penne*, evidently for *ponne* or *peonne*.

l. 121. The Trinity MS. reads, *ʒief þe endinge is god al hit is god ʒ euel ʒief euel is þe ende*.

l. 133. We may translate this line as follows:—Many a man says, 'Who cares for torment, for that shall have an end?'

P. 169, l. 143. *Swines brede* seems to be the *roasted* flesh of the swine. A.S. *brede*, roasted meat. See Cockayne's *Leechdoms*, vol. iii. p. 98.

l. 170. *redde* is an error for *rerde* or *arerde*, upreared, established.

P. 170, l. 175. Read *well* after *done*.

P. 171, l. 179. *and ende* is probably an error for *an-ende*, at the last, finally; *an ende* or *on ende* also signifies 'to the end.' See Castel off Love, ed. Weymouth, ll. 822, 973, and Glossary, p. 79.

l. 192. *on honde*. Cp. O.E. *heranont*, *heranonden*, in respect of this.

P. 172, l. 236. Read *ever* before *any*.

P. 173, l. 214. *bigunne*, had sought; 3rd sing. subj. of *bigan*. A.S. *begangan* (or *began*), to go after.

l. 221. *hi* = *ʔ ih* = *I*, a form which occurs in the present Homilies.

l. 223. *his* = *I*. See *Ayenbite of Inwyrt*, p. 215.

l. 231. *wow*, is evidently an error for *wop*, weeping (the lection of the Trinity MS.)

l. 232. *to hete*, an error for *to chele*. The Trinity MS. reads, *Hie fareð fram hate to chele, fram chele to hate*.

l. 235. The Trinity MS. has the following reading:—'Eiðer doð hem wo inoh, nabbeð none lisse,' each (of these tortures, i.e. heat and cold) cause them woe enough; they have no cessation.

P. 175, l. 253. *tening*. The correct reading is probably *reuing*, robbery. The Trinity MS. reads *rauing*.

l. 260. *borde*. The Trinity MS. has *bode*, command, message, which is followed in the translation.

l. 268. *hechte to*.—*Tilte to*, instigated (them) to, is the reading of the Trinity MS.

l. 271. *of þouhte sore*, bitterly repented.

P. 179, l. 319. The correct reading perhaps is, *ʒif we serueden god, so we doð for erminges*, if we served God as we do for gains. I have translated as if the reading were *erminges*, i.e. poor ones. The Trinity MS. has very plainly, 'ʒef we serueden god half þat we doð for erminges [*ʔ ernunges*].'

l. 330. *bute we wurpe us iwar*, unless we ourselves be wary.

l. 337. *bene*. Does this mean the well-trodden way? See Gawayne and the Green Knight, ll. 2402, 2475. I have translated as if *bene* were another form of O.E. *bain*, ready, also easiest, nearest.

l. 343. *nußer hulde*, the downward slope, the lower declivity or incline. *Hulde* = *helde*, Trist. iii. 89; La3. 12867.

P. 183, l. 380. *zihte* may be an error for *wihte*, weight, measure. (See l. 212, p. 173.) The Trinity MS. has *wihte*.

l. 384. *hali boc*, etc. The Trinity MS. reads, 'On him hie sullen ee isien al þat hie ar nesten.'

l. 390. *wurse*, inferior. Cp. O.E. *wursen*, to impair, become inferior.

l. 2 from bottom. *Ihesu teke þet tu art*. Thou too Jesus that art, etc. *Teke* is for *to-eken* (A.S. *to-eacan*), in addition, besides, moreover. In this sense we find *teke* in the Anceren Riwe, p. 140: 'Nout one 3et tis, auh teke þet heo temeð wel hire fulitowene fleschs' = not only this, but she also tameth well her undisciplined flesh.

P. 185, l. 2. *ase þeo* = even as she, *sunne* being feminine.

l. 11 from bottom. *griþ*, mercy, favour. It is also used by Early English writers in the sense of *quarter*, mercy.

l. 10 from bottom. *hwi ne*. This might be rendered 'why not?' but my reason for the present translation may be seen in the Preface to Hampole's Pricke of Conscience, p. xxvi.

l. 5 from bottom. *hwa lif* = each is her life, i.e. each is as dear to her as life. Propertius addressing his mistress calls her his Life:—*Æratas rumpam, mea Vita, catenas*.'

P. 187, l. 9. *luwiende*, ? for *liuiiende*, living. See p. 201, l. 11 from bottom.

l. 10. *sar* is here a substantive, signifying pain, torment.

l. 2 from bottom. *bote*, salvation.

P. 188, l. 6 from bottom. *sufferings*; *stondunges*, like O.E. *stoundes* = afflictions, sufferings. On the three sufferings of Christ, see Anceren Riwe, p. 111.

l. 5 from bottom. *fixed*: *ituht* seems to signify drawn, from A.S. *tyhtan*, to draw.

P. 189, l. 2. *strike* is to stream, flow. See Lazamon, vol. i. 171, 397; Legend of St. Katherine, l. 2514.

l. 18. *for hwam* = for which [purpose].

P. 193, l. 1. *sweieð*. Perhaps this term refers to the playing of musical instruments. A.S. *sweġ*, the sound of music, also a musical instrument; *sweġan* to sound. Dr. Stratmann suggests O.N. *sveigja*, sway, bend, turn.

*bitweonen*. Cp. the use of *among* in the phrase 'and lude among' = loud at intervals, Owl and Nightingale, l. 6.

l. 34. *beies* signifies *crowns* as well as *bracelets*. The Prompt. Parv. has *bee*.

l. 45. This line might be more literally rendered as follows : 'There shall one stir up (mix) for them the golden cup.' Dr. Stratmann suggests that *steoren* is for *steran*, to burn incense, make perfume; but *schenchen* in the next line is rather against this view.

*Chelle* = *chille* = A.S. *cylle*, cup, originally a skin sewed up and used for a water-bag, hence a flask, bottle, cup.

l. 51. *ciclatune*, a rich stuff from India. Fr. *ciglaton*. (H. Col.)

P. 195, l. 6. *oðe* . . . *Illog* = along, in the sense of 'cause of,' 'on account of.' Cp. '*Æt þe ys ure lyf gelang*' = it is along of thee that we live. 'Hi solton on hwon þat *gelang* wære,' Bd. 3, 10 (in Bosworth). 'Gen is *æt ðe lissa gelang*' = moreover along of thee are all my pleasures. Beowulf, l. 4306. See Cymbeline, v. 5.

P. 197, l. 126. *lune*. Dr. Stratmann suggests Dan. *luun*. Prov. Eng. *loun*, *lown*, quiet.

l. 134. *biseon* usually signifies to look after, look to, take care of, provide for. Anceren Riwe, pp. 132, 202, 344.

P. 199, l. 141. *to-drawe* = to lead astray. See Gloss. to Hampole's Pricke of Conscience.

P. 204, l. 3. For '*sin. Through*,' read '*sin, and who through*.'

P. 205, l. 5. *motild* signifies a female pleader. Cp. *begg-ild*, a female beggar; *cheap-ild*, a female trafficker; *fostr-ild*, a foster-mother; *grucch-ild*, a female grumbler; *maðel-ild*, a prating woman.

l. 5 from bottom. *nim mot*, etc. Cp. the phrases 'say a word for me,' 'put in a word for me.'

P. 207, l. 2. *sunfule*, sinners.

P. 211, l. 23. *liuie*. The MS. has *luuie*.

l. 2 from bottom. *mislicunge*, dislike, disgust.

P. 215, l. 16. This quotation occurs in Hali Meidenhad, p. 27.

P. 217, l. 12 from bottom. *seize* = *seize*, may say.

P. 219, l. 14. *beoð*. The original has *sindon*.

l. 16. *mikti*. The original has *mihtige and whitige*.

l. 10 from bottom. *to rede*. The original has *þam ræde*.

l. 6 from bottom. *belamp*. The original has *getimode*.

P. 220, l. 6 from bottom. Read *then* after *thou*.

P. 221, l. 11. *bide nane niede to þan*, etc. The original has *ne gebigde ne ne nydde mid nanum þingum to þam*, etc.

l. 20. *anständende*, standing alone.

l. 21. *paradis*. The older text has *neoræna-wange*.

l. 22. *brūce*, eat, as well as enjoy; the modern English *brook*.

P. 223, l. 10. *gōd zeðikð*, for *gode zeðihð* = groweth, or increaseth



in goodness. *Ʒeðikð* is the 3rd. pers. sing. of *Ʒeðeon*, to thrive, flourish, grow.

*oðre Ʒesceafte*. The older text has *ealle ða nytenu* = all the beasts.

l. 22. *deað swelten* = *deaðe sweltan*, perish by death.

l. 24. *imugon Ʒecnōwen*. The older text has *Ʒe magon geseon and tocnawan*.

l. 31. *þas* = *þæs*, of that.

l. 32. *þe his*, etc. The older text has *hwi he his*, etc. = why he, etc.

P. 225, ll. 6, 7. *Þa wearð*, etc. Thorpe's rendering is, 'Then there was rapidly a great increase of people.'

l. 11. *an man*, one man, not *a* man.

l. 13. *ennen* for *enne*, alone.

l. 15. *Wrec* for *wirc*. A.S. *wyre*.

*an arc*. The older text has *cenne arc*.

l. 18. *Ʒe gáderi*. Thorpe's rendering is, 'I will gather into thee of beast-kind and of bird-kind *mates of each*, that they may hereafter be for foster.'

l. 23. *wéter þéotan*. Thorpe correctly renders this term by *water-torrents*, from *þeote*, a cataract, torrent.

ll. 28-30. *Ʒc wille . . . folce*. I will set my covenant betwixt me and you for this promise: that is, when I overspread the heavens with clouds, then shall be shown my rainbow betwixt the clouds. (Thorpe.)

l. 31. *ƷemenēƷed*. The A.S. text has *gemyndig*.

P. 226, ll. 11-13. *There was*, etc. Translate as follows:—There was nevertheless one family which had never bent to any idol, that had ever worshipped the true God. (Thorpe.)

P. 227, l. 6. *awendan*. The A.S. text has *gebíged*.

l. 8. *numan*, and *lac*, etc. The older text has *naman*; *þæra manna naman þe wæron entas and yfel-dæde*. *Eft ðonne hí deaðe wæron þonne cwædon þa cucan þæt hí wæron godas*; and *wurðodon hí, and him lác*, etc.

l. 10. *and beswicene mennisc . . . Þa*, etc. The older text has, *and þæt beswicene mennisc feoll on cneowum to þam anlicnyssum*, 'and cwædon, "Ge sind ure godás and we besettað urne geleafan and urne hiht on eow." Ða,' etc.

l. 13. *deofel-Ʒyld*, an idol, properly a sacrifice or offering made to devils or false gods. It occurs in the *Abrenuntiatio Diaboli*, and has puzzled the translators, 'Ec forsacho Diabolae end allum diabolgelde.'

l. 20. *hefonlice*. The older text has *healican*, supreme; *þes cenne* (to this kin) is put for the A.S. *þyssere mægðe*, for this race. In the later text *þes* is probably an error for *þese*. The correct form *þise cynne* occurs a little lower down (l. 23).

l. 30. *twies acenned*, twice born. (Thorpe.)



l. 34. *forwyrhte were*, had become guilty or forfeited (our freedom).

P. 229, l. 7. *hésne*, for the older *hæse*.

l. 9. *getocnisse* signifies properly sign, miracle; but it here translates the A.S. *getingnysse*, speech.

l. 12. *berieles*. The older text has *byrgenum*.

l. 17. *nam . . . micel anda* = A.S. *nam . . . micelne ándan*, showed great envy.

ll. 18-20. *þa warð*, etc. Now was one of the twelve of Christ's companions, who was called Judas, seduced by the instigation of the devil. (Thorpe.)

l. 25. *wel reowén* = A.S. *wælhreowan*; *zenuman*. The scribe seems to have been in some doubt as to the conjugation of this verb, which admits of no change in the preterite plural.

l. 34. *soð 3eleafen*. *3eleafe* is not neuter but masculine. The older text has *soðne geleafan*.

P. 231, l. 13 from bottom. *abiden of fe laford to þe none inn come*. This should be rendered—'await until the lord, at noon, should come to his abode (house).'

P. 233, l. 13. This quotation occurs in Ælfric's first Homily, 'De Initio Creaturæ':—'*He kytt mid his mihte heofonas and eorðan, and ealle gesceafta butan 3eswince, and he bescearwað þa niwelnyssa þe under þyssere eorðan sind. He awecð ealle duna mid anre handa.*' (pp. 8, 9.)

l. 7 from bottom. *cheteð*. So in MS., but evidently an error for *chereð*.

P. 235, l. 1. *a wunder-worder* [? *worden*] = in wonderful (wondrous) words.

l. 3. *la liéf* = A.S. *la leof*, O domine!

l. 33. *ses*, an error for *þes*, of the.

P. 236, l. 24. After *inviters* read *to the city* (= *to berie*.)

P. 237, l. 8. *þat þe mōre his* = and what is more.

l. 10. *ampres*. The A.S. *ampre*, *ompre*, signifies a swelling, perhaps an ulcerous swelling.

l. 22. *ehten* = *tehten*? taught.

l. 26. *þeses* = ? *þesse* = dative plural.

l. 35. *witetlice* = *witerlice* or *witodlice*.

P. 239, l. 2. *merchestowe*. In the translation I have read *merthestowe*, and perhaps wrongly so; for *merchestowe* may stand for *mearce-stowe*, a place marked out, an appointed place, from A.S. *mearce*, a boundary, limit.

l. 8. *letes*. As no imperative singulars (or plurals) in *-es* occur in these Homilies, I think we must read *lete his us nefer fandie* = let us never prove, or have experience of, it: *fandian* governs the genitive in A.S., as '*Ne fanda þu þines Godes*,' Deut vi. 16.

l. 12. *oft* may be an error for *oð*, until. (Sec l. 15.) If so, the translation of ll. 11, 12 must be amended, and instead of *into*

darkness, etc., we must read *into darkness until doomsday, when all God's enemies shall*, etc.

l. 21. *per midenarde* . . . *werpeð abéc* = turn away from the world, or turn their backs upon the world.

l. 31. *sandlice*. I have translated this as if it were an error for *sunderlice*; but a more careful examination of the passage induces me to think that we ought to read *s[c]andlice*, disgraceful, shameful.

P. 241, l. 7. The quotation in this line is from Ephesians vi. 11.

P. 243, l. 6. *heriscole* = *here-gescole*, war-band.

P. 245, l. 15 from bottom. *tacheð*. T.\* has *leareð us ȝ teacheð þurh a forbisne*.

l. 13. *ȝef þes lauerd*. T. has *ȝif þe husebonde*.

l. 12. T. reads *to-breken* after *hus*.

l. 7. *ha*. T. has *ho*.

P. 247, l. 4. *aȝein*. Royal MS. has *aȝeines*. T. reads *somen* for *somet*.

l. 6. *nurhð*. T. has *murð*. The Royal MS. has, very plainly, *nurð*. Dr. Stratmann seems to think *mirkð*, gaiety, noise, is the correct reading; but *nurð* (for *gnurnð*), murmuring, muttering, makes good sense. Cp. A.S. *gnornian*, to murmur, lament, and O.E. *nurnen*, to mutter; and see 'Allit. Poems,' B. 65.

For a *pet*, T. has *til þ*.

l. 9. T. has *fares fram* instead of *from*.

l. 10. *bihoueð*. T. has *bikeueð*.

l. 20. *ileanett*. T. has *ileaued*; Royal MS. has *ilenet*.

l. 31. *þat me*, etc. T. has *þat is mesure*.

l. 33. *vnmeoð*. T. has *unmeað*.

l. 34. *on hest*. T. reads *hom nest*; for *deme*, it reads *demande*.

l. 35. *þeo*. T. reads *þa þ*.

P. 249, l. 3. *wit*. T. has *wites*.

l. 9. *lonc*. T. has *long*.

l. 10. *elheowet*. T. reads *ille heowet*. See Ancren Riwe, p. 368.

l. 11. *hat*. T. has *bides*.

l. 12. For *hweonene* and *comme*, T. has *hweðen* and *com*.

l. 17. After *freineð* T. reads *him*, and for *he* reads *ha*.

l. 21. T. has *men* for *me*.

l. 36. *readien*. T. has *reoden*.

P. 251, l. 2. T. has *stinc* for *stench*.

l. 4. *for* . . . *for*. T. reads *þ* . . . *þ*.

l. 6. *þat*. R. reads *þer*.

l. 10. *draken*, drakes, i.e. dragons. Satan is sometimes styled the 'drake.'

l. 12. T. omits the second *ham*, and reads *grot* for *greet*.

\* Cotton MS. Titus, D. 18.

- l. 15. T. reads *froden* for *froggen*.  
 l. 16. *nease* gristles, the gristle of the nose.  
 l. 17. *cauraskes*. Royal MS. has *eaureskes*, but T. has *eaf-roskes*.  
 l. 19. *meaŕen*. T. has *maŕekes*; for *remunge* R. has *reminge*.  
 l. 20. *snaui*. T. has *snaui*.  
 l. 22. *aŕet*. T. reads *til*.  
 l. 29. T. reads *an* after *Euch*.  
 l. 31. After *ant* T. has *ter taken*, moreover.  
 l. 33. For *pe*, Royal MS. has *pes*.  
 P. 253, l. 1. T. reads *alre* after *for pe*.  
 l. 8. *unseli*. Royal MS. 17 A. 27, has *unselie*, the proper plural form; *hare*. T. has *hore*.  
 l. 10. *edwiteŕ*. Royal MS. has *etwiteŕ*.  
 l. 16. *wontreaŕes*. Royal MS. has *wondrades*; T. has *wan-dreades*.  
 l. 19. *schokeŕ*, *her*, *rueŕ*. T. has *schekeŕ*, *hear*, and *runeŕ*.  
 l. 25. *i wis*. T. has *pis*.  
 l. 33. *haueŕ*, *purue*. T. has *haues*, *parf us*.  
 P. 254, l. 1. *fee*, i.e. property, treasure.  
 l. 6. For *I may*, etc., read *I am not able*.  
 ll. 6, 7. For *do now tell*, etc., read 'Do now, Sister Prudence, what behoveth thee (to do), quoth Strength, and warn (defend) us,' etc.  
 l. 26. *Whatever*, etc. More literally, 'Whatever I may be of hardship (misfortune), I do not fear on account of softness (prosperity or luxurious living).'
- P. 255, l. 6. *laŕ*. T. reads *leaŕ ant for* [his] *wrenches Ich con* = for I know his wiles.  
 l. 8. *pe ant*. T. has *pu*.  
 l. 18. *ba*. T. has *baŕe*.  
 l. 24. *worldlich*. T. has *eorŕlich*.  
 l. 26. *for*. T. has *for na*.  
 l. 27. *licomlich*. T. has *lichomliche*.  
 l. 31. *readeŕ us*. T. has *teacheŕ us 7 leareŕ*.  
 l. 33. *unweotenesse*. T. has *unweonesse*.  
 P. 256, l. 9 from bottom. For *joyful and lovely*, read *nobly and richly*.  
 P. 257, l. 5. *luŕt*. Royal MS. and T. read *lust*, pleasure.  
 l. 9. *me ne*. T. has *me self ne*.  
 l. 11. *ei*. T. has *eauer ani*.  
 l. 22. *lane*. T. has *leane*.  
 l. 25. *dreaen*. T. has *drahen*.  
 l. 26. *treowiliche*. T. has *treweliche*; Royal MS. reads *treowliche*.  
 l. 35. *schimmeŕ*. T. has *schimereŕ*.  
 P. 258, l. 17. For *countenance*, read *beauty* (or *glory*).

l. 32. For *face so joyful*, read *beauty* (or *brightness*) *so intense*.

P. 259, l. 1. *wel is riht* = it is very right.

*liðeliche* is not an error for *bliðeliche*, as it is also the lection of T.; *liðeliche* = attentively, from O.E. *liðen*, to listen, give ear to. *lustnin*. T. adds þ *helden us swa stille hwil fearlac us agrette* = that kept ourselves so still while Fear greeted us.

l. 4. *ofte*. T. has *ofte*.

l. 9. *purue*. T. has *burn*.

l. 12. *sehe*; *seh* in T., which uniformly omits the final *e* in the 2nd pers. sing. pret. indic.

l. 13. *3e*. T. has *3oi*.

l. 19. *prumnesse*. So in T.

l. 25. *ful*. T. has *fulle*.

*etscene*. T. has *edscene*. In the *Aneren Riwle*, pp. 116, 140, 154, 206, we find *eðcene*, *eðsene* = easily seen, apparent, manifest.

l. 29. *iseh*. T. has *biseh*.

After *heouenliche*, T. reads *weordes*, hosts, companies.

l. 32. *o*. T. has *to*.

l. 35. *ich ne . . . lengre*, T. has *ine . . . of hire lengre*.

P. 261, l. 2. *a unwerzeð*. T. has *ai unwercheð*, and has *Novem ordines ibi sunt* before *nihe wordes*. For *wordes* it has *woredes*.

l. 4. For the first *on*, T. has *of*.

l. 5. *hwile*. T. has *hwiles*.

l. 10. *poure*. T. has *of poure ȝ lahe*.

l. 14. *biheolt*, *hare*. T. has *biheld*, *hore*.

l. 19. *haliche*, *blissen*. T. has *haliliche*, *blisse*.

l. 22. *feolohlukest*. T. has *felahlukest*.

l. 23. *libbinde*. T. has *libbende*.

l. 25. *feierlec*. T. has *feirleic*.

l. 31. *sittende*. T. has *sittinde him*.

l. 32. *a setnesse*. T. has *an setnesse*.

P. 263, l. 21. *munne*, *spealie*. T. has *numne*, *spelie*.

l. 28. *þe odre*, *he*. T. has *þoðre ha*.

*etlunge*. T. has *eatlunge* = estimation; but *eilung* = ailing, pain, grief, envy.

l. 35. *bigotten*. T. has *bizoten*, R. *bizeoten*, poured, cast.

l. 36. *nanesweis*. T. has *o nane wise*. R. *onane wise*.

P. 264, l. 1. *joyful*. Translate 'diligent in these songs of praise, as it is written,' etc.

P. 265, l. 12. *neh ne neh* = *neh ne seh ich al* (T.).

l. 15. *trof*. T. has *prof*.

l. 17. *unwine*. T. has *unwines*.

l. 20. *folhin*. T. has *fonden*.

l. 22. *wunne*. T. has *pine*.

*ah*. T. reads þ.

l. 28. *farlac is fleme* . . . *strenðe* is omitted by T.

l. 29. *nu quoð*. T. has *nu nu quoð fearlaic*.

l. 30. *muri*. T. has *muri tale*; and for *sondes* reads *sonden*.

l. 32. *ow*. T. has *ow quoð meað*. For *stunde* and *noðres*, it reads *stude* and *nowðeres*.

l. 33. *warnest*. T. has *warnes*.

P. 266, l. 4. *after the will of their mistress*. More literally, after Will their mistress.

P. 267, l. 1. *as*. T. has *as euer*.

l. 3. *pat is*. T. has *pe (is)*.

*pat hird*. T. reads *his hird*.

l. 4. *beon*. T. has *beon se*; and for *don* it reads, *don al as ham luste ase wil hare lafdi 7 nawi ase wit ham tuhte*.

l. 6. *peos*. T. has *pes*.

l. 7. *pat*. T. reads *to*.

l. 10. *islep*. T. reads *i þe slepe*.

l. 12. *luue*. T. reads 7 *luue*.

l. 13. *ant*. T. has 7 *his*.

l. 18. *Strencðe*. T. reads 7 *strencðe i God 7 meað*.

*abuten ende. Amen*. T. ends here.

P. 269, l. 3. *mildeu*, honey-dew. See note on *mildew* in Philological Society's Proceedings for 1865, p. 5.

l. 22. *bekinde*, beaking, warm. Cp. the modern 'basking.'

P. 273, l. 30. *karlische*, not *churlish*, but *human*. O.E. *carl*, a man; *carl-man*, a male.

P. 277, l. 25. *westi*, destitute. See p. 285, l. 29.

P. 283, ll. 17, 18. *Bale drinch* = poisonous drinks. The Ancræn Riwle calls the two drinks here referred to *attri drinch*. 'God, for ure seenesse dronc *attri drinch* o rode.' (p. 364.)

l. 33. *luue lettres*. See Ancræn Riwle, p. 388: 'A last he com him suluen, and brouhte þet gospel ase lettres iopened, and wrot mid his owune blode saluz to his leofmon, of luue gretunge uorte wown hire mid, 7 forte welden hire luue.'

P. 285, l. 9. *derennedes* (? *dereinedes*). I can make nothing of this verb except by connecting it with *darraign*, O.E. *dereiny*.

'A monek he sende him in message, 7 dude as þe sley,  
 þat lond, þat him was iziue, þat he ssolde him vpzelde,  
 Oper come, 7 *dereyni* þe rihte mid suerd in þe velde.'

(Specimens of Early English, p. 65, l. 84.)

l. 21. *querfaste*, transversely. This meaning of course connects it with modern Eng. *queer*, Ger. *quer*. In the Ancræn Riwle we have *heteueste* (= *hetelueste*), which seems to have been equivalent to *wileueste* (p. 244), but which the editor renders 'closely confined.' 'Ine stonene þruh biclosed *heteueste*.' (p. 378.)



*Note on the Rhythm of De Octo Vitiis.*<sup>1</sup>

The homily 'De Octo Vitiis' is a fair specimen of that which, as I have elsewhere said,<sup>2</sup> may be defined as semi-alliterative verse or rhythmical prose. The whole piece can be divided into lines having something of the same 'swing' or cadence as is usually found in Anglo-Saxon verse, but the alliteration is not kept up with much regularity. It was excellently adapted, no doubt, for the purpose of recitation aloud. Certain words of explanation, and all the Latin quotations, are not to be counted as belonging to the rhythmical portion. In order to show this more fully, a portion of the commencement of the piece may be thus marked off:—

'*Omnia nimia*, etc. ; þæt is on englice—

Ealle oferdone þinge deriað,

& seo gemetgung is calra magna modor.

Se oferlyfa on æte & on wæte

Deð þone man unhalne & his sawle gode læðetteþ,

Swa swa ure drihten on his godspelle cwæð.'

In the first of these lines, there is an alliteration in the *d*'s of *oferdone* and *deriað*; in the next, in the *m*'s of *gemetgung*, *magna*, and *modor*; in the third, in the vowels commencing *oferlyfa* and *æte*; but in the next two lines there is no trace of it. The chief rule that is observed throughout is, to have two emphatic syllables (or sometimes three) in each half-verse, the number of more slightly accented syllables being immaterial. In such a short specimen, the cadence can hardly be appreciated, and the reader may easily fail to perceive it altogether; but it is nevertheless apparent enough after a page or two has been read over carefully. The stops introduced in the present text are the dots and semicolons which were made by the original scribe. Besides these, there are numerous others by a second hand, which have been introduced with the utmost correctness, and have reference only to the method of reciting the lines. For instance, the pause in the *middle* of a line is frequently indicated by a sort of inverted semicolon, such as often occurs in the *middle* of the lines in some MSS. of *Piers Plowman*. But in *no* instance is this mark introduced at the *end* of a line. On the other hand, an *ordinary* semicolon often appears at the *end* of a line, but never in the *middle*. Slight as the marking of the rhythm seems to be to any one not accustomed to it, it is a very certain guide to any one who is familiar with it; and it is, moreover, of very great importance, from the simple circumstance

<sup>1</sup> Kindly communicated by the Rev. W. W. Skeat.

<sup>2</sup> See my 'Essay on Alliterative Poetry,' in the edition of Bp. Percy's Folio MS., by Hales and Furnivall, vol. iii.



that attention to it will often decide *with certainty* many dubious points in the parsing of the sentences ; and may also assist in detecting any transposition or omission of words. A very little practice would enable a reader with a good ear to mark off the lines without any assistance from the dots occurring in the manuscript ; and it is precisely because I have myself succeeded in this experiment that I am convinced that the cadence of the verses was *intentional*, and not existent only in my own imagination. But the fact is, that the present piece is no solitary example ; there are plenty of such specimens, and I may especially mention one in much later English, viz. Dan Jon Gayt-ryge's Sermon, in 'Religious Pieces in Prose and Verse,' ed. G. G. Perry, E. E. T. S. 1867.

---

Old English Homilies.

**Agents for the sale of the Early English Text Society's Publications.**

BERLIN : ASHER & Co., Unter den Linden, 20.

NEW YORK : C. SCRIBNER & Co.

PHILADELPHIA : J. B. LIPPINCOTT & Co.



69
handen. I ertm inſcriptio inſio paſſi & nū ſig' eccliam. in q' par  
ueramidet. dū paſſio. i. recedit. et paſſi oſclm dat'. Ierſm iſdeped  
ſod' of ſahenelle. & bitocned holie churchē her bileſſulle men inne  
bed ſehne. þenne þiſt clāſ þroperinge minneged' & of þe calice in  
der ſtonded' to cne of ſehneulle. þiſt melle col. & þe ſolc ſent. & þer  
wide bitocned þ' ure driſten iſt þureþ þe holie loc þiſt bileſſulle men  
maked ſehne. & þerfore churchē haueþ þe to cninge of bethphage  
þenne þe pceſſion in god' of ierſm. & eft þenne it in cūmed. Hine  
þe þenne geme g'f ure pceſſion bi maked aft' ure helendel  
pceſſion. On hiſ pceſſion ferde ſume biſoreu him & makode hiſ  
þere to þard ierſm. & ſume briggeden þe alle mid here clodeſ. &  
ſume mid bogeſ þe he breken of þe cireþeſ. Wo þe þe þere makeden  
biſoreu him. bren folkeſ loþeapeſ. biſhopel & þiſteſ. þe mid here  
þiſe loze rided. & makode godeſ þere in to manneſ heate. Wo þe brig  
geden þe alle mid here clodeſ. ben þo þe þiſſed þe ſolc mid ſanne  
ſubſine of here þeldede. Wo þe briggeden þe alle mid þe brokene  
bogeſ. ben þo þe leren þe ſolc to underſtonden god' noht mid  
þeldede. ac mid þiſt ſpeche. þo þe aft' hi comen ben þo þe here liſt <sup>le</sup>  
alle here lozdeapeſ hem lered. þo þe biſideſ þeren on hiſ riht  
haſt. ben þo þe clene liſ leden to quemeude gode. noht for here  
poede. þo þe on hiſ liſthond comen ben þo þe clenliche liuen







# Old English Homilies

of the

## Twelfth Century.

FROM THE UNIQUE MS. B. 14. 52. IN THE LIBRARY OF  
TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

EDITED,

WITH INTRODUCTION, TRANSLATION, AND NOTES,

BY THE

REV. R. MORRIS, LL.D.,

*Author of 'Historical Outlines of English Accidence.'*

*Editor of Hampole's 'Pricke of Conscience,' 'Early English Alliterative Poems,'*

*'The Story of Genesis and Exodus,' 'The Ayenbite of Inweyl,'*

*'Legends of the Holy Rood,' 'Old English Miscellany,'*

*etc. etc.;*

*Member of the Council of the Philological and Early English Text Societies.*

SECOND SERIES.

WITH THREE THIRTEENTH-CENTURY HYMNS

from MS. 54 D. 4. 14 in Corpus Christi College, Oxford,

and a Photolithograph and Transliteration of the Music of two of them.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL, E.C.

## LECTORI.

Abdita quæ tenebrans monumenta recondidit Ætas  
Ætas nunc tandem clara retexit ea  
Quæ licet am sanctum non sint referentia cultum  
Temporis id nævus simplicitasque fuit  
Sylibes quæ sint sapida insipidumque recuses  
Ipsa vetustatis gratia dulcis erit.

OXFORD:

BY T. COMBE, M.A., E. B. GARDNER, E. PICKARD HALL, AND J. H. STACY,  
PRINTERS TO THE UNIVERSITY.

## PREFACE.

---

THE Homilies in the present volume are transcribed from the unique MS. B. 14. 52, in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge. My attention was first directed to this interesting collection of discourses by the two extracts printed by Mr. Thomas Wright in "Reliquiæ Antiquæ," which Mätzner has reprinted in the second part of his "Altenglische Sprachproben," correcting, as we might expect, some of the most obvious of Mr. Wright's literal mistakes. There are, however, two important errors, *wetiden* for *wenden*, and *tunge* for *muge*, which the German critic has left unaltered.

In one passage Mätzner has taken an unwarrantable liberty with the language of the manuscript, by substituting a reading of his own, and making an alteration to support it. On p. 159, l. 4 of Homily XXVII, the phrase '*he hes fette hom*' occurs, which is equivalent to '*he hire fette hom*' (see p. 165, l. 12 from bottom)—i. e. *he* [Christ] fetched or brought *her* [Mary] home. Mätzner, not knowing the form *hes*=*her* (cp. *his* in "Ayenbite"), substitutes *wes* for it, and changes the preterite *fette* to the passive participle *fet*, and is obliged to explain *he* by *she*! *Hes*=*her* is one of the peculiarities of the "Moral Ode," and occurs no less than *four* times on p. 221.

I have not added a glossary to these Homilies, because it is my intention when the Third Series is printed to add a glossary to the whole collection. Most of the words will be found in Stratmann's useful "Old English Dictionary," which has already reached a second edition. The photolithograph, by Messrs. Cooke and Fotheringham, of a page of the MS., shows the character of the writing. The six lines of Latin verse on the back of the title-page are in a very late hand, and are addressed to the reader by a former possessor of the manuscript, who signs himself "W. L." or "W. P."

My best thanks are due to the authorities of Trinity College, Cambridge, for the long loan of the MS., and to Mr. Aldis Wright for the trouble he was at to place it safely in my hands. I must also express my thanks to my kind friend Mr. Skeat for many valuable suggestions while the work was passing through the press.

In the Appendix will be found three thirteenth-century Hymns, from a MS. in Corpus Christi College, Oxford, to which M. Paul Meyer first called our attention. A photolithograph (by H. W. Taunt) of the music to the first and second of these hymns, in two parts, has been given, together with two transcriptions of it into modern notation; the one by a professed musician, Dr. E. F. Rimbault, and the other by the well-known authority on Early English pronunciation, Mr. A. J. Ellis. To both these gentlemen I am greatly indebted for their help. On the differences between them my readers must decide for themselves if they can.

RICHARD MORRIS.

KING'S COLLEGE, LONDON,  
April 1873.

# INTRODUCTION.

## I.

### PROOFS OF TRANSCRIPTION AND MODERNISATION.

IN the First Series of Old English Homilies I proved conclusively that many of the treatises from the Lambeth MS. were transliterated and modernised copies of older compositions. I was first led to perceive this by certain orthographical peculiarities which I pointed out in the Preface to Part I. I have not been able to find any such indications of transcription in the present series, and therefore cannot prove so clearly that any of these Homilies are copies of older versions. But the fact that five Homilies (IV, XXV, XXVI, XXX, XXXII) in this series are also found in the Lambeth MS. affords some ground for believing that at least these, if not many other Homilies of this series, are transcripts. I have already said<sup>1</sup> that it is probable that all the numerous versions of the Moral Ode are transcribed from some late tenth- or early eleventh-century version. As this poem occurs in the Trinity as well as in the Lambeth MS., the points of difference between the two versions enable us, as might be expected, to throw some light upon this point. We must, for the present, leave out of sight the dialectical peculiarities of the Trinity MS., and simply bear in mind that the original copy from which all the versions of the Moral Ode were transcribed was in the West-Saxon or Southern dialect.<sup>2</sup> But the

<sup>1</sup> Preface to First Series of Old English Homilies.

<sup>2</sup> The Moral Ode being a rhyming poem might seem to negative any such assertion of the original being as early as the tenth century ; but, however scarce rhyme was at this period, it was not wholly unknown.



scribe of the Trinity MS. has removed very many of the original dialectical peculiarities,<sup>1</sup> and substituted others of his own for them. In addition to this the prose treatises show that the grammatical forms and structure employed in the Trinity MS. are much simpler than those of the Southern versions : so that any very *old* forms that occur in the Moral Ode, as printed in this volume, but which are wanting in the other copies, may be considered as due to the scribe's inadvertency, who in copying would now and then forget he was modernising, and so set down the forms he found in his original copy. In the prose treatises there are only a few traces of this in (1) the employment of *si* subj. of *is*—"a *hapax legomenon*" (p. 9); (2) *ther, there*, gen. plur. of the article (p. 129); (3) gen. plur. in *-e*, in *louerde* (p. 121), &c. In the Moral Ode, however, we have what I take to be a very *evident* mark of transcription, and of inadvertency on the part of the copyist. It was pointed out in the First Series that the older *se þe* was altered (or modernised) to *þe þe*.<sup>2</sup> Now this form *þe þe* is very common in the Moral Ode of the Trinity and Lambeth MSS.; but while the older form *se þe* is carefully excluded from the latter and *older* MS., it occurs several times in the former and *later* one. And it is also remarkable that while the *ordinary* form of the definite article (for all genders) is *the* throughout the prose Homilies and the Ode in the Trinity MS., yet some few instances of *se* occur in the Ode instead of *þe*. Cp:—

'*Se þe*<sup>3</sup> her doð ani god for to habben godes ore.' l. 53.

'*Se þe*<sup>4</sup> aihthe wil holde wel þe hwile hes muge wealden.' l. 55.

'*Se þe*<sup>5</sup> mast doð nu to gode and *se*<sup>6</sup> last to lothe.' l. 61. See l. 67.

'*Se [þe]*<sup>7</sup> doð his wille mast he sal habbe werest mede.' l. 221.

<sup>1</sup> The Lambeth MS. is older than the Trinity MS., and has far more archaic forms. The Moral Ode in Jesus Coll. MS. (printed in *An Old English Miscellany*, p. 58) is much later (about 1246-50)

<sup>2</sup> Cp. '*Eft se þe* dælið ælmyssan for his drihtnes lufan *se* behyt his goldhord,' &c. (*Old English Homilies*, First Series, p. 300). '*Eft þe þe* deleð elmessan for his drihtnes luuan : *þe* behut his goldhord,' &c. (*Ib.* p. 109). The alteration of *se þe* to *þe þe* took place when *se* and *seo* became *þe*, and *þeo*. For *þe þe* we also find *þe þat*, *he that*. *Lazamon* has no examples of *þe þe*, which evidently marks an *earlier* period.

<sup>3</sup> Lambeth MS. *þo þe*; Egerton MS. *þe þe*; Jesus Coll. MS. (l. 54) *he þat*.

<sup>4</sup> Lamb. *þe þet*; Egerton *þe þe*; Jesus *þe þat* (l. 56).

<sup>5</sup> Lamb. *þo þe*; Egerton *þe þe*; Jesus *þe þat* (l. 62).

<sup>6</sup> Lamb. *þe*; Egerton *þe þe*; Jesus *te þe*.

<sup>7</sup> Lamb. *þe þe*; Egerton (l. 219) *þe ðe*; Jesus *þe þat*.

‘And *se* þe<sup>1</sup> more ne mai don mid gode iþanke.’ l. 69.

‘*Se* þe<sup>2</sup> last wot he seið ofte mast *se*<sup>3</sup> þit [= þe hit] al wot is stille.’ l. 112.

‘*Se*<sup>4</sup> man þe<sup>5</sup> nafre nele don god ne nafre god lif lade.’ l. 123.

‘Þar is *se*<sup>6</sup> loðe Sathanas and belzebub *se*<sup>6</sup> ealde.’ l. 287.

‘Þar me [sal] drihte self iseien swo *se*<sup>7</sup> is mid iwisse.’ l. 379.

In the Kentish dialect *se* and (*si* = *seo*) were retained as late as the thirteenth century (see *An Old English Miscellany*, p. xv), but not in other Southern dialects, and certainly not in the Midland variety spoken by the scribe of the Trinity MS. I therefore look upon the presence of *se* þe as evident proof of transcription.

## II.

### POPULAR ETYMOLOGY AND QUAIN'T TEACHING.

The Homilies in this volume are much more complete than those printed from the Lambeth MS. in *Old English Homilies*, First Series. None of them, however, seem to be copied, as some of the Lambeth Homilies are, from Ælfric's treatises. Most of them, perhaps, were originally translated from Latin Homilies, though some few have the appearance of original compositions, especially those that furnish us with specimens of popular etymology. Thus, on p. 25 we read that we call God ‘*fader* for þat he us *feide* (put together, joined) here,’ or because ‘þat he *fet* (feeds) alle liuiende þing.’<sup>8</sup> On p. 45 *king* is connected with *kennen*, to direct, rule, just as *rex* is connected with *regere* :—‘He is cleped *king*, for þat he *kenneð* eure to rihte.’ On pp. 97, 99, *Easter* is connected with (1) *arise*—‘Þis dai is cleped *estrene* dai þat is *aristes* dai;’ (2) with *este* (dainty)—‘Þis dai is cleped *estre* dai, þat is *estene* dai.’ The *housel* (p. 99) is connected with *how* and *seely* (cp. *sely*, *silly*; Ger. *selig*) :—‘And te *este* is *husel* and no man

<sup>1</sup> Lamb. þe ðe; Egerton þe þe; not in Jesus.

<sup>2</sup> Lamb. þe ðe; Egerton (l. 112) þe þe; Jesus þat.

<sup>3</sup> Lamb. þe; Egerton þe þe; Jesus he þat.

<sup>4</sup> Lamb. þe; Egerton þe; Jesus þe.

<sup>5</sup> Lamb. þet; Egerton þe; Jesus þat.

<sup>6</sup> Egerton þe (l. 283); Jesus (l. 281) þe.

<sup>7</sup> Egerton (l. 375) and Jesus he (l. 371).

<sup>8</sup> The Poet Kalidasa (in the *Raghu Vansa*, II. 48), more correctly, derives पिह (father) from प to guard, preserve.

ne mai scien *husel*. wu god it is.' On p. 209, *fō* (applied to the devil) is connected with *fō-de*:—'He (devil) is cleded mannes *fō* for he *fōde* þe forme man with God.' So *hindre* (deceit) is explained from *bihinden*, p. 213.

Omitting a few allusions to the gluttony and drunkenness of the period, and to the profligacy of the clergy (p. 163), and the rapacity of the rich (pp. 177, 179, 181), there is nothing that throws any light upon the social condition of the twelfth century.

The religious instruction given in these Homilies is of a very simple character; and all the discourses, while not without interest, possess much quaintness in the mode in which the Scriptures were popularly expounded. See the Sermon on the Lord's Prayer, p. 25; the curious division of men into *sheepish*, *neatish*, and *goatish*, p. 37; on fasting, p. 63; church-going, kneeling in church, p. 83; on John the Baptist, p. 131; on the sea-star, p. 161; on the world as a desert, p. 163; on Doomsday, pp. 171, 173; on the serpent, pp. 197, 199. The whole of the thirty-third discourse, p. 208, is exceedingly curious, treating of the traps set by the devil in the following lairs—(1) Play, (2) Drink, (3) Market, (4) Church!

### III.

#### DIALECTICAL PECULIARITIES.

Sir F. Madden puts these Homilies earlier than Lazamon's Brut,<sup>1</sup>—how much earlier he does not say. I have little doubt they were written before A.D. 1200. There are, however, orthographical and grammatical peculiarities that are usually considered to mark a much later date, but these may be due to the *dialect* of the transcriber.

We have no clue from the MS. itself as to the exact place where it was written, and the difficulty is increased by the circumstance that the dialectic peculiarities are of *secondary* introduction, that is to say, the Homilies were originally in the Southern or West-Saxon dialect, and were subsequently copied by a scribe who substituted the peculiarities of his own dialect for those of his original MS.: in fact, we have here both transcription, modernisation, and adaptation. But while it is difficult from internal evidence to fix upon the particular county where these Homilies were written, it is comparatively an easy

<sup>1</sup> See Preface to Lazamon.

matter to see to what group of Old English works they must be assigned, or in other words, to point out the grammatical elements which are peculiar to them. Looking at the occasional plurals of the present indicative in *-en*, we at once detect the *Midland* peculiarities of the copyist. But the Midland dialect had many subdivisions, and the verbal forms of the singular present indicative lead us to assign these Homilies to the East-Midland speech. But this dialect falls into two subdivisions :—

(1) *Northern* represented by the Ormulum. See Preface to Genesis and Exodus.

(2) *Southern* represented by the Old English Bestiary, the Story of Genesis and Exodus, and Havelok.<sup>1</sup>

While, of course, there is much that is common to the two subdivisions there is one very plain mark of difference, and that is the employment of the pronoun *es*, *is* or (*hes*) = them, by the writers of the southern division of the East-Midland dialect.

This pronoun is not found in any of the Northumbrian dialects, nor does it occur in the West-Midland dialect, but it is very common in the Southern dialects as late as 1340. Its frequent occurrence in the Bestiary, the Story of Genesis and Exodus, and in Havelok, and its absence from the Ormulum, seem to indicate clearly a more *southern* locality for the composition of the former works.

Whatever name we may give to the dialect, there is still the fact of a group of Midland works containing this pronominal form. But there is another interesting point connected with its use—namely, its coalescence with the personal pronouns (and with verbs).<sup>2</sup> Thus in the Bestiary we have *wes* ('De culuer haueð costes gode, alle *wes* ogen to hauen in mode,' l. 786) = *we* + *es* = *we* + *hes* = we them; and in Genesis and Exodus, *hes* = *he* + *es* = he them.<sup>3</sup>

In the Ayenbite (Kentish dialect) although *he* and *hise* are

<sup>1</sup> In Havelok we have many Northern, and some few Southern, peculiarities: but the East-Midland element is easily detected on comparing it with Genesis and Exodus.

<sup>2</sup> In Havelok *es* (*is*, *as*) occurs but does not coalesce with pronouns, only with verbs. See ll. 970, 1174.

<sup>3</sup> Cp. Moral Ode in this volume p. 221, l. 55, where *hes* (he her) = *he* . . *es* (Lambeth), *he* . . *his* (Egerton), *he* . . *him* (Jesus). In l. 56, the second *hes* (he her) = *he* . . *it* (Lambeth), *heo* . . *hit* (Egerton), *he* . . *hit* (Jesus). *aihte* is a feminine substantive. For *hes* = her, see Moral Ode, ll. 40, 56.

collocated, they never coalesce, and we might be tempted to affirm that in this dialect, *he* and *hise* never do coalesce: but in the Old Kentish Sermons, thirteenth century (contained in An Old English Miscellany) we find a corresponding coalescence to *hes* in the form *has* = *ha* + *es* or *ha* + *hise* = he them:—‘Se christen man yef *has* dep: of-seruet þo blisce of heuene.’ See An Old English Miscellany, p. xv.

The appearance of this form in the Kentish dialect still further strengthens the supposition of a more *southern* locality for Genesis and Exodus &c., over that of the Ormulum. It seems as if these agglutinative forms were confined in the twelfth, thirteenth, and fourteenth centuries to the south-east of England—Suffolk, Essex and Kent.

Now, as these Homilies from the Trinity MS. have traces of East-Midland peculiarities, and moreover contain an example of the coalescence of the pronoun *es* with one of the personal pronouns, I unhesitatingly class them along with the Bestiary and the Story of Genesis and Exodus. The agglutinative form in the Homilies, though similar in formation to *wes* and *hes* is perhaps unique: *mes* = *me* + *es* = the Southern *me hi*, me them, i. e. *one* them (cp Ger. *man*, Fr. *on*):—‘þo þe waren sƿo lease men þat *mes*<sup>1</sup> ne mihte ileuen’ (l. 255)—Those who were such liars that *one* was not able to believe *them*. As these Homilies have no instance of *qu* for *hw*,<sup>2</sup> and contain also many Southern forms, as *hes* = her, genitive plurals in *-ene*, &c., I feel inclined to assign them to a locality still more southern than even Genesis and Exodus: Essex perhaps, on account of its contiguity to Kent, would answer best.

The remarks on the grammatical peculiarities of the East-Midland dialect contained in my Preface to Genesis and Exodus, apply also to the *secondary* dialectical varieties in these Homilies. For points of difference the reader must refer to the following Summary of Grammatical Forms.

<sup>1</sup> ‘þet *me hom* ne mihte ileuen.’ (Lambeth MS.)

‘þet *me hi* ne mihte ileuen.’ (Egerton MS. l. 257.)

‘þat *me heom* ne myhte iléuen.’ (Jesus Coll. MS. l. 251.)

<sup>2</sup> Smith’s ‘Gilds,’ shows that *qu* for *hw* was common in the East-Midland dialect. See Lynn, Norwich, &c.



## SUMMARY OF GRAMMATICAL FORMS.

## NOUNS.

## I. GENDER.

1. There is, as in all East-Midland works, a disregard for the older distinctions of grammatical gender.

2. As in the *Ormulum*, and *Genesis* and *Exodus*, there are no instances of nouns with the feminine suffix *-en* (very common in the *Anceren Riwle*). The suffix *ster* occurs but *once*, in *wassestren* = washerwomen. *Huccsterre* in *Ormulum* (ii. p. 192, l. 15817) is probably masculine. In the Northern dialects of the fourteenth century *demster* (a judge), *songster* (= *songere*, a singer), &c., are masculine nouns.

3. The Norman-French *-ess* does not make its appearance in these Homilies.

## II. NUMBER.

1. For the most part the older plural endings (i) *-an*, (ii) *-a*, (iii) *-u* show a tendency to become *-es* :—

(i) *blostmes* (151, 197), *erendrades* (129), *hertes*, *lichames* (119), *names* (91), *sterres* (107, 153), *times* (3); *wities* (113), all originally forming the plural in *-an*.

(ii) *bedes*, *dedes*, (57, 131), *mihtes* (35), *sinnes* (7, 13), *sowles* (97), *wedes* (11), *wundes* (33); feminines forming the plural originally in *-a*. (ii a.) *giues*, *lages*, *luues* (229); feminines ending in the singular in *u* and forming the plural in *-a*. (ii b.) *burges* (51), old pl. *byrig*. (ii c.) *sunes* (19), old pl. *suna* (masc.)

(iii) *deules* (39), old pl. *deoflu* (masc.).

(iv) *limes* (65, 85), *trewes* (37), *wapnes* (13, 117); neuter substantives originally forming the plural in *-u*. (iv b) *dohtres* (19, 197), *shuldres* (211), *wundres*, *sustres* (147); belonging to *-r* stems, forming their plurals originally in *-u*.

(v) The following substantives originally had no inflexion in the plural :—*bernes* (73), *folkes*, *huses*, *lokes* (45), *lombes*, *pinges* (19), *swerdes*, *wordes* (43, 65), *werkes* (13).



2. There are, however, many traces of plurals in *en* :—

- (i) *assen* (195), *ashen* (65), *blostmēn* (89, 117), *chirchen*, *cheken* (73), *egen*, *eien* (25, 33), *earen* (25, 33), *iselen*, (65), *fon* (33), *halegen* (23, 119), *hinen*, *moren* (139), *ocsen* (195), *heten* (111), *turtlan* (49), *utlagen* (33), *tilien* (163); originally old plurals in *-an*. Sometimes the *n* is dropped :—*beme* (115), *blostme* (107), *erendrake* (35), *eare* (181), *hete* (111), *name* (177), *time* (3), *tilie*.
- (ii) Feminines forming their plural originally in *a* :—*beden*, *deden* (9, 13), *honden* (21, 169), *mihten* (35), *roden*, *sennen*, *synnen* (11, 17, 41), *weden* (33, 57), *wunden* (19, 41), *zerden*, *wuken*<sup>1</sup> (3). Sometimes the old plural suffix *-a* is represented by *-e* :—*honde* (89, 181), *bede* (123), *mihte*, *mede*, *synne* (5, 37), *wuke* (3), *dede* (11, 15).
- (iii) Masculine plural originally in *-u* :—*deſten* (173).
- (iv) Neuter plural originally in *u* :—*gaten* (23, 113), *limen* (181), *trowen* (25), *wapnen*. Sometimes *-u* is represented by *-e* :—*hole* (201), *lime* (181), *wapne* (11). *Childr-en* (87), and *childr-e* (17) are the plurals of *child*. (iv b) Stems in *-r* forming plural in *-u* (or *a*) *brečren* (175), *bropren*, *isustren* (219), *wundren* (109), *rečeren* (37).
- (v) Old neuters with no plural suffix :—*deor* (177), *get* (37), *loc* (49), *orf*, *swin* (37), *hors* (179), *ping* (15), *shep*, *word* (27, 81), *were* (11).
- (vi) Plurals formed by vowel-change :—*men*, *fet*, *frend*, *fend*, *teð*.

It is easily seen that new and old forms are used without any distinction, and the same word has its plural formed in no less than *three* different ways, as *synne*, *synnen*, *synnes*.

### III. CASE.

1. The **genitive singular** for the most part ends in *-es* :—‘*deules craftes*,’ ‘*lichames bileue*’; ‘*niehtes dede*’ (11), ‘*eves gulte*’ (179).

2. Some few feminines still keep the old form in *-e* :—‘*chirche dure*’; ‘*sowle fode*’ (27), ‘*helle gaten*,’ *neddre* (59, 195), *eue* (101), *wombe* (11), and *wombes* (p. 37).

3. The **genitive plural** in *-es* (unknown in the oldest period)

<sup>1</sup> Two forms in Old English—*wuce*, pl. *wucan*; and *wucu*, pl. *wuca*.

occurs only a few times for the older *-a*:—*teares* (65), *wateres* (43), *louerdes* (179), *menes* (139, 155).

The two forms (*-es* and *-ene*) sometimes occur close together:—*‘alre louerdes louerd and alre kingene king’* (89).

4. The most common genitive plural suffix is *-ene*, which represents the older suffixes *-ena* and *-a*:—(i) *Bemene* (113), *tungene*; (ii) *blissene* (115), *englene* (33), *estene*, *herdene*, *horene* (49), *kingene* (45), *lechene* (41), *mihtene* (167), *sauline* (57), *maidene* (161), *pornene* (21), *wurmene* (121). Occasionally *en* occurs for *ene*—as *englen* (99), *mannen*.

5. A few nouns have the genitive plural in *e* (for the older *-a*):—*kinge*, *louerde* (121), *manne* (19), *safte*.

6. *Broþer*, *fader*, take no inflexion in the genitive singular.

7. The dative (singular and plural) terminates in *-e*. *Man* has sometimes its old dative *men* (5), instead of *manne*. The dative plural has often the same form as the nominative, ep. *‘bi þo dages’* (3) with *‘bi þan dagen’* (47, 49).

Sometimes after *on* and *mid* the dative plural ends in *-n* (= the older *-um*):—*foten* (207), *þingen*<sup>1</sup> (135).

## ADJECTIVES.

1. The Definite or Weak form of the Adjective is denoted by a final *e* for all numbers and cases.

2. The plural of the adjective is marked by a final *-e*.

3. Participles in *-en* and *-ed* take final *-e* in the plural and definite form:—*‘þe forbodene appel’*, *‘þe forsingede’* (121), *‘þowuene men’* (39).

4. The ending of the genitive singular falls off in the indefinite or strong form of the adjective, except in some few indefinite pronouns and numerals. Cp. *encs*, *anes* (163), *‘þesses wreches woroldes wele’* (Moral Ode, l. 338), *eches*, *iþches*, *eðceres*, (99, 193), *nones* (Moral Ode, l. 372). Exception—*‘heuenliches kinges dohter’* (161).

5. The dative sing. fem. *-re* occurs once in *onre* (181).

6. The old genitive plural suffix (= *-ra*) occurs only in *al-re* (198) and *tweire* (95).

<sup>1</sup> With words that form their plural in *-n* it is difficult to say whether they are *datives* or *accusatives*; but there can be no doubt with respect to such forms as *dagen*, *foten*, and *þingen*.

## COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS.

The Comparative degree of adjectives ends in *-ere*, and occasionally in *-ure*; the Superlative in *-este*. Adverbs form the comparative and superlative in *-er* and *-est* respectively. They have often the same form as adjectives.

Adverbs in *-liche* change it into *-lukur* for the comparative, and *-lukest* for the superlative. Cp. *gerenlukur* (171), *grislukur* (171), *warlukur* (197), *wuredlukur* (83), *očerlukur* (97), *wenlukest* (29).

| Positive.       | Comparative.         | Superlative.      |
|-----------------|----------------------|-------------------|
| cald, ald, old, | eldre.               | . . .             |
| eač (adv.),     | ečer.                | . . .             |
| ere (adv.),     | erur, ærrure,        | erest.            |
| [fore],         | . . .                | fireste, firste.  |
| forme,          | . . .                | formeste.         |
| god,            | betere, betre,       | beste.            |
| hegh, heh,      | . . .                | heieste, hegeste. |
| lang,           | lengere (leng, adv.) | . . .             |
| lyt, litel,     | lesse, lasse.        | . . .             |
| negh, neh,      | . . .                | next.             |
| rače,           | račer.               | . . .             |
| uvel, yfel,     | werse,               | wereste, werste.  |
| lat,            | latere, later,       | lateste, laste.   |
| michel,         | more,                | mest, mast.       |
| strong,         | strengre.            | . . .             |
| ut,             | uttere (adv.).       | . . .             |

Double superlatives are *eftemeste*, *formeste*, *sičen-meste*, *uuemeste*, *neþemeste*.

## NUMERALS.

The Southern forms of the numerals predominate.

The ordinals are (1) *þat on*, (an), (2) *þat očer*, (3) *þe þridde*, (4) *feorče*, (5) *fifte*, (6) *sexta*, (7) *seueče*, (8) *egteče*, *ehtēče*, (9) *nigeče*, (10) *tieče*.

*Þrittude* = thirtieth; *fowertiče* = fortieth; *fiftuče*, *fiftugeče* = fiftieth.

The only Northern form is *ehtende* = eighth (87). *Hund* = ten, as in *hund seuenti* = seventy (51).

## THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

1. The Indefinite Article is *an*, *on* before a vowel or *h*; *a* before a consonant. The form *ane* (acc.) occasionally occurs (119). *Onre*, dat. fem. p. 181.

2. *Sum* = one, a, *some*. It is used in apposition with personal pronouns: *sune we* = some of us.

## PRONOUNS.

## PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

1. The soft form (*ich*) of the first personal pronoun predominates. *Ic* occurs but once; *I* occurs in *ami* (129), *ibie* (220).

2. The dual forms of the first and second persons do not occur.

3. In the dat. and acc. second personal pronouns plural, we have a mixture of Midland and Southern forms: *giu*, *geu* (Midland); *ew*, *ow*, *eow* (Southern).

4. The pronoun *pei* occurs twice, instead of the more ordinary East-Midland form *hie* (or *he*). The Southern forms *hi*, *heo* (= *they*) seldom occur.

5. *hes* occurs for *them* and for *her*; *mes* = *me* + *hes* (see Moral Ode, l. 255), *hes* = *he* + *hes* (ib. ll. 55, 56).

6. The relative sometimes coalesces with the neuter demonstrative, as *pit* = *pe* + *hit*. See pp. 3, 123, 224. *pe hit* occurs uncombined on p. 221.

## FIRST PERSONAL PRONOUN.

## SECOND PERSONAL PRONOUN.

## SINGULAR.

|        |                  |       |
|--------|------------------|-------|
| Nom.   | Ich, ihc, Ic, I. | pu.   |
| Gen.   | . . .            | . . . |
| Dat. } | Me.              | pe.   |
| Acc. } |                  |       |

## PLURAL.

|        |          |                                |
|--------|----------|--------------------------------|
| Nom.   | We.      | Ge.                            |
| Gen.   | Ure, ur. | Giwer, giuwer, giuer, gure,    |
| Dat. } | Us.      | ower.                          |
| Acc. } |          | Giu, geu, cu, ew, ou, ow, eow. |

## THE PRONOUN OF THE THIRD PERSON.

## SINGULAR.

|      | Masc.           | Fem.                       | Neut.    |
|------|-----------------|----------------------------|----------|
| Nom. | He,             | hie <sup>1</sup> , he leo, | hit, it. |
| Gen. | His,            | hire,                      | his.     |
| Dat. | Him,            | hire,                      | him, it. |
| Acc. | Hin, hine, him, | hie, he, hire, hes,        | hit, it. |

## PLURAL.

Masc. Fem. and Neut.

Hie, he, hi, þei.

Here, heore, hore, here, hur, her.

Hem.

Hie, hem, em, hes.

*Ure, here, &c.* are used as genitives with *al, ech, ani*.

## POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

The *n* falls off from *min* and *þin*, in most cases leaving *mi* and *þi* for the possessive pronoun before a vowel or *h*. The fuller forms occur a few times.

*Hise* is sometimes the pl. of *his*.

The absolute forms in *-s* (as *ures, &c.*) are unknown.

## RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

1. The ordinary relative is *þe* and *þet* (*þat*); both indeclinable. *Man þe* = he who (201).

2. *Se þe* and *þe þe* occur in the Moral Ode. (See p. 221.)

3. *Hwos, huas* (whose), and *wam* (*hwam*), are used as relatives; but not *hwo*.

## INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

The Interrogative pronouns are *hwo, whilc* (*wich, woch*), *whēčēr*.

|      | Masc. and Fem.        | Neut.           |
|------|-----------------------|-----------------|
| Nom. | Hwo, hwa, wo,         | hwat, wet, wat. |
| Gen. | Hwos, wuas, wos,      | same as masc.   |
| Dat. | Hwam, wam, hwan, wan, | ” ”             |
| Acc. | ” ” ” ”               | hwat, wet, wat. |

<sup>1</sup> *hie* = an older *hia* for *hio*.

The accusative masculine occurs adverbially in 'a litel *wan*.'

*While* is softened to *hwilch*, *hwuch* and *wich*, *woch*, and is declined only in the plural (*wiche*).

*Swo*, *se*, are relatives after *swilch*.

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

The Indefinite pronouns are *man*, *me* (= one), *elch*, *ilch*, *ech* (each), gen. *elches* (p. 222); *everech*, *efrich*, *auerihc*, *afric*, *afri*, *efri* (every); *očer*, pl. *očre*. *Eičer*, *aičer* = either, both (gen. *eičeres*, p. 213); *nočer* (neither); *ani*.

## DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

*ȝe* (*te*) is used for all genders.

All inflexions fall off except in some very few instances, as—

## SINGULAR.

|      | Masc.  | Fem.   |
|------|--|--|
| Nom. | Se (in Moral Ode only)   | pie (= peo = seo).                                     |
| Gen. | ȝes (rare).  |  |
| Dat. | ȝan in combination with <i>at</i> ,<br>as <i>atten</i> ; and <i>for</i> ȝe- <i>nones</i><br>= <i>for</i> ȝe- <i>ones</i> . | ȝare, ȝar, ȝere, ȝare, 143,<br>181; Moral Ode, l. 347. |
| Acc. | ȝen, ȝene, ȝane.   |  |

## PLURAL.

|      |                         |
|------|-------------------------|
| Nom. | ȝo.                     |
| Gen. | ȝer, ȝere (see p. 129). |
| Dat. | ȝo (= ȝon), ȝan.        |
| Acc. | ȝo.                     |

*ȝat*, *ȝet*, is no longer employed only as the neuter of ȝe. The plural of ȝat is ȝo.

*ȝis*, originally neuter, is used with words of all genders. Most of its inflexions in the singular have dropped except *ȝesse*, *ȝisse*, *ȝese* = *ȝesse* (dat.), *ȝesses* (gen.), in Moral Ode, l. 438.

The plural forms are *ȝis*, *ȝes*, *ȝos*, *ȝosse*, and *ȝese*. *ȝes* = our *these*; *ȝos* = our *those*.

Compounds of *-like* :—*ilk*, *ilch* (same); *swile*, *swulc*, *swilch* (such).

*Thilke* does not occur. *Očerlike* occurs in the comparative *očerluker* (see p. 224).



## VERBS.

## MOOD.

1. INFINITIVE MOOD.—The infinitive mood terminates in *-en*, occasionally *-in* (see 7, 117) : sometimes the *n* is dropped.

Infinitives in *-ien* and *-ie* are not uncommon in these Homilies ; but they do not occur in Genesis and Exodus, or Ormulum.

The infinitive without *to* is occasionally used (31).

2. The GERUNDIAL INFINITIVE has the sign *to* or *for to* (7) before it, and like the simple infinitive ends in *-en*, *-e* (15) except in some very few instances in which the suffix is *-ne* or *-ene*.

The present participle in *-ende* or *-inde* occurs very often instead of the true gerundial infinitive, of which there is a good example on p. 39.

3. PARTICIPLES.—The passive participle of strong verbs ends in *-en* ; occasionally *n* is dropped. The passive participle of weak verbs ends in *-ed* (*-d*, *-t*).

The prefix *ge-* of the passive participle becomes *i-*, which is frequently dropped. (See Genesis and Exodus, Pref. x, xvii.)

The imperfect participle ends in *-ende*, occasionally in *-inde* ; never in *-inge*.

4. IMPERATIVE MOOD.—Remains the same as in the oldest period.

## TENSE AND PERSON ENDINGS.

1. The present tense sometimes does duty for the future.

2. The past imperfect progressive is not uncommon ; it is common in the place of the past indefinite.

3. The person ending of the present tense plural is for the most part *-eð* : occasionally the Midland plural *-en* is found which has been introduced by the transcriber. Other endings are the same as in the First Series of Homilies.

4. *Aren* occurs as well as *ben*, *beth*, and *sinde* = *sinden* or *senden*, = *are*. (See Moral Ode, l. 288 ; Genesis and Exodus, Pref. p. xvii.)

## LIST OF STRONG VERBS.

## DIVISION I.

(See Historical Outlines of English Accidence, pp. 287-289).

| Preterite.                      | Preterite Plural. | Passive Participle.                       |
|---------------------------------|-------------------|---|
| bifel p. 87                     | . . .             | . . .                                     |
| wul 167                         | . . .             | . . .                                     |
| held 211                        | . . .             | ihielden 221                              |
| wield 119, 169                  | . . .             | . . .                                     |
| het, bihet, 75, 101,<br>217     | . . .             | ihaten, haten, hoten<br>71, 127, 141, 185 |
| . . .                           | bihengen 189.     | . . .                                     |
| heold, hield 23, 27,<br>85, 167 | . . .             | . . .                                     |
| blew bleuw, bleu 19,<br>113     | . . .             | . . .                                     |
| enew 127, 143                   | . . .             | . . .                                     |
| let, forlet 59, 125             | . . .             | . . .                                     |
| feng, underfeng 141,<br>215     | . . .             | bifongen, biuonge 143,<br>201             |
| . . .                           | . . .             | swopen 87                                 |
| . . .                           | . . .             | grouwen 129                               |
| wiep, wep 151                   | . . .             | . . .                                     |
| siew, sew 151                   | . . .             | . . .                                     |

DIVISION II.—*Class i.*

(Hist. Outlines, pp. 292-293.)

| Pret. Sing.                  | Pret. Plur. | Pass. Part.              |
|------------------------------|-------------|--------------------------|
| geald, 3iald 45, 166,<br>169 |             | unfor-3olden, 221        |
| bi-gan                       | bigunnen 85 | { bigunne<br>bigunnen 99 |

| Pret. Sing.      | Pret. Plur. | Pass. Part.        |
|------------------|-------------|--------------------|
| . . .            | urnen 39    | . . .              |
| wan 53           | . . .       | . . .              |
| bond 23, 113     | . . .       | bunden 11, 65      |
| . . .            | funden 89   | funden 161         |
| . . .            | wunden 87   | . . .              |
| . . .            | sungen 53   | . . .              |
| dranc 111        | . . .       | . . .              |
| sprong 127       | . . .       | sprunge, 225       |
| . . .            | . . .       | stungen 205, 207   |
| wearp, warp 181, | . . .       | worpen, wurpen 97, |
| 167              |             | 219                |
| . . .            | . . .       | borgen 1, 43.      |
| . . .            | wurpen 161  |                    |
| . . .            | . . .       | abroiden 175.      |

DIVISION II.—*Class ii.*

(Hist. Outlines, pp. 296–297.)

| Preterite.              | Pass. Part.            |
|-------------------------|------------------------|
| . . .                   | -hole 139              |
| com 155, -cam 163       | . . .                  |
| binam, -nom 35, 139     | binome 137             |
| . . .                   | nume 59                |
| bar 47, 135             | iboren, boren 133, 223 |
| brae 69, brec 23        | broken 93              |
| spac, spee, 11, 35, 153 | speken 51              |
| bi-stal 7               | bistolen 220           |

DIVISION II.—*Class iii.*

(Hist. Outlines, p. 297.)

| Preterite.             | Pass. Part. |
|------------------------|-------------|
| . . .                  | treden 153  |
| 3ef, gaf, 167          | 3ieuen 169  |
| gaf, gïaf 35, 135, 141 | . . .       |
| quað, quað 5, 49       | . . .       |

| Preterite.   | Pass. Part.                               |
|--|---|
| lai, lei 51, 161, 187                                    | -lein 161                                 |
| bed, bad 65, 87, 69                                      | iboden 185                                |
| for-bed 35   | boden 117, forboden<br>159, 181, beden 63 |
| set  | seten 103                                 |
| wrac 35  | . . .                                     |
| seh, sogh, seg, segh, sah, seh3<br>7, 109, 145, 147, 175 | . . .                                     |
| et 47  | . . .                                     |
| . . .  | meten 159                                 |

DIVISION II.—*Class iv.*

(Hist. Outlines, pp. 299-300.)

| Preterite.         | Pass. Part.     |
|--------------------|-----------------|
| shop 17, 222       | shapen 117, 105 |
| forsok 147         | . . .           |
| . . .              | hoven 167       |
| wuesh 151, wess 65 | wasshen 87      |
| stod 59            | stonden 41, 181 |
| toe 167            | . . .           |
| oe 177, 179        | . . .           |
| wacxs 161          | . . .           |
| . . .              | slain 103       |

DIVISION II.—*Class v.*

(Hist. Outlines, pp. 302-303.)

| Pret. Sing.       | Pret. Plur. | Pass. Part. |
|-------------------|-------------|-------------|
| bilef 205         | . . .       | . . .       |
| drof 87, 105      | . . .       | . . .       |
| glad 107          | . . .       | . . .       |
| bod 33            | . . .       | . . .       |
| . . .             | abiden 175  | . . .       |
| wrot 7            | . . .       | . . .       |
| bot 181           | . . .       | . . .       |
| wot 141           | . . .       | . . .       |
| ros, aros 97, 113 | . . .       | . . .       |

DIVISION II.—*Class vi.*

(Hist. Outlines, pp. 305–306.)

| Pret. Sing.              | Pret. Plur. | Pass. Part.           |
|--------------------------|-------------|-----------------------|
| seh 107                  | . . .       | . . .                 |
| teah, tegh 145, 185      | . . .       | atogen 205            |
| þeagh 161                | . . .       | ȝewen, ȝogen 39, 41   |
| . . .                    | . . .       | . . .                 |
| steȝh, steħ, steg, steah | . . .       | . . .                 |
| 165, 111, 23             | . . .       | . . .                 |
| smeart 179               | . . .       | . . .                 |
| . . .                    | . . .       | abroiden 175, 209     |
| reu 147                  | . . .       | . . .                 |
| lihȝh (= lih = leh) 131  | . . .       | logen 61              |
| fleg 127                 | . . .       | . . .                 |
| beih 121                 | . . .       | . . .                 |
| . . .                    | . . .       | icoren 167, icore 143 |
| ches 17, 133             | . . .       | chosen 93             |
| forleas 35               | . . .       | . . .                 |

## ADVERBS.

1. For ordinary forms see remarks 1, 2, 5, 6, and 9 in the Preface, p. xlix, of the Old English Homilies, First Series.
2. *For-to*, *for-te*, occur instead of *a-ȝet* = *oȝ-ȝæt*.
3. Compounds of *her*, *ther*, and *wher*, are very common.
4. *þi* = *forþi*, p. 205.
5. Adverbs in *linge* are rare ; *nedlinge*, *bredlinge*.
6. The Norse forms *heȝen*, *ȝeȝen*, *wiȝen* = hence, thence, and whence, occur as well as the pure English *henen*, *thenen*, and *whanene*.

## PREPOSITIONS.

See Preface to Old English Homilies, First Series, pp. l, li.

## CONJUNCTIONS.

The only noticeable forms are *sam* . . . *sam* (= whether . . . or) a very rare form in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries ; *alse hwat se* = as soon as.

---

# CONTENTS.

---

|                        | PAGE  |
|------------------------|-------|
| PREFACE . . . . .      | v     |
| INTRODUCTION . . . . . | vii   |
| CORRECTIONS . . . . .  | xxvii |

## HOMILIES:—

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| I. OF ADVENT . . . . .                          | 2   |
| II. THE SECOND SUNDAY IN ADVENT . . . . .       | 6   |
| III. THE THIRD SUNDAY IN ADVENT . . . . .       | 8   |
| IV. THE CREED . . . . .                         | 14  |
| V. THE LORD'S PRAYER . . . . .                  | 24  |
| VI. THE NATIVITY OF OUR LORD . . . . .          | 30  |
| VII. EPIPHANY . . . . .                         | 40  |
| VIII. THE PURIFICATION OF ST. MARY . . . . .    | 46  |
| IX. SEPTUAGESIMA . . . . .                      | 50  |
| X. SHRIFT . . . . .                             | 56  |
| XI. ASH WEDNESDAY . . . . .                     | 58  |
| XII. THE FIRST SUNDAY IN LENT . . . . .         | 66  |
| XIII. THE SECOND SUNDAY IN LENT . . . . .       | 76  |
| XIV. MID-LENT SUNDAY . . . . .                  | 80  |
| XV. PALM SUNDAY . . . . .                       | 88  |
| XVI. EASTER DAY . . . . .                       | 92  |
| XVII. THE FIRST SUNDAY AFTER EASTER . . . . .   | 100 |
| XVIII. THE FOURTH SUNDAY AFTER EASTER . . . . . | 104 |
| XIX. ASCENSION DAY . . . . .                    | 108 |
| XX. WHIT SUNDAY . . . . .                       | 116 |
| XXI. SERMON ON PSALM LIII. 1 . . . . .          | 120 |



|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| XXII. ST. JOHN THE BAPTIST. . . . .            | 124  |
| XXIII. ST. JOHN THE BAPTIST. . . . .           | 130  |
| XXIV. MARY MAGDALENE . . . . .                 | 140  |
| XXV. ST. JAMES . . . . .                       | 144  |
| XXVI. ST. LAURENCE . . . . .                   | 152  |
| XXVII. ASSUMPTION OF ST. MARY . . . . .        | 158  |
| XXVIII. OF THE DEAD . . . . .                  | 166  |
| XXIX. ST. ANDREW . . . . .                     | 172  |
| XXX. BE STRONG IN WAR . . . . .                | 184  |
| XXXI. BE WARY AND WATCHFUL IN PRAYER . . . . . | 192  |
| XXXII. DISCOURSE UPON MARK VIII. 34 . . . . .  | 202  |
| XXXIII. DISCOURSE ON PSALM CXIX. 110 . . . . . | 208  |
| XXXIV. DISCOURSE ON ISAIAH XI. I. . . . .      | 216  |
| XXXV. A MORAL ODE . . . . .                    | 220  |
| NOTES AND EMENDATIONS . . . . .                | 233  |
| APPENDIX . . . . .                             | 255  |

## CORRECTIONS IN TEXT.

- Page 11, l. 19. *For* Ach *read* Ac.  
17, l. 4. *For* leuerd *read* louerd.  
33, l. 13. *For* angel *read* engel.  
37, l. 12. *For* þis *read* þat is.  
61, l. 20. *For* setted *read* setteð.  
71, last line. *For* aten *read* haten.  
105, l. 14 from bottom. *For* fule *read* ful.  
107, l. 21. *For* all *read* alle.  
125, l. 24 from bottom. *Restore* trinneð *to the text*.  
137, side-note 1. *For* unnith *read* unnitt.  
145, l. 5. *For* his *read* hes.  
„ l. 6. *For* þe *read* þa.  
151, headline. *For* DE SANCTO LAURENTIO *read* DE SANCTO  
IACOBO.  
153, l. 3. *For* selfen *read* seluen.  
167, l. 15 from bottom. *For* saið *read* seið.  
177, l. 13. *For* hi *read* hie.  
183, l. 19. *For* good *read* god.  
203, l. 10. *For* þonkeð *read* þonked.
- 

## CORRECTIONS IN TRANSLATION.

- Page 6, l. 7 from bottom. *For* in *read* one.  
30, l. 4. *For* spilled *read* sparest.  
32, l. 8 from bottom. *For* unmerited *read* unattainable.  
54, l. 21. *For* men *read* persons.  
58 foll., headline. *For* BEGINNING OF LENT *read* ASH WEDNESDAY.  
80, l. 1 from bottom. *For* Ninive *read* Ninivitæ.  
150, headline. *For* ST. LAURENCE *read* ST. JAMES.  
173, l. 5. *For* hidden *read* healed.



OLD ENGLISH HOMILIES.

SECOND SERIES.

## OLD ENGLISH HOMILIES.

---

### I.

#### OF ADVENT.

*E*cce venit rex occurramus obviam salvatori nostro. To-day is come the holy time that is called Advent, thanked be our Lord Jesus Christ who hath sent it. And it lasteth full three weeks and somewhat more, *Et significat tria tempora, ante legem, sub lege, sub gratia*, and betokens three times (periods); one which was before the Old Law, the second was under the Old Law, and the third was under the New Law. Men who were dwelling under each of these three periods longed eagerly after our Lord Jesus Christ's coming as we [now] do, who are under these three weeks which are called Advent, that is to say, in English, our Lord Jesus Christ's coming.

*Adventus autem duo sunt manifesti, et totidem occulti.* Our Lord Jesus Christ's comings are two openly;—the first is gone, which the patriarchs and the prophets and other men who were [living] in those days longed for; and the second coming shall be on doomsday, and that we look for; and all those who have been since our Lord Jesus Christ ascended to heaven; and all those who are to come hereafter await his coming. And of the first coming speaketh the holy book, thus saying, *Ecce venit rex, &c.* Here cometh our King, let us go towards him and receive him graciously and highly honour him, *scilicet cordis munditia*,

# OLD ENGLISH HOMILIES.

---

## I.

### DE ADUENTU.

p. 1.

*E*cce uenit rex occurramus obuiam saluatori nostro. To dai is cumen 7e holie tid þat me clepeð aduent. þanked be ure louerd ihesu crist pit<sup>1</sup> haueð isend. And hit lasteð pre wuke fulle and sum del more. *Et significat tria tempora. ante legem. sub lege. sub gratia.* and bitocneð pre time. On þe was bi-fore þe olde lage. þe oðer was on þe holde lage. and þe þridde was on þe newe lage. Men þe waren wunede<sup>2</sup> on elche of þese þrie times wisten gerne after ure lauerd ihesu cristes tocume also we doð. þe ben on þesse pre wuken: þe ben cleped aduent. þat is seggen on englis ure louerd ihesu cristes tocume. *Aduentus autem duo sunt manifesti. et totidem occulti.* Ure louerd ihesu cristes tocumes: ben tweien openliche. þe fireste is gon. þo þe patriarkes and þe prophetes and oðre men þe waren bi þo dages after wisseden. And þat oðer tocume beð on domes dai. and þat we abiden. And alle þo: þe habben ben seðen ure louerd ihesu crist steh to heuene. And alle þo þe ben tocumen her after abideð his tocume. And of þe firste tocume spekeð þe holi boc þus queðende. *Ecce uenit rex et cetera.* here cumeð ure king. wule we fare togenes him. and him faire understonden. and heiliche wurðie .s. cordis

The time of Advent lasts somewhat more than three weeks.  
<sup>1</sup> So in MS.  
It betokens three periods,  
1, before the Old Law;  
2, under the Old Law;  
3, under the New Law.  
<sup>2</sup> read wunende.  
In these times men eagerly yearned for our Lord's coming.  
There are two public Advents; the first has gone, the second will be on Doomsday.  
All who have lived since our Lord's Ascension to heaven, or are to come, look for the second Advent of Christ.



*oris modestia, operis sanctimonia*, that is, [let us] go towards him, not bodily, but in good thought (purity of heart), and receive him in our humble prayers, and honour him in our good deeds. Of the last coming speaketh the holy book in another place, thus saying, *Ecce Dominus veniet et omnes sancti ejus cum eo*. Our Lord will come and all his hallows (saints) with him ;—that shall be on doomsday. Two other comings are both alike, *Altero visitat quando mentium tenebras illuminat, vel caritatem cordibus infundit*. The one coming is when he cometh to a man and turneth his heart to forsake and hate his sins, and to love God and all his fellow Christians ; and this coming we pray for when we sing *Veni Domine visitare nos in pace*.—Come, Lord, and visit us in peace. *Altero venit rapere quemque de miseriis hujus vitæ*. The second secret coming shall be when he cometh to each man separately and taketh him out of this world ; and of this coming speaketh our Saviour himself in the holy gospel, and admonishes us all to beware thereof, and thus saith : *Vigilate quia nescitis diem neque horam*, that is, be vigilant and forsake your sins, that ye be not found in sin, and so forlorn (utterly lost). *Horum autem adventum alius fuit misericordie, et ideo desiderabilis ; alius erit justitiæ, et ideo formidabilis ; alius separationis, et horridus ; alius gratiæ et blandus*.—Of our Lord Jesus Christ's open comings, the first was an advent of mercy ; and all faithful men who lived at that time, and before it, longed eagerly thereafter, and it appeared to them long ere he came and delivered them from eternal death. The second open coming, which is to come on Domesday, is an advent of righteousness, for then he will there requite each man for his labour with such reward as he has earned here ; and that coming is very awful, for then shall no man be certain, ere he hear the lovely (joyful) word of our Lord Jesus Christ's sweet mouth, *Venite benedicti patris mei, &c.* Come, ye blessed [of my father], and receive eternal life and bliss with the angels of heaven, that is prepared since the beginning of the world. To the others, that is to the sinful, shall be said the loathsome, sharp, and horrible word, *Ite maledicti in ignem eternum*.—Depart ye accursed spirits into everlasting fire in hell,

*mundicia. oris modestia. \*operis sanctimonia.* þat is fare to- \* p. 2.

genes him. noh[t] licanliche<sup>1</sup>. ac on gode þanke. *and* under-

stonden him on ure eðele bede. *and* wurðsupen him : on ure

edie dede. Of ðe lateste to-cume specð þe holie boc on oðer

stede þus queðende. *Ecce dominus ueniet et omnes sancti*

*eius cum eo.* Ure louerd wile cume. *and* alle hise halegen mid

him. þat beð on domes dai. Tweien oðer tocumes ben boðe

iliche. *Altero uisitat quando mentium tenebras illuminat. uel*

*caritatem cordibus infundit.* Þat oðer tocume is þane he cumeð

to men *and* turneð his herte to forleten *and* hatien his senne.

*and* to luuien god : *and* al his emeristen. *and* þis tocume we

bidden þane we singen. *Ueni domine uisitare nos in pace.*

*Cum* louerd *and* biwind us on seihtnesse. *Altero uenit rapere*

*quemque de miseriis huius uite.* þat oðer digeliche tocume beoð :

þane he cumeð to elch man sunderlupes. *and* doð ut of pisse

worlde. *and* of þis tocume specð ure helende seluen on þe

holie godspelle. *and* muneged us alle to ben warre þarof :

*and* þus queð. *Uigilate quia nescitis diem neque horam.* þat

is beð wakiende. *and* forleteð gure sýnne. þat ge ne ben ifunden

on sunne. *and* swo forlorene. *Horum autem aduentum alius*

*fuit misericordie : et ideo desiderabilis. alius erit iusticie : et*

*ideo formidabilis. alius separationis : et horridus. alius gratie :*

*et blandus.* Of ure louerd ihesu cristes openliche tocume. þe

forme was of mildhertnesse. *and* alle bileffulle men þe waren þo :

*and* ðar biforen wissede swiðe ðar after. \**and* ðuhte long er he

come. *and* alesede hem eche deaðe. þat oðer openliche tocume.

þat is te cumen á domes dai : beð of rihtwisnesse. for þanne he

wile ðere gelden elch man his hwile mid swilch mede swo he

ernede here. *and* þat tocume is swiðe ei[s]liche. for þanne beð

noman siker : ar he ihere þat lufliche word of ure louerd ihesu

cristes swete muðe. *Venite benedicti patris mei et cetera.*

Cumeð ge ibletsede. *and* underfoð eche lif. *and* blisse mid

englen of heuene. þat is giarked siðen þe biginninge of þes

worlde. to þe oðer wurð iseid þat loðeliche word. *and* ateliche.

*and* grisliche. þat is to sýnfulle. *Ite maledicti in ignem eternum.*

Witeð ge awariede gasten into þat eche fir on helle. *and* wunieð

We may honour Christ by purity of heart, by prayer, and by holy works.

There are two other secret advents.

The first is when Christ comes and converts men's hearts.

The second is when he visits each man and removes him out of this world.

The first open coming of Christ was on account of mercy, and all men longed for his coming.

\* p. 3.

The second public advent will be at Doomsday. It will be on account of judgment and righteousness, when each man shall be rewarded according to his works.

That coming will be a fearful one, for no one will feel safe until

and dwell there ever and aye, without end, with all devils. Again, our Saviour's first coming shall appear secret and terrible to all men, because that he separateth the soul from the body, when he departs from this world. His second secret coming is soft and very mild and pleasing to all those to whom he (Christ) cometh, to enlighten them with true belief and with true love to himself. So may he come to us, for his great mercy. *Qui vivit et regnat, &c.* AMEN.

## II.

### THE SECOND SUNDAY IN ADVENT.

*H*ora est jam nos de somno surgere &c. The lord Saint Paul, who is the head teacher of all holy churches, beheld this wretched world and saw that most men led their lives in sins and delighted them in their loathsome sins, as weary men love to sleep; and he had great sorrow thereof, and therefore he thought that he would admonish all sinful men to amend their lives, and to renounce and repent of their sins; and wrote then a writ (epistle) and sent it to sinful men, and in it thus spake with them, and included himself with them as though he were sinful. *Hora est jam nos, &c.* Long have we lien in our foul sins and sweltered (slept) therein, as slothful men do in sweet sleep. But now it is time that we rise therefrom and cleanse ourselves of our foul sins, and after that lead our lives in purity, and so await our Saviour's coming, that approacheth now from day to day, and shall be in mid-winter's night. Thus he speaks with us in one passage, in his holy writing, and in another place admonishes and instructeth us to lead our lives in purity, thus saying, *Sobrie et juste, et pie vivamus in hoc seculo.*—Let us lead our lives in this world soberly towards ourselves, so that we think and say and do that which is needful (or profitable) to our souls and bodies; and let us forsake all that is unprofitable to them, as the wise clerk has said in

þar: *ô and ô* abuten ende. mid alle deffen. Eftsone ure helendes on tocume þincð dieliche *and* grisliche alle maune. Forwi: for þat he deleð þe sowle: *and* þe lichame. þanne he wit of þisse wored. His oðer dieliche tocume is softe. *and* swiðe milde. *and* licwurðe alle þo: þe he to cumeð. for to aleomen hem of rihte bileue. *and* of soð huue to him seluen. Swo cume he to us: for his muchele mildhertnesse. *Qui uiuit et Regnat.*

he hears his doom pronounced by Christ.  
Christ's coming to separate soul and body is secret and terrible.  
His other coming, to enlighten the soul, is soft and gentle.

## II.

## DOMINICA SECUNDA IN ADUENTU.

*H*ora est iam nos de sompno surgere et cetera. Þe lauere sainte powel þe is heued lorðeau of alle holie chirechen bihiold þis wreche wored. *and* sagh þat mast mannen ladden here lif on sunnen. *and* þat hem likede here lodliche sinnes. also werie men is lief to slapen. \**and* him þat sore reu. *and* þarfore þoghte þat he wolde alle synfulle men: munigin to rihtlachen here lifode. for to forleten *and* to beten heore synnes. *and* wrot þo a writ: *and* sende hit synfulle men. *and* þaron wið hem þus spec. *and* dude him seluen mid hem þaron: also þeih he sunful ware. *H*ora est iam nos. et cetera. longe we habben lein on ure fule synnes. *and* swoldred þaron: also slou man doð on swete slape. Ac nu hit is time. þat we rise þa[r]of. *and* clensen us of ure fule synnes. *and* after þat ure lif laden on clenness. *and* swo abiden ure helendes tocume. þat neihlacheð nuðe fram dai to daie. *and* beð on midewintres niht. þus he specð wið us on stede: in his holie write. *and* oðer stede minegeð us. *and* wisseþ us to leden ure lif on clenness: *and* þus queð. *Sobrie et iuste. et pie uiuamus in hoc seculo.* Wile we leden ure lif on þisse woredle meðeliche togenes us suluen. þat we þenchen *and* queðen. *and* do þat ure sowle *and* ure lichame be biheue. *and* forlaten al þat hem beð unbiheue: also þe wise clerc seide on

St. Paul said that most all men led a sinful life and loved their sins, even as a weary man enjoys sleep.  
\* p. 4.

To direct sinful men he wrote a letter to them. He included himself among sinners.

St. Paul tells us that now is the time to forsake our sins and to look for Christ's coming, which shall be on a mid-winter's night.

We must think and speak and do that which is needful for soul and body.

his book, thus saying, *Si prodesse cupis tibi quæ sint commoda quære*.—If thou desire to increase in goodness, seek after things that shall be profitable to thee. We lead our lives rightly towards our Lord Jesus Christ, if we forbear to do all that is displeasing to him, and follow in thought and in speech and in deed that which is pleasing to him. *Qui placet ipse Deo proximus esse potest*.—The man may be nearest to God who shall please him. Towards our fellow Christian we must lead our lives humbly in two ways. Of one the holy book speaketh, thus saying, *Da egenti, succurre non habenti, et in omni necessitate pro Christo subveni*.—Give to the needy, help the destitute, and in all wise relieve the necessities of thy fellow Christian. *Proximi nostri omnes quibus est unus Dominus, una fides, unum baptisma*.—Our fellow Christians are all those that obey one Lord, and have one belief in common, and one baptism. In such a mode of life we may trustfully abide our Lord Jesus Christ's coming, and be confident that he will come to us and will preserve us from our mortal life, and from everlasting woe, and will give us eternal weal with himself in heaven. *Qui vivit et regnat, &c.* AMEN.

### III.

#### THE THIRD SUNDAY IN ADVENT.

*Nox precessit dies autem appropinquabit*. Our highest teacher next to our Lord Jesus Christ, that is our lord (master) St. Paul, admonishes us to amend our lives, and sheweth us in what wise, and saith that we ought so to do, and telleth us why, thus saying, *Nox precessit, dies autem, &c.*—The night is forth-gone (passed), and the day approacheth, and therefore it is right that we renounce and forsake nightly deeds, which are the works of darkness, and clothe ourselves with the weapons of light, that is, with true belief and with brightness, so that we walk by day in a becoming manner.



his boc. þus queðende. *Si prodesse cupis tibi que sint commoda quere.* Gif þu gierne waxest<sup>1</sup> on godnesse: sech after ping þe ðe<sup>1</sup> *read waxen.* beð biheue. Ure lif we ledeð richtliche togenes ure louerd ihesu crist. gif we forbereð al þat: þat him is unqueme. *and* folgeð on þonke *and* on speche. *and* on dede: þat him is iqueme. *Qui placet ipse deo proximus esse potest.* þe man mai be \*god next. þe him beð iqueme. Tegenes ure emcristene we sulle laden ure lif: edmodeliche on two wise. On is þat þe holie boc of spechð. þus queðende. *Da egenti. succurre non habenti et in omni necessitate pro*<sup>2</sup> *Christo subueni.* Gief þe nedfulle. help þe hauelease. *and* on alle wise bet þin emcristene nede. *Eximi*<sup>3</sup> *nostri omnes quibus est unus dominus. una fides. unum baptisma.* Vre emcristene ben alle þo: þe hereð one louerd. *and* haueð one bileue imene. *and* one fulcninge. On swilch liflode we mugen trustliche abiden ure louerd ihesu cristes tocume. *and* siker ben: þat he wile to us cume. *and* weren us mid [wið] ure deaðliche liue. *and* wið eche wowe. *and* gieuen us eche wele mid him seluen on heuene. *Qui uiuit et Regnat.*

We must forsake all that is displeasing to God.

\* p. 5.

We must act towards our fellow Christians in two ways.

<sup>2</sup> Originally *proximo.*

1. We must give to the needful and help the poor.

<sup>3</sup> read *Proximi.*

Our fellow Christians are those that have one Lord, one Faith, and one Baptism in common.

### III.

#### DOMINICA TERTIA.

*Nox precessit dies autem appropinquabit.* Hure heiest lorðeu after ure louerd ihesu crist. þat is ure louerd sainte powel. munegeð us to rihtlechen ur liflode. *and* wisseð us on wilche wise. *and* seið þat we hauen riht parto: *and* seið hwu þus queðende. *Nox precessit. dies autem et cetera.* Ðe niht is forð-gon: *and* dai neihlecheð. *and* forþi hit is riht þat we forleten. *and* forsaken nihtliche deden. þo ben þe werkes of piesternesse. *and* scruden us mid wapnen of lihte. þat beð soðfeste bileue. *and* of brihtnesse. swo þat we gon á dai

St. Paul admonishes us to amend our lives, and shows us how.

We must forsake nightly deeds and the works of darkness, and clothe us with the weapons of right.



*Non in commensationibus, et ebrietatibus non in cubilibus et impudiciis, non in contentione et emulatione, sed in horum oppositis.* And not in dark garments. But here we will tell you of these dark weeds, what the holy apostle meant when he spoke of night and deeds of night, and day and weapons of light. *Nox accipitur multis modis, sed hic pro infidelitate.*—Night here betokeneth unbelief, that is everywhere put down, and right belief raised up, thank God! and yet, nevertheless, there are some so defiled with unbelief on the one hand, and so fast bound and so enveloped therein, that no priest nor bishop may amend them, neither with prohibitions, nor with shrift, nor with cursing, and that is wicked custom (fashion) that men yet confide in, and that consists in cleeping (invocation), and asking (inquiry), and unkind (unnatural) deeds, and cursing, and hansom and time (chance) and divination, and many such crafts of the devil; and the wretched man [trusts] that such things may prove a hindrance to the purposes of God; but all those who believe that such things may further or hinder them are accursed by God's mouth, who thus speaketh in the Holy Book.

*Maledictus homo qui confidit in homine.*—Cursed be the man that believeth in divination. But I will say, and take ye heed to it, what causeth such hindrances [to God's purposes]. We read in books that each man hath for a companion, an angel of heaven on his right hand that guides him and admonishes him ever to do good, and on his left hand an accursed spirit that ever teacheth him to evil, and that is the devil. He maketh the unbelieving man to believe in such divinations, as I erewhile spake of, and therewith he beguileth him, and depriveth him of heavenly weal and bringeth him into hell woe. May Christ shield us therefrom, and keep us in the true faith, and each man who hath it, and may he give it to him who hath it not.

The works of darkness, which are all heavy sins, and other such, as the apostle has here mentioned, as are over-eating, and to eat at unseasonable hours at the ale-house and at invitations, and at feasts, and chiefly at every feast to which he may be invited: for there a man knows not how (and will not try) to observe moderation of his mouth nor of his belly; and though he may know it with respect to meat, he will not with drink, ere he be so conditioned that he will fall into the devil's hand.

The third is for a man to sit in the evening at drink and to lie [a bed] long in the morning, and slothfully to arise and go too late to church.

bicumeliche. *Non in commensationibus et ebrietatibus non in cubilibus et impudiciis non in contentione et emulatione. sed in horum oppositis.* And noh[t] on derke wedes. ac her we seien eow of þese derke wedes. wat þe holie apostle meneð: þo he nemnede niht. \*and niehtes dede. and dai. and leochtes wapne. *Nox accipitur multis modis. sed hic pro infidelitate.* Niht bitocneð her unbileue. þat is aiware aleid. and rihte leue arered godeþonc. and naðeles get is sume þarfore of unbileue ifild on one stede. and swo faste bunden. and swo biwunde þarinne. þat no prest. ne no bissop ne mai him chastien: ne mid forbode. ne mid scrifte. ne mid cursinge. and þat is liðer custume. þat man leueð get. and þat is after clepenge. and ascinge. and uncunne. and warienge. and handselne. and time. and hwate. and fele swilche deueles craftes. and þat wreche man. þat swilche þing him mai letten: of þat þe god him haueð munt. Ac alle þo þe leueð þat swilch þing hem muge furðrie oðer letten: ben cursed of godes muðe. þe ðus seið on þe holie boc. *Maledictus homo qui confidit in homine.* Cursed be þe man þe leueð upen hwate. Ach ich wile segen undernimeð hit. hwat makeð swilch letten. we radeð on boc. þat elch man haueð to fere on engel of heuene: on his rihthalf. þat him wisseð. and munegeð eure to don god. and on his lifthalf an wereged gost. þat him aüre tacheð to ufele. and þat is þe deuel. he makeð þe unbilefulle man to leuen swilche wigeles: swo ich ar embe spac. and þare mide he him bicherð. and binimeð him heuene wele. and bringeð him on helle wowe. crist us þarwið silde. and healde us rihte \*bileue. and elch man þe hit haueð. and geue hine þo þe hit naueð nocht. Ðe were of þesternesne: þat ben alle heuie sennen. and swilche oðre so þe apostle her nemde. also ben oueretes. and untimeliche eten alehuse. and at ferme. and at feste. and masthwat at ilche laðeð<sup>1</sup> metisupe. For þar man ne can his muðes meðe. ne cunnen nele. ne his wombe met. and þeih he cunne of mete: he nele cunne of drinke. er he be swo iueid þat he falle defle to honde. Ðe þridde is þat man sitte an euen at drinke. and ligge longe a moregen: and slawliche ariseð. and late to chireche goð. Ðat feorðe is unrihte lue. þat is

We shall now explain what is meant by deeds of night and weapons of right.

\* p. 6.

Night be-tokens un-belief.

Some are so fast bound by sin that no priest nor bishop may make them amend their lives.

Wicked customs, as soothsaying, &c., are the causes of this.

Cursed is the man that trusteth in such devil's crafts as divination, &c.

Each man has a guardian angel on his right hand that admonishes him to do good.

On his left there is an accursed ghost that teaches him to do evil.

\* p. 7.

The works of darkness are :  
 1. all heavy sins,  
 2. gluttony and drunkenness at ale-houses and at feasts,

1 So in MS.

3. drinking late at night and getting up late in the morning, and so be too late for church.

The fourth is unrighteous love, that is, whoredom and adultery which people commit between them, unless they be lawfully espoused, and that is wicked and unseasonable and wretched; for whoredom hath no (proper) time nor reasonableness, but is the devil's obedience.

Nevertheless if a man hath aught to do with his right spouse at the wrong time or at an unseasonable time, when he should fast or keep holy day, he sinneth greatly, for the holy book forbiddeth it. The fifth is contention and jaw and double speech and every jangling of words. The sixth is when a man eggeth on his neighbour to do or speak to him harm or shame, and hath envy, each towards the other, and causeth him to lose his property, or his rights. These are the six works of darkness which the holy apostle so especially forbids. For each man who doth them, except he forsake them and repent, ere his last day, shall lose eternal light and bliss and life, and have in hell eternal pain and darkness along with devils. Christ shield us therefrom if it be his will [so to do]! The day which the apostle speaketh of is our right belief, which is our soul's light; the weapons of this light are six works of brightness, which are thus named, *Temperantia, Modica potio, Strenuitas, Continentia, per invicem Oratio, invicem Dilectio*. The first is right moderation in meals. The man who uses moderation aright shunneth ale-feasts and vain lusts (idle will), and hath proper meal times and enjoyeth timely meats and observeth moderation of mouth and of belly. The second is for a man to drink moderately, not for to quench his wicked desires (will) or his lust, which bad habits have brought on, but to relieve the necessities of his thirst.

The third is that a man should be watchful and nimble and active and tidy and rise early, and seek (go to) church diligently. The fourth is that the man that hath a spouse should refrain from lustful deeds when so ever it is untimely; and that those who are unespoused (unmarried) should abandon [them] altogether. The fifth is that each man should pray for others as for himself. The sixth is that each man should love others as himself, though he cannot quite so much. *Ista sex opera dicuntur et vestes et arma; vestes—quia nos ornant apud Deum et homines; arma—quia nos muniunt apud hostes*. These six works of brightness are called shrouds (garments) of light, because they clothe and deck, anent God and anent man, every one that doeth them; and moreover they are called weapons of light, because each man that

hordom. *and* mid-liggunge þe men drigen bi-twenen hem : bute  
 gef he ben lageliche bispusede þat is unriht *and* untimeliche.  
*and* mid unselþe : for hordom ne haueð non time ne scule. ac  
 is defles hersumpnesse. Ne forþe gef man haueð to done mid  
 his rihte spuse on unsele. oðer an untime þan man faste sal.  
 oðer halgeu. he sinegeð gretliche. for þe holie boc hit forbet.  
 þat fife is chest *and* chew. *and* twifold speche *and* ilch fliting  
 of worde. Ðat sixte is þat man eggeð his negebure to done  
 oðer to speken him harm. oðer same. *and* haueð nið elch wið  
 oðer. *and* makeð him to forlese his ahte. oðer of his rihte. þese  
 ben þe six werkes of þesternesse. \*þe þe holie apostle for-bet so  
 swiðe. For elch man þe hem doð : bute he hem forlete. *and*  
 bete ar his ende dai : he sal forlesen eche liht. *and* blisse *and*  
 lif. *and* hauen an helle eche pine. *and* þesternesse mid deflen.  
 crist us þare wið silde gef is wille be. Ðe dai þe þe apostle of  
 speð is ure rihte bileue. þat is ure sowle liht. þe wapnes of his  
 lihte ben six werkes of brihtnesse. þe hatten þus. *Temperancia.*  
*Modica potio. Strenuitas. Continencia. Per inuicem oratio.*  
*Inuicem dilectio.* Ðet foremoste is riht medeme mêl. þe man  
 þe hit meþeð riht. þe suneð aleð gestninge. *and* idel wil. *and*  
 haueð riht mel tid. *and* nutteð timeliche metes. *and* gemeð his  
 muðes meþe. *and* of his wombe mete. Ðat oder is emliche  
 drinke. naht-for te quenchen his luðere wil. ne his lust. þe  
 miswune haueð on broht : ac for to beten his þur[s]tes nede.  
 Ðe ðridde is þat man be waker. *and* liht. *and* snel. *and* seli.  
*and* erliche rise. *and* gernliche seche chireche. Ðat feorþe is.  
 þat man þe spuse haueð. his golliche deden wið-teo. swo hit be  
 untime. *and* þo þe beð unbispused : forleten mid alle. Ðat  
 fife is. þat elch man for oðer bidde : alse for him seluen. Ðat  
 sixte is. þat elch man luuie oðer al swo alse him seluen. þeih he  
 swo swiðe ne muge. *Ista sex opera dicuntur et uestes et arma.*  
*Vestes : quia nos ornant apud deum. et homines. Arma : quia*  
*nos muniunt apud hostes.* Ðese six werkes of brihtnesse. ben  
 cleped lihtes scrud. \*for þat hie sruðeð *and* huihted<sup>1</sup> togenes  
 gode. *and* togenes manne elch þe hie doð. *and* ec he ben  
 nemned lichtes wapne. for elch man þe hes doð wereð him

4. Illicit love,  
that is, whore-  
dom and  
adultery.

5. Strife and  
jaw ; double  
speech and  
jangling.

6. Exciting  
one's neigh-  
bour to evil  
speaking or  
wicked deed.

\* p. 8.

Except a man  
forsake these  
six works he  
shall suffer  
eternal tor-  
ment in  
darkness,  
along with  
devils.

Day is right  
belief.

There are six  
works of  
brightness.

1. Moderation  
in eating and  
having meals  
at proper  
times.

2. Moderation  
in drinking.

3. Rising  
early and  
going to  
church in  
time.

4. Restraining  
carnal actions  
and avoiding  
all lascivious-  
ness.

5. Praying  
for others as  
for ourselves.

6. Loving our  
neighbours as  
ourselves.

These works  
adorn us  
before God  
and men.

\* p 9.

<sup>1</sup> or huihted.



doeth them protecteth himself therewith from the enemy of mankind. The lord Saint Paul, who teacheth us thus and admonisheth us to renounce the six works of darkness which pertain to night, and to do the six works (deeds) which I last mentioned, which pertain to brightness, may he intercede for us with the holy Father of heaven, to give us might and strength to forsake darkness and to follow brightness. *Qui vivit et regnat, &c.* Amen.

## IV.

## THE CREED.

*T*ria sunt hominum saluti necessaria, scilicet fides, baptismus vitæ munditia. De FIDE ait dominus in evangelio, qui non crediderit condemnabitur; et sapiens ait, sine fide impossibile est homini placere Deo. De BAPTISMO autem, dicit dominus in evangelio; nisi quis renatus fuerit ex aqua et spiritu sancto et cetera. De VITÆ MUNDITIA, dicit dominus per prophetam, lavamini mundi estote; et in psalmo, declina á malo et fac bonum; et apostolus, immunditia nec nominetur in vobis cupientibus igitur consequi salutem. Insinuandum est quæ sit fides catholica; et quæ sit debita baptismi custodia; et quæ dei mandatorum observantia, id est, vitæ munditia. Et primo, quæ sit fidei doctrina in symboli serie contenta. Three things there are that each man must have who will lead a Christian life: the first is right (true) belief, the second is baptism, the third is fair (good) life; and he is not fully a Christian that is wanting in any of these three. Of Belief speaketh our Lord Jesus Christ in the holy gospel, thus saying, *Qui non crediderit condemnabitur*. The man who hath not true belief in him, he shall be doomed to suffer woe with devils in hell. Of Baptism he speaks in another passage in the gospel, and saith, *Nisi quis renatus fuerit ex aqua, &c.*—No man may come to God's kingdom unless he be baptized.

seluen þarmide wið mankinnes unwine. Ðe lauerd sainte  
 pouȝ þe us lareð þus. *and* munegeð us to forleten þe six werkes  
 of þesternesse. þe bilige to nihte. *and* to done þe six dede. þe  
 ich later nemnede þe bilige to brihtnesse. he þingie us to þe  
 holic fader of heuene. þat he geue us mihte *and* strengþe to  
 forletene þesternesse. *and* to folgie brihtnesse. *Qui uiuit et*  
*Regnat.*

They are a  
 shield to us  
 against the  
 devil.

## IV. ✓

## CREDO.

The Creed.

**T***ria sunt hominum salutis necessaria. scilicet fides. baptismus*  
*uite mundicia. De fide ait dominus in euangelio. Qui*  
*non crediderit condemnabitur. Et sapiens ait. Sine fide*  
*impossibile est homini placere deo. De baptismo autem dicit*  
*dominus in euangelio. Nisi quis renatus fuerit ex aqua et*  
*spiritu sancto et cetera. De uite mundicia dicit dominus per*  
*prophetam. Lauamini mundi estote. Et in psalmo. Declina*  
*á malo et fac bonum. Et apostolus. Immundicia nec nomi-*  
*netur in uobis cupientibus igitur consequi salutem. Insinuandum*  
*est que sit fides catholica. et que sit debita baptismo custodia. et*  
*que dei mandatorum obseruantia .i. uite mundicia. Et primo*  
*que sit fidei doctrina in simboli serie contenta. Ðre þing ben þat*  
*elch man habben mot. þe wile his cristendom leden. þat on is*  
*rihte bileue. þat oðer is fulohþunge. þe ƿridde þe faire liflode.*  
*and he nis naht fulliche cristene. þat is ani wane \*of þese þrie.*  
*Of þe bileue speeð ure louerd ihesu crist on þe holic godspelle.*  
*þus queðende. Qui non crediderit condemnabitur. Ðe man*  
*þe ne haueð rihte bileue on him. he beð dempd to þolie wowe*  
*mid deffen on helle. Of þe fulcninge he speeð on oðer stede. on*  
*þe godspelle. and seið. Nisi quis renatus fuerit ex aqua et*  
*cetera. Ne mai noman cume to godes riche. bute he be fulened.*

Three things  
 necessary to  
 salvation.

Faith, Bap-  
 tism, and  
 Purity of  
 Life.

He who lacks  
 any one of  
 these three  
 things is not  
 a true Chris-  
 tian.

\* p. 10.

He who has  
 not true  
 belief shall  
 be condemned  
 to suffer woe  
 with devils in  
 hell.

No one shall  
 come to God's  
 kingdom  
 unless he be  
 baptized.



Of Clean (pure) Life speaketh Isaiah the prophet, thus saying, *Lavamini mundi estote*—wash you and abide clean ; and David in the psalter-book [thus saith], *A delicto meo munda me domine !*—Cleanse me, Lord, from my sins. *Et alibi, Asperges me, domine, ysopo, &c.*—Sprinkle me with meekness, Lord, then shall I be clean. But because that each man is in Baptism [cleansed] of all sins, and ought to know his belief ere he receive baptism, therefore I will say to you your Belief, and your Prayer, and teach it you by God's help.

The true belief the twelve apostles put into writing ere they departed through the whole world to preach Christianity. But each of them wrote his verse, and St. Peter wrote the first. And the psalm which they all wrote is called Creed, after the first word of the psalm ; and at the beginning of Christendom (Christianity) each man learnt the Lord's Prayer and Creed before he received baptism. And there were then many children who died unbaptized and were lost, and therefore there is a law ordained according to our Saviour's direction that children shall be baptized, and that their godfathers shall answer for them before the priest at the font, and be sureties for them before God at the church doors and securities at the font that they shall know their belief and their prayer, that is the Lord's Prayer and Creed, when they are able to learn them, and so be believing and righteous men. And the godfathers cannot do that unless they know their belief and take much heed of the children. Nor ought any man to refuse [to teach] when he is asked on account of necessity to do so. You all know your Creed, as I suppose, though you do not all know what it signifies. But listen now and attend to it, and I will teach you, by God's help, so that ye shall know ; and I will repeat to you the Creed word by word, and therewith what each word signifies.

*Credo in Deum*, I believe in God. *Patrem omnipotentem*, the father almighty. *Creatorem cæli et terræ*, creator and ruler of heaven and earth, and of all creatures. This word *Credo* may be understood in three ways : the first is *Credo Deo*, I believe God ; the second is *Credo Deum*,

Of clene liflade speeð ysaias þe prophete þus queðende. *Laua- mini mundi estote.* wasseð geu *and* wunieð clene. *and* dauieð in þe salter boc. *A delicto meo munda me domine.* Clense me leuerd of mine synnes. *Et alibi. Asperges me domine ysopo et cetera.* Bispreng me mid edmodnesse louerd þanne be ich clene. Ac for þat elch man beð on fulninge of alle synnen. *and* ogh to cunnen his bileue ar he fulninge underfo. þarfore ic wile segen ow gure bileue. *and* gure bede. *and* tachen hit ew bi godes fultume. Ðe rihte bileue setten þe twolue apostles on write: ar hie ferden in to al middeneard to bodien cristendome. Ac elch of hem wrot his uers. *and* sainte peter he wrot þat formeste. *and* þe salme þe hie alle writen is cleped *credo.* After þe formeste word of þe salme. *and* ate biginninge of cristendom: elch man leornede *pater noster.* *and* *credo:* ar þan he fulninge understoden. And þo waren manie childre dede fulehtlese *and* forlorene. *and* þarfore \*hit is iset lage bi ure drihtenes wissunge. þat me sal children fuluhtnie. *and* here godfaderes sullen for hem andswerie bifore þe prest ate fanstone. *and* ben here boreges togenes gode ate chireche dure: *and* inboreges ate fanstone. þat hie sulle cunne here bileue. *and* here bede: þat is þe *pater noster* *and* *credo.* þane hie lernie mugen *and* ben bilefulle men *and* rihtwise. And þat ne mugen þe godfaderes naht don: bute hie here bileue cunnen. *and* nime to þe children muchele geme. Ne noman ne agh werne. þanne me him for nede þar to bit. Alle cunne over crede þaste ich wene. þeih ge alle nuten hwat hit biqueðe. Ac lusteð nu *and* undernimeð hit. *and* ich wille tachen eu bi godes fultume. þat ge sulle witen. *and* segge ou þe crede word after word. *and* þarmid hwat elch word bitocneð.

Isaiah and David both speak of a pure life.

Every one ought to know his belief before he is baptized.

The twelve apostles drew up the articles of the Christian faith.

What they wrote is called the Creed.

At the commencement of Christianity each man learnt the Creed and Pater noster before baptism. \* p. 11.

In order that children should not die unbaptized, godfathers and godmothers were appointed to answer for them at the font.

But this they cannot do unless they themselves know their belief, &c. The Creed needs explanation, and therefore, with God's help, will I explain it.

**C***redo in deum.* Ic bileue on god. *Patrem omnipotentem.* þene almihti fader. *Creatorem celi et terre.* Suppende *and* wealdende of heuene *and* of eorð. *and* of alle safte. Ðis word *credo* man mai understonden on þre wise. *Credo deo.* Ich leue gode. þat oðer is. *Credo deum.* Ich ilcuc þat god is. þese

The word 'creed' is to be understood in a threefold sense.

I believe that God is. These two things do all heathen men. But the third doth no man except the good Christian, *qui credit in Deum*, that is, he who believes in God. And thereto five things are necessary for to believe in God. *Scilicet, eum Dominum omnium recognoscere, super omnia obedire.* The first thing is to acknowledge him as lord over all things; the second is to love him above all things; the third is to stand in awe of him above all things; the fourth is to honour him above all things; the fifth is to praise him above all things. The man that hath in himself these five things, hath in himself true belief, and if he be wanting in any thereof he is not a believing man. Now I have explained to you these five words. *Credo in Deum Patrem Omnipotentem Creatorem cœli et terre.*

Hear now these others: *Et in Jesum Christum filium ejus unicum.* And I believe in the Saviour Christ his only son, *Dominum nostrum*, our Lord. He is called Saviour for that he delivered mankind from the deadly venom that the old devil blew upon Adam, and upon his offspring; so that their fivefold powers were altogether infected with venom. But our Lord Jesus Christ, through his five hoïy wounds, shed his blood and gave it mankind to drink, and therewith [took] out of them that deadly venom, and with his short death delivered them out of eternal death, and with his brief sore (pain) rescued them out of everlasting sickness, and gave eternal health to all those that were willing to receive it; and though all men be God's children, because he created them all and chose them as sons and daughters, nevertheless our Saviour Christ is his only Son, not by adoption, but by generation; for he begot him as the sun generates light, which he (the sun) spreads abroad into all this wide world. And he is therefore called the heavenly Father's Son; for the Father is in the Son in three ways: the first is in power, for he is great and mighty above all things; the second is in glory, for the moon and sun are astonished at his beauty, so beautiful is our Lord Jesus Christ; and the third is in goodness (virtue), for he is full of all goodness. And though our Lord Jesus Christ be lord of all creatures, nevertheless he is not the lord of all men, though they have all taken upon them his (Christ's) name; for they do not all obey him. Only the righteous and the believing and the God-fearing men obey our Lord Jesus Christ; for all the unrighteous men who commit great sins, serve the devil, and for the time he is their lord.

two þing don alle heðen men. Ac þe ƿridde ne doð noman bute þe gode cristene. *Qui credit in deum.* þat is he þe bileueð in god. *and* parto moten fif þing to bileuen in god. *Scilicet \*eum dominum omnium recognoscere. super omnia obedire.* þat on is cnowen him to louerd ouer alle þing. þat oðer is luuen him ouer alle þing. þat ƿridde is hauen eie of him ouer alle þing. þat feorð is wurðen him ouer alle þing. þat fift is herien him ouer alle þing. Man þe haueð on him þos fif þinges : he haueð on him rihte bileue. *and* gef him beð oni þarof wane : he nis naht bilefful man. Nu ich eu habbe opened þes fif word. **Credo in deum patrem omnipotentem creatorem celi et terre.** Hereð nu þes oðre. **Et in ihesum Christum filium eius unicum.** *and* ich bileue on þe helende crist. his onlepi sune. **Dominum nostrum.** Vre louerd he is cleped helende. for þat he mauken alesede of þe deaðliche atter. þe þe ealde deuel bleu uppen adam. *and* on his ofsprenge. swo þat here fifealde mihte was altegeder attred. Ac ure louerd ihesu crist. þurh his holie fif wunden shedde his blod. *and* þat gef mankin to drinken. *and* þarmide ut of hem þat deaðliche atter. *and* mid his shorte deaðe lesde hem ut of eche deaðe. *and* mid his eðeliche sore redde hem ut of eche sienne. *and* gef hem eche hele alle þo þe hit healde willen. *and* þeih alle men ben godes children. for þat he hem alle shop : *and* ches hem to sunes *and* to dohtres. naðeles ure helende crist is his onlepi sune. noht after chesunge ac after strenge for þan he him strende. also þe sunne strengeð liht. þane he tospret into al þesse wide worlde. *and* is þarfore cleped þe \*heuenliche fader sune. for þe fader is on þe sune on þrie wise. þat on is on westme. for þat he is muchel *and* mihti ouer alle þing. þat oðer is on wlite : for þat þe mone *and* þe sunne wundrieð of faire. swo fair is ure louerd ihesu crist. *and* þe pridde is on þewe : for he is ful of alle godnesse. And þeih ure louerd ihesu crist bie alre manne<sup>1</sup> louerd. naðeles he nis naht alre manne louerd. þeih hie ben alle on his name turned. for hie ne heren him naht alle. nomo ne heren ure louerd ihesu crist bute þe rihtwise. *and* þe bileffulle. *and* þe godfrihte. for alle þe unrihtwise men þe grete synnes drigen : hersumieð þe deuel. *and* þe hwile here louerd he bieð.

Only the good Christians believe in God, to which belief five things are needful:

\* p. 13.

1. To acknowledge him as Lord over all things;
2. To love him above all things;
3. To fear him above all things;
4. To honour him above all things;
5. To praise him above all things.

God the Father of all.

Our Lord is called the Healer, because he healed mankind of the deadly venom blown upon Adam by Satan.

By his five holy wounds he restored man's fivefold powers.

With his short death he redeemed man from eternal death.

Christ is God's Son by generation.

The Son has three properties possessed by the Father

1. power,
2. glory, and
3. goodness.

<sup>1</sup> read safta.

Christ is Lord only of Christian men, because all sinful men serve the devil and have him for their lord.

And therefore they (sinners) lie when they call Christ lord, and meanwhile it helpeth them not that they sing paternoster nor creed. May our Lord Jesus give us true faith and all who have need thereof, unto our life's end. Amen.

*Qui conceptus est.* We have begun to tell you in English what the Creed signifies, which every Christian man ought to know ; and we have said two verses thereof, and will now pass on to the third. I believe in the Saviour Christ, whom the holy virgin our Lady Saint Mary conceived of the Holy Ghost in her body, not according to human conception, nor after carnal lust, but even as ye in your hearts receive the words of my mouth which I am speaking to you. So the angel said it when he brought her the blissful tidings, thus saying, *Ecce concipies, &c.*—thou shalt conceive a child in thy womb and bear a male child and call it Saviour, and it shall be king in the everlasting kingdom. Then answered our Lady Saint Mary and said, *Quomodo fiet istud quoniam virum non cognosco?*—How shall that be, since no man hath touched me. And the angel answered her and said, *Spiritus sanctus superveniet in te, &c.*—The Holy Ghost will come upon thee, and God's might shall make thee with child ; and when it is born it shall be called the Child of God. Then answered the Lady Saint Mary and said, *Ecce ancilla Domini, fiat mihi secundum verbum tuum*—I am Christ's maiden : as thou hast said, so may it be. Thus meekly answered the meek queen of heaven and of earth and of all creatures. And thus became our Lady Saint Mary with child, thanked be our Lord Jesus Christ ; when the time came [she brought forth a son], so that she neither ached nor smarted, nor was her virginity impaired.

*Passus sub Pontio Pilato.* He suffered under Pilate's rule. *Crucifixus, mortuus*, his holy body was spread out on the holy rood, and his feet were nailed thereto and his hands ; and with spear's point was his sweet side opened, and his head was covered with a crown of thorns, and in many ways he was piteously tormented ; and thus he suffered until the time that he suffered death for to relieve our necessities, though he himself had none.

*Et sepultus.* And his holy body was laid in the tomb in the holy sepulchre, that men still seek in Jerusalem.

*Descendit ad inferos.* And he went into hell and brake hell gates and



*and þarfore h[i]c lieð þan hie crist louerd clepieð. and þe hwile*  
*ne helpeð noht. þat hie singeð pater noster ne crede. Ure*  
*louerd ihesu geue us rihte bileue. and alle þo nede habbeð to ure*  
*liues ende. amen. Qui conceptus est. we habbeð bigunnen to*  
*sege ou on englis hwat bitocneð þe crede. þat elch cristeneman*  
*oh to cunnen. and habbeð seid þarof tweien uers. and wile nu*  
*þe þridde. Ich bileue on þe helende crist. þe þat holie maiden*  
*ure lafdie seinte marie on hire innoðe understod of þe holie gost. An angel*  
*noht of mannes strenne ne on lichamliche luste. ac alswo gie on*  
*ower herte unde[r]stonden þe word of mi muð þe ich speke to*  
*eu. alswo þe engel hit seide þo he hire brohte þe blisfule tiðinge.*  
*þus queðende. Ecce concipies et cetera. þu shalt understonde*  
*child on þine innoðe. and enowen \*for enauechild and clepen hit*  
*helende. and hit sal ben king on þe endelese kineriche. þo and-*  
*swerede ure lafdi sainte marie and seide. Quomodo fiet istud*  
*quoniam uirum non cognosco? whu shal þat wurðe siððen wap-*  
*man me ne [a]trineð<sup>1</sup>. and þe engel hire andswerede and seide. <sup>1 MS. trineð.</sup>*  
*Spiritus sanctus super ueniet in te et cetera. þe holie gast wile*  
*cumen uppen þe. and godes mihte make ðe mid childe. and*  
*hwanne hit beð iboren: men sullen clepen hit godes bern. þo*  
*andswerede þe lafdie sainte marie and seide. Ecce ancilla*  
*domini fiat michi secundum uerbum tuum. Ich am cristes*  
*maiden. also þu hauest iseid: swo mote hit wurðe. þus mildeliche*  
*andswerede þe milde quen of heuene and of eorðe. and of alle*  
*safte. and þus bicam ure lafdi Sainte Marie mid childe. þonked*  
*be ure louerd ihesu crist. þo ðe time cam swo þat hire ne oc. ne*  
*ne smeart. ne hire maiðhod ne was awemned. Passus sub*  
*pontio pilato. he was pined on pilates andwealde. Crucifixus*  
*Mortuus. His holie lichame was tospred on þe holie rode. Of the passion and cruci-*  
*and nailed parto his fêt: and his honden. and mid speres orde*  
*opened his swete side. and his heued heled mid þornene erune. Of the burial*  
*and on fele wise rewliche tuked. and þus he þrewede for to þat*  
*ilche time. þat he deað þolede. for to beten ure nede: he<sup>2</sup> ne*  
*hadde him selue nane. Et sepultus. And was his holie lichame*  
*leid in buricles in þe \*holie sepulcre. þat men sechen giet in*  
*ierusalem. Descendit ad inferos. and he ferde in to helle and*

Third verse of  
 the Creed  
 treats of the  
 miraculous  
 conception.

An angel  
 brought the  
 blissful tid-  
 ings to Mary  
 that she  
 should con-  
 ceive and bear  
 a son,

and should  
 call his name  
 Jesus.

The child  
 would be  
 called God's  
 child.

The child was  
 born in due  
 time, and  
 Mary felt  
 neither ache  
 nor smart.

Of the passion and cruci-  
 fixation of  
 Christ.

Of the burial  
 of Christ in  
 the holy  
 sepulchre in  
 Jerusalem,  
<sup>2 originally</sup>  
 þe.



bound the devil ; *id est, abstulit ei quam exercuerat potestatem, trahendi ad infernum animas a corporibus exutas* ; first he took from him all the power that he had enjoyed, from the beginning of the world until the time came that he harrowed hell and took out with him all those who previously had been very obedient to him.

*Tertia die resurrexit a mortuis.* On the third day he arose from death, and dwelt with his apostles until the fortieth day ; not continuously, but at various times.

*Ascendit ad cælos.* Then he ascended to heaven, so that his apostles and many other folks beheld with their eyes how he went up.

*Sedet ad dextram Dei Patris Omnipotentis.* And he sitteth on the right hand of the Almighty Father. *Inde venturus judicatum vivos et mortuos.* Whence he shall come again to judge the quick and the dead, and to give the good eternal life and bliss in heaven, and the evil eternal woe and torment in hell, to shame both soul and body.

*Credo in Spiritum Sanctum.* I believe in the Holy Ghost, who is with the Father and with the Son one mighty God. *Sanctam ecclesiam catholicam.* And I believe that the church is God's holy house on earth, and is called in books *Kyriaca, id est, dominicalis*, that is in English, the Lord's house, and is thereto named because the heavenly king's body is therein as an ordinance ; and therefore men shall ever go thither and pray there, and hear God's words, and learn how they shall lead their lives in obedience to God, and so unite themselves in true belief that they shall be an habitation of God, so that they shall be turned to one lord, to one belief, and to one baptism. *Sanctorum communionem.* And I believe that saints are of one mind, one counsel, and have fellowship in all holiness. *Remissionem peccatorum.* And I believe that sins are forgiven through true shrift. A man receiveth true shrift when he forsakes wholly his great sins and grievously bewaileth them and sheweth them his mass-priest, and repents of them as he (the priest) directeth him. *Carnis resurrectionem.* And I believe that on Dooms-day mankind shall rise from death, and each man shall hear his doom according to his last deeds (in this life). *Et vitam æternam, Amen.* And all men shall come to live eternally, the good in everlasting bliss and weal with our Lord Jesus Christ, in heaven, the evil in eternal woe and torment with the devil in hell, soul and body without end.

brac helle gaten : *and* bond þe deuel .i. *abstulit ei quam exercu-* which men  
*erat potestatem. trahendi ad infernum animas á corporibus* still visit.  
*exutas.* formest he binam him alle þe mihte þe he hadde nitted Of his descent  
 fram<sup>1</sup> þe biginninge of þe worlde. for to þe time cam þat he <sup>1</sup> *MS. fran.* into hell.  
 heregede helle. *and* nam<sup>2</sup> ut mid him alle þe him hadden ar wel <sup>2</sup> *MS. nan.*  
 hersumed. *Tercia die resurrexit á mortuis.* On þe þridde dai Of his resur-  
 he aros of deaþe. *and* wunede mid his apostles. for to þe fower- rection on the  
 tuþe dai. noht alegate : ac stund-mele. *Ascendit ad celos.* Þo Of his ascen-  
 he steah to heuene. swo þat his apostles *and* muchel oþer fole sion into  
 mid eien bihielden hwu he upwende. *Sedet ad dextram dei* heaven,  
*patris omnipotentis. and* sit on riþthalf þes almihtie faderes.  
*Inde uenturus iudicatum uiuos et mortuos.* Danne he cumeþ  
 eft to demen þe quike *and* þe deade. *and* to geue þe gode eche whence he  
 lif *and* blisse on heuene. *and* þe iuele : eche wowe *and* pine on shall come to  
 helle. boþe to same þe sowle *and* þe lichame. *Credo in spiritum* judge the  
*sanctum.* Ich bileue on þe holie gost. þe is mid þe fader. *and* quick and the  
 mid þe sune on mihti god. *Sanctam ecclesiam catholicam. and* dead.  
 ich leue. þat chireche is holi godes hus on eorþe. *and* is cleped Of belief in  
 on boc kiriaea .i. *dominicalis* þat is on englis louerdlich hus. *and* the Holy  
 is þerto nemned. for þe heuenliche kinges \*lichame is to setnesse Ghost.  
 þarinne. *and* þarfore men sullen aure þider gon. *and* hem þar The Church is  
 bidden. *and* godes word heren. *and* lernie hwu hie sullen here God's house  
 lif laden on godes hersumpnesse. *and* hem swo gaderen on rihte \* p. 16.  
 bileue. þat hie ben on godes wunienge. þat he ben turned on one The heavenly  
 lauerd. to one bileue. to one fulninge. *Sanctorum communionem* King's body  
*and* ich ileue þat halgan ben on mode. *and* on rede. *and* habben is therein as  
 ferrede on alle holinesse. *Remissionem peccatorum. and* ich an ordinance,  
 leue þat þurh soþ scrifte synnes ben forgeuene. Soþ scrifte *and* thither  
 understondeþ man. þanne he his muchele synnes mid alle for- men should  
 leteþ. *and* sore bimurneþ. *and* sheweþ hem his messe preste. go to pray  
*and* beteþ hem also he him wisseþ. *Carnis resurrectionem.* God's words.  
 And ich leue þat mankin shal a domesdai risen of deaþe. *and* Of the com-  
 elch man heren his dom bi eftemeste erdede. *Et uitam eternam* munion or  
*amen. and* alle men shullen cume to libben echeliche. þe góde on fellowship of  
 eche blisse *and* wele mid ure louerd ihesu crist on heuene. þe saints,  
 úuele on eche wowe *and* pine mid þe deuel o[n] helle. sowle *and* Of the for-  
 licam abuten ende. giveness of  
 sins.  
 Of true shrift.  
 Of the resur-  
 rection of the  
 body.  
 Of the life  
 everlasting.  
 All men shall  
 live eternally,  
 the good in  
 everlasting  
 bliss, and the  
 wicked in  
 eternal tor-  
 ment.

## V.

## THE LORD'S PRAYER.

*Pater noster*, &c. When thou singest the psalm that is called Creed, thou sayest that thou believest in God, and makest acknowledgement that he is thy Lord; but when thou singest the psalm called *Pater Noster*, after the first word of the psalm, thou dost obeisance to God and kneelest to him and prayest that all his will may be done, and complainest to him of thy manifold necessities, and entreatest him to relieve them all; thus saying:—*Pater noster qui es in cœlis*, Our Father thou art in heaven, the Holy Trinity which created and ruleth over all creatures. We call him our Father for two reasons: the first is because that he created us and united the limbs to our bodies and the soul thereto, the sight to the eyes, the hearing to the ears, and to each limb its proper office; and so secretly has he put it (the body) all together that the joining of each limb is unperceived; and hereafter he will unite us when we shall arise from the dead. And therefore we call him Father because he has put our members together here (in this world). The second reason is, that he feedeth all living things which live on meat (food); all animals openly, and grass and trees secretly. But one of all animals, that is man, he [God] feedeth in two ways, nevertheless not all men but some only. The unrighteous man he feeds openly with bodily food, and the soul with her aliment. And though God thus feedeth all things, he is not, nevertheless, called the Father of them all (though he feedeth them all), but specially is he the Father indeed of those who receive his holy flesh and his holy blood in right faith and in true love. These are the righteous and the believing and the God-fearing men, who lead their lives as they are taught in church. And those who do not so have the devil for their father, who feedeth all those who follow him. And in the first man he (the devil) previously united all; and with carnal lusts he feedeth all unbelieving men who lived then or yet live, and he is therefore their father.

*Sanctificetur nomen tuum.* Blessed be thy name in us, so that we may extol thee in all our thoughts, praise thee in all our words, and honour

## V.

## PATER NOSTER.

*Pater noster et cetera.* Du singest þe salm þe me clepeð crede. þu seist þat on gode bileuest. *and* dost cownesse þat he is þi louerd. ac þanne þu singest þe salm þat is cleped *pater noster*. \*After þe forme word of þe salme: abugest gode. *and* cnewlest togenes him. *and* biddest þat all his wille wurðe. *and* menest to him þine fele nede. *and* biddest þat he hem alle bete. þus queðende. [P]*ater noster qui es in celis. fader ure þu ert in heuene. þe holie þremnesse þe shop and biwalt alle shafte: we clepieð ure fader for two þing. on his for þo þe he us shop: and feide þe lemes to ure licame. and þe sowle þarto. þe sene to þe egen. þe hlust to þe earen. and to elche lime limliche mihte. and swo digeliche hit al dihte: þat on elche feinge is hem on sene. and eft he us wile feie: þanne we shulen arisen of deaðe. and forþi we elepeð him fader for þat he us feide here. Oðer is þat he fet alle liuende þing. þe bi mete liuien. alle nutten openliche: and gres and trowen dieliche. Ac on of alle nutten þat is man. he fet on two wise. noht alle: ac sune. Ðo unriht-wise openliche mid licames bileue: and þe sowle mid hire bileue. and þeih he alle þing þus fede: he nis naðemo nemned heore alre manne<sup>1</sup> þeih hem alle fede. ac sunderlepes he is here fader mid wisse. þe on rihte bileue. and on soðe luue understant his holie fles. and his holie blod. þat ben þe rihtwise. and þe bileafule. and þe godfrihte men: þe ladeð her lif also me hem in chireche lereð. and þo þe swo ne don: habben to fader þe deuel þe fet hem alle þo þe him folegeð. \*and on þe forme men: alle ueide er. and mid licames luste: alle unbilefulle men þe þo weren. and get ben. he fedeð. and is þarfore hore fader. *Sanc-tificetur nomen tuum.* bledsed be þi name on us. swo þat we on alle ure þanke. þe heien on alle ure worden. þe herien: on alle ure deden þe wurðien. *and* ouer alle þing þe lunien. *and* swo*

*Pater Noster.*  
In this prayer we kneel and ask that God's will may be done, and we pray for things needful to soul and body, and for forgiveness of sins.

\* p. 17.

*Our Father:—*  
We call God our Father, 1. because he created us, and put our limbs (with their respective powers) together in a secret and wonderful manner;

2. he is our Father because he feedeth us and all living things.

1 ? fader.  
But God is only the true Father of the righteous and the godfearing.

Other men have the devil for their father.

\* p. 18.

*Hallowed be thy name:—*  
Let us all magnify, praise, worship, and love God's

thee in all our works, and love thee above all things, and so merit it that we may have in common the token of thy holy name. *Adveniat regnum tuum.* Thy kingdom come. To some men our Lord Jesus Christ comes, and a little while remaineth with them, and afterwards leaves them. Such are all those that hear the word of God in sermons and think that they will forsake their sins but do not. To some men our Lord Jesus Christ cometh and remaineth with them, and nevertheless reigneth not in them. Such are all those who have forsaken their sins, and according to the priest's instruction, earnestly repent. To some men he cometh and begetteth to reign in them in this brief life, and will fully reign in them hereafter in the eternal life ; but such are now difficult to find upon earth ; and nevertheless there are still many, namely, the God-fearing, who are void of sin, and lay no store by all world's pleasure, and love truly all living men, and are obedient to all God's behests, and are weary of this world and long for heaven, and desire (yearn) for nothing except what is according to God's will.

*Fiat voluntas tua sicut in cælo et in terra.* Thy will be done on earth as in heaven ; so that men may please thee with their life on earth, as do the angels in heaven. *Panem nostrum cotidianum da nobis hodie.* Give us to-day our daily bread. It is all called bread, that is man's food ; but nevertheless bread denotes three kinds of food : the first is the meat (or food) which the body enjoys and lives by ; the second is God's word, that is the soul's food ; the third is the meat that each man ought to take with him when he shall depart this life, that is, Christ's holy body, which giveth all men eternal life and bliss in heaven. And if we are wise we may with one word pray for these three things and be successful in our prayers.

*Et dimitte nobis debita nostra.* And forgive us our trespasses which we have done, and often, in idle thoughts, in vain speech, in evil deeds, and many more times than we are able to say. *Sicut et nos dimittimus debitoribus nostris.* And so forgive us our trespasses as we do theirs who have trespassed against us. No man can say these words, when he beseeches God's mercy, if he hath in his heart malice, or envy, or hate towards his fellow Christian, without cutting himself off from God ; but he prayeth that God's wrath may come upon his own head. *Et ne nos inducas in temptationem.* Lord shield us from every pain of hell. Every



ernien þat we habben moten of þine holie name þe točne imene. *Adueniat regnum tuum.* Cume þi rixlinge. To sume men cumeð ure louerd ihesu crist. *and* litle hwile mid hem bileueð *and* siððen him forleteð. Swilche ben alle þo þe hereð godes word on lor spelle. *and* þenchen þat hie willeð here sýnnes leten. *and* ne don. To sume men cumeð ure louerd ihesu crist. *and* bileueð mid him. *and* naðemo ne rixleð noht on him. Swilche ben alle þo þe hauen here sýnnes forleten. *and* bi prestes wisinge hem gernliche beteð. To sume men he cumeð. *and* biginneð on him to rixle on þis eðeliche liue. *and* wille fulliche rixle on him eft on þe eche liue. ac swilche ben arueð finde. nu abuuen eorðe. *and* naðeles manie beð get. þo ben þe godfrihte þe clene ben of sýnnes. *and* leteð unwurð of alle woreld wunne. *and* luueð<sup>1</sup> rihtliche alle liuende men. *and* ben hersume alle godes hese. *and* is þis woreld loð. *and* habbeð longinge to heuene. *and* ne gierneð to none þinge : bute after godes wille. *Fiat uoluntas tua sicut in celo \*et in terra.* Wurðe þi wil on eorðe swo hit is on heuene. swo þat me þe quemen of here lifode on eorðe. also don þe engles on heuene. *Panem nostrum cotidianum da nobis hodie.* Gif us to dai ure daihwamliche bred. Al hit is cleped bred : þat is mannes bileue : ac naðeles bred bitocneð þre bileues. On is þe mete. þe þe lichame brukeð *and* biliueð. Ðat oðer is godes word. þat is þe sowle fode. þe þridde is for mete þat ilch man agh mid him to leden. þan he sal of þesse liue faren. þat is cristes holie licame. þe giueð alle men eche lif. *and* blisse in heuene. *and* gief we wise ben : we mugen mid one worde þese þrie þing bidden. *and* ben bene tiðe. *Et dimitte nobis debita nostra.* And forgiue us ure gultes þe we hauen don. *and* ofte on idel þonke. on unnet speche. on iuele dede. *and* muchele mo siðe þanne we segen mugen. *Sicut et nos dimittimus debitoribus nostris.* And swo forgiue us ure gultes. swo we don hem here þe us agult habbeð. Ne mai no man pese word seggen þanne he godes milce biseeð. gief he haueð on his heorte onde. oðer nið. oðer hatiunge to his emcristene. þat he him seluen fram gode ne deleð. Ac biddeð þat godes wraððe cume uppen his ogen heued. *Et ne nos inducas in temptationem.*

name above all things.

*Thy kingdom come :—*

Christ comes to some men but remains not long with them.

These men only think of repentance ; they do not forsake their sins.

Others have Christ with them, but he does not reign in them.

Christ's kingdom is in the hearts of those who despise this world, and long for heaven, and desire nothing but what is according to God's will.

1 MS. liueð.

\* p. 19.

*Thy will be done :—*

Let our lives please Thee !

*Give us this day our daily bread :—*

Bread betokens three sorts of food :

1. bodily food,

2. spiritual food,

3. Christ's holy body.

*Forgive us our trespasses, &c. :—*

No one ought to say these words if he hears malice against any one in his heart.

*Lead us not into temptation :—*



torment of hell is effected in a threefold mode. The first is the devil's instigation and evil-teaching ; the second is man's lust ; and the third is man's will when he will do or say after the devil's teaching what is then pleasing to him ; the instigation and the lust bringeth him into hell-torment. There are three things that weigh down mankind : the first is the will itself, the second is evil crimes, and the third the lusts of the flesh. And these two, that is, sin and the will, help the third, that is, the fleshly lusts which mislead mankind ; and it is wholly through the devil that men are thus mistaught. As it is by the woman and her mirror ; she beholds her mirror, and her shadow cometh thereon, and the shadow teacheth her how she may make herself look most lovely, for she desires to please all the lechers who look on her and so draw them to her. So cometh the devil into man's heart, when he will hold secret conversation with him, and saith thus :—Thou art a well-to-do man and honourable besides, if thou takest to the house (keepest at home) thou art less respected by men, but if thou wearest every day fine clothes and art open-handed (liberal) to gleemen and to whores, thou shalt be beloved and respected and shalt please all men. To the man that is envious he (the devil) speaketh in his heart and saith : A foul thing may it seem to thee that an inferior person hath fine clothes and thou mean ones, and that he should have worldly riches while thou wert better deserving thereof. With the later he speaketh in his heart [and saith] : Now thou must hate him who hath done evil to thee and cry out on him with evil words and make him to lose his goods ; a pitiful creature art thou if thou seekest not thy revenge, when thou seest thy opportunity, and if power faileth thee [not]. To the covetous man he whispers in his heart and thus saith : If thou art destitute thou art not respected nor pleasing (to men), but if thou hast world's wealth, thou mayest therewith fare worthily, and so look to thyself that thou art beloved and respected ; and thou mayest, for the Lord's sake, distribute much alms, though it be unlawfully or unseasonably acquired. Give thereof for the love of God, then shall thy sins be forgiven thee. If thy priest, who shall take thy tithes, be not a chaste man, distribute it to such men as may pray for thee. To the narrow-hearted man the devil saith in his thought :—Keep well what thou hast ; consider what may befall thee, and show some moderation when thou makest thy alms. Thou hast little wealth wherewith to help thy kin, and well worthy is wealth, whatever it be, of honour.

Louerd shild us fram elche pine of helle. Eleh pine is fremed on pre fold wise. On is þe defles tuihting *and* mislore, þat oðer is mannes licunge. þe þridde is mannes wille. \*þanne he wile don. oðer queðen hwat him þanne licað after defles lore. þe egginge *and* þe likinge him bringeð in to helle pine. Dre þing beð þat mankin heuieð. On is þe selue lust. oðer is iuel lehtres. Ðe þridde flesliche lustes. *and* pese two þe ben leihter *and* lust : uulsteð þe þridde þat is þe flesliche lust. þe mankinne forlereð. *and* al hit is bi þe deuel. þat men þus forlerede. Also hit bi þe winnman *and* bi sheawere. hie bihalt hire sheawere. *and* eumeð hire shadewe þaronne. þe shadewe hire tacheð. hwi hie mai hire seluen wenlukest makien. for hie wule liken alle þe lechures þe on hire lokað. *and* swo dragen hem to hire. Al swo eumeð þe deuel in to þe mannes herte þan he wile healde sunder-rune wið him. *and* þus queð. Ðu ert wel don man. *and* þarto wurðlich. Gef þu takest to huse þu best men þe unwurðure ac gef þu werest elche dai faire cloðes. *and* best rum-handed to glewmen *and* to hores. þu shalt ben lef *and* wurð. *and* liken alle men. To þe man þat is niðful. he spekeð on his herte *and* þus queð. Ful mai þe pinke þat foreuðer haueð faire weden. *and* þu unwreste. *and* he wereldes richeise *and* þu ware betre wurðe. Wið þe hatiende man he specð on his herte. Nu shalt [þu hatien] þo þe iuel hauen don. *and* biremen him mid euel wordes. \**and* maken him to forlesen his aihte. vnwreste þu best gef þu wreeche ne seest. hwanne þu time siest. gief mihte þe þe<sup>1</sup> atiereð. To þe eiht-gradi men he runeð on his herte *and* þus queð. Gef þu best aihteles þu best unwurð. *and* loð. ac gef þu hauest worold wele. þu miht þarof wurðliche fare. *and* swo loken þe þat þu best lef *and* wurð. *and* miht for ure drihtenes luue fele almes dele. þeih þu lit mid unrihte bigete. oðer on untine. Gif þarof for godes luue. þanne beð þe sýnne forgiuen. gef þi prest nis elene man. þe shal pine toðinge understonden. del hit men þe muge bidde for ðe. To þe narewe herted man on his þonke he seið. witte wel hwat þu hauest. walte hwat þe tide. *and* eune sume meðe þenne þu almesse makest. Ðu hauest eðeliche bi aihte to helpen pine kenne. wel wurð wunne be of wurðshipe swo

Three things bring men to hell:

1. Devil's instigation,  
2. man's lust,  
3. man's will,  
\* p. 20.

Three things weigh man down to hell,

This is seen by women and their mirrors.

They look into the glass and see therein their shadow, which teaches them how to make themselves handsome.— Thus do women entice the lecherous.

The devil enters men's hearts and holds secret talk with the sinner. He advises the well-to-do man to be liberal to gleemen and whores.

\* p. 21.

He increases the discontent of the envious man.

<sup>1</sup> ? ne.

He advises the man who nourishes his hate to avenge himself.

He tells the covetous man that it is lawful to give alms from his unlawful gains.

The narrow-hearted man he advises to stick fast to what he has, and to be moderate in almsgiving.

With the heart of the drunken man the devil whispers, and saith :— Daintily to eat and drink maketh a man fair and well-favoured, and of many powers ; whatever thou dost eat and drink and wear that thou hast, and if thou spillest or leavest anything, that thou dost wholly lose.

In the heart of the lascivious man the devil sings, and thus saith :— If thou dost value thy health, follow nature, and cool frequently thy bodily lust, and not in a few modes, but in many wises. It will befall thee well to increase this world. If thou wilt have offspring, have not [only] thine own wife but an other man's mate. Though learned men (the clergy) say that it is great sin for a man to follow often the lusts of the flesh, though he be married and do it on account of offspring, their mode of life belies themselves, for none do so as often as the religious (ordained men), who have not only one but many concubines ; and if they esteemed it sin they would refrain from the deed. Thus the devil inciteth each man in his heart and causes him to do what he has incited him to.

*Sed libera nos a malo.* But deliver us, Lord, from his temptation, and from all evil. Amen. So be it.

## VI.

### THE NATIVITY OF OUR LORD.

*Natus est nobis hodie Salvator qui est Christus in civitate David.* Good tidings, and pleasant to hear, the lord Saint Luke tells us in the holy gospel, and saith that an holy messenger brought them from heaven to the land of Jerusalem, and told them to the shepherds who were watching over their cattle beside the city of Bethlehem. Listen now and attend how he told the tidings word by word. In the very night and at the very time that our Lady Saint Mary brought forth of her holy body our Lord Jesus Christ, were shepherds watching beside the city and guarding their flocks. Then came an angel from heaven to them and stood beside them, and God's brightness shone about them, and they were sore affrighted and in great dread. *Et ait angelus eis, Nolite timere.* And the angel said to them, Be not afraid ; *Ecce enim evangelizo vobis, &c.,*

hit be. On þe drunken men he runcð mid his herte *and* seið. *He advises the drunken man to eat and drink, so that he may keep up his good looks.* Esteliche eten. *and* drinken makeð þe man fair. *and* wurliche. *and* on manie mihte þat þu etest *and* drinkest *and* werest. þat þu hauest. *and* gef þu ani þing spelest *and* leuest. þat þu fo[r]lest. *The lascivious man he advises to cool his fleshly lusts, because it will help to people the world, and bids him to have not only his own wife but the wives of other men.* On þe gole men he gelð wið his herte. *and* þus queð. Gef þe is lef þin hele. heald þin cunde. *and* pine licames lust kel ilome. *and* naht on fæawe ac on fele wise. þe wile falle wel to echen þis woreld. Gef þu strenge wult haue: \*ne haue þu naht þin ogen wif. ac oðer mannes imene. þeih lerdemen segen þat hit be muchel sunne þat man his licames lust drige. ofte þeih hie bispused ben. *and* don hit for strenge. here liflode ligneð hem seluen. for ne doð hit none swo ofte se þe hodede. þe naueð him selue naht on ac fele imene. *and* gef he þat hielde sýnne. he wolde þe dede wið-tien. Ðus deuel eggeð ælch man on his herte. *and* macað þat he wule do þat he him to teiht. *Set libera nos á malo.* Ac les us louerd of his egginge. *and* of alle iuele. *amen.* swo hit wurðe. *Learned men (the clergy) call this sin, but none trespass so often in this matter as they do.*

## VI.

## IN DIE NATALIS DOMINI.

*Natus est nobis hodie saluator qui est Christus in ciuitate dauid.* St. Luke tells us merry tidings in the holy gospel, and says that a holy messenger brought glad tidings to the shepherds of Bethlehem, on the very night that Jesus was born. The angel stood beside the shepherds and said, 'be not afraid, for I bring you tidings which shall be great joy to all people.' \* p. 23.  
 Gode tiðinge *and* murie to heren. us telleð þe louerd se[i]nte lucas: on þe holie godspelle. *and* seið þat on holie erndrake hem brohte fram heuene. to þe londe of ierusalem. *and* tealde þe herdes þe wakenen ouer here oref. biside þe burch belleem. lusteð nu *and* undernimeð hwu he se tiðinge teald[e] word after word. On þe niht *and* on þe time. þe ure lafdi seinte marie kennede of holie lichame ure louerd ihesu crist. were herdes wakiende bi side þe buregh *and* wittende here oref. Ðo cam on angel of heuene to hem. and stod bisides hem. *and* godes brihtnesse bilihte hem. *and* hie waren swiðe offurihte. *and* ofdredde. *Et ait angelus eis. Nolite timere. and* þe engel quað to hem ne be ge \*naht ofdredde. [E]cce enim euangelizo uobis et cetera.

I bring you tidings which shall be for great bliss among [all] people. No man knows what bliss is who hath never undergone sorrow. But as sorrow seemeth bitter while it lasteth, so appeareth joy the sweeter when it cometh afterwards. All mankind was dwelling in great affliction, some in this world, and others in hell-pain, until that same time that our Lord Jesus Christ delivered them therefrom, and so turned their woe to weal and their sorrow to great bliss ; and of this bliss speaketh the angel and sheweth in which way and through whom this bliss should come ; thus saying :—*Natus est nobis hodie, &c.* To us is born to-day a Saviour that is Christ the Lord, in David's city.

*Hoc autem dixit, quia societas hominum erat adimpletura numerum angelorum.* These words the angel said because that man should fill up the angels' seat (which had been previously forfeited, when Lucifer and his company fell out thereof), and not (did he say these words) on account of angels' sickness, which have eternal health, but for man's sickness, who are all sick, and have all been so since affliction came upon our firstfather Adam, as our Lord saith in the holy gospel, *Homo quidam descendebat ab Jerusalem in Jericho et incidit in latrones, &c.* Our Lord Jesus Christ saith that a man went from Jerusalem to Jericho and came upon thieves, and they spoiled him of all his rich garments, and wounded him very sorely and left him scarcely alive. This is said of Adam. *Qui descendit a beatitudine celi, in defectus hujus mundi.* It was Adam that went out from the perfect bliss of Paradise into the wretched state of this world, and led after him then nigh all his offspring. *Et incidit in latrones,* and came upon outlaws, that is to say, devils, *qui despoliaverunt eum gratia, immortalitate, innocentia,* who bereft him of all his rich garments, which were unmerited grace and immortality and innocency. With these three garments our Lord Jesus Christ had protected him against three foes, *scilicet peccatum, dolorem, mortem,* against sin, sorrow, and death. *Et plagis impositis abjecerunt,* and after they had thus stripped him they severely wounded him wellnigh to the death. *Inferentes eis plagas, id est, humanorum defectuum causas.* The wounds that they inflicted on him are the manifold sins which they (the devils) brought upon him, when they opened his ears to listen to the devil's



Ich ew bringe tiſſinge þe shule ben a folke to muchele blisse.

Ne wot no man hwat blisse is : þe naure wowe ne bod. Ac swo þe wowe þinkeð biter. þe hwile þe he lesteð. swo þincð wele þe swettere þan hit cumeð þarafter. Al mankin was wunende on muchele wowe. sum on þisse worelde. and sum on helle pine. forte þat ilke time : þat ure louerd ihesu crist hem þarof a-redde. and turnede swo here wowe to wele. and here sor to muchele blisse. and of þesse blisse specð þe engel. and seweð a whilehe wise. and puregh hwam þis blisse cumen sholde. þus queðende. *Natus est nobis hodie et cetera.* Vs is boren to dai

No one knows what bliss is unless he has suffered affliction.

Joy is all the sweeter after grief.

All mankind were living in great affliction until Christ came and turned their woe to weal.

helende. þat is crist þe louerd on dauiches buregh. *Hoc autem dixit. quia societas hominum erat ad impletura numerum angelorum.* Ðos word sede þe angel for þat man sholde fuluullen englene sete. þe was er iwaned : þo þe lucifer and his ferreden fellen ut þarof. and naht for englen unhele þe haddeð eche hele. ac for mannen unhele. þe ben alle and hauen ben alle siðen unlimpe cam uppen ure forme fader adam. also ure drihten seið on þe holie godspelle. *Homo quidam descendebat ab ierusalem in ierico et incidit in latrones. et cetera.* Ure louerd ih[es]u crist seið. þat a man ferde fram iherusalem into ierico. and bieam uppe þeues. and hie \*him bireueden alle hise riche weden. \* p. 24.

Man was created to fill up the place in heaven forfeited by Lucifer and his angels. Christ came to heal man's infirmities.

The parable of the Good Samaritan.

and wundeden him swiðe sore. and forleten him unneðe liues.

Þis is seid bi adam. *Qui descendit a beatitudine cæli. in defectus huius mundi.* Ðat was adam þe ferde ut fram<sup>1</sup> þe fulle edinesse

This parable is said of Adam.

<sup>1</sup> MS. fran.

of paradis. in to þesse wrecheliche hateringe of þisse worelde. and ledde after him neih þan al his ofspreg. *Et incidit in latrones*

Adam fell out of Paradise, and came upon outlaws, that is, devils, who stripped him of his immortality, of his innocency, and of God's grace.

and bieam uppen utlagen. þat waren deffen. *Qui despoli- uerunt eum gratia immortalitatis innocencia.* De bireueden him

alle his riche weden. þat waren unerned giue. and undeðlicnesse. and loðlesnesse. Mid þese þre weden ure louerd ihesu crist him

hadde warned togenes þre fon. *Scilicet peccatum. dolorem. mor- tem.* togenes synne. and sor. and deað. *Et plagis impositis*

<sup>1</sup> MS. siðer.

abiecerunt. and siðen<sup>2</sup> hie hadden bireued him þus : swo hie for- wundeden him welneih to deaðe. *Inferentes eis plagas .i.*

They wounded him even unto death.

*humanorum defectuum causas.* þe wundes þat hie on him make- den : ben þe manifeald synnes. þe hie on him brohten. þo þe hie



lore and his eyes to behold the forbidden apple, and when he raised his hand to take it, and with the nose thereto to smell, and did eat thereof with his mouth.

And through these fivefold trespasses he wholly lost the fivefold might (power) which God gave him when he created him, so that he had never need to suffer hunger, nor thirst, nor want, nor cold, nor weariness, nor old age, nor sickness, nor death. But because he did these sins, God took vengeance [upon him], and deprived him of all these powers, and he became weak, and poor, and unwhole; and all his offspring suffered in sin and in weakness and in woe, and bitterly were tormented whilst they were here, and lived sometimes in hunger, sometimes in thirst, sometimes in cold, sometimes in heat, sometimes in sorrowfulness, sometimes in weariness, and often in bitings of reptiles; in old age, and in sickness, in numerous other woes, and at last death. And in such sickness they longed eagerly for our Saviour; and he came, thanked be he, to heal them of their sin-wounds, and to clothe them in those honourable garments which the devil had taken from our forefather Adam, that was *stola immortalitatis*, the bliss of eternal life, and to give back those powers of which Adam had deprived us all, *scilicet gaudium plenum*, that is, the fulness of endless bliss. And he also sent messengers before him to make known that he would come, and they were patriarchs, and prophets, and angels. He also sent a messenger when he came, and that was the angel of whom I previously spoke, who made known to the shepherds, who were watching their flock beside the city of Bethlehem, that the Saviour was born therein. The angel was not sent to speak to kings nor to earls, nor to barons, nor to any high ones, nor to proud men in the world, but to low and mean men, as shepherds are. But therefore I will tell you (take heed thereto and understand it) what the herdsmen and what the night-watches, and what the cattle betoken, and first of all what the wild beast denotes, which will worry these cattle and will catch them and will steal them and forcibly carry them off. Of this beast speaketh Saint Peter thus, saying, *Adversarius vester diabolus tamquam leo rugiens circuit querens quem devoret*. Our foe, that is, the devil, wandereth about us; he practises the wiles, sometimes of a fox, at other times of a wolf, sometimes of a lion,

openeden hi[s] earen to luste þe defles lore. *and* his cien to bihealden þe forbodene appel. *and* hef his honde hit to nimen. *and* mid þe nose parto te smullen. *and* mid his muð þarof et. *and* þurh þes fifealde gultes. forleas þe fiffeald mihten þe god him gef þo þe he him shop. swo þat he ne þurte naure polen hunger. ne þurst. ne woninge. ne chele. ne werinesse. \*ne elde. ne unhelþe. ne deð. ac for þat he dide þise synnes god wrac *and* binom him þese mihtes alle: *and* he bicom uumihti. *and* wreeche. *and* unhol. *and* his ofspring al. þrowude on synne. *and* on unmihte *and* on wowe *and* gemerliche pineden. þe wile þe hie here weren: *and* wuneden. hwile mid hunger. hwile mid þurste. hwile mid chele. hwile mid hete. hwile mid sorinesse. hwile mid werinesse. *and* ofte mid wurmene icheu. *and* mid elde. mid unhelþe. mid oðre wowe inohg. *and* ettan ende mid deðe. *and* on swiche unhelþe wisseden<sup>1</sup> georne efter helende. *and* he com. þanked wurþe him: to helen hem of heore synwunden. *and* to winden hem on þa wurhliche weden þe þe dieuel binom ure forme fader adam. þat wes. *Sstola*<sup>2</sup> *inmortalitatis*. þat is þe blisse of eche liue. *and* to giuende þe mihtes þe adam for-gremede us alle. *Scilicet gaudium plenum*. þat is þe uulle of endelese blisse. And also he sende erendrake biforen him to cuðen þat he cumen wolde. *and* þat were patriarkes *and* prophetes. *and* engles. ealse he sende erendrake þo he com. *and* þat wes þe engel þe ich er embe spec. þe cudde þe herdes þe biwakeden here oref: bisides þe burehg bethleem þat þe helende was þerinne iboren. Ne was þe engel isend ne to kinge. ne to eorle. ne to barun. ne to none hege: ne oregele men on þe wurelde wið<sup>3</sup> to spekende. ac to loge: \**and* eðeliche men alse heordes buð. ac forþi ich wile seggen giu nimeð geme þerto. *and* understondeð it hwat þo heordes bitoceneð. *and* wat þe ni[h]t wecches. *and* hwat þat oref *and* alre erest hwat þe wilde deor þe þis oref waneð. *and* wile bicachen it. *and* wile forstelen. *and* wile mid stre[n]gðe binimen. Of þis deor specð seinte peter þus queþende. *ADuersarius uester diabolus tamquam leo rugiens circuit querens quem deuoret*. Vre fo þat is þe deuel wuandreð abuten us he teð forð geres hwile after fox. hwile after wulue. hwile

Adam's wounds were his sins, which the devil brought upon him when he ate the apple, and thereby sinned in a fivefold manner.

\* p. 25.

Sin caused Adam to lose the five powers which God had given him. All his offspring likewise suffered from divers afflictions, and longed eagerly for the coming of Christ.

<sup>1</sup> or willeden

At last Jesus came to heal man's sin-wounds, and restore him to the bliss of eternal life.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

Messengers, that is patriarchs, &c., announced Christ's coming.

An angel too was sent, but not to kings or earls but to poor shepherds.

\* p. 26.

<sup>3</sup> MS. bið.

Here follows an explanation of the shepherds, of their cattle, and of the wild beasts that worry them.

The wild deer denotes the devil, who appears at different

and at other times that of other animals, and in each of his deeds he is compared to the animal whose tricks he exhibits. *Greges sunt, oves et boves, capræ et porci.* The flocks which this beast worrieth are sheep and oxen, and goats, and swine, and [these] denote men. Some men lead a pure life and neither do nor say anything unpleasant to their fellow men, but love God and go each day to church, as sheep to the fold, and do gladly their duty to the church and give alms to poor men, and are called sheepish men.

Other men will do nothing wrong, but labour with the earth, and till much for other men's behoof, and these are called oxish (or neatish) men. Of these sheepish and neatish men speaketh the prophet thus, saying :—*Subjecisti sub pedibus ejus, oves et boves*, that is to say, the sheepish and the neatish men are in bondage to Christ. Some men lead their life as goats or bucks. *Hoc animal pascit in altum et est libidinosum.* This animal is very lascivious, and pastureth sometimes upon trees, at other times upon cliffs, and again in the dales, and stinketh foully on account of his lasciviousness. Such are all proud men who reckon themselves high and practise whoredom and of the filth foully stink ; and of such men saith our Lord Jesus Christ, *Statuet quidem hædos a sinistris, et mittet in ignem æternum.* On Doomsday bucks and goats, that is to say, the men and the women who practise whoredom, shall stand on our Lord Jesus Christ's left hand, and he shall send them into the eternal fire in hell along with all devils.

Some men pass their lives in eating and drinking, as swine, which foul themselves, and root up and sniff ever foully, and much enjoy foul things, and when they are full they go to the foul mire and therein wallow. So doth the foul man who followeth the will of his belly and oft filleth himself with unlawful gains, when he beareth about his cloak and speweth out the dainty meats and drinks ; and when he is full defiles himself in the foul mire of drunkenness and of whoredom, and therefore they are called swinish men, and in them the devil dwelleth by the leave of our Lord Jesus Christ, as the holy gospel saith, *Dominus ejecit legiones demonum de homine quodam ; et rogaverunt demones, Mitte nos in gregem porcorum. Et ingressi præcipitaverunt porcos in mare.* The holy gospel saith that our Lord drove many devils together

after leun. hwile after oðre. and on ech of hise deden is  
 iefned to þe deore wuas geres he forðteoð. *¶ Reges sunt. oues*  
*et boues. capre et porci.* Ðet oref þe þis deor waneð beð shep  
 and reðeren. and Get. and swin! and bitoceneð men. Sume  
 men ledeð elene liflode. and ne doð ne ne queðeð none manne  
 loð ac luuigeð god. and goð eche dai to chirche else shep to  
 uolde. and doð gladliche here rihte to chirche and elmesse  
 wreche men. and beð cleped shepisse men. Sume men ne willen  
 non unriht! ac winned wið þe eorðe. and tiliget michel to oðre  
 mannæs bihofpe. and þese men beð icleped ruðerilisse. men of  
 þese shepishse! and ruðerishse men. specð þe prophete þus que-  
 pinde. *Subiecisti sub pedibus eius. oues et boues.* þis to seggen  
 þe shepisse and þe netisse men beð under cristes þralshiþe.  
 Sume men leden here [lif] also get! oper buckes *Hoc animal pas-*  
*cit in altum et est libidinosum.* \*Ðis oref is swiðe egerne. and  
 fecheð his leswe. hwile uppen trewes. and hwile uppen cliues.  
 and hwile in þe dales. and stineð fule for his golnesse. Swo  
 ben alle oregel men. þe telleð hem seluen heige. and drieð hor-  
 dom. and of þe hore fule stinkeð. and of swilche men seið ure  
 louerd ihesu crist. *Statuet quidem hedos a sinistris. et mittet in*  
*ignem eternum.* A domes dai sulle buckes. and þe get. þo ben  
 þe wapmen and þe wimmen þe hordom drien. stonden an ure  
 louerd ihesu cristes lift hound. and hem sal senden into þat eche  
 fur on helle mid alle deffen. Sume men ladeð here lif on etinge  
 and on drinkinge else swin. þe uulieð and wroteð and sneuieð  
 aure fule. and ful þing muchel brukeð. and þan hie fulle beð. hie  
 secheð to þe fule floddri. and þaron waleweð. Swo doð þe fule  
 man þe folegeð his wombes wil. and of unrihte bigete ofte filleð.  
 þane he bereð abuten here senibhakel. and þe est metes and  
 drinkes ut speweð. and þan he fulle ben. bisulieð hem on þe fule  
 floddri of drunkennesse. and of hordom. and þarfore ben  
 icleped swinisse men. and on hem wuneð þe deuel. bi ure louerd  
 ihesu cristes leue else þe holie godspel seið. *Dominus eiecit*  
*legiones demonum de homine quodam et rogauerunt demones.*  
*Mitte nos in gregem porcorum. Et ingressi precipitauerunt*  
*porcos in mare.* Ðe holie godspel seið þat ure drihten

times under  
various forms  
—as a fox, a  
wolf, a lion,  
&c.

The cattle  
worried by  
the wild  
beasts are  
sheep, oxen,  
goats, and  
swine, which  
betoken men.  
Sheepish men  
lead a pure  
and innocent  
life.

Neatish men  
till the earth  
and lead an  
innocent life.

\* p. 27.

Goatish men  
are proud,  
lascivious  
men, and  
stink of  
whoredom.

On domes-  
day these foul  
bucks and  
goats shall  
stand on our  
Lord's left  
hand.

Swinish men  
delight in  
eating and  
drinking, &c.

They follow  
the will of  
their bellies,  
and defile  
themselves in  
the foul mire  
of drunken-  
ness.

The devil  
dwells in  
these men.

out of a man who was out of his wits, and thus healed him, and the devils entreated our Lord Jesus Christ to send them into a flock of swine, and he did so; and the swine ran, as the devils drove them, into the sea and drowned themselves. So giveth our Lord leave to the devil to be in the *swinish* men, of whom I before have spoken, and to dwell in them and to drown them, and to bring them out of their wits, and to drive them from one wrong to another, from a little vice to a great one, from sin to sin, from evil to evil, and lastly he drowneth them in shameful death and leadeth them with him to hell. These four sorts of men whom I have previously mentioned, are the cattle which the herdsmen were watching over; and the herdsmen themselves are the teachers of holy church which pasture their flocks, as the book saith, *in pascuis uberrimis pascunt ea*, on sweet pastures, which are the good words of Holy Book, which is the soul's pleasant food, as dainty eating and drinking is the body's. *Iners pastor aut sedet in ignorantia aut accubitat in negligentia aut jacet in voluntate*. The bad (slothful) shepherd sitteth in ignorance, for he knows not how to guard his flock; or lounges about and sleepeth, and sinneth in negligence, as he that is reckless and standeth in no awe of his lord; or lieth in evil desire and sleepeth fast in his sins; then cometh the wild beast, of which I previously spake, and worrieth the flock, *Sed boni pastores vigilant, et noctis vigiliis custodiunt supra greges suos et pro illis sese hostibus opponunt*. But the good herdsmen watch in purity of life over their flocks, which they pasture in holy doctrine, and teach them to understand what is evil and what is good, and often admonish them to forbear vices and to follow good virtues. *Vita præsens caliginosa est tenebris peccatorum*. All this life in which we live is compared to night, because it is so dark through our horrible sins. *Hujus noctis sunt quatuor vigiliæ. Sero, id est, pueritia. Media nox, adolescentia. Galli cantus, virilis ætas. Mane, senium*. In this night there are four night-watches: (1) Before evening, which pertaineth to children; (2) midnight, which pertaineth to youngers; (3) cockcrow, which pertaineth to adult men; (4) morning time, which pertaineth to old men. These herdsmen, that are the teachers (of holy church), as bishops and priests, watch before evening, and then the children are virtuous (well behaved). At midnight he (the bishop or priest) watcheth, when he takes away



drof fele deules togedere ut of á man þe was of his wit. *The story of the herd of swine possessed by devils.*  
 \*and him swuo helde. and þe deules beden ure louerd ihesu *\* p. 28.*  
 crist þat he hem sende into floe of swin and he swo dide. and þe  
 swin urnen also deulen hem driuen into þe sæ. and drunenede  
 hem seluen. Swa giued ure drihten leue þe deule to ben on þe *God gives the devil leave to dwell in swinish men, and at last to drown them in hell.*  
 swinisshe man þe ihe er of spec and on hem to wuniende and  
 hem to drenchende. and of here wit to bringinde. and to driuen  
 fram unrilhte to oper. fram ešeliche laste to michele. fram synne  
 to synne fram iuele to iuele and ettan ende hem drencheð on  
 shameliche deðe and mid hem to helle ledeð. Ðese fower man- *The shepherds are the teachers of holy Church.*  
 nisshe þe ich er inemd habbe. beð þat erf þe þo herdes ouer  
 wuakeden. and þe selue herdes beð þe lorþewes of holi chiriche.  
 þe leseweð here orf also þe boc seið *IN pascuis uberimis* *The pasture is the Word of God.*  
*pascunt ea.* on swete leswe. þo bin þe gode word of holi boc þe  
 beð þe saules lustliche bileue. also estliche etingge and dringk-  
 inge is te lichames. *IN* *Vers pastor aut sedet in ignorancia aut* *The lewd shepherd takes no heed of his flock, but allows the wild deer to worry the herds.*  
*accubitat in negligencia aut iacet in uoluntate.* Ðe unwreste  
 herde sit on unwisdomnesse. for he ne can is orf gemen. oðer  
 hloneð and slepeð. and synegeð on gemeleste also he þat is  
 recheles and non eige ne stand of louerde. oðer lið on lipere  
 wille. and feste slepeð on his synne. þanne cumeð þe wilde deor  
 þe ich er seide and þat orf waneð *Set boni pastores vigilant.* *Good shepherds watch over their flocks, and instruct them to do good and to forsake evil.*  
*et noctis uigilias custodiunt supra greges suos et pro illis se se*  
*hostibus opponunt.* Ac þe gode herdes \*wakieð on faire liflode  
 ouer here orf þe þei lesweð on halie larspelle. and wisseð hem  
 to understanden wat is uel and wat is god. and munegeð hem *\* p. 29.*  
 ofte unðewes to forberen. and gode þeawes to folgen. *Vita*  
*presens caliginosa est tenebris peccatorum.* al þis lif þe we on  
 liuen is to nihte iefned for þat it is swa þester of ure ateliche  
 synnes *Huius noctis sunt iii<sup>or</sup> uigilie* *S* *Ero .i. puericia.* *M* *Edia*  
*nox adolescencia.* *G* *Alli cantus uirilis etas.* *M* *Ane senium.*  
 on þis niht beð fowuer niht weeches. Biforen euen þe bilimpeð  
 to children. Mid-niht ðe bilimpeð to frumberdligges. hanecrau  
 þe bilimpeð powuene men. morgewile to alde men. Ðese herdes  
 þe beð lorþewes. also bisshupes. and prestes wakieð biforen euen :  
 þanne þe childre wuel þewuen. On midniht he wakeged þanne *This night has four watches—before evening, mid-night, cock-crow, and morning : which represent childhood, youth, manhood, and old age.*



the vices of younkers and teacheth them good habits. At cock-crow he watcheth, when he turneth the full grown men to God's service. In the morning he watcheth, when he turneth old men to the bliss of our Lord [Jesus] Christ. Thus ought all good shepherds to keep a spiritual watch, for thus watched the shepherds of whom I have previously spoken, when that the tidings came to them that our Lord Jesus Christ was born; *Qui est verus Samaritanus, scilicet custos hominum*, who is the herdsman of all herdsmen, and the physician of all physicians, who came to heal the wounds that the devil had brought upon mankind, as ye before have heard. *Alligavit vulnera, infundens vinum et oleum*. He threateneth all sinful men who have done capital sins, and will not take shrift thereof, with eternal fire in hell unless they forsake, repent, and pray for mercy. All those who renounce their sins and amend he healeth of their sin-wounds with baptism, and giveth us his holy flesh for daily bread and his holy blood for drink, and biddeth us to use it in this long affliction and in this wretched world, and promiseth us for a reward eternal health in the Saviour's world. *Quod qui promisit dignetur reddere nobis*. Amen.

## VII.

## EPIPHANY.

*Reges Tharsis et insule munera offerent. Reges Arabum et Saba dona adducent*. With meed we may go over the water, and through benefit of gifts obtain friends, and with becoming presents we may gain the acquaintance of kings. So doth the wise man who is blessed (happy); and the unwise man will not do so, for he is not blessed. The unwise man and the spoilt child have both one law (custom); for they both desire to have their will, though it be wrong, and are therefore objects of contempt to every man. The wise man and the well-behaved child have both one custom, for that each forsaketh his own will and followeth his teacher's. So ought we so to do, and forsake our carnal will and follow our Saviour's lore and his fair example, according to our ability.

he frumberdlines binimeð unðeawes *and* gode techeð. to hane-  
crau he wakegeð þanne he þo ful pogene turneð to godes  
bihoupe. In morgewile he wakegeð þanne he halde men turneð  
to ure louerdess cristes blisse. Ðus agen alle gode herdes to  
wakegen gostliche. for þus wakeden þo herdes þe ich er of spec.  
þo þe hem þe tiðinge com. þat ure louerd ihesu crist was boren.

*Q Vi est uerus samaritanus scilicet custos hominum.* þat is alre Christ is the Shepherd of shepherds and the Physician of physicians.  
herdene herde. *and* alre lechene leche. þe com to helen þe  
wundes. þe þe deuel hadde on mancum broht. also ge er herden.  
*Alligauit vulnera infundens uinum et oleum :* Alle sýnfulle Hell fire will be the lot of the impenitent.  
men þe heued-*sýnnes* don habbeð. *and* nelleð þerof no shrift  
nimen : he bihat hem eche fur on helle bete<sup>1</sup> hie forleten beten \* p. 30.  
*and* milce bidden. Alle þo þe here synnen forleteð *and* beteð Christ will grant the penitent everlasting health.  
he heleð heRe sýnwunden mid fulnege. *and* gifeð us his holi  
fleis to daiwamliche bred *and* his holi blot<sup>2</sup> to drunche. *and* bit <sup>1</sup> read bute.  
<sup>2</sup> read blod.

us þat we shule þis notien on þis longe wowe *and* on þis wreche  
worelde. *and* bihat us to mede eche hele on þe helendes worelde.

*Quod qui promisit dignetur reddere nobis. AMEN.*

## VII.

[IN EPIPHANIA DOMINI.]

*Reges tharsis et insule munera offerent. Reges arabum et* Friends may be gained by gifts.  
*saba dona adducent.* Mid mede man mai ouer water faren

And mid weldede of giue : frend wuerche. *and* mid bicumeliche  
loke : man him mai euðleche wid kinge. Swo þe wise þe beð The unwise man and the spoilt child both like their own will, be it ever so bad.  
seli. *and* þe unwise ne wile : for he is unseli. Ðe unwise man.  
*and* forwened child : habbeð boðe on lage for þat hie habben  
willeð boðe here wil : þeh it bi unwrast. *and* beð þerefore un-  
wurðe eche manne þe wise man *and* þat wel-beaud child. habbeð  
boðe on lage. for þan eiðer leteð his agen wille. *and* folgeð his  
larðewes. Swo we ageð to don ure lichames wille to forleten.  
*and* folgen ure helendes lore. *and* his faire forbisne bi ure mihte.

The wise man and the well-beloved child will follow the will of their teacher.

*Legitur quod Dominus aliquando sub mercede nautica transfretavit.* We find in the Holy Book that our Saviour, who is the shepherd of all waters, went on one occasion through meed, over the water. So it behoveth us that we do so, who are in this ship, that is holy church, which is in this water, of which I speak, that is this wretched world; and it is fast assailed (encompassed) by storms, which are our foul sins, and many other tribulations.

*Proferamus ergo ei de cordis nostri thesauro fidei sensum, et sacrificatio laudis honorificemus eum, ut sine periculo vehet nos trans sæculi pontum.* Let us receive in our hearts his holy words, and offer him our true belief and love instead of treasure, and praise him and exalt him with all our might, and try if he will set us over the great water whole and sound, and say with the psalmist, *Non me demergat tempestas aque neque absorbeat [me profundam : neque urgeat super me puteus os suum]*, &c., Lord permit not the storm to sink me, nor the devil to swallow me, nor the pit to close its mouth over me. World's riches raise pride in man's heart and sink him into hell, as the storm does the ship into the water. Distress raiseth distrust in man's heart, which sinketh him into hell, as the storm doth a man into the water. From these two storms the wise man desired to be preserved, and thus saith, *Divitias et paupertatem ne dederis mihi sed tantum victui necessaria*—Lord, give me neither world's wealth nor poverty, but my bare sustenance. The devil swalloweth a man when he falleth into foul sins; the pit closeth its mouth over the man who lies in foul sins, delights in them, and will not forsake them. Christ shield us all therefrom, and if any of us are thus swallowed up and thus penned up, let us call upon our Lord Jesus Christ, thus saying, *De profundis clamavi ad te Domine, Domine, exaudi vocem meam*—In deep tribulation I call to thee, O Lord; Lord, hear my voice. Let us also plead by our good deeds with our Lord, whose foes we are, when we rebel against his behests and follow this wretched world, as the book saith, *Amicus mundi constituitur inimicus Dei*—Every man that is the world's friend is our Lord's foe, and contendeth against him, all the while that he followeth the world. For our trespass God became man, and our elders sought to put him to death; another (i. e. man) had the guilt,

*Legitur quod dominus aliquando sub mercede nautica transfre-*

*tauit.* We findeð on þe holie boc. þat ure helende þat is alre

wateres herde. he ferde sumwile mid mede ouere water. Swo

bihoued us þat we don. þe beð on þis shipe : þat is holi chirche.

\*In þis watere þat ich of speke : þat is þis wreche wuereld. and

is mid storme faste bistonden. þo beð ure fule sýnes. and fele

odre wosiðes.

This world is  
like a sea—  
the Church is  
as a ship  
beaten about  
by the storms,  
that is, by foul  
sins.

\* p. 31.

*Proferamus ergo ei de cordis nostri thesauro fidei sensum. et*

*sacrificacio laudis honorificemus eum. ut sine periculo uehet nos*

*trans seculi pontum.* Vnderstonde we on ure heorte his holie

wordes. and forþe we him ure rihte bilene. and luue : for gersum.

and herien him : and hegen on alle ure mihte. and cunnen gif

he wile setten us ouer þat michele water : hole and sunde.

and seien mid þe salmwrihte. *Non me demergat tempestas a-*

*nec. o<sup>1</sup>. et cetera.* louerd ne þane þu þat storm me duue. ne þat

þe deuel me swelge. ne þat þe pit tune<sup>2</sup> ouer me his muð.

Woreldes richeise wecheð orgel on mannes heorte. and deuð him

on helle : alse storm doð þat ship in þe watere. Wanrede wecheð on

mannes heorte ortruwe þe deuð him on helle alse storm doð man

on watere. wið þese tweien stormes wolde þe wise ben borgen :

þe seið þus. *Diuicias et paupertates ne dederis michi sed tantum*

*uictui necessaria.* louerd ne gif þu me noþer ne worlde winne ne

meseise ac mi bare bileue. þat deuel forswelgeð þe man.

hwanne he falleð on fule sýnes. þe pit tineð his muð ouer þe

man : þe lið on fule sýnnen þe him wel likeð and ne wile hem

forleten. crist shilde us alle þer wið. and gif ure ani is þus for-

swolgen. and þus penned. clupe we to ure louerd ihesu crist þus

seggende *DE profundis clamavi ad [te] domine domine exaudi*

*uocem meam.* \* On diepe wosiðes ich clupe to þe hlouerd.

hlouerd her mine stefne. do we ec mid ure wel dede þingen us

wið ure helende. was so we beð þanne we togenes his hese

fliteð. and þis wreche weorlde folgið. alse þe boc seið *A Micus*

*mundi constituitur inimicus dei.* Ech þat is weorlde's frend is

ure drihtenes fo. and halt flit wið him : alle þe wile þe he þe

weorlde folgeð. for ure gult god man bicom and Ure eldre

waiteden him to deaðe. oðer hadde þe gult : and ure hlouerd

Let us offer  
Christ our  
gifts of love  
and belief,  
that he may  
carry us  
safely over  
the water.

<sup>1</sup> read a.

Worldly  
riches sink  
man into  
hell.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

Poverty  
renders man  
distrustful,  
and sinks his  
soul into hell.

The devil  
swallows a  
man when he  
falls into sin—  
and the pit  
closes its  
mouth over  
obstinate  
sinners.

\* p. 32.

We are  
Christ's foes  
when we  
break his  
behests.

The world's  
friend is  
God's foe.

God became  
man for our  
guilt.

and our Lord Jesus Christ himself bore the penalty, *Quæ non rapui exsol-vebam*—I repaid that which I took not. And so he did, thanked be he, for through man's heedlessness and recklessness, and through man's wicked will, and not by his own will, was death decreed (*or* passed) upon him. And thus man made himself a foe where he owed friendship; but our Lord Jesus Christ is so merciful (exalted and praised let him be!), that when a man forsaketh his sins and amendeth, and prays for mercy, then forthwith is his enmity turned to friendship. Again, we that are strangers to the heavenly king, because our mode of life displeaseth him very much, he also will not acknowledge us unless we please him; while we do not seek his acquaintance with becoming gifts, and follow, according to our ability, the fair example of the three kings who came from the east and made themselves friends with him with a threefold gift, *auro, thure, mirra*, that is, gold, and incense, and myrrh. *Tres reges significant tres ordines in ecclesia, scilicet—Virginum, Conjugarum, Continentium.*—The three kings betoken three states of believers, the first is virginity, the second is marriage, and the third widowhood. Each man who leadeth his life aright in any one of these three states is called a king, for that he directeth himself ever to right; and therefore it becometh him to offer to the heavenly king the three gifts which I previously mentioned, that is, gold, and incense, and myrrh. *Aurum in tributum regi; Thus in sacrificium Deo; Mirram in sepulturam homini.* Gold is a becoming offering to a king, incense to God, and myrrh to mortal man. *Aurum significat orationis cordis munditiam propter sui puritatem. Thus significat orationis devotionem propter sui redolentiam. Mirra carnis afflictionem propter sui amaritudinem.* Gold, on account of its purity, denotes pure thoughts; incense, on account of its sweetness, denotes inward prayer (devotion); myrrh, on account of its bitterness, denotes the pain of body with which man does penance for his sins. Let us, with these three gifts, make ourselves friends with the king of all kings, and with such good deeds make ourselves acquainted with him, and give him meed so that he may lead us out of this water, that is, this world's tribulation, into eternal bliss. *Qui vivit et regnat Deus per omnia sæcula sæculorum. AMEN.*



ihesu crist hit acorede. also him self seið. *QVe non rapui exsoluebam.* Ich geald þat ich noht ne nam. and swo he clude þo[n]cked wurðe him. þurh mannes gemeleste and þurh maunnes recheleste and þurh mannes unwraste wil and naht bi his agene wille þe deað him wes iwealde. And þus man makede him sulfen fo þer he fren[d]shipe sholde. ac ure hlouerd ihesu crist is swo mild heorted. heged and wurðed bie he. for wanne þe man forleteð his sýnnen. and beteð. and milce biddeð: þanne is here foshipe turnd al to frendshipe Eftsonne we þe beð uncuðe þe heuenliche kinge. for þat ure lifode him swiðe mislikeð. also ne wile noht cnowe bute þat þe<sup>1</sup> him beð queme. wile we ne cuð-  
 lecheð us wid him mid bicumeliche loke. and folged bi ure mihte þe faire forbisne of þe pre kinges þe comen of estriche. and cuðlecheden hem wið him: mid þrefeld loc. *Avro. Thure.*  
*Mirra.* þat is gold. and recheles. and mirre. *Tres reges significant. iij<sup>es</sup>. ordines in eccl[es]ia scilicet Uirginum. \*Coniuga-*  
*torum. Continentium.* Ðo pre kinges bitocneð pre hodes of bilefulle men. on is meidhod. þat oðer spushod. þe þridde widewehod. elch man þe ledeð is lif rihtliche on an of þese pre hodes he is cleped king. for þat he kenneð eure to rihte. and forþi him bicumeð þat he offri þe heuenliche kinge. þe pre loc þe ich er nemde. þat is gold. and recheles. and mirre. *Aurum in tributum regi. Thus in sacrificium deo. Mirram in sepulturam homini.* Gold bicumeð to kinge. Recheles to gode. mirre to deaðliche men. *Aurum significat orationis cordis mundiciam propter sui puritatem. Thus significat orationis deuocionem propter sui redolenciam. Mirra carnis afflictionem propter sui amaritudinem.* Gold for is clenness bitocneð clene þonc. Rechelis for his swetnesse bitocneð inwardliche bede. Mirre for ure biternesse bitocneð þe lichames pine. þat man his sýnne mide beteð. Wille we mid þese pre lokes cuðlechen us wið alre kinigene king. and mid swiche weldede cuððen us wið him. and giuen to mede wið þan þe he us lede of þis water. þat is þis weorld wowe. and to eche blisse lede. *Qui uiuit et regnat deus per omnia secula seculorum. AMEN.*

He suffered death through man's recklessness.

When a sinner repents then is enmity turned to friendship.

Sinners cannot be friends with God.

<sup>1</sup> ? read we.

The kings from the East brought threefold gifts.

\* p. 33.

These three kings denote three states of believers—  
 1. maidenhood;  
 2. spousehood;  
 3. widowhood.

Gold is a fitting gift for a king; incense to God, and myrrh to a mortal man.

The purity of gold denotes pure thought. Incense denotes inward prayer. Myrrh be-tokens bodily pain.

With these three gifts let us gain the friendship of the King of all kings.



## VIII.

## THE PURIFICATION OF SAINT MARY.

*Obtulerunt pro eo Domino par turturum aut duos pullos columbarum,*

*&c.* To-day each man may hear, whoso will, what rites there were pertaining to women under the Old Law with respect to three things : the first is childbed, the second is churching, and the third the offering. Of childbed the Holy Book speaks thus, saying, *Mulier quæ peperit masculum octava die circumcidet eum, et in tricesima secunda die deferet eum ad templum.* When a woman had a male child, [the law was that] on the eighth day after his birth she should perform the law of his body [cause him to be circumcised] ; and after that, on the two-and-thirtieth day, that is to say, on the fortieth day after the child's birth, she should go to church. Before that day she came not out of her house nor handled anything except the meat she herself did eat ; for all that she touched until she went to church was considered defiled. When she went to church, i.e. to the temple in Jerusalem, her company was found to be according to the friends she had ; and she brought the child with her into the temple and presented an offering for him, as was convenient to her : if she was a rich woman, a lamb ; if she was in middling circumstances, two turtle birds ; if she was poor, two dove birds. Such a rite was observed in those days ; and our Lady Saint Mary, the heavenly queen, observed it in childbed, in offering, and in churching, and we ought also to follow her good example, and as she bare her holy royal child spiritually in her heart and bodily in her hands, so ought we to obey our Lord Jesus Christ in our hearts, *fide et dilectione*, through a right faith and true love to God and to man, and to bear in our hands burning candles, taper or candle ; each denoteth this rite. *In Christo enim corpus et anima et divinitas, et in candelâ cera exterius, luminulum interius, ignis in ambobus.* In our Saviour there was seen outwardly his body, and the holy soul was within unseen, and the great wisdom existed in each of them. So is the wax of the candle visible and the wick within invisible, and the fire is in both. And therefore every

## VIII.

[IN PURIFICATIONE S. MARIE.]

*Optulerunt pro eo domino par turturum aut duos pullos columbarum. et cetera.* To dai man mai iheren he þe wile wich

þeau wes on þe olde lage mid wimmen on þre þinges. þat on is childbed. *and* þat oðer chircgang. *and* þe þridde þe offring. of childbed specð þe halie \*þoc þus queðinde. *M Vlier que peperit masculum octaua die circumcidit eum. et in tricesima secunda die deferet eum ad templum.* Ðanne wimman hadde enaue child.

on þe elteðe dai efter his burþe: dide þe lage þat wes of his hlichame. *and* after þan: on þe two *and* þrittuðe dai: gede to chirche. þat was þe fowertiðe dai: after þes childes burde. *and*<sup>1</sup> þat dai hie ne com nauwer ute. ne noðing ne han[d]lede bute þane mete þat hie hire self et. for þat men telden it ful al þat hie handlede: forte þat hie gede to chirche. þanne hie to chirche gede to þe temple in ierusalem hire ferede was bifunden also hie frend hedde *and* brohte þat child mid hire in to þe temple. *and* offredde loc for him: also hie aisie wes. gif hie was riche wimman: a lomb. gif hie was bitwene two: two turtle briddes. gif hie was poure two duue briddes. Swich þeu wes bi þan dagen. *and* þis þeu folgede þe heuenliche quen ure lafdi. *Sainte Marie.* on childbedde. *and* on offringē *and* on chirche gonge. *and* we ogen ee to folgen hire faire forbisne *and* also hie bar hire holie cunebern on heorte gostliche *and* on honde lichamliche. also we ogen to heren ure hlouerd ihesu crist on ure heorte. fide *et* dilectione. Ðurh rihte bileue *and* soþe luue to gode *and* to manne. *and* on ure honde beren candeale berninde. taper oðer candeale. eiðer bitocneð þis þeau. *IN Christo enim corpus et anima et diuinitas. et in candela cera exterius. luminulum interius.* \* p. 35.

\*[*I*]gnis in ambobus. On ure helendes lichame wiðuten sene. þe holie saule wiðinne unsene. *and* te michele wisdom on eiðer. Also wex on þe candeale sene. þe wucke wiðinnen unsene. *and* þe fur on boðe. *and* forþi ech cristene oh to habben on honden

Laws relating to childbed, churching, and offering of childbed under the Old Law.  
\* p. 34.

On the eighth day the child was circumcised.

On the thirty-second day the woman went to church.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS, ? read er.

Offering was made in the Temple for the child.

Saint Mary fulfilled all these laws.

We ought to follow her example, and to bear faith and love in our hearts, and burning candles or tapers in our hands.

\* p. 35.

The candle is a type of Christ: the wax denotes his body, the wick his soul, and the fire his wisdom.

Christian man ought to have in his hand to-day in church a light burning, as our Lady Saint Mary and her holy company had. This was the law [observed] in olden times, and this gift offered our Lady Saint Mary. And three gifts were offered to our Lord, and every man must understand what each gift signifieth. The first is a lamb, the second is a turtle, and the third is a dove. Let each of us endeavour to offer for himself one of these three gifts, and what it denoteth. *Agnus quod est animal mansuetum, et significat innocentiam, quæ nescit cordis, nec oris, nec operis malitiam.* The lamb is a patient and mild creature, and denoteth innocency ; innocent is the man who neither doeth, nor saith, nor thinketh anything through which he need be the less pleasing or less acceptable to God or man. *Et hæc oblatio perfectorum est.* But this gift hath none to offer except these life-holy men of religion ; and because this gift is thus hard to get, let us take the turtle's token, which is easily obtainable. *Turtur significat castitatem.* The turtle will have no mate but one, and after that none ; and therefore it denoteth the chastity which is distinguished from the uncleanness, that is called whoredom, which is the impurity of all impurities, and each person that is defiled therewith, man or woman, is a whore until he forsake it and repent of it. *Castitas autem distinguitur in virginalem, conjugalem, vidualem.* All those may offer purity who live a chaste life in maidenhood, or in marriage, or in widowhood, and no other ; and each man who hath not ready lambs' harmlessness, nor turtles' purity, let him have at least the meekness of doves, as our Lord biddeth in the gospel, and saith, *Estote simplices sicut columbæ*—be as meek as doves. *Quæ nullum ore, vel ungue lædit.* The dove harmeth no bird, neither with bill nor with foot, and feedeth [young] birds which are not hers, and thus sheweth that she is meek and harmless. And if we are unable to furnish any of these three, let us pray then to the heavenly queen to entreat for us to her holy royal Child that he may give us the token that is common to turtles and doves, that is mourning for our foul sins. *Utraque enim avis habet gemitum pro cantu, quo significatur mæror compunctionis.* Turtles and doves have each sorrowfulness in the place of song ; let us follow what their song denotes, and have in our hearts sorrow and grief for our sins, and therewith prepare our gift

to-dai in chirehe: lege bernende. also ure lefdi *Seinte Marie* hadde: *and* hire holie fereden. þis was þe lage bi holde dagen. *and* þes loc offrede ure lafdi *seinte marie* *and* þre loc offrede weren ure drihten þat is to understonden to eureche manne wet ech bitoceneð þat on is lomb þat oðer is turtle þat þridde is duue Vte we ure ech fo[n]den himself to offren þat on: of pese þre lokes. *and* wat it bitoceneð. *Agnus quod est animal mansuetum. et significat innocenciam. que nescit cordis. nec oris. nec operis maliciam.* lomb is drih þing *and* milde. *and* bitoceneð loðlesnesse. loðles is þe man þe ne doð ne ne quað. ne þeneð no þing þat he þurue ben þe loþere ne þe unwurðere ne gode ne manne. *et hec oblatio perfectorum est.* Ac þis loc ne haueð non to offren. bute pese lif holie men of religiun. *and* for þis loc is þus arueð winne. nime we þe turtles bitocninge þat is eðwinne. *Turtur significat castitatem.* Turtle ne wile habbe no make bute on. *and* after þat non. *and* forþi it bitoceneð \*þe clenesse. þe is bideled of þe hore: þat is cleped hordom. þat is alre horene hore. *and* ech man þat is ful þeroffe wapman oðer wimman is hore: forte hie it for-leten *and* beten *Castitas autem distinguitur in uirginalem. coniugalem. vidualem.* Alle þo mugen offre clenesse þe libbeð clenliche on maiden-hode. oðer on spus-hod. oðer on widewe-hod. *and* non oðer. *and* ech man þe ne haueð noht redi. lombbes loðlesnesse. ne turtles clenness. habbe we hurend hure mildshipe of duue. also ure drihten bit on þe godspelle *and* seið. *Estote simplices sicut columbe.* buð admode also duue *QVe nullum ore. uel ungue ledit.* duue ne harmeð none fugele ne mid bile ne mid fote. *and* fedeð briddes þeh hie ne ben noht hire. *and* ðus kið þat hie is admod *and* unbaleful. *and* gif we ne mugen forðen non of pese þre: bidde we þenne þe heuenliche quen þat hie us þinge to hire holie kinebern. þat he us giue þe bitocninge. þat is imene turtlen *and* duues. þat is bireusinge: of ure fule sinnes. *Utraque enim auis habet gemitum pro cantu. quo significatur meror compunctionis.* Eiðer turtles *and* duues habbet sorinesse for song. vte we folgen þat here song bitoceneð. *and* habben on ure heorte \*sori- nesse. *and* reuðe of ure synnes. *and* þer mide dihten ure loc

The three offerings under the Old Law were a lamb, a turtle-bird, or a dove.

The lamb is a patient thing and denotes innocency.

Only ordained men of holy lives can offer this gift. The turtle-dove denotes chastity.

It has only one mate, and if that dies it never takes another. \* p. 36.

All who live a life of purity can offer this gift.

Let us be harmless as doves.

The dove feeds other birds.

If we have none of these gifts, let us pray for the common property of turtles and doves, that is, sorrow for sins.

The song of turtle and dove-bird is a sorrowful one. \* p. 37.

which we bear in our hands, so that we with our gift may be pleasing to God. *Quod ipse præstare dignetur qui vivit et regnat per omnia sæcula sæculorum.* Amen.

## IX.

## SEPTUAGESIMA.

*Quomodo cantabimus canticum Domini in terra aliena?* The holy prophet David speaketh in the psalm-book, and in a passage therein relates some of the words that were spoken between two peoples. The one was of Jerusalem the other of Babylon. And the words admonish us to amend our lives and to take example of the old and life-holy men who lived at that time. Jerusalem and Babylon are two cities, and ever strive and war one with another. The Israelitish folk were walking towards Jerusalem in toil, in dread, and in affliction, and were at that time obedient to God's behests. But after that they were dwelling in Jerusalem, and were whole and sound and secure of their gift (God's grace), and had the fulness of worldly prosperity, then they forsook God's lore and followed their carnal will, especially in two things: the first was mouth's meat (gluttony), the other was adultery. And therewith they brought God's wrath upon them, and he took sharp vengeance thereof. Hear now what it was: he permitted his hostile hinds (servants), who are the devils in hell, to put it into the king of Babylon's heart to go to the city of Jerusalem and to destroy it; and he gathered a great host withal, and sent it into Jerusalem, and came himself therewith, and encompassed the city until that he conquered it, and then destroyed the folk and all the land there about. And he took the people and put them into bonds and sent them to Babylon into bondage, and they remained in bondage two and sixty winters (and altogether some seventy winters). And the people of that land oppressed them with manifold torments, and with toil and great tribulation; and moreover others then grieved them sorely, thus saying, *Hymnum cantate nobis de canticis Sion*—Sing to us of the hymns (songs of praise) of Sion. Thus said the folk of Babylon to



þe we on honde bereð. þat we mid ure loke ben gode to queme. *Let us bear sorrow in our hearts on account of our sins.*  
*Quod ipse prestare dignetur qui viuit et Regnat per omnia secula seculorum.*

## IX.

[IN SEPTUAGESIMA.]

*Quomodo cantabimus canticum domini in terra aliena?* þe Of the words  
 holie prophete dauid specð on þe sealm-boc. and ou á stede spoken be-  
 þeron munegeð sume of þe wordes þe weren speken bitwine two tween the  
 folkes. þat on was of ierusalem. and þat oðer of babilonie. and Jews and  
 þo word munegeð us to rihtlechen ure liflode. and nimeð for- Babylonians.  
 hisne efter þe olde men þe þo weren and lif holie. Ierusalem. Jerusalem  
 and babilonie beð two burges. and fliteð eure. and winneð bi- and Babylon  
 twinen hem. þat israelisshe folc was walkende toward ierusalem. are ever at  
 on swinche. and on drede. and on wanrede and þo wile was variance.  
 hersum godes hese. Ac efter þan þe hie weren wuniende in The Israelites  
 ierusalem. and weren hole and sunde. and sikere of here giue. were in Baby-  
 and hadden þe fulle of wurldes richeisse. þo hie forleten godes llon in great  
 lore. and folgeden here lichames wille. nameliche on two pigges. affliction on  
 þat was muðes meðe þat oðer hordom. and þerwide brohten account of  
 godes wraðe uppen hem. and he nam stronge wrache þer-of. their sins.  
 hereð nu wich. he let hise wiðerfulle hine þo ben deules on helle When the  
 bringen on þe kinges heorte of babilonie. þat he sholde fare to þe Jews forsook  
 burh of ierusalem. and strugen it. and he gederede michel ferde God, the devil  
 mid alle. and sende in\* to ierusalem. and com him self þerwið persuaded the  
 and bilai þe burh forte þat hit<sup>1</sup> wan and struide hem þo. and king of Baby-  
 al þe lond þer abuten. and nam þat folc and dide into bendes. lon to invade  
 and sende hie in to babilonie to þralshipe. and on þralshipe hie Jerusalem.  
 wuneden two and sixti wintre. and sume hund seuenti wintre The Jews  
 fulle. and þat lond folc hem ouer-sette mid felefelde pine and were taken  
 mid swinche and michele wowe. and to eken oþer þo gremeden captive to  
 hem sore þus queðinde. *Hymnum cantate nobis d. c. s.* Singeð Babylon,  
 us of þe loft songes of syon. þus sede þat folc of babilonie \* p. 33.

1 ? = he it.

and there  
 dwelt in  
 bondage for  
 two and sixty  
 years.  
 In order to  
 increase their  
 grief their  
 enemies said,  
 Sing us of the  
 songs of Sion.



the people of Jerusalem. The Israelitish folk answered thus and said, *Quomodo cantabimus canticum Domini in terra aliena?*—How can we sing God's hymns in a strange land? The while we were safe and sound in our own land and in all riches (prosperity) we often sang our Lord's hymns; but now we are in bondage and suffer poverty, we may much more easily furnish weeping than songs. And thus they abandoned the blissful songs all the while that they dwelt in bondage, and that was two and sixty years. Then came a king called Cyrus, and conquered Babylon, and made the Israelitish folk free, and let some of them go home to Jerusalem. Now ought we and all Christian folk to take pattern after the people of Israel, and forsake during as many days as they did years—that is, two and sixty—singing the blissful songs, Alleluiah and Te Deum Laudamus. And so many days are granted to Easter Day, because we are also in spiritual bondage for our sins, as the Israelites bodily were for theirs; and this may each man understand who knoweth what these two cities, Jerusalem and Babylon, denote. *Jerusalem enim interpretatur visio pacis, et significat moraliter animam justitie.* Jerusalem denotes sight of peace. *Quoniam oculis contemplationis semper intuetur salvatorem nostrum, qui Deo Patri reconciliavit genus humanum;* for he doth as Holy Writ saith, *Oculi mei semper ad Dominum*—Our eyes are ever open to behold our Saviour, who through his own death reconciled the heavenly Father to mankind, thanked let him be! *Quæ nunc dicitur civitas eo quod humilitatis et patientie ceterarumque virtutum habitatio est; ut civitas civium.* The soul is called a city on account of the meekness and patience and such other holy virtues which dwell in her, even as folk dwell in a city. *Et in anima regnat spiritualis appetitus ut dux in urbe*—And in her reigneth the spiritual will, as a king in his city.

*Babylonia interpretatur confusio,* Babylon denotes shame, *et significat corpus subditum peccato,* and denotes the sinful body, *quod est confusum quoniam Dominus spernit illud,* which is put to shame, because it here deserveth that our Lord Jesus Christ should shame it, and he will banish it from his presence on Doomsday, before all the host of heaven,

to þe folke of ierusalem. þat israelisse fole andswerede þus  
*and sede. Quomodo cantabimus canticum domini in terra*  
*aliena?* hu muge we singen godes loft song in uneuðe londe? "How can we sing," they said, "the songs of Sion while we are in bondage? weeping is much easier than singing."  
 þe wile þe we weren on ure herde sikere. *and* sunde. *and* on alle  
 richeise we sungen ofte ure drihtenes loft songes. ac nu we buð  
 on þralshipe *and* polieð meseise. we mugen michel eðere forðen  
 wepinge þene song. *and* þus leten bileuen þe blisfulle songes.  
 alle þe wile ðe hie wuneden on þralshipe. þat was two *and* sixti  
 wintre. þo com a king þe was cleped chirus. *and* wan babilonie.  
*and* makede frie þat israelisse folk. *and* let hem sume faren hom  
 in to ierusalem. Nu age we alle *and* al cristene fole nime for-  
 bisne after þat israelisshe folc. *and* leten else fele dages else hie  
 diden geres. þat beð two *and* sixti. þat we ne singeð þo blisfulle  
 songes. *Alleluia* *and* *te deum* laudamus. *and* swo fele dages beð  
 unen \*to estrene dai. for þat we beð ee on þralshipe. gostliche  
 for ure gultes. else hie weren lichanliche for here gultes *and* þis  
 mai ech man understonden. þe wot wat bitoeneð þese two burges.  
 ierusalem *and* babilonie. *I**erusalem enim interpretatur visio*  
*pacis. et significat moraliter animam iusticie.* ierusalem bitoc-  
 neð soð<sup>1</sup> of sehtnesse. *Quoniam oculis contemplacionis semper*  
*intuetur saluatorem nostrum. qui deo patri reconciliauit genus*  
*humanum.* for he doð else holie write seið. *Oculi mei semper*  
*ad dominum.* vre egen ben eure opene to biholde ure helende  
 þe þurh is agen deð makede þen heuenliche fader sehte mid  
 mankin: ðonked wurðe him. *Que n. dicitur ciuitas eo quod*  
*humilitatis et paciencie ceterarumque uirtutum habitacio est:*  
*ut ciuitas ciuium.* þe saule is cleped burh for þe admodnesse *and*  
 ðoleburdnesse. *and* swiche oðre holie mihtes. þe wunieð on hire  
 else fole inne burh. *Et in anima regnat spiritualis appetitus ut*  
*dux in urbe.* *and* on hire rixleð þe gostliche wil: else king on is  
 burh. *Babilonia interpretatur confusio.* babilonie bitoeneð  
 shame. *Et significat corpus subditum peccato.* *and* bitoeneð þe  
 synfulle lichame. *Quod est confusum quoniam dominus spernit*  
*illud.* þe is riht attenshame. for þat he crneð here. þat ure louerd  
 ihesu crist him she[n]deð. *and* wile shufe fro him a domes dai.  
 biforen alle heueneware *and* herðe ware. *and* ee helleware: þus

Cyrus took Babylon and set the Jews free.

For two and sixty days must we now leave off singing Alleluia and Te Deum Laudamus.  
 \* p. 39.

Jerusalem is sight of peace.

<sup>1</sup> ? siht.

Christ's death reconciled us to God.

The soul is called a city, on account of humility and patience and other holy virtues in her.

Babylon betokens shame, and denotes the sinful body.

which shall be put to shame on Doomsday.

earth, and hell, thus saying, *Ite maledicti in ignem æternum, &c.*—Depart, ye accursed spirits, into hell. *Quod etiam dicitur civitas quod vitia habitant in eo ; ut in urbe cives.* The body is called ‘city’ because many crimes and foul vices dwell therein, as folk in a city. *Et in eo regnat carnalis appetitus ut dux in urbe sua.* And in it reigneth the carnal will, as an alderman (ruler) in his city. *Et fecit gulum militiæ suæ principem*—And he has set mouth’s measure (moderation) over his army that he hath assembled, *scilicet carnalia desideria, quæ militant adversus animam*, which is the foul conceivers of fleshly lusts and foul sins, which strive ever against the wretched soul. And of this contention speaketh the apostle and saith, *Caro concupiscit adversus spiritum, spiritus adversus carnem*—The body striveth and warreth against the will of the spirit, and the soul against the carnal will. We have sinned against the will of the soul ever since midwinter came hitherwards, and have overcome it, and have put ourselves into hell-torments, on account of our mouth’s meat, in three modes—in eating too much of dainty meats that breed sins, and in over-eating, which feedeth them (sins), and in unseasonable eating, which further them ; and in two modes in drinking—in unseasonable drinking and in excess ; and on such drinkers cometh God’s curse, as the prophet saith, *Væ vobis qui potentes estis ad bibendum*—Woe to all that are strong to drink. In two modes men drink lechery—[by intercourse] at improper times, and in unlawful places, and which are not pleasing [to God] though they be lawfully joined together in marriage. And all the while that we are obedient to these two things which I have just named, that is, mouth’s meat and lechery, we may not sing the blissful songs, Alleluiah, nor Te Deum Laudamus, nor Gloria in Excelsis, so as to be acceptable to God.

Let us then be obedient to these [commands] and be sorry for what we have done, and get shrift thereof, and let each amend according to his ability with good prayers, with almsdeeds according to our shriver’s advice ; and all these two and sixty days let us forsake the blissful songs and plays, and lead our life in purity, as the Holy Book teacheth us, and therewith deliver ourselves out of hell pain. *Quod ipse nobis præstare dignetur qui vivit, &c.* AMEN.

queþende. *Ite maledicti in ignem \*eternum. et cetera.* witeþ \* p. 40.  
ge awerhgede gostes in to helle. *Quod eciam dicitur ciuitas*  
*quod uicia habitant in eo : ut in urbe ciues.* þe lichame is cleped The body is  
burh. for þat þe fele lehtres. *and fule lastes wunen þeronne alse* for therein  
folc inne burh. *Et in eo regnat carnalis appetitus ut dux in* dwell many  
*urbe sua. and on him rixleþ lichamliche wil : alse eldrene man* sins and vices.  
on his burh. *Et fecit gulam milicie sue principem. and sette* In it the  
muþes mesure on his ferde. þat he gaderede. *scilicet carnalia* the carnal will  
*desideria. que militant aduersus animam.* þo ben þe fule tuder- reigns as an  
ende of flesliche lustes *and fule sinnes.* þe flited eure togenes þe alderman  
wreche saule. *and of þis flite specþ þe apostel and seiþ.* *Caro* over his  
*concupiscit aduersus spiritum. spiritus aduersus carnem.* þe borough.  
lichame fliteþ *and winneþ togenes þe gostes wille. and þe saule* The body and  
agenes þe lichames wille. we auen forgult ure saules wille siþe soul are ever  
mid winter com hiderwardes *and ouercumen it. and don us in* contending  
to helle wite : for ure muþes mete on þre wise. on etinge to with one  
michel. on estmetes þe bredeþ sinnes. *and on ouerete : þe hem* another.  
fedeþ *and on untimliche ete : þe hem forþeþ. and on two wise* Eating too  
on drinke untimliche : *and on ouerdede. and on swiche* much dainty  
drinker es cumeþ godes curs. alse þe prophete seiþ. *UE nobis* meats and  
*qui potentes estis ad bibendum.* Wo þo ilche þat ben mihti to eating un-  
drinken. on two wise men drinkeþ golnesse. on untime. *and on* seasonably  
unl[u]ued stede. *and ne ben naht like þerto<sup>1</sup> bute hie ben togedere* lead to sin.  
bispusede. *\*and alle þe wile þe hersumieþ þese two þing þe ich* On drunken-  
nu nemde : muþes meþe *and golnesse. ne muge we noht singe* ness comes  
þe blisfulle songes : *alleluia. ne te deum laudamus. ne Gloria in* God's curse.  
*excelsis gode to quemnesse. Vte we þenne þis hersumien. and* Men drink  
bireusen þat we auen don. *and gon to shrifte þerof. and beten* lasciviousness  
ech bi his mihte mid gode bedes. mid almes dede. bi ure shriftes either unsea-  
rede. *and al þese two and sixti dages : forleten blisfulle songes.* sonably or in  
*and plege. and leden clenliche ure lif : alse þe holie boc us* an unlawful  
lereþ. *and þermide lesen us ut of helle pine. Quod ipse nobis* place.  
*prestare dignetur qui uiuit.* \* p. 41.  
<sup>1</sup> ? read þeb.

Let us then  
repent of our  
sins, and  
amend our  
lives, and  
leave blissful  
songs for  
these two and  
sixty days.

## X.

## SHRIFT.

Understand yet one thing of which I shall warn you. If a man is severely wounded he will immediately seek after a physician and show him his wounds, and will lead his life after his instruction until he shall be whole. So ought we to do. Our soul is sorely wounded; for every sin is the soul's wound; and the priest is a physician of souls; and therefore ought we to come to our priest ere we begin to fast, and of him receive shrift, which we ought to keep all this Lenten time in fasting, in almsdeeds, and in good prayers, vigils, unwashen garments, and smart castigations, and in such other good deeds, according as each man prefers to repent of his foul sins; for no man may repent of his sins before he has forsaken them and has shown them to his priest and has been shriven thereof. *Tribus de causis jejunant jejunantes, alius quidem ad purgationem culpæ, scilicet peccator, alius vero ad custodiam justitiæ, scilicet justus, alius ad augmentum gloriæ, scilicet sanctus.* In three modes a man fasteth who fasteth well during his Lent. The sinner fasteth to cleanse himself from sin; the righteous to preserve his righteousness and to approach to holiness; and the holy man fasteth to exalt his seat in heaven and to increase his holiness and to exalt his bliss. *Quod melius patefacit exemplar lotricum.* The example of the washerwomen enables us to understand this. Some bear soiled clothing to the water to wash it clean—so fasteth the sinful man to cleanse himself of his foul sins; others bear clean clothes to the water to be bleached, so that they may be white—so doth the righteous man to please our Lord Jesus Christ, and for to have eternal life with him. Another beareth clean clothes and fair and white—so fasteth the holy man, to be high in heaven and to be near our Lord, and for to have the perfect bliss with him. *Sanctus indiget confirmatione; justus autem conversatione; peccator vero pœnitundine, confessione, sanctificatione.* The holy man needs to be confirmed



## X.

[DE CONFESSIOE.<sup>1</sup>]

**V**nderstondeð get an þi[n]g þat ich giu wile warnie fore. A wounded man will at once seek a physician.  
 gif man beð forwunded. he wile anou sechen after leches.  
 and shewen him his wunden. and bi his wissinge leden is  
 lif. forte þat he bie hol. also we ogen to don. Ure saule is Our souls are wounded by sin.  
 sore forwunded. for ech sýnne is þe saule wunde. and prest  
 is saulene leche. and forþi we agen to cumen to ure preste We must go to the priest, the soul's physician, and shew him our sins, and take shrift thereof.  
 er þanne we biginnen to festen. and of him understonden  
 shrift. þe we shulen leden al þis leinten. on festing. on elmes dede  
 on gode bedes. on wecche. on swinke. on unwasshen weden. on  
 smerte swinginge and on oðre swiche gode dedes: elch man also  
 him buð lief to beten his fule sýnnes. for no man<sup>1</sup> ne mai sýnnes<sup>1</sup> MS. man.  
 beten er þanne he hem forlete. and shewe em \*his prest. and \* p. 42.  
 nime shrifte þeroffe. *TRibus de causis ieunant* [ie]iunantes.  
*alius quidem ad purgacionem culpe scilicet peccator. alius uero*  
*ad custodiam iusticie scilicet iustus. alius ad augmentum glorie*  
*scilicet sanctus.* On þre wise fasteð man. þe wel fasteð here  
 leinten. þe sýnfulle for to clensen him. þe rihtwise for to witiende  
 his rihtwisnesse. and nehlechen to holinesse. þe holie man fasteð  
 forto hegen his sete on heuene. and to eken his holinesse. and to  
 egen his blisse. [Q]uod melius patefacit: exemplar lotricum.  
 and þis us doð to understonden þe forbisne of þe wasshestren.  
 Sume bereð sole cloð to þe watere forto wasshen it clene. Swo  
 fasteð þe sinfulle man his festing to clensen him seluen of his  
 fule sinnen. Sume bereð clene cloð to watere. to. blechen him  
 þat hit beo wit. Swo doð þe rihtwise man for to quemen ure  
 louerd ihesu crist. and for to habben eche lif mid him. Sum  
 oðer bereð clene cloð. and faire wit. Swo fasteð þe holie man  
 for ben hegh on heuene. and nehg ure drihten. and for to habben  
 þe fulle blisse mid him. *Sanctus indiget confirmacione. Iustus*  
*autem conuersacione. Peccator uero penitundine. Confessione.*  
*Sanctificacione.* þe holie man is ned þat he festned on his

<sup>1</sup> This Homily seems imperfect.



in his holiness, the righteous to continue in his righteousness ; and the sinful man has need to forsake his sins and to mourn them greatly, and to show them to his priest at shrift, and to do penance for them according to his instructions. And therefore we ought all to be shriven of our sins ere we begin to fast, for no one may repent of his sins before he has been shriven thereof. May our Lord Jesus Christ permit us to amend our sins, and to do such alms that we may be on his right hand at Doomsday. *Quod ipse præstare dignetur qui vivit, &c.* AMEN.

## XI.

### BEGINNING OF LENT.

*Convertimini ad me in toto corde vestro, &c.* No earthly father nor mother hath so merciful a heart to a beloved child as our heavenly Father hath to us—thanked may he be ! and that he showeth in all ways, and especially in admonishing us often in his holy writings, by his messengers, thus saying, *Convertimini ad me, &c.*—Turn ye to me. It is to be feared that we and our ancestors have been turned from him, ever since the devil came in the likeness of a serpent to Adam, and with his subtle words deceived him, so that he omitted to do what God bade him do, and did that which God forbade him ; and in this way turned from him—not he (Adam) alone, but all his offspring, as the Holy Book saith, *Recessit a Deo salutari suo*, he forsook God his Saviour and his Lord ; *et abiit in consilio impiorum*, and turned to the counsel of the wicked ; *et stetit in via peccatorum*, and stood in the way of sins ; *et sedit in cathedram pestilentie*, and sat in the seat of unhealth. And though our Lord be merciful to those who pray to him, yet is he just towards those that beseech his mercy ; as the book saith, *Misericors Dominus et justus*—Our Lord is merciful and just : for through his mercy he had made Adam lord over this earth, and also over Paradise, the while he would obey him ; and through his righteousness he drove him out of Paradise, when he was

holinesse. þe rihtwise þat he bileue on his rihtwisnesse þe sinfulle man is ned. þat he sýnne forlete *and* swiþe bimurne *and* shewe hem his preste at shrifte. *and* after his wissinge hem bete. *and* þerfore we agen alle to ben shrifene of ure sýnnes her we bigin-nen \*to fasten. for no man ne mai his sinnes bete : er he habbe nume shrift þerof. Ure louerd ihesu crist leue us swo ure sýnnen to beten. *and* swich elmesse to wurchen. þat we mo ben on his riht hond on domes dai. *Quod ipse prestare dignetur qui uiuit.*

Shrift is need-  
ful before  
fasting.

\* p. 43.

No man can  
atone for his  
sins before he  
has received  
shrift thereof.

## XI.

## IN CAPITE IEIUNIJ.

*Conuertimini ad me in toto corde uestro et cetera.* Non eorð-liche fader ne moder ne haueð swa milde heorte to hire liefe child. swo ure heuenliche fader haueð to us : þouked wurðe him. *and* þat he cið on alle wise. *and* nameliche on þat þe he hus mineget ofte on his holie write bi his erendrake þus queðinde. *Conuertimini ad me et cetera.* Turneð giu to me. feren it is þat we *and* ure heldrene habbæð ben turnd fro him : eure siððen þe deuel com on neddre liche to adam. *and* mid his hinder worde bicherde him : þat he forlet þat god him het don. *and* dide þat god him forbet. *and* on pese wise turnde fro him. noht him óne ac al his ofspring. also þe holie boc seið. *Recessit á deo salutari suo.* forlet god his helende. forlet god his louerd. *Et abiit in consilio impiorum.* *and* turnde on þe hinderfulle rede. *Et stetit in uia peccatorum.* *and* stod on þe weie of synnes. *Et sedit in ca. pestilencie.* *and* set on þe setle of unhele. *and* þeh ure drihten be mild heorted. þo þe him biddeð he is noðeles rihtwis togenes þo : þe his milce bisecheð. also þe boc seið. *Misericors dominus et iustus.* vre louerd is mild \*heorted. *and* rihtwis. for þurh his mild hertnesse he hadde maked adam louerd ouer þis middelherd. *and* ec ouer paradís þe wile þe he wolde heren him. *and* þurh his rihtwisnesse. drof him ut of paradís. þo þe was turnd

The love of  
God surpasses  
the love of  
earthly  
parents.

God calls  
upon us to  
turn to him.

We have  
turned away  
from God  
ever since the  
devil deceived  
Adam.

Then Adam  
forsook his  
God and  
Saviour,  
and sat in the  
seat of un-  
health.

Our Lord is  
just and mer-  
ciful. He was  
merciful in  
making  
Adam lord  
over this  
earth; he was  
just in driv-  
ing him out  
of Paradise  
as soon as he

turned from him, and he made him a fugitive where he previously had been a lord, and a pauper where he was formerly a king. So doth to-day every bishop who is in his minster, and driveth out the guilty men who have to do those things that pertain to their shrift, and who shall do their penance until the Thursday before Easter Day; and then he will fetch them into the church. So our Lord Jesus Christ fetched Adam out of hell when he had ended his penance, and so he will us also when we have completed our penance. Adam was in hell in torments four thousand years for his sins, and we must be full forty days in penance for to make amends for our sins, and thereafter be delivered out of torment through the holy sacrament, which we shall then receive; and if we receive it in purity, then shall we be turned unto him and he to us, as he himself saith, *Convertimini ad me, et ego convertar ad vos*—Turn you to me, and I will turn myself to you. We turn oft to him and from him, for we are unsteadfast. At our baptism before the fontstone we turned from our foe to him, and promised him firmly that we would ever hold to him; and we have belied our promise: and each one again promiseth the same at shrift. But listen now what threats David setteth upon us except we perform our behests and turn to him instantly, *Nisi conversi fueritis, gladium, &c.*—Except ye turn to God instantly, he will draw his sword, that is, his vengeance, *et aut in latere quassabit, aut in acie findet, aut in mucrone comburet*, and he will smite and bruise flatling with the sword, or will cleave with the edge, or pierce with the point and burn. Evilly he bruises us if he taketh away from us our property, either through fire or through thieves, or through robbery, or through unjust judgment, or through negligence, or through other misfortune, or through cattle-murrain, or through smart-year (famine), and if he bereaveth us our sight or our hearing, or maketh us crooked in feet or hands, or depriveth us of the (health) use of all our limbs. And grievously he cleaveth us if, through sudden death, he separateth the soul from the body, as I fear he will unless we turn to him the sooner. Terribly he pierceth us with the sword's point and burneth us if he sendeth us into hell, soul and body, to dwell in eternal fire. My advice is that we should preserve us from each of these three dints (blows) and do as the prophet David

fro him. *and* makede him fleme þere he hadde er louerd iben. *and* erming þer he was er king. Swo doð to dai ech bishup. þe in his minister beð. driueð ut þo forsinegedede men. þe habbeð þo sinnes don : þe biliggeð to here shrifte. *and* shulen don here penitence : forte þene þuresdai biforen estrene dai. *and* þenne he wile hem fecchen in to chirche. Swo ure louerd ihesu crist fette adam ut of helle. þo þe hedde his penitence enden. *and* swo he wile us ec. þanne we hauen ure penitence fulended. Adam was in helle in pine fuwert hundred wintre. for his sinne. *and* we shulen ben fulle .xl. dages in penitence. for to beten ure sinnen. *and* þer after ben alesd of pine þurh þat holie husel þe we shulen þanne understonden. *and* gif we cleunliche it understondeð : þanne bie we turnd to him : *and* he to us also him self seið. *Conuertimini ad me : et ego conuertar ad uos.* Turneð giu to me : *and* ich wile turne me to giu. We turnen ofte to him : *and* fro him. for we beð unstedefaste. At ure fuleninge biforen þe uantstone. we turnden fro ure fo to him. *and* biheten him festliche þat we wolden eue to him holden. \**and* habbeð logen ure hese. *and* eft sone ech at shrifte þat ilke bihoteð. Ac listeð nu wich preat dauid setted uppen us bute lesten ure bihese. *and* turnen to him anradliche. *Nisi conuersi fueritis gladium et cetera.* bute [we] turnen to gode anradliche he wile his swerd dragen : þat is his wrake. *Et aut in latere quassabit. aut in aice<sup>1</sup> findet. aut in mucrone comburet.* *and* he wile smite mid bredlinge swuerde *and* brisen. oðer mid egge. *and* cleuen. oðer mid orde. *and* pilten. *and* bernen. Vuele he us briseð. gif he binimeð us ure agte. oðer þurh fur. oðer þurh piefes. oðer þurh roberie. oðer þurh unrihte dom. oðer þurh gemeleste. oðer þurh oðer unlimp. oðer þurh orf qualm. oðer þurh smerte gier. *and* gif he binimeð us ure sihte. oðer ure liste. oðer us crokeð on fote oðer on honde. oðer on alle ure limes binimeð us ure hele. *and* reuliche he us cleueð gif he þurh ferliche deð : saule fro þe lichame deleð. also ich drede þat he wile bute we turne to him þe erur. Grisliche he us mid orde pilted. *and* berneð. gif he us sendeð. into helle saule. *and* lichame to wuniende on eche fur. Min red is þat we bergen us wið ech of pese þre dundes. *and* don also þitege<sup>2</sup> dauid us

sinned, and in making him a fugitive. So doth bishops to-day, who drive out all sinful men until the Thursday before Easter, when they will fetch them in, even as Christ brought Adam out of hell after a penance of four hundred years.

God says  
"Turn to me and I will turn to you."

We turned to God at the font, and from our foe the devil.

\* p. 45.

Hear what threats David setteth upon us if we break our behests,  
1 read acie.  
"God," he says, "will smite us flatling with the sword, or cleave us with the edge, or pierce us with the point."

God smites us flatling when he takes away our goods or our limbs ; he cleaveth us when death comes upon us ; and thrusteth us with the point when he sends us into hell.

2 ? þe witege.

admonishes us, saying, *Declina a malo et fac bonum*—Decline from evil and do good. *Et apostolus: emendemus in melius quæ ignoranter peccavimus, &c.* And St. Paul saith, let us turn to God and make amends for what we have done amiss heretofore; *Per ignorantiam, per negligentiam, per impotentiam, per malevolentiam*, either through ignorance, or through weakness, which are easy to repent of if we rue it sorely; or through recklessness, which is harder to repent of; or through evil thought, which is much harder to repent of, except sinners bemoan them the more, and the more earnestly pray for mercy and undergo greater penance (pain). Now ye have heard that our Lord bids us to turn to him, hear now in how many modes, *scilicet in toto corde, in jejuniis, in fletu, et planctu*. In four ways it behoveth us to turn to him—in heart, in fasting, in weeping, in lamentation. The man who forsaketh some of his sins and conceals others turns to God with a part of his heart. But it behoves us not so to do. That man turneth with all his heart who forsaketh all his sins; and so we are bidden to turn and to keep back none in our hearts, and specially no wrath, nor envy, nor hate, nor have any [ill will] to another, though he may have some toward us. He biddeth us to turn to him in fasting. *Jejunium corporis est abstinentia cibi et potus; jejunium mentis est abstinentia vitii*. There are two kinds of fasting: bodily fasting is abstinence of dainty meat and over-eatings, and unseasonable eating, and unseasonable drinking, as the holy psalm says—*Carnis terat superbiam potus cibique parcitas*. Eating and drinking moderately ought to tame the pride of the body. If a man fast willingly, then fasting is abstinence of the lusts of the flesh and of other foul vices, as St. Paul saith, *Abstinete vos a carnalibus desideriis quæ militant adversus animam*—Keep yourselves from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul. And of this fasting speaketh our Lord, through the holy prophet's mouth, thus saying, *Hoc est jejunium quod magis elegi, scilicet dissolvere colligationes impietatis et solvere fasciculos deprimentes*. Each of them I will accept, he saith, but that is the more acceptable to me which unbindeth the bonds of wickedness and the overloaded burden. If we sin in deed and in speech against our church or against our fellow Christians, and thereto accustom ourselves, then are we bound with the bonds of impiety; and if we sought to amend



minegeð þus queðinde. *Declina á malo et fac bonum.* forbue iuel and do god. *Et apostolus. EMendemus in melius que ignoranter peccauimus. et cetera.* \*and seinte poul seið. turne we to gode. and beten. for þat we hauen agilt her biforen. *Per ignoranciam. Per negligenciam. Per inpotenciam. Per malivolenciam.* oðer þurh nuteluste. oðer þurh uniweald þe buð eð-bete gif hie us sore rieweð. oðer recheluste ðe is erueðer to betende. oðer to biþohte þinge þe is swiðe erueðer to betende. bute hie þe more hem bimurne. and þe gernere milce bidde; and þe more pine polien. Nu ge hauen herd þat ure drihten bit turnen to him. hereð nu ó hu uele wise. *scilicet In toto corde.* *IN ieiunio. IN fletu et planctu.* On fuwuer wise us bihoueð turnen to him: on heorte. on festene. on wope. on meninge. þe man turneð to gode on sumdel of his heorte: þe sume of his sinnes forleteð. and sume et-heleð. ac swo ne bihoueð us noht to don. þe man turneð on al his heorte þe alle his sýnnes forleteð. and swo we ben beden turnen. þat we ne athelde none on ure heorte. and nameliche no wraððe ne onde. ne hatiginge.<sup>1</sup> ne habbe non to oðer þeh he haue to us. On festing he bit us us turnen. *IEiunium corporis est abstinencia cibi et potus. Ieiunium mentis est abstinencia uicii.* Two kinne festing beð. þe lichames festing: is wiðtigig of estmetes. and oueretes. and untimliche etes. and untimliche drinke. also þe holie loftsong seið. *Carnis terat superbiam potus cibique parcitas.* Meðeliche eting. and drinking agen to temieu þe lichames orguil. þe man þe fasteð his ponkes festing is widtigig of flashes \*lustes. and of oðre fule lastes also seinte poul seið. *Abstinete uos á carnalibus desideriis que militant aduersus animam.* Wiðtieð giu fro flesliche lustes þe winnen togenes þe saule. and of þis festing speeð ure drihten þurh þe holie prophetes muð: þus queðinde. *Hoc est ieiunium quod magis elegi. scilicet dissoluere colligationes impietatis et soluere fasciculos deprimentes.* eiðer queð he ich wile. ac þat me is quemere þat unbindeð þe bendes: of wiðerfulnessse. and þo ouersemden burden. gif we wiðerið on dede. and on speche. togenes ure chirche. oðer togenes ure emcristen. and þerto wunieð us. þenne bie we bunden of wiðerfulnessse. and gif beden hem bote.

We sin through ignorance, through weakness, through recklessness, and through wicked intentions.

We must turn to God in four ways: 1. in heart; 2. in fasting; 3. in weeping; 4. in lamentation.

1. We turn in heart to God when we utterly forsake sin.

1. ? read hatiginge. 2. Fasting is of two kinds: (a) refraining from dainty meats and excessive and untimely eating and drinking; (b) restraining fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

\* p. 47.

We are bound with the bonds of wickedness if we are hostile in word or deed against our Church or our fellow Christians.



them or sought for forgiveness, then we should unbind the bonds which we before bound upon them. And our Lord biddeth us to do that. And if a man hath trespassed against us either in words or works and we forgive him, then we unbind the burden that he had overladen us with. The third thing with which our Lord biddeth us to turn to him is weeping, which we weep for our sins, as the holy prophet saith, *Lacrimis meis stratum meum rigabo*—I will so bewEEP my sins that my bed shall be washed with my tears. And if it is so, methinks no sinful man bringeth any more pleasing offering for his sins than shedding of tears. And St. Peter and St. Mary Magdalen, who with weeping washed themselves of cardinal sins, knew this. In the fourth way God has bidden us to turn to him, that is in lamentation ; and it behoveth us to do this in three ways, *Vos ipsos de peccatis reprehendo, sacerdoti ea confitendo, Dei misericordiam pro eis supplicando*. That is, that we ought to reproach ourselves on account of our sins, as the holy man Job saith, *Reprehendo me, et ago pœnitentiam in favillo et cinere*—I have sinned and rebuked myself thereof, and do penance in ashes and in embers. And to-day we ought to undergo these pains. The second is that we ought, bewailing our sins, to show them to the priest, and afterwards amend them according to his instruction, as saith St. James, *Confitemini alterutrum peccata vestra, &c.*—Show your sins to the priest, for all that the priest bindeth shall verily be bound, and all that he unbindeth shall be unbound. The third is to bewail our sins before God and to ask for mercy ; and this it behoveth us to do each day, and to repent of our sins with all our limbs, as St. Paul saith, *Sicut exhibuistis membra vestra servire inmunditiæ et iniquitati ad iniquitatem, ita nunc exhibete membra vestra servire justitiæ in sanctificationem*—As ye have given up your body to obey foul and wicked lusts, also henceforth make your body to be obedient to purity and to righteousness and holiness, so that each limb may severally turn to God and amend its guilt. *Oculus vidit vanitatem, fleat nunc*. Let the eye weep because it hath beheld vanity. *Auris audivit otiosa, conversa audiat utilia*. Let the ear that has heard idle speech turn therefrom and hear God's word in the holy gospel. *Pes cucurrit ad malum*. Let the foot that has run into evil cease now so to do, and go often to church.

oðer forgiuenesse beden : þanne unbunde we þe bendes : þe we her uppen hem bunden. *and þat bit ure drihten. and gif man haueð wið us agilt. woerdes. oðer wurkes. we þat him forgiueð.* þanne unbinde we þe burden þe he hadde us mide ouersemd. *þat bridde þing hwanne ure drihten us bit turnen to him : is wop þe we for ure sýnnes wepeð. also ƿe holie prophete seið. Lacrimis meis stratum meum rigabo.* Swo ich wile biwepe mine synnes. *þat mi bed bie iwasshen mid mine teares. and gif hit is swo. me þingð ne brinð<sup>1</sup> no sýnful man quemere loc : þene teares sheding<sup>1</sup> bringð.* for his sinnen. *and wiste se[i]nte peter. and Seinte Marie magdaleine þe mid wope wessen hem seluen of heued sýnnes.* On þe feorðe þinge. *þat is meninge. god bad us turnen to him. and þat us bihoueð \*to don : on þrefeld wise. Vos ipsos de peccatis reprehendo.* [S] *Acerdoti ea confitendo. dei misericordiam pro eis supplicando.* and is þat we agen to gabben us seluen forþat we sýnegeden. also þe holie man iob seið. *Reprehendo me et ago penitenciam. in fauillo et cinere.* Ich haue sýneged and gabbe me suluen þeroffe and pine me seluen on asshen. and on iselen. and we agen to dai understonden þese pine. oðer is þat we agen ure sýnnes menende to shewen hem þe preste. and bi his wissingge beten hem sýððen also seint iacob seið. *Confitemini alterutrum peccata uestra et cetera.* sheweð giwer sýnnes þe preste. for al þat prest bindeð soðliche buð ibunden and al þat he unbindeð beð unbunden. þe þridde is menende his sýnnes bifore gode. and milce þer of bidden. þis us bihoueð þat we eche dai don. and mid alle ure limes ure sýnnes beten. also seinte poul seið. *Sicut exhibuistis membra uestra seruire inimu[n]dicie et iniquitati ad iniquitatem ita nunc exhibete membra uestra seruire iusticie in sanctificationem.* Also ge hauen giwer lichame don to hersumiende fule lustes : and unriht. also doð giwer lichame heçenforð to hersumiende clenness. and rihtwisnesse. and holiness. þat ech lime sýnderlepes turne to gode and bete his gilt. *Oculus uidit uanitatem fleat nunc.* wepe þat ege forþat hit idel bihiold. *Auris audiuit ociosa. conuersa audiat utilia.* eare luste unnitte speche. turne þerfro. and here godes word on holie lorpelle. *PEs cucurrit ad malum.* fot gide to uniðor : swike nu.

We unloose the bonds when we pray for forgiveness, or when we forgive others their trespasses.  
3. Weeping and shedding of tears for sin is a pleasing gift to God.

<sup>1</sup> bringð.  
4. Lamentation may be made in three ways :

\* p. 48.

(1) By rebuking our own sins ;

(2) By shewing our sins to the priest ;

(3) By confessing our sins to God, and by begging for mercy.

St. Paul bids us turn all our limbs to purity.

Let the eye bewep its idle sights ; the ear the vain words it has heard.

*Circa membra se tetigere illicite abstineant.* Thy lascivious member hath done what it should not have done, and where and when it should not. Let it be restrained now, according as they are able, though they be united together in marriage; and if they are not together lawfully united, let them forsake it [unlawful commerce] altogether.

*Manus effudit sanguinem, desinat et faciat elemosinam.* The hand hath oft done injuries; let it cease now and do alms. *Cor invidit et odivit habeat pacem et dilectionem.* The heart hath had envy and hatred; let it now have peace and love to each living man. *Os peccavit manducando, bibendo, male loquendo.* The mouth hath sinned in eating and drinking, and in evil speech; let it now eat lenten meat, and once a day and at evening let it eat its fill, and drink once at meat and not thereafter, except it be on account of infirmity or toil. Let it speak truth and right, and pray earnestly for mercy. Thus biddeth our Lord that we should turn unto him, and saith that he will turn to us and remain with us. *Qui vivit et regnat per omnia secula seculorum.* AMEN.

## XII.

### THE FIRST SUNDAY IN LENT.

*Preocupemus faciem domini, et in psalmis jubilemus ei.* The holy prophet David admonishes us in the psalter book to preserve ourselves whilst we may from the awful shame and from the bitter grief that all sinful men shall suffer on Doomsday, who have not forsaken and amended their sins before that all mankind, who have been, and shall be, and now are, come to one moot (assembly), and our Lord Jesus Christ comes from heaven to them and divides the good from the evil. *Et statuet oves a dextris; hedos autem a sinistris.* And he shall separate the righteous on his right hand, and shall honour and praise them, because they have previously well pleased him; and he shall give them for rewards eternal life and bliss, and heaven with himself, and shall say, *Venite benedicti patris, &c.*—Come ye blessed of my father, and receive the kingdom that is prepared for you from the beginning of the world. Afterwards he shall set the sinful

\*and gon ofte to chirche. *Circa membra se tetigere illicite abstineant.* þi shape dide. þat hit ne sholde. and þer hit ne sholde and þenne hit ne sholde. wiðteo it nu. bi here mihte þeh hie bien togedere bispused. and gif hie ne beð noht togedere bispused. forleten hit mid alle. *Manus effudit sanguinem. desinat et faciat elemosinam.* hand dide ofte harmes. swike nu. and do almesse. *Cor inuidit & odium habeat pacem et dileccionem.* heorte hadde onde and hatiunge hadde nu sehtnesse. and luue to ech liues man. *Os peccauit manducando bibendo male loquendo.* Muð synegede on eting. on drinking. and on ueele speche. ete nu leinte mete. and enes o dai and euene fille. and drinke o tige atte mete. and noht þer after bute hit for unhele be. oðer swinke. speke soð and riht. and bidde gerne<sup>1</sup> milce. þus bit ure drihten. þat we shulen to him turnen. and seið þat he wile to us. and mid us bileue. *Qui uiuit et Regnat per omnia secula seculorum.*

\* p. 49.

Let the foot run no more astray, but go to church.

Restrain all carnal desires.

Let the hand cease to do injury, and give alms.

Let the heart forsake envy, and make peace with all men.

Let the mouth eat lenten meat,

ever speak the truth, and pray for mercy.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. a part of the last c has been cut off.

## XII.

## [DOMINICA I] IN XLA.

*Preoccupemus faciem domini. et in psalmis iubilemus ei.* þe David advises us to save ourselves while we are able from the bitter shame of Doomsday that shall befall all sinful men. \* p. 50. þe holie prophete dauid minegeð us on þe seahmboc to beregen us þe wile þe we nugen. wið þe eiseliche shame. and mid te bitere grame þat alle synfulle men shule þolen on domes dai. þat ne haue noht here sinnes forleten. and bet<sup>1</sup> er þan al mankin. þe was. and wurh. and nu is<sup>2</sup> cumen to one mote. and ure louerd ihesu crist \*cumeð of heuene to hem. and shodeð þe gode fro þe iuele. *Et statuet oues a dextris: hedos autem a sinistris.* and shodeð þe rihtwise an his rihtalue and wurðeð hem. and hereð. for hie hauen him er wel quemed. and giueð hem to medes eche lif. and blisse. and heuene mid him seluen<sup>3</sup> and seið. *Venite benedicti patris et cetera.* cumeð ge blescede. and underfoð þat riche þat giu is igarked fro þe biginnigge of þe worlde. Siðen he setteð þe synfulle on his lifthalf. and witeð

\* p. 50.

Then will Christ separate the good from the evil.

<sup>3</sup> He will reward the good with everlasting life and bliss;

on his left hand, and shall reproach them because that in their lifetime they would not please him ; and their own sins, in deeds and in speech, shall disclose themselves, and shamefully upbraid them, and shall foully shame them before all the hosts of heaven, earth, and hell. And then shall our Lord Jesus Christ send them soul and body into hell, to dwell in everlasting woe, that thenceforth it shall be, as he said, *Ite maledicti, &c.*—Depart ye accursed spirits into the eternal fire that is prepared for devils and their fellows, therein to dwell for ever and ever without end. Thus their own sins shall shame them, and they shall be wroth with themselves because they had not previously amended their sins and preserved themselves from this great shame the while their day of amendment lasted. Our day of amendment is now, and lasteth the while that God willeth it. Let us amend earnestly, and be afterwards in the blessedness of which the psalter book speaketh, thus saying, *Beati quorum remissæ, &c.*—Blessed are all those whose trespasses are remitted and their sins hidden, that is, those who amend their lives, as the prophet David taught them.

*Preocupemus faciem domini, &c.* Let us think of our sins before the doom cometh, and forsake our sins and bemoorn them sorely, and show them at shrift and amend them as the priest shall instruct us ; and so amend with amendment of all behests that we previously have broken, so that God may then find no fault in us unpunished ; then need we fear neither to be troubled nor shamed. The holy prophet Jeremiah admonishes us to forsake our sins, thus saying, *Derelinquat impius viam suam, &c.*—Let the evil man forsake his way and the unrighteous man his many vain speeches, and turn to God. Evil is he who will not help his own soul ! and we are almost all in this condition, and our way that we ought to forsake is our mode of life, which we should rectify. Unrighteous are we when we do not our Saviour's will, who redeemed us from death, and giveth us all that we have, and promiseth us eternal life, and will perform his promise to all those who are obedient to him. And if we do our will, which ever leadeth us to harm, and do evil here and think to do worse, that is wrong. The holy man Job, who had no equal on earth, giveth us fair example to be sorry for our soul's sore, that is, our sins, where he saith, *Dimitte me domine, &c.* Permit me, Lord, a little while to bemoorn my sorrow, ere I depart to



hem þat hie bi here lif dages ne wolden him quemen. *and* here agene sýnnes. on dede. *and* on speche. unhileð hem seluen. *and* shameliche hem bigredeð. *and* fule shendeð. bi foren al heuene-ware. *and* eorðeware. *and* helle ware. *and* þenne sendeð ure louerd ihesu crist hem mid saule. *and* mid lichame into helle. to wuniende on eche wowe. Ʒe Ʒečen forð shal wexen alse he seide. *Ite maledicti. et cetera.* witeð ge aweregede gostes in þat eche fur þat is garked to deuules *and* here fereden to wuniende eure. *and* ó abuten ende. þus here agene sinnes hem shendeð. *and* hie ben of-gramede wið hem selfen. for þat hie nedden here sýnnes er bet. *and* wið þis michele shame boregen þe wile here bot dai laste. Ure bot dai is nu. *and* lasteð þe wile þe god wile. bete we gerne. *and* ben afterward þe edinesse þe þe salm boc of specð \*þus queðende. *Beati quorum remisit. et* \* p. 51. *cetera.* Edie ben alle þo: þe here giltyes ben atleten. *and* helid here sinnes. þat ben þo þe hem rihtlecheð. alse þe prophete dauid hem lerde. *Preocupemur f. d. in. con.* þenche we ure giltyes er þe dom cume. *and* forleten ure sýnnes. *and* bimurnen hem sore. *and* shewen hem at shrifte. *and* beten hem swo þe prest us wisseð. *and* beten swo mid bote al þat we er breken. þat god ne finde þanne on us no gilt unpined. þanne ne þarf us noðer gramien. ne shamien. To forleten ure sinne us minegeð þe holie prophete ieremie. Ʒus queðinde. *Derelinquat impius viam suam et cetera.* Forlete þe iuele man his wei. *and* þe unrihtwise his fele unnette speche. *and* turne to gode. Iuel is þat ne wile his agene saule helpen. *and* we ben mest alle. *and* ure wei þe we shule leten. is ure liflode þe we shule rihtleche. Unrihtwise we ben þanne we ne don ure helendes wille. þe lesde us of deaðe. *and* gifð us al þat we bi ben.<sup>1</sup> *and* eche lif bihoteð. 1 ? habben. *and* wile lesten alle þo þe him heren. *and* gif we don ure wille þe us teoð eure to herme. *and* here iuel don *and* werse þenchen to don: þat is unriht. þe holie man iob þe non ne was his efning on eorðe. he us giueð fair forbisne to bireusen ure saule sor. þat is ure sinnes. þer he seið. *Dimitte me domine u. p. p. d. m. a.* pole me louerd alitelwan þat ich bimurne mi sor: er ich wite to þe þestere wunienge. *and* þe holie boc seið on oðer

the wicked he will shame before all men, and send them soul and body into hell.

Thus their own sins will disgrace and ruin them.

To-day is our day of repentance.

If we are here shriven of our sins, we shall not be shamed thereat at Doomsday.

It is a hard thing if a man will not help his own soul.

Job has set us an example how to bewail our sins.



the dark abode. And the Holy Book saith in another place, *Quacunque hora homo ingemiscit peccata sua, remittuntur ei*.—As soon as the man bemourneth his sin's sore, our Lord looses the bonds of sin and rejoiceth the soul, as the Book saith :—*Secundum multitudinem dolorum, &c.*—As many sorrows as I have in my heart for my sins, with so many consolations hast thou rejoiced my soul. And when we have forsaken our sins and thus bemourned them, it behoveth us to do as the holy prophet admonishes us, thus saying, *Confitemini Domino, quoniam bonus*—Confess to our Lord, for he is very good and also merciful. And St. James saith in his epistle, *Confitemini alterutrum peccata vestra, &c.*—Show your sins in another place ; and in which other place we ought to show them our Lord tells us in the gospel which St. Luke made, when the ten lepers cried out before our Lord and said, *Jesu preceptor, miserere nostri*—Do thou, O Saviour, who healest with thy words all whom thou wilt, have mercy upon us. *Et dixit eis ; Ite et ostendite vos sacerdotibus*.—And he answered them as he doth us now : go and show yourselves to your priest. We show ourselves to our priests when we tell to them our horrible sins which we have done, and said, and thought with pleasing foul thought ; and then we are toward (before) him if we have it in our minds to show him our sins, and to forsake them and to amend. And we are cleansed of our sins if we rightly perform what we there have promised. We ought to tell there (to the priest) all our guilts that we have not amended, and not varnish with fair words those vile sins ; and we should say there nothing that is false, nor omit anything of the truth, but show there openly the sin whatever it is, and whether it was done at an unseasonable time or in an unlawful place, or with illicit gesture, or in any unlawful manner, or whether it was hard to accomplish or easily fallen into. And if we thus show our sins, then may we be fully shriven. But there are few that thus show their sins, and that is owing to manifold evil vices and evil habits. *Decem sunt quæ impediunt confessionem—scilicet hæc, oblivio, ignorantia, negligentia, verecundia, timor, diffidentia, delicacia, fiducia, pertinacia, desperatio*.—Ten things there are that hinder men from their shrift ; not all one man, but some one man and some another, and they are these—forgetfulness, ignorance,

stede. *Quacunqe* \**hora homo ingemiscit peccata sua remittun-* \* p. 52.  
*tur ei.* also wat swo þe man his sinne sore bimurneð ure drihten  
 leðeð þe sinne bendes. *and* blisseð swo þe soule also þe boc seið. Sorrow for  
sins loosens  
the sin-bonds.  
*Secundum multitudinem dolorum m. in. c. m. et cetera.* also fele  
 sorinesses swo ich haue on min herte : for mine sinnes : mid  
 also fele frefringe þu hauest blissed min soule. *and* þanne we  
 hauen ure sinnes forleten. *and* þus bimurnen us bilhoueð þat we  
 don : also þe holie prophete us minegeð þus queðinde. *Confite-*  
*mini domino quoniam bonus :* kneoweð ure louerd for þat he is wel  
 god. *and* swo mild heorted. *and* sein iacob seið on his pistle. St. James  
tells us where  
to confess our  
sins.  
*Confitemini alterutrum peccata uestra et cetera.* sheweð giwer  
 sinnes on oðer stede. *and* awich oðer stede age we hem to  
 shewen. vre drihten us seið on þe godspelle. þe sein lucas makede.  
 þer þe .x. liððroweres clepeden biforen ure drihten. *and* seiden.  
*Iesu preceptor miserere nostri.* þu helend þe mid þine wordes  
 helest. alle þo þe wilt. haue milce of us. *Et dixit eis. Ite et*  
*ostendite uos sacerdotibus* *and* he andswerede hem also he doð us  
 nu. goð *and* sheweð giu giuwer prest. prestes we shewed us þanne  
 seien hem ure ateliche sinnes þe we hauen don. *and* queðen. *and* We are to  
confess them  
to the priest.  
 þoht mid lestinde fule þonke *and* þanne we bien toward him. gif  
 we hauen on ure þoht to shewen him ure sinnes. *and* forleten. *and*  
 beten. we ben clensed of ure sinnes. gif we \*riht lesten þat we þere \* p. 53.  
 bihoten þere we shule tellen. alle ure gultes þat we ne hauen noht  
 bet. *and* noht mid faire worde hihten. þo ateliche sinnes. *and* no  
 þing seien þere þat les beo. *and* no þing of þe soðe forlete. ac shewen  
 þere openliche wich<sup>1</sup> he is. *and* gif hit was don on untime. oðer on  
 unluedede stede. oðer mid unlued lete. oðer on unlued wise.  
 oðer gif it was erfeð to forðen. *and* smeihliche bicharede. *and*  
 gif we sheweð þus ure sinnes. þenne muge we fulliche ben  
 shrifene. ac fewe ben þat þus shewen heore sinnes. *and* þat is  
 long on felefelde iuele lastes. *and* iuele þeawes. *Decem sunt que*  
*impediunt confessionem. scilicet hec. Oblivio. Ignorancia.* Very few  
confess as  
they ought  
to do.  
*Negligencia. Verecundia. Timor. Diffidencia. Delicacia. Fiducia.*  
*Pertinacia. Desperacio.* Ten þing ben þe letten men of here  
 scrifte. Noht alle on. ac sum on. *and* sum oðer. þat ben þese *and*  
 haten þus. forgetelnesse. nutelnesse. rechieles. shamfestnesse. drede. Ten things  
are at vari-  
ance with  
confession

negligence, shame, fear, distrust, love of ease, confidence, obstinacy, and unbelief. The man who hath not love nor fear of God thinketh seldom or never of heaven's weal, which he forfeiteth through his sins, and of hell's woe, which he earneth through his sins. And on account of that guilt he ought to show his sins at shrift; and therefore cometh upon him that misfortune which the prophet wished in the psalm book, thus saying, *Adhereat lingua mea faucibus meis, &c.*—Let my tongue cleave to my cheeks if I forget thee, O Jerusalem. When a man forgets what he ought to say, then is his tongue as it were cleaving (to his mouth). Ignorance hindereth the man's shrift who never knows when he sins; and such are all those who will not listen to sermons, and therein learn what are sins, and so preserve themselves; and [learn] what pertaineth to godliness, and follow that. And thereof saith the book, *Nullus vitare laborat quod ignorat.*—No man fleeth a thing except he know or ween that it will hurt him. Carelessness hindereth the man's shrift who through his unbelief harboureth the foul spirit (the devil) in his heart, who teacheth him to follow his foul lusts and to take no heed of shrift. And of them the holy book speaketh and saith, *Peccator cum venerit in profundum contempnit.*—When the sinful man is fallen into deep sin, he taketh no thought at all of shrift. Shame hindereth the man's shrift who will not tell his sins which he oft sinneth to the priest for fear of shame, and understandeth not that the shame which a man hath on account of his sins when he showeth them to the priest is the beginning of advantageous amendment of sin. And that knew well the prophet who thus said, *Toto die verecundia mea contra me est, &c.*—My shame is ever before me, and oft overwhelms my sin-bonds. Fear hindereth the man's shrift who dare not tell the priest his sins, lest what they two know should come out; and the prophet blameth such men in the psalter book where he saith, *Illic trepidaverunt timore, &c.*—They stood in awe where they ought not, that is of vain things, and stood in no awe where they ought to have had great awe, that is of God. Distrust of one's own power hindereth the man's shrift who thinketh that he could not forsake his sins though he told and renounced them at shrift. *Sed hii sunt filii diffidentiae de quibus dicit scriptura. Venit ira dei in filios diffidentiae.* And such are the devil's

Ortrowe. Trewcheleas. [Softgerne] Trust. wilfulness. Misleue. þe man þe naueð. huue ne eie to gode. he þencheð selde oðer naure of heuene wele : þe forgult mid his sunnes. *and* helle wowe. þe heerne mid his sunnes. *and* for þat gult he solde his sunnes at sрифte sheawen. *and* for þi cumeð uppen him þat unlimp þe þe prophete wisse on se salmboke þus queðende. *Adhereat lingua mea faucibus meis. et cetera.* Cleued be mi tunge to mine \*cheken gif ich forgete þe ierusalem. þanne man forgiet þat he \* p. 54. seien sholde. þanne beð his tunge also hit el[e]ued were. [Nutelnesse] leteð þe mannes sрифte þe ne wot neure hwanne he sinegeð. Ignorance hindereth a man's shrift. *and* swiche ben alle þo þe ne wilen listen lorspel. *and* þeron lerne wiche ben sinnen. *and* beregen hem. *and* þat bilimpeð to godcunnesse. *and* folegen þat. *and* þeroffe seið þe boc. *Nullus uitare laborat quod ignorat.* no man ne fleð þing bute he wite. oðer weue þat it him deren wille. Recheleste letteð þe mannes sрифte. Recklessness hinders confession. þe þurh his misleue herbergeð þe fule gost on his heorte. þe him techeð to folgen his fule lustes. *and* no wuerse of sрифte. *and* of hem þe holie boc speçð *and* seið. *Peccator cum uenerit in profundum contempnit.* þanne þe sinfulle man beoð bifallen on depe sinne. ne recheð no þing of sрифte. Shamfestnesse letteð þe mannes sрифte. þe ne wile his sinne seien þe preste. þe he ofte sinegeð. for him sholde shamen of him. *and* ne understant noht þat þe shame þe þe man haueð of his sinne. þanne he hem prest sheweð : hit is þe biginnigge of fremfulle sinbote. *and* þat wiste wel þe prophete þe þus queð. *Tota die uerecundia mea contra me est : et cetera* min shamfestnesse is to-genes me. *and* ouerheleð min bend ofte. Drede letteð þe mannes sрифte. þe ne dar his sinnes \*seien þe prest. leste hit uttere cume þat hie tweien witen. *and* swiche men blameð þe prophete on þe sealm boc þer he seið. [I]llic trepidauerunt timore u. n. e. t. þer hem stod eie : þer hem ne sholde. þat is of idele þing. *and* þer non : þer \* p. 55. hem sholde michel eie stonde. þat is of gode. Ortrowe of agene mihte letteð þe mannes sрифte. þe þincheð þat he ne mihte his sinne forlete. þeh he hem seide at sрифte. *and* forhete hem. *Sed hii sunt filii diffidencie de quibus dicit scriptura. Venit ira dei in filios diffidencie.* *and* swiche ben þe deules bernes þe aren

Ignorance  
hindereth a  
man's shrift.

Recklessness  
hinders con-  
fession.

Shame pre-  
vents a man  
confessing  
his sins.

Shame is the  
beginning of  
repentance.

Dread hinders  
confession,  
when a man  
is afraid lest  
what he has  
told the priest  
should trans-  
pire.

\* p. 55.

Distrust of  
one's power  
to forsake  
sin hinders  
shriff.

children who are called distrustful, because they sin so greatly that they think to have wholly lost mercy; and God's wrath cometh oft upon those that so ween. Love of ease and prosperity hinder the man's shrift who thinketh that he cannot endure hunger nor thirst, nor any other pain in order to amend his sins. *Unde scriptura dicit. Delicati se nutriunt ad incendia gehenne.* The luxurious feed themselves for hell-fire, both hands and feet. Trusting to a long life hindereth the man's shrift who saith to himself in his heart, I am not yet sated with my sins, and therefore I cannot renounce them, but another time I may be sated therewith, and then I will forsake them and take shrift and repent of them. But the Holy Book blameth these men, thus saying, *Deus promittit veniam penitenti sed non crastinum diem penitentie differenti*—God has promised mercy to those who forsake and amend their sins, but he has not promised life till to-morrow to those who lie in their sins, but saith, *Qua hora non putatis, mors veniet*—When thou least weenest death shall come to fetch thee. Wilfulness (obstinaey) hindereth the man's shrift who thinks it hard that any one should compel him to forsake his sins and turn from the devil to God; and of them thus saith the Holy Book, *Pertinaces in malo eliminat ecclesia*—Holy church separateth from Christian communion those who are wilful to love their sins and are unwilling to forsake them. Distrust of God's mercy hindereth the man's shrift, who hath sinned greatly and will not forsake his sins, nor amend nor pray for mercy, because that he weeneth that God will not forgive such great sins for any amendment that he may accomplish; and of this saith the Holy Book, *Qui desperat jam judicatus est*—The man who despairs of God's mercy is condemned to eternal woe in hell; therefrom may our Lord Jesus Christ, if it be his will, protect us, and preserve us from all evil customs, and give us power to forsake our sins and show them the priest, and instruct us and aid us to amend them, as may be advantageous to ourselves and acceptable to him. *Qui vivit et regnat Deus per omnia sæcula. AMEN.*



cleped ortrowe for þat hie sinege swo michel. þat hie wenden to hauen forloren milce. *and* godes wraððe cumeð ofte uppe þo: þe þat wenen. softgerne *and* ednesse letteð þe mannes shrifte. þe pincheð þat he ne mai þolen hunger. ne þirst ne oðer pine to betende his sinnes. *unde scriptura dicit. Delicati se nutriunt ad incendia gehenne.* þe softgerne fedeð hem seluen helle fur to honde. *and* to fote<sup>1</sup>. Trist to longe lif. letteð þe mannes shrifte. þe seið to him seluen on his heorte. Ich nam noht giet sad of mine sinnes. *and* forþi: ne mai ich hie noht forlete. ac oðer ich mai ben sed þeroff *and* þanne ich wille hem forleten. *and* nime shrift. *and* beten hem. \*ac þe holie boc blameð þese men þus queðende. [D]eus promittit ueniam penitenti sed non crastinum diem penitencie differenti. god bihet milce þo þe here sinnes forleten *and* beten. ac he ne bihet noht þe lif til ámoregen: þo þe lið on sinne ac seið. *Qua hora non putatis mors ueniet:* Þanne þu lest wenst deað cumeð to fecchende þe. Willfulnessse letteð þe mannes shrift. þat pincheð uuel þat man him wile neden his sinnes to forleten. *and* fro þe deuel to gode turnen. *and* of hem seið þe holie boc. *Pertinaces in malo eliminat ecclesia.* holie chirche deleð fro cristendom. þo þe wilfulle ben here sinnes to luuen. *and* loðe to forleten. Ortrowe of godes milce. letteð þe mannes shrift. þe haueð michel sinaged. *and* nele lete<sup>1</sup>. ne bete. ne milce bidde. for þat he weneð þat god ne wile swo michel sinne forgiue: for none bote þat he forðe muge. *and* of þis seið þe holie boc. *Qui desperat iam iudicatus est.* þe man þe ortroweð godes mildhertnesse. he is idemd to eche wowe on helle. þerwið us wite ure louerd ihesu crist gif his wille beo. *and* berege us wið alle inele customes. *and* giue us mihte ure sinnes to forleten. *and* prest shewen. *and* wise us. *and* filste hem to beten. swo þat us beo biheue: *and* him to queme. *Qui uiuit et Regnat deus per omnia. . . .*

Such people are the devil's bairns.

Luxury prevents confession, and makes people afraid to do penance for their sins.

<sup>1</sup> Originally fode but altered to fote.

Trusting to have a long life hinders many from confession. They put off repentance until they are tired of their sins.

\* p. 56.

Willfulness prevents those confessing who think it hard to be made to forsake sin.

Distrust of God's mercy prevents the confession of those who think that God will not forgive such great sinners. <sup>1</sup> ? MS. bete.



## XIII.

## THE SECOND SUNDAY IN LENT.

**B**ehold, now is the acceptable time ; behold, now is the day of salvation.

In these days, therefore, let us approve ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in fastings, in vigils, in unfeigned charity, &c. When the heavenly physician perceived that those previously regenerated by his means were afterwards assailed by various diseases of sins, visiting them in his writings, he exhorts them to the medicine of confession ; because, as the Scripture saith, all things are renewed by confession. And that they should not urge the excuse of time, he saith, ‘Behold, now is the acceptable time ; behold, now is the day of salvation’—that is, fit for creation, satisfaction, and remission ; and he sets forth a mode of life, saying, live as the ministers of God. And because the medicines which he provides are sharp—that is to say, to bear fire and sword, he admonishes them to have patience, saying, ‘In much patience.’ By the sword indeed is superfluity cut off ; and the fire by burning cures that whereby they are marked—that is to say, the heat of sorrow and the fervour of brotherly love, which salve and heal every disease of sin. And concerning sorrow indeed it is said, in whatever hour a man mours his sins they are forgiven him. Concerning love, our Lord saith, ‘I love those that love me.’ So the apostle exhorts us to amend for the better that in which hitherto we have trespassed, lest divine vengeance take from us suddenly the opportunity of repentance. The heavenly physician St. Paul taketh heed of our soul’s sicknesses, which are our sins, thanked be he ! and admonishes us by his holy writing which we read to-day in church, that we should show our own great need, and the while we are able to think, and to come boldly to our soul’s physician and lay bare our soul’s wounds, which are our foul sins, and pray that he may instruct us how we may cleanse our souls of them and heal our wounds, and awake ourselves from our heavy sleep, and raise ourselves from our foul lust-bed, and that we do as those things that have lien in sleep, that is, revive when their time cometh ; and that is now, for this time is thereto acceptable, as the apostle saith, *Ecce nunc tempus*. Now it is good time to look to the sickness of

## XIII.

[DOMINICA II] \*IN QUADRAGESIMA.

\* p. 57.

**E**cce nunc tempus acceptabile. ecce nunc dies salutis. In his ergo Now is the day of salvation.  
*diebus exhibeamus nosmet ipsos sicut dei ministros. In*  
*multa paciencia. In ieiuniis. In uigiliis. In caritate non ficta.*  
*et cetera. Celestis medicus ut cognouit quod ope sua prius creati*  
*postmodo uariis languoribus peccatorum uexarentur. Scripto*  
*uisitans eos. hortatur eos ad medicinam confessionis. quia ut ait*  
*scriptura. Omnia in confessione creantur et ne pretenderent ad*  
*excusacionem temporis dicit. Ecce nunc tempus acceptabile ecce*  
*nunc dies salutis. Uidelicet aptum creacioni .i. satisfactioni .i.*  
*remissioni. et dietam<sup>1</sup> proponit dicens. Viuite sicut dei ministri.*  
*et quia que parat medicamenta asperant. scilicet ferrum pacieris*  
*et ignem. Monet eos ad pacienciam dicens. In multa paciencia.*  
*Ferro quidem secatur superfluum ignis urendo curat in quo*  
*notantur. scilicet calor compunctionis. et feruor gemine dilectionis*  
*que curant et sanant omnem languorem peccati. et [de] compunc-*  
*tione quidem dicitur. quacunque hora ingemit homo peccatum :*  
*remittuntur ei. De dilectione dominus dicit. Ego diligentes*  
*me diligo. Sic ortatur nos<sup>2</sup> apostolus ut emendemus i[n] melius :*  
*que huc usque peccauimus. Ne diuina ulcio spacium penitencie*  
*preripiat nobis. Þe heuenliche leche seinte poul nimeð geme of*  
*ure saule sicsesse. þat ben ure sinnes þonged \*wurðe him. and*  
*minegeð us bi his holie write. þe we reden to dai inne chirche.*  
*þat we shewen ure agene michele nede. and þe wile þe we mugen*  
*þenchen. and cumen festliche to ure saule leche and unhelen*  
*him ure saule wundes. þo ben ure fule synnes. and bidden þat he*  
*wisse us hu we mugen ure saule of hem clensen. and ure sor*  
*helien. and weche us of ure heuie slape. and rere us of ure fule*  
*lust bedde. þat we don alse þing doð. þe haueð lein on swete. for-*  
*quichieð þan here time cumeð. and þat is nuðe for þis time is*  
*licwurðe parto : alse þe apostle seið. Ecce nunc tempus. Nu*  
*hit is god time to beloken þe sicsesse of þe sowle. Ecce nunc*

Live as the  
ministers of  
God.

<sup>1</sup> MS. dictam.

Repent now  
before it is  
too late.

<sup>2</sup> MS. uos.

\* p. 58.

Holy writ  
admonisheth  
us to show  
our sin-  
wounds to  
the soul's  
physician.

The soul's  
physician is  
the priest.

the soul. *Ecce nunc dies salutis*. And these forty days are befitting ones to heal the soul. Let us beseech then the soul's physician, that is, the priest, *ut ferro prohibitionis rescindat a nobis exterius carnis et mentis vicia*, to instruct us to abstain from all fleshly lusts which hurt the soul, and to put upon us such manifold pains that through their bitterness we may drive out of our thoughts the foul lusts that weigh down the soul. *In multa patientia, &c.* And be so patient under his instruction as to forsake what he forbiddeth and to do what he biddeth, so that that very patience may be our soul's salvation, as our Lord saith, *In patientia vestra possidebitis animas vestras*—In your patience ye shall keep your souls. *Tanta est virtus patientie, quod quis eam exhibendo animam suam s[eruet] ostendendo ita [non seruet]*. So holy a virtue is patience, that he who manifests it thereby preserves his soul; but not so doth he who makes a show of patience, but who suffereth not and forbeareth not one offence, and would avenge himself if he were able, and thereto prepareth and abideth his time—and nevertheless may not do any harm to him (sc. his enemy); he maketh a pretence of patience, and nevertheless hath none, and therefore hath no possession of his soul, because carnal lusts and foul crimes hold him bound under their subjection, so that he in no wise hath dominion over his soul. That man hath patience and manifesteth it who suffereth and forbeareth, and will not seek after vengeance nor hate him who offendeth him, nor wish him evil. If it happen that a man hath this forbearance, and observeth it in himself, both in speech and in deeds, or in either of them, he is patient, and acteth as though he knew it not, and therewith overcometh himself and preserveth his soul, and afterwards by that means has power over her (the soul). If the wicked man follows his will and with manifold wiles enticeth him to criminal acts, as to stealing, or plunder, or treachery, or drunkenness, or whoredom, or other such vices, and promiseth him a precious reward if he will listen to his lore, and he will not, but suffers and forbears, he therewith overcometh the wicked man, and so preserveth and hath possession of his soul. If carnal lusts or desires of the mind entice him to any vice, and he will not but suffereth and forbeareth, though it be pleasing to his body, and striveth against his own will (as the wise man biddeth, saying, *Sperne voluptates, nocet empti dolore*

*dies salutis*<sup>1</sup>. And þos fuerti dages ben bieuneliche to helen þe <sup>1</sup> *MS. salutis.*  
 sowle. biseche we þanne þe sowle leche þat is þe prest. *Vt ferro* During Lent  
*prohibitacionis recindat á nobis exterius carnis et mentis uicia.* þat we are to  
 he us wissie to wið-tien of alle flesliche lustes þe derieð ure sowle. effect the  
 soul's cure.

and don uppen us swileh manifeald pine. þat mid here biter-<sup>2</sup> *Looks at*  
 nesse. driuen ut of ure þoght : þe fule lu[s]tes<sup>2</sup> þe heuien þe sowle. *first sight like*  
 lites.

*In multa patientia. et cetera.* and ben swo poleburde to-genes We must be  
 his wissinge to forleten þat he forbet. and don þat he bit. patient and  
 þat þe selue poleburdnesse be ure swole<sup>3</sup> hele. also ure bear the  
 drihten seið. *In patientia uestra possidebitis animas ues-* penance laid  
*tras.* \*On giwer poleburdnesse : ge shulen wealden giwer \* p. 59. upon us by  
 the priest.

saule. *Tanta est uirtus paciencie. quod quis eam exhibendo* Of the virtue  
*animam suam s. ostendendo ita.* swo holie mihte is poleburd- of patience.

nesse. þat he þe hit kið : þer þurh haueð his soule weald. ac swo  
 ne haueð he þe sheweð poleburdnesse. þe ne poleð. and forbereð  
 noht á misbode. and wolde him seluen wreke gif he mihte. and  
 þerto ettleð and abit his time. and neðeles ne mai him non  
 harm don. he makeð lete of poleburdnesse and neðeles ne haueð  
 non. and þer for ne haueð his soule weald. for þat he lichamliche Vice holds  
 lustes and ðe fule lehtres him holden bunden on here þralshiþe. man in sub-  
 jection.

swo þat he ne mai his soule no þing wealde. þe man haueð  
 and kið poleburdnesse þe poleð and forbereð and ne wile seche  
 after wreche. and naðemore haten him. þe him agilteð. ne him  
 iuel unnen. gif hit is man þat haueð þis. and he halt uppen him. Patience en-  
 ables a man  
 to overcome  
 sin.  
 on speche. and on dede. oðer on eiðer he beð poleburde and doð  
 also he hit noht ne wite. and þeremide ouereumeð him. and  
 his soule lokeð and eft hire swo walt. gif þe unfele man his wille  
 folgeð. and mid felefolde wigeles<sup>4</sup> teð him to unwrenches. to <sup>4</sup> *MS. wigeles.*  
 stele. oðer refloc. oðer swikedom. oðer drunkenesse. oðer hordom.  
 oðer swiche. oðre unþeawes. and lef mede bihoteð gif he wile his  
 lore liste. and he nele. ac ðoleð \*and forbereð. and þermide ouer- \* p. 60.  
 cumeð þe unfele. and his soule lokeð. and haueð swo wald. gif  
 lichames lust oðer þankes lust. teð him to ani unþeau. and he  
 nele ac poleð and forbereð. þeh hit bie his lichame queme. ac  
 fliteð to-genes his agen wille. also þe wise bit þus queðinde.

*Sperne uoluptates nocet empti dolore uoluptas.* Shune lustliche Shun carnal  
 desires.

*voluptas*—Shun lusty will, for it harmeth much, and is afterwards atoned for with bitter grief), and thus overcometh all his foes, and therefore he hath control over his soul, for then shall be seen in him that which the wise man hath said, *Quem superare nequis, patienter vince ferendo*—That which thou art unable to overcome with strength, overcome with patience, and in every such contest the man of patience has finally the upper hand. So may we strive against our foul lusts, all the forty days, and overcome them finally and all those things that lead us into sin. *Quod ipse prestare dignetur qui vivit et regnat.*

## XIV.

## MID-LENT SUNDAY.

When the unclean spirit has gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places seeking rest, and finding none, saith, I will return unto my house, whence I came out ; and coming there he findeth it cleaned with besoms and trimmed. Then he goeth and taketh to himself seven other spirits worse than himself, and they entering, abide there, and the last state of that man becomes worse than the former.

The lord St. Matthew speaketh in his holy gospel of the dreadful words which our Saviour on one occasion gave for an answer to the unbelieving Jewish men who desired of him a token, and said, *Magister, volumus a te signum videre*—Master, we would see some sign of thee, whereby we might know whether what thou sayest be the truth and believe ; and he gave them for an answer awful words, thus saying, *Generatio mala et adultera signum quærit, et non dabitur signum nisum signum Jone prophete*—An evil and adulterous generation ask after a sign from heaven, and they shall have only an earthly one ; and he showed them by Jonah the prophet a sign of his holy passion, which he would undergo to redeem all mankind from eternal woe (thanked be he!), and of his resurrection to bring all mankind from death to bliss. And afterwards he blamed their unbelief and their wicked mode of life, and said, *Viri Ninive surgent*



wil. for þat it dereð swiðe *and* beð afterboht mid bitere sor. *and*  
 þus ouereumeð alle hise fon : *and* þerfore haueð his soule weald.  
 for þenne beð on him sene þat þe wise seide. *Quem superare*  
*nequis pacienter uince ferendo.* Þat þu mid strence ne miht Strive against  
 ouereume. ouercum mid poleburdnesse. *and* on ech swich flite : foul lusts  
 is man of poleburdnesse abuuen at ende. Swo mote we flite to- during the  
 genes ure fule lustes. al þe fuwerti dages. *and* ouercumen at forty days of  
 ende hem. *and* alle þe þing þat us to sunne teð. *Quod ipse pre-*  
*stare dignetur qui uiuit et regnat.* Lent.

## XIV.

## IN MEDIA XLA.

*C*um immundus spiritus<sup>1</sup> exierit ab homine ambulat (uadit<sup>2</sup>) per <sup>1</sup> MS. spiritus.  
 loca arida querens requiem et non inueniens dicit. *Reuer-* <sup>2</sup> uadit is  
*tar in domum meam unde exiui. et ueniens : inuenit eam scopis* written over  
*mundatam et ornatam. Tunc uadit per loca arida querens* ambulat in  
*requiem et non inueniens dicit. Reuertar in domum meam unde* MS.  
*exiui et ueniens inuenit eam scopis mundatam et ornatam. Tunc* Sermon on  
*uadit et sumit rītem alios \*spiritus<sup>1</sup> secum nequiores se : et in-* St. Luke xiv.  
*gressi habitant ibi. et sunt nouissima hominis illius peiora pri-* 24—26.  
*oribus* þe louerd seint matheu specð on his holi godspel of þe Of the answer  
 grimliche wordes þe ure helende at sume time gaf to andswere which Jesus  
 þe unbilefde iudeiſſhe men. þe ger[n]den of him fortocne<sup>3</sup> *and* gave the  
 seiden. *Magister uolumus a te signum uidere.* Meister we wolden Jews when  
 sen sum fortocne of þe. Warbi we mihten enowen gif it soð were they asked  
 þat þu seist : *and* leuen. *and* he hem gaf to andswere eifulle for a sign.  
 word. þus queðinde. *Generacio mala et adultera signum querit.* <sup>3</sup> Or fortacne.  
*et non dabitur signum nisi signum ione prophete.* Iuelmennish He gave them  
*and* forhored mannish acseð after fortocne of heuene. *and* hie ne the sign of  
 shulen hauen bute eorðliche. *and* he hem shewede fortocne bi the prophet  
 ionan þe prophete. of his holie prowegunge þe he wolde polien Jonah.  
 to lesen al mankin of eche wowe. þonked wurðe him. *and* of  
 his riseng. *and* of deðe al mankin bringe to blisse. *and* siðen  
 blamede here un-bileue. *and* here unwreste liflode. *and* seide.



*in judicio cum generatione ista, et condemnabunt eam, quia pœnitentiam egerunt in predicatione Jone.*—On Doomsday shall the people (of Nineveh) arise in the great doom and shall condemn this generation. *Non equidem sententiæ latione, sed meritorum comparatione.*—They shall not be judged with the doom of sharp words, but with very respectful words ; because that they received the wise lore of Jonah the prophet, and forsook their sins, and according to his instruction amended and prayed for mercy. *Et ita facta est Ninive speciosa quæ prius turpis existerat.*—And so that folk were turned from vile deeds to fair ones, and their end was better than their beginning ; but this sinful generation, which treacherously tempt me, and hear my wise words and see my marvellous deeds, nevertheless believe me not, nor forsake their sins, nor amend, nor bow down to me nor pray for mercy ; and therefore their end shall be worse than their beginning. Thus said our Lord, and we may say of a truth that there are still altogether too many of such men who will not forsake their sins, but think them sweet, and will not do any penance, and so their body is profitless. They go to church, not for the love of God, but to preserve their neighbours' (good) report. They give their tithe, not to have heaven's bliss, but for to have praise, the praise of earthly riches ; they give their alms, not for God's sake, but for the sake of their neighbours or kinsmen, or for to have honour, or because they may not do otherwise for fear of shame, or for to have thanks or for to have praise. If such a man kneel in church and bend all his limbs, that is all in vain ; though he pray with his mouth, he fetcheth not the sore sighs in the bottom of his heart, nor for sorrow weepeth any hot tears from his eyes ; and these are false Christians, and are worse than heathen men, and their end shall be worse than their beginning. Soon after our Lord said, *Regina austri surget in judicio cum generatione ista, et condemnabit eam, quia venit a finibus terræ audire sapientiam Salomonis, et ecce plus quam Salomon hic.*—The queen of the South shall on Doomsday arise in the great judgment, and shall condemn this corrupt generation ; because she came from the world's end to hear Solomon's wisdom, and this obstinate folk will not listen to the wisdom of that Instructor who taught Solomon and all wise prophets their wisdom ; and therefore their

*Viri niniuite surgent in iudicio cum generacione ista. et con-* At Doomsday  
*dempnabunt eam. quia penitenciam egerunt in predicatione ione.* Nineveh shall  
 On domes dai shal þat folc arisen on þe michele dome! *and* rise up in  
 fordemen þis mannish. *Non equidem sentencie lacione. sed meri-* judgment  
*torum comparacione.* Noht mid domkete<sup>1</sup> wordes. ac mid wured- against the  
 luker wordes. for þat þe hie undernomen þe wise lore of ionan Jews.  
 \*þe prophete. *and* lete here sinnes. *and* bi wissinge betten *and* \* p. 62. [Matt.xii.41.]  
 milce beden. *Et ita facta est niniue speciosa que prius turpis* So in MS.  
*existebat.* And swo warð iturnd þat folc of ateliche to wen- The ending  
 liche. *and* was here ende betere þene here biginninge. ac þis of Nineveh  
 wiðerfulle mannisshe þe fondeð me hinderfulliche. *and* hereð was better  
 mine wise word. *and* seð mine wunderliche deden. *and* naðemo than their  
 me ne leueð. ne here sinnes ne forleteð. ne beten. ne to me beginning.  
 abugen. ne milce bidden. *and* þefore wurð here ende werse  
 þene here biginninge. þus seide ure drihte. *and* we mugen seien  
 to soðe þat al to fele swiche men bien get. þe ne wilen noht here  
 sinnes forleten ac þincheð hem swete. ne ne wilen don none sin- Sin seems  
 bote. *and* his<sup>2</sup> here lichame unnit swo. hie gon to chirche noht for sweet to  
 godes luue. ac for to biregen nehebores speche. hie giuen here many people.  
 tigeðe noht for to hauen heuene blisse. ac for to hauen hère. þe Why some  
 hereword of eorðliche richeise. hie giuen here elmesse noht for people go to  
 godes luue ac for neheboreden. oðer for kinraden. oðer for onur to church and  
 hauen. oðer ne mai elles for shame. oðer for þonc to hauen. oðer give alms.  
 for hereword to hauen. Gif he cneuleð in chirche. *and* bugeð alle  
 hise limes! þat is idel. þeh he him bidde mid \*his muð. he ne fecheð \* p. 63.  
 noht þe sore siches. onneðerward his heorte. ne for reuðe ne wepeð The false  
 none hote teres. of his egen. *and* þese ben false cristene. *and* ben Christian is  
 forcuðere þene heðene men. *and* beð here ende forcuðere þene no true re-  
 here biginnenge Sone perafter seide ure drihten. *Regina* pentant.  
*austri surget in iudicio cum generacione ista. et condempnabit* The Queen of  
*eam. quia uenit a finibus terre audire sapienciam salomonis. et* Nineveh shall  
*ecce plus quam salomon hic.* Þe soðe quen shal a domes [dai] arise up in  
 arisen! on þe michele mote. *and* fordemen þis frakede folc. judgment  
 For þat hie com fro þe wereldes Ende to heren salomones wisdom. against the  
*and* þis wiðerfulle folc ne wile liste ðe lorðewes wisdom. þe tehte Jews.  
 salemon. *and* alle wise witege here wisdom. *and* þefore wurð [Matt.xii.42.]

end shall be worse than their beginning. *Quatuor sunt genera hominum in sæculo juventium. Alii enim habent bonum principium et finem. Alii autem malum principium et finem. Alii quidam malum principium et bonum finem. Alii [bonum] principium et malum finem.* Four kinds of men live in this world. Some begin to lead a pure life in their youth, and hold forth therein and end well, as St. John the Baptist, who in his childhood became a hermit and continued therein and ended well ; and St. Martin, who began in his youth to lead a pure life and to be charitable, and held forth therein and ended it well ; and St. Nicholas, who in his childhood accustomed himself to fast, and observed that custom to the end of his life, and many others who so led their lives that the beginning was good, the middle better, and the end the best of all ; so that it was true what the wise man said concerning them, *Primo ne medium, medio ne discrepet primum*—Their life's end was comely, and also the middle and the beginning. Some men begin first to lead a pure life and afterwards abandon it, as did Judas Iscariot and others enough, as the holy gospel saith, thus saying, *Ex hoc multi abierunt retro, et jam cum illo non ambulant.* At first many followed our Lord and afterwards forsook him, and it was true what the prophet said concerning them, *Cepisti melius quam desinis*—Thou didst begin better than thou didst end ; *Item dissimilis quæ fuit, huic similis ille viro*—Their end was unlike their beginning. Some men at first lead an evil life and afterwards turn to God, and therein continue, as St. Paul and St. Mary Magdalen, who did as wise men taught her, when they spoke with her thus saying, *Hinc te melioribus offer*—Refrain thyself from evil habits and accustom thyself henceforth to do better. Some men lead a wicked life, so that the beginning is evil, and the longer it is the worse it is, and the end the worst of all, as the Jewish folk whom our Lord spoke against and said, *Cum immundus spiritus exierit ab homine vadit, &c.* When the evil spirit goeth out of a man and strayeth widely and wandereth everywhere, from dry place to others seeking rest. *Explorat, enim corda fidelium, quæ ideo dicuntur arida, quia sunt fervore sancti spiritus desiccata, et a mollitie fluxu cogitationis purgata.* The dry places that the foul spirit

[h]ere ende werse þene here biginninge. *Quatuor sunt genera hominum in seculo iuuenium. Alii enim habent bonum principium et finem. Alii autem malum principium et finem. Alii quidam malum principium et bonum finem. Alii principium et malum finem.* Fuwerkinne mannishe liuen on þis wored. Sume biginneð on here guwuðe clene lif leden. *and* heldeð forð þerone: *and* feire enden. also sein[t] iohan baptist. þe on his childhode bicom eremite *and* hield forð þerone: *and* faire endede. *and* sein[t] martin þe bigan on his guwuðe þe clene lif leden. *and* to bien almesful: *and* hield forð þerone. \**and* \* p. 64. faire it endede. *and* sein[t] nicholas. þe on his chilhode wunede him to fasten. *and* þat wune heold to his liues ende. *and* oðre manie þe swo ledden here lif. þat te biginninge was fair. *and* te middel fairere. *and* te ende alre fairest. Swo þat bi hem was soð þat þe wise seide [*P*]rimo ne medium. medio ne discrepet primum here lifes ende was bicumeliche. þe middel *and* þe biginninge. Sume men biginnen erest to leden clene lif. *and* eft hit forleten. also dide iudas scariot. *and* oðre inoge. also þe holic godspel seið þus queðinde. *Ex hoc multi abierunt retro. et iam cum illo non ambulant.* Fele folgeden erest ure drihten. *and* eft him forleten. *and* bi hem was soð þat þe prophete seide. *Cepisti melius quam desinis.* Ðu bigunne betere þene þu ende. *Item dissimilis que fuit. huic similis ille uiro.* Here ende was unliche here biginninge. Sume men leden erest iuel liflode. *and* turnen eft to god. *and* þeron seweð also seinte poul. *and* Seinte Marie magdaleine. þe dide also wise hire lerdn. þanne hie wið hire speken þus queðinde. *Hinc te melioribus offer.* wið-te þe wið iuel wune. *and* wune þe heðenforð to betere. Sume men leden unfele liflode. þat te biginninge beð iuel: *and* swo leng þe werse. *and* te ende alre werest. also þe iudeuisshe folc. þe ure helende wið spec: *and* seide. *Cum immundus spiritus<sup>1</sup> exierit ab* [*homine*] *uadit et cetera.* Ðenne þe \*iuele gost fared<sup>2</sup> ut of þe manne *and* weueð wide. *and* wandreð ouer al. fro drige stede to oder<sup>2</sup> sechende reste. *Explorat. enim corda fidelium que ideo dicuntur arida: quia sunt feruore sancti spiritus<sup>1</sup> desiccata. et a mollicie fluxe cogitationis purgata.* Ðe drige stedes þat þe fule

Four kinds of folk live in this world.

One kind lived like John the Baptist, or as St. Martin, or St. Nicholas.

Their whole lives were good.

Others, like Judas Iscariot, began well and ended badly.

Some, like Mary Magdalene, began badly and ended well.

Others begin badly and end very badly,

<sup>1</sup> MS. spiritus. like unto the Jews whom Christ reproved in the words of the text.

\* p. 65.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

wandereth about seeking rest for himself, denote the hearts of the believer, which are washed clean of anxieties, of carnal lusts, and dried through the heat of the true love to God and to man. Such hearts the evil spirit tempteth day and night, and trieth if he may therein find lodging; and when he may in none, he saith to himself, *Revertar in domum meam unde exivi*—I will turn again to my house from which I previously came out. *Et veniens invenit eam vacuum scopis mundatam et ornatam*—And cometh thereto and findeth it empty and with besom clean swept and neatly trimmed. This Jewish folk's law was and yet is, that on the eighth day after the child's birth the friends devised a name for the child, and with a stone, which for the nonce served as a knife, cut the foreskin of his procreating member; and this law our Lord instituted by the patriarch Abraham and bade him observe it, and all his offspring after him; and that rite cleansed them of sins, as baptism doth us. *Et habuit circumcisio eandem Judei quam habet nunc baptismus, delendo peccatum, sed non aperiendo cœlum*. And that rite had then all the virtues which baptism now has, for that cleansed man of sin even as baptism now doth, but it opened not to them the bliss of heaven as baptism doth to us. And this rite banished the foul spirit out of the child, and he wandered widely, straying a long time seeking another place in believing men. And the children were cleansed of sin, and thus continued until they received world's wisdom and man's mind. Then came again the foul spirit which was previously banished out of him, and findeth it empty of evil spirits, and cleansed of foul sins, and decked with innocency. *Et tunc vadit et alios sumit septem spiritus nequiores se et ingressi habitant ibi*. And then went the foul spirit and seven other spirits with him worse than he himself was, and encompassed the child and watched it in every way and enticed it and embraced it and controlled it altogether, so that it again fell into its first (evil) habits; then came the foul spirit again into his abode and misleadeth that child, ever longer the more so, to their will; and therefore was their end worse than their beginning. The seven foul spirits of whom I previously spoke, were the seven devils' sins that our Lord drove out of St. Mary Magdalen, and therefore was



gost wandreð abuten sechende him reste. þat is þe bileffulle mannes heorte þe clene ben wasshen of þe embeponke : of fleshliche lustes. *and* drigen bi þe hete of soðe lue to god *and* to men. Swiche hertes fondeð þe fule gost : deies *and* nihtes. *and* cunneð gif he mai þer-inne herbergen. *and* þenne he a none ne mai he seið to him seluen *Reuertar in domum meam unde exiui.* The wile turnen agen to mine huse þe ich er ut of wende. *Et ueniens in[uenit] eam<sup>1</sup> uacuum scopis mundatam et ornatam.* <sup>1</sup> *MS. ean.* *And* cumeð þerto *and* fint hit emti. *and* mid beseme clene swopen. *and* faire maked. þis iudeuisse folkes lage was. *and* get is. þat on þe ehtende dai after þe childes burde : þe frend shopen þe child name. *and* mid stone þe for þe nones was maked for to keruen þat fel biforen on his strenende lime. *and* þis lage sette ure drihten bi þe patriarche abraham. *and* bed him holden hit. *and* al his ofspring after him. *and* þat hem clensede of sinnes also us doð fulnenge. [*E*]t *habuit circumcisio eandem<sup>2</sup> iudei quam habet nunc baptismus delendo peccatum. sed non aperiendo celum.* *and* þe lage hadde þo alle þe mihtes þe haueð nu fulluht. for þat clensede þe man of sinne : swo doð nu fulluht. ac it ne openede \*hem noht þe blisse of heuene also fulcneng doð us. *and* þis lage flemeð þe fule gost ut of þe child. *and* he wandrede wide weruende<sup>3</sup> longe sechende him oðer stede. on bileffulle manne. *and* þe children weren clensed of sinnen. *and* þus bilefden forð þat hie understonden wurldes wit *and* mannes munde. Þanne com eft þe fule gost þe was er flemd ut of him. *and* fint it emti of iuele gostes. *and* clensed of fule sinnes. *and* diht mid loðlesnesse. *Et tunc uadit et alios sumit uite[m] spiritus nequiores se et ingressi habitant ibi.* *and* þanne ferde þe fule gost. *and* seuene oðre gostes mid him forcuðere þen him self were. *and* bitrumed þat child. *and* waiteden hit on eche wise. *and* forhteten hit *and* biwunden it. *and* biwalden it al. swo þat it eft<sup>4</sup> bifel<sup>4</sup> on his oðer wune. þenne com þe fule gost ef[t] into his wunienge. *and* forteð þat child : swo leng swo more to here wille. *and* þer fore was here ende werse þane here biginnenge. þe seuen fule gostes þat ich nu embe was. waren þe seuen difles giltes : þat ure drihten drof ut of seinte marie magdaleine. *and* forþi weren

The dry places denote the hearts of believers,

which are tempted by foul spirits.

Circumcision among the Jews corresponded to baptism among Christians.

It cleansed the child of sin.

<sup>2</sup> ? uirtutem or uim omitted.

It opened not, as baptism does, the bliss of heaven.

\* p. 66.

<sup>3</sup> *MS. weruende.*

At baptism the evil spirit left the child.

<sup>4</sup> *MS. est.*

When it afterwards fell into sin the devil came again into the child.



the beginning of her life such as they were ;<sup>1</sup> [but] the end became fair and good and blissful. So let all ours become, as our Lord willeth. *Qui vivit et regnat, &c.* AMEN.

## XV.

## PALM SUNDAY.

THE crowds which went before and followed after our Lord, cried out saying, Hosanna to the Son of David, blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. It is customary for each church-congregation to go this day in procession ; and this custom hath its rise in the holy procession which our Saviour made toward the place where he would suffer death. *Et cum venisset Bethphage ad montem Olivarum, mittens duos de discipulis jussit adduci asinam et sedit super eam.* When that he came to Bethphage (so is called the town in which the priests dwell) near to Jerusalem, at the foot of the mountain which is called Mount Olivet, then sent he two of his disciples into the city of Jerusalem, and bade them bring a beast of burden to ride on ; not a steed nor a palfrey nor a fair mule. But though he be lord of all lords and king of all kings, nevertheless he sent after the meanest of all beasts to ride on, that is an ass, and gave an example of meekness in his acts, as he doth in another place in his speech, thus saying, *Discite a me, quia mitis sum et humilis corde.*—Learn of me, for I am meek and gentle in heart. And the two messengers went and made known in the city that the Saviour was coming thither ; and they found an ass with her foal, and led it to him, and the holy apostles laid their clothes thereupon, and our Lord rode thereon into the holy city, and the citizens adorned the high street through which he would proceed to the holy temple, and hung it with palms and with other rich weeds, and they went out to meet him, and bore in their hands blossoms, some of palm-twigs, others of olive-boughs, as the Holy Book saith, *Occurrunt turbæ cum floribus et palmis redemptori obviam, &c.*—The people came out to meet him with blossoms and with palms, and received him in procession as they would a king, and those who went before and those who came after cried with a loud voice, thus

<sup>1</sup> And therefore, &c. The sense seems to be, *although the beginning of her life was such as it was, the end, &c.*

here biginni[n]g of here liflode swich se he were. þe ende warð fair. *and* god. *and* blisful. Swo wurðe ure alre. þat wile ure drihten. *Qui uiuit et Regnat.*

## XV.

## DOMINICA PALMARUM.

*Turbe que precedebant dominum. et que sequebantur clamabant dicentes. osanna filio dauid? benedictus qui uenit in nomine domini.* It is custume þat ech chirehsocne goð þis dai a procession. *and* þis wune haueð þe biginnigge of þe holie procession. þe ure \*helende makede to ward te stede þer he wolde deð þolen. \* p. 67.

Of Palm-Sunday processions.

*Et cum uenisset bethfage ad montem oliuarum. Mittens [duos] de discipulis iussit adduci asinam et sedit super eam.* Þo þe com to bethfage Swo hatte þe þrop þe preste one wunien. bi sides ierusalem on þe fot of þe dune þe men clepen munt oliuete. þo sende tweien of hise diciples into þe bureh of ierusalem. *and* bed hem bringen á wig one te riden. noðer stede. ne palefrei. ne fair mule. ac þeh he alre louerdas louerd. *and* alre kingene ki[n]g. napeles he sende after þe alre unwurðeste wig one to riden. *and* þat is asse. *and* gaf us forbisne of admodnesse on his dede. also he doð on oðre stede on his speche þus queðinde.

Jesus sent two disciples from Bethphage to Jerusalem.

*Discite a me? quia mitis sum et humilis corde.* lerneð of me for þat ich am milde *and* admod on herte. *and* þo tweien sanderbodes ferdan *and* cudden in þe bureh. þat þe helende was piderward. *and* funden an asse mid fole. *and* ledden hit to-genes him. *and* þe holie apostles leiden here cloþes þeruppe *and* ure helende rod þerone? into þe holie burh. *and* þat burh fole hiltan þe hege strete *and* bihengen it mid palmes. *and* mid oðre riche wedes. þer he wolde þurh faren to þe holi temple. *and* wenden ut togenes him. *and* beren on here honde blostme sum palm twig. *and* sum boh of oliue also þe holie boc seið. *Occurrunt turbe cum floribus et palmis redemptori o[b]uiam. et cetera.* Ðet \*folc com togenes him. mid blostmen. *and* mid palmes. *and* \* p. 68. understoden him mid procession. swo me ki[n]g shal. *and* þo þe ferdan bi foren him. *and* ȝo þe after him comen. reinden lude

They brought him an ass, on which he rode into Jerusalem.

The people strewed the way with palm blossoms and with olive boughs,

saying, *Hosanna filio David benedictus qui venit in nomine Domini*—Let there be praise to the son of David, blessed be he that cometh in God's name. And the children who were in front did as the gospel saith, *Pueri Hebræorum viam pro, &c.*—The children bridged the way before our Lord, some with their clothes and some with boughs which they broke off the trees; and so brought him into the holy temple as unto his earthly throne. Thus made our Saviour his holy procession from Bethphage to Jerusalem; and each Christian man maketh this day his procession from church to church and back again, and it betokeneth the holy procession which our Lord made this day; and that may each man understand who knoweth what those two names, Bethphage and Jerusalem, denote. *Bethphage interpretatur domus buccæ, vel buccarum sive maxillarum, et significat ecclesiam in qua buccæ funguntur officio suo peccata confitendo, veniam postulando, deum laudando, carnem Christi manducando, et sanguinem ejus bibendo, gratias agendo.* Bethphage is called in English 'house of mouths'; and it denoteth holy church, in which men employ the offices of their mouths when they tell their sins and pray for forgiveness, and praise our Lord Jesus Christ, and enjoy his flesh and his blood, that is the holy housel (sacrament), and render thanks unto him. *Jerusalem interpretatur visio pacis, et item significat ecclesiam in qua pax vera videtur dum passio Christi recolitur, et pacis osculum datur.* Jerusalem is called sight of peace, and denoteth holy church, wherein believing men are at peace, when the priest reminds them of Christ's passion, and receives from the cup the token of peace, that is the mass-kiss, and dismisseth the people. And thereby shows that our Lord is, through the holy offering, reconciled to believing men; and therefore the church is denoted by Bethphage, when the procession goeth out of Jerusalem and again when it cometh in. Let us take heed then whether our procession is made according to our Lord's procession. In his procession some went before him and made ready his way toward Jerusalem, and others covered the ass with their clothes, and some strewed the way with boughs which they broke off the trees. Those who made ready the way before him are teachers of the people, bishops and priests, who with their wise teaching ride and make God's way into men's

stefne þus queðinde. [O]*sanna filio dauid benedictus qui uenit* and sang  
*in nomine domini.* Silof dauðes bern blesced bie he þe cumeð <sup>and sang</sup>  
 a godes name, *and* þo children þe weren biforen diden alse þe <sup>'Hosanna to</sup>  
 godspel seið. *Pueri hebreorum viam pro et cetera.* Þe children <sup>the Son of</sup>  
 briggeden þe wei biforen ure drihten. sume mid here cloðes. <sup>David.'</sup>  
*and* sume mid boges þe hie breken of<sup>1</sup> þe trewes *and* swo him <sup>The children</sup>  
 brohten into þe holie temple. alse in his heorðliche heg settle. <sup>also did the</sup>  
 Þus makede ure helende his holie procession. fro betfage to <sup>same.</sup>  
 ierusalem. *and* elhc cristene man makeð þis dai procession fro  
 chirche to chirche. *and* eft agen. *and* bitocneð þe holie pro-  
 cession þe he makede þis dai. *and* þat mai ech man under-  
 stonden. þe wot wat bitocneð þese tweie names. betfage. *and* <sup>1 MS. os.</sup>  
 ierusalem. *Betfage interpretatur domus bucce. uel buccarum*  
*sive maxillarum. et significat ecclesiam in qua bucce fun-*  
*guntur officio suo peccata confitendo ueniam postulando. deum*  
*laudando. Carnem christi manducando. et sanguinem eius*  
*bibendo. gratias agendo.* Betfage is cleped on englisse muðene <sup>Of the mean-</sup>  
 hus. *and* bitocneð holie chirche. þat men noten inne here <sup>ing of Beth-</sup>  
 muðes wike. þanne hie seien here sinnes. *and* forgiuenesse <sup>phage and</sup>  
 bidden. *and* ure louerd ihesu christ herien. *and* bruken his fles <sup>Jerusalem.</sup>  
*and* his blod. þat his<sup>2</sup> þe holi husel. *and* him \*þanken. *Ieru-*  
*salem interpretatur visio pacis et item significat ecclesiam in qua*  
*pax uera uidetur dum passio christi recolitur. et pacis osculum*  
*datur.* Ierusalem is cleped soð<sup>3</sup> of sahtnesse. *and* bitocneð <sup>Bethphage</sup>  
 holie chirche þer bileffulle men inne beð sehte. þenne prest <sup>denotes Holy</sup>  
 cristes þroweinge minegeð. *and* of þe calice understondeð toce <sup>Church.</sup>  
 of sehtnesse. þat is messe cos. *and* þe folc sent. *and* þerwide  
 bitocneð þat ure drihten is þureh þe holie loc wið bileffulle men  
 maked sehte. *and* þerfore chirche haueð þe tocinge of bethphage  
 þenne þe procession ut goð of ierusalem. *and* eft þenne it in  
 cumeð. Nime we þenne geme gif ure procession bi maked  
 after ure helendes procession. On his procession ferde sume  
 biforen him *and* makede his weie toward ierusalem. *and* sume  
 briggeden þe asse mid here cloðes. *and* sume mid boges þe hie  
 breken of þe trewes. Ðo þe þe weie makeden biforen him. bien  
 folkes lorþeawes. bisshopes *and* prestes. þe mid here wise lore <sup>Those who</sup>  
 went before  
 our Lord

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.  
\* p. 69.

Jerusalem  
signifies 'light  
of peace.'

<sup>3</sup> Read siht.

hearts. Those who covered the ass with their clothes are those who instruct the people with the good examples of their good deeds. Those who strewed the way of the ass with the broken boughs are those who teach the people to receive God, not with their good deeds, but with their wise speech. Those who came after him are those who lead their lives here as their instructors teach them. Those who were beside him on his right hand are those who lead a clean life to please God and not for words of praise. Those who were on his left hand are those who live a pure life, not to please God, but to have words of praise. The ass upon which our Lord sat are those sinners who have all their thoughts upon earthly riches; and they are loath to forsake sin and are unwilling to amend it, for it seemeth to them that God's behests weigh heavily; and nevertheless if they fulfil them they shall receive endless reward in heaven. May our Lord Jesus Christ, who to-day made his holy procession into Jerusalem (which each church to-day keeps in remembrance), teach and aid us so to follow his holy earthly procession, that we may be in the holy procession which he will make with his chosen on Doomsday from the judgment into heaven. *Quod nobis præstet qui sæcula per omnia regnat.* AMEN.

## XVI.

## EASTER DAY.

*HÆC est dies quam fecit dominus exultemus et letemur in ea.* This day hath our Lord made to gladden and to rejoice us, thanks be unto him; and he hath prepared that holy feast which he speaketh of, thus saying, *Ecce prandium meum paratum*—My table (feast) is made; and he biddeth us all thereto, thus saying, Come to the table (feast) and receive bread. But before that we bend our steps to the holy table (feast) and receive the bread, let us do as the apostle has bidden us, thus saying, *Probet autem se ipsum homo, et sic de pane illo edat et de calice bibat*—Let each man prove himself, and if he feeleth that he is worthy to approach thereto, then let him receive the housel and drink of the cup. The man receiveth it worthily who cometh thereto in a becoming manner



rideð. *and* maked godes weie in to mannes heorte. Ðo þe denote  
 briggeden þe asse mid here cloðes. ben þo þe wisseð þe folc bishops and  
 mid faire forbisne of here weldede. Ðo þe briggeden þe asse priests,  
 mid þe brokene boges. ben þo þe leren þe folc to understonden teachers of  
 god noht mid weldede. ac mid wise speche. þo þe after him the people.  
 comen ben þo þe here lif [leden] also here lorðeawas hem lereð. Those who  
 þo þe bisides weren on his riht half. ben þo þe elene lif leden to covered the  
 quemende gode: noht for hereworde. þo þe on his lift hond ass with their  
 comen ben þo þe clenliche liuen \*noht forto quemende gode: clothes signi-  
 ac for hereword to hauen. Ðe asse þe ure helende uppe set. fy those  
 ben þo forsinegede þe hauen al here þonc uppen eorðliche who taught  
 richeise. *and* sinne hem is loð to leten. *and* unwill[i]che to bete. the people by  
 for hem þincheð þat godes hese heuieliche semeð. *and* naðeles good example.  
 gif hie ful don hie shulen on heuene endelese mede fon. Those on the  
 louerd ihesu christ þe maðede into ierusalem þis dai his holie right hand  
 procession. þe ech chirche to-dai minegeð. wisse *and* fulste us denote those  
 swo to folgen his holi cor[þ]liche procession þat we mo<sup>1</sup> ben on þe \* p. 70.  
 holie procession þe he wile maken a domes dai mid hise chosene: The ass  
 fro þe dome in to heuene. *Quod nobis prestat qui secula per denotes those  
 omnia regnat.* their sins and  
 will not re-  
 pent of them.

## XVI.

## IN DIE PASCHE.

**H***EC est dies quam fecit dominus exultemus et letemur in ea.* This day has  
 þis dai haueð ure drihten maked to gladien. *and* to blissen our Lord  
 us þonked wurðe him. *and* giarked þat holie gestninge. þe he prepared a  
 offe speeð þus queðinde. *Ecce prandium meum paratum.* Mi holy feast for  
 bord is maked. *and* us bidded<sup>2</sup> alle þerto þus seggende. *Venite* <sup>2 So in MS.</sup>  
*prandium* Cumeð to borde *and* understondeð bred. ac er þenne He invites us  
 þe<sup>3</sup> holie bord bugen. *and* þat bred understonde do we also þe to come to  
 apostel bad. seiende þus. *Probet autem se ipsum homo. et sic* <sup>3 ? read we.</sup> his table  
*de pane illo edat et de calice bibat.* Proue ech man him seluen.  
*and* gif he feleð þat he is wurðe þer to: þenne understonde he  
 þat husel. *and* drinke of þe calice. þe man hit understondeð  
 wurðliche þe cumeð þerto on bicumeliche wise. *and* mid in a becoming  
 manner,



and with comely garments, and at a proper time. In a becoming manner cometh the man who first showeth the priest his sins and forsaketh and bewaileth them, and taketh thereof good instruction; and secondly, taketh the holy ashes upon his head and the six pains which thereto belong, *scilicet vigilias, labores, saccum, inedia, sitim*, that is, vigils and toil, hard cloths (sackcloth), smart blows, seldom to eat, and less often to drink; thirdly, to go in procession on Palm Sunday; fourthly, to receive absolution on Sheer Thursday, which looseneth the sin-bonds; fifthly, to creep to the cross on Long Friday; sixthly, to go on Easter Eve around the font, which denoteth the holy sepulchre; and seventhly, to go to the holy table and to eat the bread. Becoming garments are of two kinds, bodily and spiritual; the bodily garments are of many kinds, but of them I speak not, but I do of the spiritual, which are also of many kinds, and they are all good with him who receiveth the housel (sacrament); but two thereof are such that no man may receive [the others] for his own salvation except he have upon him one of them, which are thus called, *Vestis innocentie, vestis misericordie*. The first is innocency, the second is amendment. *Vestis innocentie restituitur in baptismo, dicente sacerdote, 'accipe vestem candidam et immaculatam.'* The man receiveth innocency at his baptism, and that is denoted by the chrism cloth with which the priest envelopes the child, and thus saith—Receive white and clean shroud (clothing). This shroud hath each man upon him after his baptism, all the while that he keepeth himself from doing or saying or thinking anything that may make him the more unworthy before God or more hateful to man, which is evil for the soul. This garment is very comely and profitable to each man to have when he receiveth the housel. The second spiritual shroud of which I have spoken is mercy, which is also named tender-heartedness. Tender-hearted is the man who the more bitterly grieveth on account of his sins and forsaketh them and amendeth and prayeth for mercy, as our Lord hath bidden us, thus saying, *Miserere animæ tuæ placens Deo*—Have mercy upon thy own soul, then pleasest thou God. Merciful is the man who pitieth his neighbours' misfortune and is pleased with the prosperity of them all, and is sorely grieved on account of poor men's distress, and consoleth them with his good deeds. No man who hath sinned can, without these garments, receive

bicumeliche wede. *and* on bicumeliche time. On bicumeliche wise \*cunneð þe man þe Erest sheweð preste his sinnes *and* forleteð *and* bimurneð *and* nimeð þerof god wissinge. *and* oðer siðe þe holie axen uppen his heued. *and* þe six pinen þe þerto bilien. *scilicet vigilias. labores. saccum. inedia. sitim.* þat is *Six penances.* wecche *and* swinch. harde cloðes. smerte dintes. selde cten *and* lesse drinken. Þridde siðe palm sunedeies procession. feorðe siðes shereðuresdaies absolucio[n] þe liðe þe sinne bendes. þe fifte siðe crepe to cruche on lange fridai sixte siðe on ester euen gon abuten þe fantston. þe bitocneð þe holie sepulcre. *and* þe seuwe siðe þat holie bord bugen *and* þat bred bruken. bicumeliche wede ben tweire kinne. lichamliche *and* gostliche. þe lichamliche wedes ben manie kinnes. ac of hem ne speke ich noht ac do of þe gostliche. þe ben ec fele kinnes. *and* alle hie bien faire him þe þe husel underfoð. ac two peroffe ben swiche þat no man ne mai underfo. him seluen to hele bute he haue here oðer on him. þe ben þus clepede. *Vestis innocencie. Vestis misericordie.* an is loðlesnesse oðer sinbote. *Vestis innocencie restituitur in baptismo dicente sacerdote [A]ccipe uestem candidam et immaculatam.* loðlesnesse understondeð þe man at his foleninge. *and* þat bitocneð þe crisme cloð. þe þe prest biwindeð þat child mide. *and* þus seið. Underfo shrud wit *and* elene. þis shrud haueð ech man on him after his fulninge. alle þe wile þe he him beregeð þat he ne do ne ne queðe. ne ne ðenche no þing for þat he bie unwurðere gode! \*ne loðere men! þe iuele is soule! Þis wede is wel bicumeliche *and* biheue ech man to hauen þenne he husel underfoð. Ðet oðer gostliche shrud ich embe spece is mildhertnesse. þe is nemed ec! armhertnesse armheorted is þe man. þe swiðere reoweð his sinne. *and* he hem forlet *and* bet. *and* milce bit. also ure drihten bad seien þus. *Miserere anime tue placens deo.* haue reoðe of þin ogen sovle. þenne likeste gode. Mildheorted beð þe man þe reouð his nehgebures unselðe. *and* likeð here alre selðe *and* offinð sore wrecche mannes wanrede. *and* freureð hem mid his weldede. No man þe sineged haueð ne mai wiðuten þus<sup>1</sup> wedes holi husel under-

in befitting garments. and at a fit time. \* p. 71.

The font betokens the holy sepulchre.

Two kinds of befitting garments.

Of the garb of innocency.

Of the garb of mercy.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS. Read þise.

the holy housel, except for the eternal injury of soul and body ; and each man who receiveth it without either of these garments shall be shamefully driven out of this holy feast, and bound together hands and feet, cast into the horrible pit of hell, according to our Lord's word, which saith to such men, *Amice quomodo huc intrasti non habens vestem nuptialem, &c.*—How camest thou in hither with uncomely garments ? This day is the fitting time to receive the housel. *Quia hæc dies quam fecit Dominus, non quod magis hanc quam alias, sed quia majora quam in aliis a morte resurgendo, et nos a morte resuscitando*—Because our Lord, who made all other days, made this day, but he manifested in another way his might and showed more mercy to mankind on this day than on any other. When he arose from death he raised us with him. *Unde exultemus et lætemur in ea.* He fetched us out of hell-woe and therewith gladdened us ; and if we follow him he will give us heaven's weal, and therewith will rejoice us to-day, thanks be unto him ! Therefore this day is called Easter Day, that is, day of arising, because that he arose from the dead on this day ; and we all do so when we receive the holy housel, if we go to meet him in purity of living and in true belief, and are at peace with all men. Our Lord who biddeth us to this feast and bringeth us to his holy flesh and to his holy blood, and permitteth us to partake of it, thereof speaketh, thus saying, *Accipite et comedite ; &c. Bibite ex hoc omnes, hic est enim sanguis meus novi testamenti, &c.*—Receive this and eat it all of you, for it is my body which shall redeem you all. He offereth us also his holy blood, which he says shall be shed to redeem you, and saith that these two things are our food. *Caro mea vere est cibus et sanguis meus vere est potus*—My flesh is meat indeed and my blood is drink indeed ; and after that he saith, *Nisi manducaveritis carnem filii hominis et biberitis ejus sanguinem non habebitis vitam in vobis*—Ye can have no life in you except ye live on my flesh and on my blood. That housel which ye receive is his holy flesh and his blood. First, there is the sacramental bread and wine, and through the holy words which our Saviour himself said with his holy mouth, and which the priest, after him, saith at 'still mass,' the bread is turned to flesh and the wine into blood. *Set in carne remanet forma color et sapor*—But in the holy flesh remain the form and colour and smell of the host,

fon: bute to eche harme his soule *and* lichame *and* ech man  
 þe hit underfoð wičuten eičer þese wedes shal ben shameliche  
 driuen ut of þis holi gestninge. *and* bunden togedere his honden.  
*and* his fet. *and* worpen in to þe ateliche pit of helle bi ure  
 drihtenes word þe seið to swiche men. *Amice quomodo huc*  
*intrasti non habens uestem nuptialem et cetera* liwu come þu  
 ider in mid unbicumeliche weden. þis dai is bicumelich time  
 husel to underfon. *Quia hec dies quam fecit dominus. non*  
*quod magis hanc quam alias. sed quia maiora quam in aliis á*  
*morte resurgendo. et nos á morte resuscitando.* for þat þis makede  
 ure drihten þe makede alle oðre. ac he kidde oðerluker his  
 mihte. *and* mankin more milce dide on þis dai: þanne on ani  
 oðre. Ðo he aros of deače rerde us mid him. *Vnde exultemus*  
*et letemur in ea*, he us fette ut of helle wowe. *and* þermide us  
 gledede. *and* gif we him folgieð he gifð us heuene wele *and*  
 þermide us blisseð to dai þonked. wurče him. forþi þis dai is  
 cleped estrene dai. þat is aristes dai. for þat þe he þis dai aros  
 of deače. *and* we alle don: \* þanne we holi husel undernimen.  
 gif we ben þe togenes on elene liflode. *and* on rihte leue. *and*  
 wið alle men sehte. Ure louerd þe us bit to þis gestninge. *and*  
 bringe us to his holi fleis *and* to his holi blod *and* leue us hem  
 to bruken. *and* þus queðinde. *Accipite et comedite ex hoc*  
*omnes hic est e. c. s. m. n. et cetera.* Understondeð þis *and*  
 brukeð it alle. for it is mi lichame þe giu shal alle lesen.  
 he bet us ec his holi blod þe shal ben shad giu to lesende  
*and* seið þat þese two þing bien ure bileue. *Caro mea uere*  
*est cibus et sanguis meus uere est potus.* Mi fleis is wis  
 mete. *and* mi blod iwis drinke *and* after þat he seið. *Nisi*  
*manducaueritis carnem filii hominis et biberitis eius sangui-*  
*nem non habebitis uitam in uobis.* Ne muge hauen no lif on  
 giu bute ge liuen bi mi fleis *and* bi mi blod. þat husel þe ge  
 understonden: is his holi fleis *and* his blod. Erest it beð  
 ouelete *and* win. *and* þureh þe holi word þe ure helende him self  
 seide mid his holi muð: *and* efter him prest hem seið atte  
 swimesse turneð þe bred to fleis *and* þe win to blod. *Set in*  
*carne remanet forma color et sapor.* ac on þe holi fleis bileueð þe

Those who  
ap1 roach  
God's table  
must have on  
these gar-  
ments.

To-day is the  
proper time  
to receive the  
husel.

On this day  
Christ arose  
from the dead.

Easter signi-  
fies resurrec-  
tion.

\* p. 73.

Our Lord  
invites us to  
his feast,

and offers us  
his flesh and  
blood.

We can have  
no life in us  
except we eat  
and drink of  
this food.

and in the holy blood remain the colour and smell of wine. Greater might doth our Saviour than the holy words which he spake with his mouth when he giveth to mankind [his flesh and blood].

Nevertheless when a man eateth and drinketh through the bodily nature, the bread turneth to flesh and the drink to blood; because God's word may turn the bread to flesh and the wine to blood; and so it doth; and that is the manifold delicacy which is the dainty of all dainties that all christian men ought this day to enjoy, because this day is called Easter Day, that is dainty-day (day of dainties), and the dainty is the *housel*, and no man may say *how seely* (i.e. how good) it is. *Quia est pretium mundi*, for it is worth all the world and is better than all the world. This is the holy manna which our Lord sent as sleeting snow, as the prophet saith, *Pluit ille manna ad manducandum et panem cœli dedit eis; panem angelorum manducavit homo*—He caused manna to rain down upon them for food, and gave them the bread of heaven; and men did eat angels' food. *Manna interpretatur, quid est hoc*—*Manna* signifies *What is this?* and when our Lord sent this meat from heaven to the folk of Israel it became in each man's mouth whatsoever meat he most loved; and it denoteth the holy housel, which each christian man now receiveth, which is to the man who is cleansed of sin, or has begun to be cleansed, the highest and sweetest delicacy, and to each man's soul who hath not forsaken all great sins, and hath not amended or begun to amend, the bitterest of all bitters, as the apostle saith, *Qui manducat corpus domini et bibit, &c.*—Each man that receiveth the holy housel unworthily receiveth to himself eternal pain and endless woe. Let each of us now take heed to himself whether we have come in a befitting manner; that is, to true shrift, to holy ashes (on Ash Wednesday), to procession on Palm Sunday; to absolution on Sheer Thursday; to the holy cross on Long Friday; to procession about the font on Easter Eve. And if we have come with the comely garment of innocency, that is, cleansing, so that we have forsaken our sins, and by the confessor's direction have amended, or begun to amend and to pray for mercy, then may we go in a becoming manner to God's table and worthily partake of his body, and through the holy



shap and hiu. and smul of ouelete. and on þe holi blod hēw and smul of win. More mihte doð ure helende þenne þe holi word þe he þurh his muð spec. þanne he giueð mannes cuinde. and Naþeles þanne man eteð and drinkeð þureh þe lichames cunde þat bred wurð to fleis. and þe drinke to blod. for þi mai godes word turnen þe ouelete to fleis. and þat win to blod. and swo doð. and þat is þe felefolde heste. þe is alre hestene heste þat alle cristene men agen to dai to noten. for þat þis dai is cleped estre dai þat is estene da. and te este is husel. and no man ne mai seien husel<sup>a</sup>! wu god it is. *Quia est precium mundi*. for it is wurð al þe wereld. and betere þene \*al þe wereld. þis is þe holi manne þe ure drihten sende also snow sleðrende also þe prophete seið. *Pluit ille manna ad manducandum et panem celi dedit eis*. [*P*]anem angelorum manducauit homo. he let hem reine manne to bi-liue. and gef hem bred of heuene. and men eten engleue [bred]. *Manna interpretatur. quid est hoc?* Manne bitocneð wat is tis? and þo ure drihten sende þis mete fro heuene þe israclisse folke! it warð on eches muð wat mete se he mest luuede. and bitocneð holi husel! þe ech cristeman understont nuðe. þe is þe manne hegeste sweteste este þe is of sinne clenسد. oðer bigunne to clensende. and alre bitere biterest eches mannes soule þe ne haueð alle michele sinnes forleten. and bet. oðer bigunnen also þa<sup>1</sup> apostel seið. *Qui manducat corpus domini et bibit et cetera*. Ech þe understandeð þat holi husel unwurðliche he understant him seluen eche pine. and endelese wowe. Nime we nu geme ure ech agen him seluen. gif we bien cumen on bicumeliche wise. þat is to soð shrifte. to holi axen a palm sunedai! to procession. a shereðursdai to absolucium. a lange-fridai to holi cruche. an ester euen to procession [abuten þe fanstone]. and gif we ben cumene mid bicumeliche wede. of lodlesnesse þat is clensinge. swo þat we hauen ure sinnes forleten. and bi shriftes wissenge bet. oðer bigunnen to beten. and milce bidden. þanne muge we bicumeliche to godes bord! bugen. and his bode wurðliche bruken. and þureh þe holi este cumen

The bread and wine are through Christ's word turned into veritable flesh and blood.

It is the daintiest of all dainties.

It is like the manna sent from heaven. \* p. 74.

[Ps. lxxviii. 25.]

Manna was a type of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

Let each take heed how he receives the Sacrament,

and let each be clothed with the befitting garments, of which we have before spoken.

<sup>a</sup> A play upon the word *husel*, as if made up of *hu* = how, and *sel* = good : in ll. 8, 9, there is a similar play upon *estre* and *este*, and in ll. 34, 35, upon *estre*, *este*, and *ariste*.



dainty come to our arising (resurrection). *Quod nobis præstet qui hodie surrexit et vivit cum Deo Patre in unitate Spiritus Sancti.*

## XVII.

### THE FIRST SUNDAY AFTER EASTER.

*Stetit Jesus in medio discipulorum suorum et dixit eis, 'pax vobis.'*

*Legitur in evangelio quod dominus ante passionem sedit dum discipulos docuit; inter passionem et resurrectionem, jacuit et quievit; post passionem vero stetit et pacem eis optavit.* We read in the holy gospel-book that our Saviour suffered on the holy rood and underwent death, and with his short death redeemed us from eternal death; and on the third day arose from the dead, and raised us with him, and promised us eternal life in bliss, if we lead our life now as he directeth us. In this 'tale' we notice three things:—The first is, that before his passion he often sat and taught wisdom to them that followed him; the second is, that between his passion and his resurrection he lay in his sepulchre and was still, and for that cause the three days before Easter are called 'still days' (or days of silence); the third is, that he stood among his disciples and bade them 'peace,' as St. Luke saith in his gospel, thus saying, *Stetit Jesus, &c.* Our Lord stood among his disciples and bade them peace and reconciliation; 'peace' because he had made them free from the devil's thralldom in which they and all their offspring had lived, from the time that Adam our first-father sinned until that our Saviour with his death redeemed them [all]; 'reconciliation,' because he reconciled the Heavenly Father to mankind and opened for them the gates of Paradise, which through Eve's guilt were previously closed against them. *His tribus modis ponimur in hujus exilii miseria, quod alii sedent, alii jacent, alii stant.* In these three ways we dwell in this wretched world. Some sit, and some lie, and some of us stand. When we have forsaken our sins, lamented, and amended, and have been houseled (received the Lord's supper), then are we high; but as soon as we sin we have come from high to low; and though we be sorry for our sins, and have purposed to forsake them, nevertheless we sit until we forsake them and amend, as our Lord admonishes us by the prophets, thus saying, *Surgite postquam sedistis, &c.*—Arise when

to Ariste<sup>1</sup>. *Quod nobis prestet qui hodie surrexit et uiuit cum* <sup>1 Looks like</sup>  
*deo patre in unitate spiritus sancti.* <sup>driste in MS.</sup>

## XVII.

[DOMINICA I POST PASCHA.]

*Stetit ihesus in medio discipulorum suorum & dixit eis.* *pax* p. 75.

*uobis. legitur in ewangelio quod dominus ante passionem*  
*sedit dum discipulos docuit inter passionem et resurrectionem*  
*iacuit et quieuit. post passionem uero stetit. pacem eis opt[a]uit.*

we reden on þe holi godspel boc. þat ure helende þrowede on þe <sup>The resurrec-</sup>  
 holi rode. *and* deað þolede. *and* mid his eðeliche deaðe lesde us <sup>tion of Christ.</sup>

of eche deaðe. *and* on þe þridde dai aros of deaðe. *and* arerde us

mid him. *and* bihet us eche lif on blisse. gif we lede ure lif nu

swo he us wisseð. We nime genie of þre þing on þis tale. on is <sup>The three</sup>  
 þat biforen his þroweunge he sat ofte *and* tahte wisdom þan þe <sup>days before</sup>  
 him folgeden. oðer is þat bitwenen his þrowenge *and* his ariste <sup>Easter are</sup>  
 he lai on his sepulchre *and* swiede. *and* for þat ben þe þre dage <sup>called 'still</sup>  
 biforen estre cleped swidages. Ðe þridde is þat he stod among <sup>days.'</sup>

hise diciples<sup>2</sup>. *and* bed hem frið alse seint lucas seið on his <sup>2 Originally</sup>  
 godspelle þus quedinde. [S]*tetit ihesus*<sup>3</sup> *et cetera.* Ure louerd <sup>deciple.</sup>

stod among his diciples: *and* bed hem frið. *and* sehtnesse. <sup>3 MS. ihe.</sup>  
 Frið: for þat he hadde maked hem fre: of þe deules þralsipe. <sup>Of the word</sup>  
 þe hie hadden *and* al ofspri[n]g one wuned. fro þe time þe <sup>of peace that</sup>  
 adam ure forme fader gilte forte þat ure helende mid his deaðe <sup>our Lord</sup>  
 hem alesde. Sehtnesse: for þat þe he makede sehte þe heuen- <sup>gave his</sup>  
 liche fader wið ma[n]kin. *and* opene[de] togenes hem þe giate <sup>disciples after</sup>  
 of paradis. þe þurh eue gilte wið hem was er tined. *His tribus* <sup>his resurrec-</sup>  
*Modis ponimur in huius exiliū miseria quod alii sedent, alii* <sup>tion.</sup>  
*iacent. alii stant.* On þese þre wise we wuneden on þis wreche

wereld. sume sitteð. *and* sume ligeð. *and* sume we stondeð.

\*Ðanne we hauen ure sinnes forleten. *and* bireused. *and* bet.

*and* ben huseled. we ben hege. ac alse wat se we sinegen. we ben

fro hege to loge. *and* þeh us ure sinnes rewe. *and* imint hauen

þat we hem wile forleten, naðeles we sitteð forð þat we hem

forleten. *and* beten alse ure drihten us minegeð bi þe prophete

þus queðinde. *Surgite postquam sedistis q. m. p. d.* Ariseð

<sup>Of the three</sup>  
<sup>modes of</sup>  
<sup>living in this</sup>  
<sup>wretched</sup>  
<sup>world.</sup>

\* p. 76.

ye have sat ; but we are not able to do that without his help. Let us say then unto him, *Domine, tu cognovisti sessionem meam et resurrectionem meam*—Lord, thou knowest how I have sat and that I am unable to rise without thy help. *Exsurge domine adjuva me, id est, fac me exsurgere*—Arise, Lord, and help me up. Thus sitteth man in his sin, as I have said, and thus lieth as I now will say. When a man greatly sinneth, and the sin appears sweet to him, and he will not forsake it because it in some wise pleaseth him, and though he forsake it he will not amend according to the instructions of his confessor—he shall be lower than he previously was (as from his scat to his bed), and condemned to death, and thereto bound. So is the man who holdeth fast his sins, he is condemned from heaven to hell, from our Lord Jesus Christ to all devils, from eternal life to eternal torment, except he break the bonds and save himself by amendment. And all the while he thus lieth in his sin the right belief and the true love which he ought to have to God is prostrate and slain in his heart, and thereby he ceases to receive all wholesome lore. *Et sic Jesus jacet in sepulcro cordis illius, et quiescit apud illum a doctrina, usque in diem tertium, scilicet, mentis illuminationem. Primus enim dies est lux boni operis. Secundus clarificatio sermonis. Tertius illuminatio mentis.* And in that wise lieth our Saviour in his heart as in the sepulchre, and is silent with respect to wholesomeness of lore towards him until the third day, that is until the heart be enlightened. For though he do good deeds, which is called the second day, both help him little or nought except he have good thoughts (or intentions), which are compared to the third day ; but as soon as the third day dawns (that shall be when his heart receiveth the light of right belief and of true love) then riseth our Saviour in his heart and teacheth him wholesome lore, and thus saith, *Cur jaces pronus in terra ? surge*—Why liest thou prone to the earth ? arise. That is to say, why lovest thou thy foul sins ? forsake them and mourn over them, and amend and pray for mercy thereof ; and if he receiveth this lore, he ariseth and standeth, and our Saviour standeth in his heart and bids him then ‘peace and reconciliation,’ thus saying, *Pax vobis* : ‘peace,’ for that they are then freed from the devil’s thralldom, as I ere said ;

panne ge hauen seten. ac we ne mugen þat don: wiðuten his elpe. seie we þanne to him. *Domine tu cognouisti sessionem meam et resurrectionem meam.* louerd þu wost wu ich habbe seten. and þat ich ne mai wið-uten þin elp risen. *Exurge domine adiua me. i. fac me exurgere.* aris louerd: and elp me up. Ðus sit man on his sinne swo ich seid haue. and þus lið swo ich nu seie wile. Ðanne man sinegeð gretliche. and him pincheð þe sinne swete. and ne wile noht forleten hit. for þat it him on sune wise likeð. and þeh he hem forlete ne wile noht bi shriftes wissinge bete. he beð neçer þanne he er was. also fro sete to leire and demd to deaðe. and þerto bunden. swo is þe mau þe halt faste his sinne. he is demd fro heuene to helle. fro ure louerd ihesu christ to alle deules. fro eche liue: to eche pine. bote he þe bendes breke. and berege him mid bote. and alle þe wile þe he þus lið on his sinne: þe rihte bileue and þe soçe luue. þe he hah to hauen to gode: ben leirede. and slaine on his heorte and þer þurh he swike to undernimende alle holsum lore. *Et sic ihesus iacet in sepulcro cordis illius. et quiescit apud illum a doctrina usque in diem tercium scilicet mentis illuminacionem. Primus enim dies \*est lux boni operis. Secundus clarificacio sermonis. Tercius illuminacio mentis.* and on þat wise lið ure helende on his heorte. also on sepulcre. and swigeð of holsumnesse lore togenes him: forte þat on þen þridde dai: þat is heorte be liht for þeh he do edie dede. þe is nemned to oðer dai. boçe him helpeð litel oðer noht. bute he haue god þonk þe is euened to þe þridde dai. ac also wat swo þe þridde dageð. þat beð þanne his heorte understant þe liht of rihte bileue. and of soçe luue. þenne riseð ure helend on his heorte. and techeð him holsum lore. and þus seið. *Cur iaces pronus in terra: Surge.* Wi list þu turnd on þe eorðe: aris. þat is to seien hwi luuest þu pine fule sunnes. forlet hem. and bireuse hem. and bet hem. and bide milce: þerof. and gif he þis lore understondeð: he arist and stant. and ure helende stant on is<sup>1</sup> heorte. and beded him þanne frið. and sehtnesse and þus queð. *Pax uobis. frið<sup>a</sup>:* for þat he ben þanne fried of þe deules

Those that are sitting in sin are admonished to rise.

The man who holds fast to his sins, like a bedridden man is bound to death.

An explanation of the three 'still days.' \* p. 77.

In the sinner's heart, the light of good deeds, wholesomeness of lore, and good thoughts are silent.

The sinner is commanded to rise from his grovelling position.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

Christ stands in the heart of him who

<sup>a</sup> The author of this Homily gives us a bit of popular etymology: *peace* is 'frið' because it 'frieð.'

‘reconciliation,’ because they are then reconciled to the heavenly father, and the gate of paradise is opened to them. *Per quam nos introducat, qui vivit et regnat per omnia sæcula sæculorum. AMEN.*

## XVIII.

### THE FOURTH SUNDAY AFTER EASTER.

*Omne datum optimum et omne donum perfectum desursum est, descendens a patre luminum.* Saint James the holy apostle, whom our Lord appointed as a teacher to the folk of Jerusalem, took heed of the customs, which then were and yet are among men—few good and many evil; and he began to turn the evil to good with his wise words which he spake unto them mouth to mouth, the while he dwelt bodily among them. And toward the time that our Lord would fetch him from this wretched world unto his blissful realm, then put he in a letter the wise words that he had spoken and the epistle he sent unto the churches; and it is come into this holy minster to-day and has been read before you, though ye understand it not; but we will through God’s instruction and by his help make known unto you these few words thereof. *Omne datum optimum, &c.* Each good and perfect gift cometh downward from heaven, and each idle and vain and evil thing cometh upward from below, though the unbelieving do not esteem it so, but when they have sinned in thought, or in speech, or in deed, they cast the blame upon the Lord and say, ‘If God had not willed it so, it would not have been so.’ And sometimes they cast it upon creators that are [really] none but God himself who created all things, and say, ‘it was no better destined to me;’ and sometimes upon luck, and say, ‘I had no better luck;’ and sometimes upon the devil and say, ‘he who ought not, drove me thereto.’ And they lie in each word; for though the devil may mislead man, he is unable to force any man. And in this wise casteth the unbelieving man his own guilt upon the guiltless. *Omnis autem prava cogitatio in corde ascendit, tam innata quam illata, unde dicitur in evangelio ‘ut quid ascendunt cogitationes in cordibus vestris?’* Every idle speech and thought, whatsoever it be, ascendeth in the man’s



þralshipe : also ich er seide. Sehtnesse : for þat he ben þenne  
sahtnede wið þe heuenliche fader. and is þe giate of paradis  
opened to-genes hem. *Per quam nos introductat. Qui uiuit et*  
*Regnat per omnia secula seculorum. amen.*

is no longer  
lying in sin,  
and speaks  
the word of  
peace.

## XVIII.

[DOMINICA IV POST PASCHA.]

*Omne datum optimum et omne donum perfectum desursum est.*

*descendens a patre luminum.* Seint iacob þe holie apostel.  
þe ure drihten sette to lorþeawe. þe folc of ierusalem. he nam  
geme of þe wune : þe weren þo : and get bien mid mannen :  
fewe gode : and fele iuele. and bigan to turnen þe iuele to gode.  
mid his wise wordes. þe he wið hem spec muð wið muðe. þe  
hwile he wunede \*lichamliche among hem. and agen þe time þe  
ure drihten wolde him fechen fro þis wreche worlde to his blis-  
fulle riche : þo sette he on write þe wise word þe he spec. and  
þat writ sende into chirchen. and hit is cumen into þis holi  
minstre to dai. and bi foren giu rad þeh ge it ne understonden.  
ac we wilen bi godes wissinge and bi his helpe. þerof cuþen giu  
þese lit word. *Omne datum optimum et cetera.* Ech god giue  
and fule giue cumeð of heuene dunward. and ech idel. and  
unnit. and iuel : neþen uppard. þeh þe unbileffulle swo ne lete. ac  
lat þanne he haueð sinaged. on þonke oðer on speche. oðer on  
dede. Werpeð þat gilt uppen ure drihten. and seið. gif god hit  
ne wolde : swo hit ne were. and oðer while werpeð it uppen  
sheppendes þe none ben. bute god self þe alle þing shop : and  
seið. ne was me no bet shapen. and oðer hwile uppen hwate.  
and seið. nahte ich no betere wate. and wile uppe þe deuel :  
and seið. he me drof þerto þe ne sholde. and ligeð eches wordes.  
for þeh þe deuel muge man bi-charre : he ne mai no man neden.  
and on þis wise werpeð þe unbileffulle man his agen gilt uppe þe  
giltlese. *Omnis autem praua cogitacio in corde ascendit. tam*  
*innata quam illa unde dicitur in ewangelio. Ut quid ascen-*  
*dunt cogitationes in cordibus uestris.* ech unnit speche and þone

St. James  
took heed of  
the many evil  
customs of  
this world,  
and tried to  
amend them.

\* p. 78.

For this pur-  
pose he ad-  
dressed a  
letter to the  
churches,

in which he  
says every  
good and  
perfect gift  
cometh from  
above.

That which is  
the opposite  
comes up-  
ward from  
below.

People are  
much given  
to lay the  
blame of their  
sins upon  
God, upon  
luck, or on  
the devil.

The devil  
forces no man  
to sin.



heart, as this epistle saith, *Unus quisque trahitur a concupiscentia sua abstractus et illectus*. Each man is [tried] by slight of his own bodily lusts, as the book saith, *Diabolus per suggestionem in mittit homini malam cogitationem*—The devil with his suggestions bringeth unprofitable thoughts into men's hearts, and so leadeth them to evil speech and to worse deeds; and on this wise cometh each evil thought and speech and deed upwards from below, whether it have its beginning in the man's bodily will or whether it have its commencement in the devil's instigation; and for to prevent any man from throwing the guilt of his sins upon God, therefore saith St. James these words, *Omne datum optimum, &c.* Each good gift and perfect gift cometh from heaven, sent down from the Father of Lights. *Datum aliud est bonum ut quod fovet corpus. Aliud est melius ut quod ornat cor. Aliud est optimum ut quod sanctificat hominem*. That gift of God is good that feedeth and covereth the body (as the flowers that come of the corn, of the earth, and of trees), which is called world's joy; and that gift of God is better that enlighteneth the man with five-fold power (i.e. the 'five wits')—his eyes to see, his ears to listen, his nose to smell, his mouth to talk, and to protect wholly therewith his body. That gift of God is best which cleanseth the man from all sins and delivereth him from hell and openeth heaven for him, and that is baptism first, and afterwards the housel (or the sacrament of the Lord's supper). *Bonum autem aliud inchoatum, ut fides, aliud propectum ut spes, alium perfectum, ut caritas*. Again, some gift of God is begun, as right belief, and continues as trust, and a desire to do God's bidding, and some withal full (perfect), as true love to God and to men, and such are the seven which are called, *Charismatum dona, scilicet sapientiæ et intellectus, &c.* *Item, remissio peccatorum quæ datur in baptismo, est datum optimum; bonum vitæ eternæ est donum perfectum*. Again, the best gift [of God] is the forgiveness of sins, and this gift he giveth each man in baptism. The gift of eternal life in bliss is the perfect gift, and this gift he giveth with the holy housel (or sacrament) when it is received rightly and wholesomely. Such gifts (and no evil ones) sendeth mankind the Father of Light. We call our Lord the Father of Lights, for he kindleth the sun and the stars with their light,

astighð in þe mannes heorte. be swo it beo. also þis writ seið. *Man is led astray by his carnal lusts.*  
**Vnus quisque trahitur**<sup>1</sup> *á concupiscencia sua. abstractus. et illec-*  
*tus.* ech man beoð bi sleht of<sup>2</sup> his agene \*lichames luste *1 tentatur in Vulgate.*  
 also þe boe seið. [**D**] *iabolus per suggestionem inmittet homini*<sup>2</sup>  
*malam cogitationem.* þe deuel mid his for-tihting<sup>3</sup> bringeð *3 Read*  
 unnut þone on mannes heorte. *and* teð him swo to iuele *tihtinge.*  
 speche *and* to werse dede. *and* on þis wis cumeð ech iuel þonc. *The devil puts evil thoughts into men's minds.*  
*and* speche. *and* dede. neðen uppard. sam it haue angun of þe  
 mannes lichames wille sam it haue þe biginning of the deules for-  
 tuhting. *and* for to bileande þat no man werpe þe gilt of his  
 sinne anuppen god! *and* þerfore seid saint iacob þos word. *St. James*  
**Omne datum optimum et cetera.** ech god giue! *and* ful giue! *tried by his*  
 cumeð of heuene send of lemene fader. **Datum aliud est bonum** *words to pre-*  
*uent men*  
*from putting*  
*their sins*  
*upon God.*  
*ut quod fouet corpus Aliud est melius ut quod ornat cor. Aliud*  
*est optimum ut quod sanctificat hominem.* þat godes giue is god  
 þe fet *and* shrut þe lichame also þe blostme þe cumeð of coren of  
 eorðe. *and* of treuwe. þe ben cleped werldes winne. *and* þat  
 godes giue is betere. þe alimeð þe man of fiffolde mihte. his egen  
 to sen his earen to listen his nose to runien<sup>4</sup>. his muð to  
 smellen<sup>4</sup>. *and* his lichame al mid to friðende *and* þat godes giue  
 is best. þe clenseð þe man. of all sinnes. *and* leseð of helle! *and*  
 to-genes him openeð heuene. *and* þat is fulcning erest *and* siðen  
 husel. **Bonum autem aliud incoatum ut fides. Aliud pro-**  
**uctum ut spes. Aliud perfectum ut caritas.** Eft sone sum  
 godes giue is bigunnen also rihte leue. *and* furðreð also trust.  
*and* longenge to godes bihese *and* sum mid alle ful also soð luue  
 to gode *and* to mannen. *and* swiche ben þe seuene. þe ben cleped  
**Carismatum dona.** scilicet **Sapientie ét intellectus et cetera.**  
**Item remissio peccatorum que datur in baptismo est datum**  
**optimum.** \***Bonum uite eterne est donum perfectum.** Eftsone \* p. 80.  
 þe giuenesse of sinne is þe beste giue. *and* þie giue he giueð ech  
 man in þe fulluht. þe giue of eche [lif] on blisse. is te fulle giue.  
*and* þeo giue he giueð mid þe holi husel. þanne man it under-  
 stondeð rihtliche. *and* holsumliche. Swiche giues. *and* none  
 iuele sendeð lemene fader! mankin. Leomene fader we clepeð  
 ure drihten for þan þe he sunne atend. þe steores of hire leome.

Man is led  
astray by his  
carnal lusts.  
1 tentatur in  
Vulgate.

2 MS. os.

\* p. 79.

3 Read  
tihtinge.  
The devil  
puts evil  
thoughts into  
men's minds.

St. James  
tried by his  
words to pre-  
uent men  
from putting  
their sins  
upon God.

1. Of God's  
good gift  
called  
'world's weal.'

2. Of God's  
better gift,  
the five senses.

4 These two  
words are  
misplaced in  
the MS.

3. Of God's  
best gifts,  
Baptism and  
the Eu-  
charist.

4. The seven  
perfect gifts.

\* p. 80.

5. The best  
gift is forgive-  
ness of sins.

Why God is  
called  
'Father of  
Light.'

and the moon with its light, and illumineth all the earth; and illumineth the very sun of our [Lord] Jesus Christ, who illumineth all other things, and man also. *Lumine intellectus et fidei*—he illumines them with understanding and with true belief. *Angelorum autem*, &c. And then the heat of true love burneth in angels and men to himself. May he send us the good gift that forgiveth all sins, and the perfect gift that giveth eternal life in bliss. *Qui vivit et regnat per omnia sæcula sæculorum.*

## XIX.

### ASCENSION DAY.

*Elevatus est sol in cælum*, &c. The holy prophet Habakkuk, who dwelt in this world and afterward therefrom departed many hundred years before the time that our Lord became incarnate and was born true God and true man of the holy maiden our lady St. Mary's womb, nevertheless saw plainly many of the marvels that our Saviour did and wrought subsequently on the earth, and thereof spake, and especially of the great miracle that he did this day, and said therefore these words, *Elevatus est sol*, &c.—The sun was exalted in the heavens, and the moon stood in her place. In this 'tale' our Saviour is called 'sun' for four things:—one is that the sun is one and no more; the second is that it rises once a day and afterwards sets; the third is that it appeareth full of light, for it lighteth all this earth and the stars in heaven, and the moon; the fourth is that it appeareth full of heat, for that it heateth all things that grow upon the earth. Our Saviour also is Almighty God, and there is none other but he. *Unde dicitur, Pater et Filius et Spiritus Sanctus unus Deus.* The Father and the Son and the Holy Ghost are one Almighty God. Again, our Saviour arose as the sun when our lady St. Mary conceived him of her pure virginity, as the holy minster-book saith to the heavenly queen, thus saying, *Ex te ortus est sol justitiæ Christus Dominus noster.* Of thee is arisen the sun of righteousness, that is, our Lord [Jesus] Christ, and he afterwards set just as the sun disappears, when the Jews cruelly put him

and te mone of hire leome. and al þis middelherd alemeð. and ure ihesu christi<sup>1</sup> alemeð þe selue sunne! þe alle oðre þing <sup>1 MS. xpi.</sup> aleomeð. and ec þe man. *Lumine intellectus et fidei.* alemeð of understondinesse. and of rihte bileue. *Angelorum autem et o. m.* and brin<sup>2</sup> on englen and on mannen. þe hete of soðe <sup>2? read brinneth.</sup> luve to him seluen. He sende us þe gode giue þe alle sinnes forgifð. and þe fulle giue þe giueð eche lif on blisse. *Qui vivit et Regnat per omnia [secula seculorum].*

## XIX.

## IN ASCENSIONE DOMINI.

**E**levatus est sol in celum et. Þe holi prophete abaeuc. þe <sup>The prophecy of Habakkuk.</sup> wunede on þis weorlde. and eft þerof wot. fele hundred wintre. er þe time þe ure drihten understod mannisshe. and was boren. soð [god] and soð man of þe holi maidenes inneðe ure lafdi *Seinte Marie.* and naðeles seh suterliche fele of þe wundren. þe ure helende dide siðen! and on middenerd wrohte and þerof spec. and nameliche of þat michele wunder þe he þis dai dide. and þefore þese word seide. *Elevatus est sol et cetera.* Þe sunne was efed into heuene. and te mone stod on hire stede. On þis tale is ure helend nemned sunne. for fuwer þing. On is þat the sunne is on! and nanmo. oðer is þat hie arist anes á dai. and eft sigeð. Þe þridde is. þat he pinkeð ful of liht \*for heo <sup>Our Lord is called 'Sun' for four reasons. \* p. 81.</sup> liht al þis middenerd<sup>3</sup> and te sterres<sup>4</sup> on heuene! and te mone. <sup>3 MS. min-denerd.</sup> þat feorðe is þat heo pincheð ful of hete for þat hat alle þing. þe <sup>4 MS. sterres.</sup> on eorðe wecseð. alswo hure helende is almihtin god. and nis non oðer bute he. *Vnde dicitur pater et filius et spiritus sanctus unus deus.* Þe fader and þe sune and þe holigost ben on almihtin god. Eft-sone ure helende aros also sunne. þo þe ure <sup>Our Saviour arose as the sun.</sup> lafdi *Seinte Marie* hin<sup>5</sup> kennede of hire clene meiðhode. also þe <sup>5 So in MS.</sup> holi minster boe seið. to þe heuenliche quen þus queðinde. **E**x *te ortus est sol iusticie christus dominus noster.* Of þe is arisen <sup>He is the Sun of Righteousness.</sup> þe sunne of rihtwisnesse! þat is ure drihten christ. and he eft aseh also sunne to-glade. þo þe indeus him pineden on þe ho[li]

to death on the holy rood, and his holy body was laid in the sepulchre, as St. Peter saith :—*Christus semel pro peccatis nostris mortuus est*. Our Saviour Christ suffered death once for our sins, thanked be he. Again, he is, as the holy book saith, *Fons luminis*, well of light; and *lux vera quæ illuminat omnem hominem venientem in hunc mundum*, &c., and he is the true light that lighteth every man with all the light that he hath, bodily without and spiritually within; and the sun itself he lighteth with all its light. Again, he is the sender of all holy heats, as he himself saith in the gospel, *Ignem veni mittere in terram; quam volo ut ardeat*—I came for to send fire upon the earth, and I will that it burn. The fire of which he speaketh is the heat which enkindleth in man's heart, which makes him greatly to bemoan his sins and to love our Lord more than himself, and his fellow Christian as himself. This sun that we speak of is our Saviour, who was this day exalted on high. *Sed cum sit supra omnem altitudinem, quo potuit ascendere?* But since he is above all exaltation, whither should he ascend? The holy apostle tells us how it happened, thus saying, *Quod autem ascendit quid est nisi quia descendit primum in inferiores partes terræ*—First he descended and afterwards he ascended on high. Of his descent speaketh David in the Psalm-book, thus saying, *Inclinavit cælos et descendit*—The heavens he bowed down and descended; *et ascendit super cherubin et volavit*, &c.—and afterwards he ascended above the cherubim; and again, from how [high] to how low he descended saith St. Ambrose in his song of praise, thus saying, *Egressus ejus a patre, excursus usque ad inferos*, &c.—He went from the Father until he came down to hell; *et in via bibit de torrente mortis, propterea exaltabit caput*—and in this long way that he went from heaven to hell he drank of death's flood, and therefore afterwards lifted up his head, as St. Ambrose saith, thus saying, *Rekursus ad sedem dei*—He ascended to his heavenly throne; and what strides he made downwards, and upwards again, as to that saith St. Solomon the wise, thus saying, *Ecce venit saliens in montibus et transiliens colles*—Here he cometh striding from mountain to mountain, and strides over the hills. *Septem igitur, ut ita dicam, saltus dedit; de cælo in virginis uterum, inde in præsepium, inde in crucem,*



rode to deaþe. *and* his holi lichame was leid on ȝe sepulcre alse  
 seinte peter seið. *CHRistus*<sup>1</sup> *semel pro peccatis nostris mortuus est.* <sup>1</sup> *MS.* Xpc.  
 Ure helende crist þolede enes deð for ure sinnes. þonked wurðe  
 him. Eft-sone he is alse þe holi boc seið. *Fons luminis.* welle <sup>He is the  
'Well of  
Light.'</sup>  
 of liht. *et lux uera que illuminat omnem hominem uenientem*  
*in hunc mundum et omnia*<sup>2</sup>. *and* he is þat soðe liht: þe lihteð <sup>2</sup> ? *cetera.*  
 ech man. of al þe liht þe he haueð lichamliche wiðuten. *and*  
 gostliche wið-innen. *and* þe selue sunne: he lihtteð<sup>3</sup> of al hire <sup>3</sup> *So in MS.*  
 liht. Eft sone he is sendere of alle holie heten. alse him selfen <sup>He is the  
sender of all  
holy heat,</sup>  
 seið on his godspel. *Ignem ueni mit[t]ere in terram quam uolo ut*  
*ardeat.* Ich com for to senden fur on eorðe. *and* wile þat it  
 berne. Ðe fur þe he embespecð: is þe hete þe atent on mannes  
 heorte. þe makeð him his sinnes swiðe bimurnen. *and* luuen <sup>that causes  
the sinner to  
repent.</sup>  
 ure drihten more þene him seluen. *and* his emeristene alse him  
 seluen. þis sunne þat we of speken: þat is ure helende þe was þis  
 dai heued on hegh. *Set cum sit supra omnem altitudinem que*<sup>4</sup> <sup>4</sup> *Read quo.*  
*potuit ascendere?* ac siððen he is buuen \*alle hegnesse hwider <sup>\* p. 82.</sup>  
 sholde he stige. þe holi aposte[l] us seið hwu hit warð *and* þus  
 queð. *Quod autem ascendit quid est nisi quia descendet primum*  
*in [i]nferiores partes terre.* Erest he steg neoðer *and* siðen on  
 hegh. of neoðerstienge specð dauid on þe salm boc. *and* þus  
 queð. *Inclinauit celos et descendit.* Ðe heuene abeh *and* dun  
 asteh. *Et ascendit super cherubin et uolauit. et cetera. and* steh  
 eft abuuen cherubin. *and* fro hwu [hegh] he to hwu loge steh: *and* <sup>Of the ascent  
and descent  
of our Lord,  
as described  
by St. Am-  
brose.</sup>  
 eft agen seint ambrosius þat seið on his loft songe. þus queðinde  
*Egressus eius a patre excursus usque ad inferos. et cetera.* he  
 ferde fro þe fader: for þat he com neðer to helle. *Et in horum*<sup>5</sup> <sup>5</sup> *So in MS.*  
*uia bibit de torrente mortis. propterea exaltauit caput and* on þis  
 longe weie þe he ferde fro heuene to helle he dranc of deðes  
 flode. *and* þarfore heuede siðen up þat heued. alse seint ambrosie  
 seið þus queðinde. *Recurus ad sedem dei.* he steh to heuen-  
 liche heh settle. *and* wiche strides he madeð dunward. *and* eft  
 uppard: þat seið *sanctus* salomon þe wise. *and* þus queð. *Ecce*  
*uenit saliens in montibus et transiliens colles.* here he cumeð stri-  
 dende fro dune to dune. *and* ouer strit þe enolles. *Septem igitur*  
*ut ita dicam saltus dedit.* [Ð]e celo in uirginis uterum. *Inde*  
<sup>Of the seven  
strides of the  
Saviour.</sup>



*inde in sepulcrum, inde in infernum, inde in mundum, et hinc in cælum.* Seven strides he made—one from heaven into the maiden's womb; the second from thence into the stall (or manger); the third unto the holy rood; the fourth from thence into the sepulchre; the fifth into hell; the sixth into this world; the seventh again into heaven. But when he came to hell the angels that came with him cried out to the devil, and said, *Tollite portas, principes vestras, et elevamini portæ æternales, et intrabit rex gloriæ*—Princes of darkness open your gates, the king of bliss will come herein. The voice was heard by the prophets who were therein, and one of them (that was David) answered thus, *Dominus fortis et potens, dominus potens in prælio*—The Lord, who is strong and mighty in battle; and our Lord did as the book saith, *Portas æreas contrivit et vectes ferreos confregit et dedit lumen his, qui erant in pœnis tenebrarum, et ligavit Satanam et captivam ducit in captivitatem*—And our Saviour then brake the iron hinges (or bolts) and shivered in pieces the gates, and went in. Then was hell light for once (and never afterwards) with heaven's light. And he bound the old devil and harrowed hell of those that previously had here pleased him. As the psalmist saith, *Eduxit eos de tenebris et umbra mortis, &c.* And he brake their bonds and led them out of darkness and from the shadow of death, and rose from the dead the third day, that is, Easter Day, and abode with his disciples, not continually but at intervals, until the fortieth day, that is to-day; and then he did as the holy book saith, *Elevatis manibus suis benedixit eis. Et factum est dum benediceret illis, recessit ab eis et ferebatur in cælum.* He lifted up his hands and gave them his blessing, and so went to heaven, as David saith, *Ascendit Deus in jubilo et Dominus in voce tubarum.* And our Lord ascended with wordless song and with sound of trumpets. *Jubilis est exaltatio mentis habita de eternis, quæ nec tueri potest nec lingua explicari.* Wordless songs are the great bliss that the heart hath on account of heavenly things, and may not thereof be silent, nor tell them in words. Such are the songs that are sung on 'high days,' as *Alleluia*, and other such songs. So did the apostles when they beheld our Saviour, when he went to heaven, and followed him with their eyes, since they were unable to do so with their bodies. And of that might or power they marvelled much, and thereof were so blithe that they

*in presepium. Inde in crucem. Inde in sepulcrum. Inde in infernum. Inde in mundum. Et hinc in celum.* Seuen strides he makede. On of heuene into þe maidenes inneče. Očer þenne in to þe stalle. Þridde in to þe holi rode. feorče : þanne in to þe sepulcre. fiste : into helle. Sixte : into þis Middenerd. þe seueče : eft into heuene. \*Ac þo he to helle com. þe engles þe mid him comen. clepeden to þe deuel *and* seiden. *Tollite portas principes uestras et e. p. e. et intrabit rex glorie.* ge maisterlinges of þesternesse openeð giwer gaten. þe king of blisse wile faren herin. Ðe stefne herden þe witeies. þe þerinne weren *and* on of hem þat was. *dauid* andswerede þus. *Dominus fortis et potens dominus potens in prelio.* þe louerd þe is strong. *and* mihti *and* on fehte. *and* dide ure louerd alse þe boc seið. *Portas ereas contriuit et uectes ferreos confregit. et dedit lumen his qui erant in penis tenebrarum. et ligauit satanan et captiuam ducit in captiuitatem.* *and* ure helende brae þo þe irene herre *and* alto shiurede þe giaten. *and* in wende. þo was helle liht enes *and* nefre eft : of heuene liht. *and* bond te holde deuel. *and* herede helle of þo þe him hadden her er quemed. alse þe salm wrihte seið. *Eduxit eos de tenebris et umbra mortis et uincula eorum disripuit.* *and* he brae here bendes *and* ledde hem ut of þesternesse. *and* of deačes shadewe. *and* ros of deče. þe þridde dai : þat is estrene dai. *and* wunede mid his diciples noht alegate : ac stundmele forte þe fuvertiče dai : þat is todai. *and* þo he dide alse þe holi boc seið. *Eleuatis manibus* [suis benedixit eis. Et factum est dum benediceret illis recessit ab eis et] *ferebatur in celum et benedixit eis.* he heuede up his hond. *and* gias hem his blescinge. *and* swo ferde to heuene alse *dauid* seið. *Ascendit deus in iubilo et dominus in uoce tubarum.* *and* ure drihten steh on wordlese songe. *and* on bemene stefne. *Iubilus est exultatio mentis. habita de eternis. que nec taceri potest nec lingua explicari.* Wordles song is þe herte michele blisse. þe heo haueð of heuenliche ðinge. *and* ne mai peroffe be stille. \*ne mid worde hem atellen. swiche ben þe songes þe me singeð hege dages alse *alleluia.* *and* swiche očre. Swo dide þe apostles þo hie bihelden ure helende. þo he to heuene wende. *and* folgeden him mid egen þo hie mid lichame

1, into the Virgin's womb; 2, into the manger; 3, to the cross; 4, to the sepulchre; 5, to hell; 6, to earth; 7, to heaven. \* p. 83.

[Ps. xxiv. 7.]

The words that were heard by the prophets were replied to by David.

Then Christ harrowed hell,

[Ps. cvi. 14.]

and rose again on Easter Day.

[Luke xxiv. 50.]

And forty days after he ascended into heaven with wordless songs and with the sound of trumpets On the meaning of wordless songs.

\* p. 84.

could not in words tell their joy. *Etiam in sono tubæ, prout regem decet, ascendit*—With the sound of trumpets he ascended to his high home, as a king is received when he cometh to his home. The trumpets were the angels who stood by the apostles with snow-white garments, and thus said unto them, *Hic est Jesus qui, &c.*—He who is gone from you into heaven shall come again as ye have seen him go into heaven. Then there followed our Saviour a great company of angels and of holy souls that he had delivered from hell, thanked be he! And those angels blew before him the heavenly trumpets, and so announced that he was a king come from battle and had overcome his enemy. And the sound of the trumpets that the angels blew came there before our Saviour to the gates of heaven, and thus they said to the angels that were therein, *Tollite portas principes, vestras, et elevamini, portæ æternales, et intrabit rex gloriæ*—Ye princes here within, open your gates, and each gate open yourselves for the king of bliss who will come herein. And they who were therein thus replied: *Quis est iste rex gloriæ?*—Who is this king of blisses? And those without said, *Dominus virtutum ipse est rex gloriæ*—He that is the Lord of all mights (or powers), he is the king of all blisses.

May the Sun that I speak of, that is our Saviour himself, who from himself illumineth all brightness, enlighten to-day our thoughts with right belief; and as he enkindleth all holy heats, may he enkindle our hearts to-day with twofold heats; that is, that we bemoan our sins, and forsake them and amend and pray for mercy. The second is, that we may have true love to himself and to our fellow Christians; so that we may long for him as did his apostles, and that he may lead us to him as he did them, and receive us with [them] into his kingdom. *Qui cum Patre et Spiritu Sancto vivit et regnat per omnia secula sæculorum.*  
 AMEN.

ne mihten. *and* of þat mihte swiþe wundreden. *and* þerof weren swo bliþe þat hie ne mihten mid worde here blisse tellen. *Etiam in sono tube prout regem decet ascendit.* On bemes steuene he. Christ was received into heaven as a king. asteh to his hege home. also me king understant þanne he to his home cumeþ. þe bemes weren þe engles þe wiþ þe apostles stoden : mid snouwite shrude. *and* þus seiden to hem. *Hic est ihesus<sup>1</sup>. qui assumptus est a vobis in [celum] sic [ueniet quem- admodum uidistes] eum euntem in celum. et cetera.* þe his faren fro giu into heuene he cumeþ eft alswo ge him segen faren into heuene. þo folgede ure helende michel feord of englen. *and* of holie soules. þe he lesde ut of helle þonked wurþe him. *and* þo engles biforen him blewuen þe heuenliche beme. *and* swo kidden þat he king was cumen fro fehte. *and* hadde his andsete ouercumen. *and* þe bemene drem þe þe engles blewen. þe þere comen biforen ure helende to heuene gaten : *and* þus queþen to þe engles þe þer wiþinnen weren. *Tollite portas principes uestras et elevamini porte eternelles et intrabit rex gloriæ.* gie maisterlinges herwiþ-innen openeþ giure gaten, *and* ech gate untineþ giu seluen to-genes þe king of blisse þe wile faren herin. *and* hie þe þer-inne weren : þus andswereden. *Quis est iste rex glorie ?* hwat is þis blissene king : *and* þo wiþ-uten seiden. *Dominus uirtutum ipse est rex glorie.* he þe is alre mihtene louerd he is alre blissene king. Ðe sunne \*þe ich of \*p. 85. specce. þat is ure helende self : þe alle brihtnesse lihteþ of him seluen. he alihte to dai ure þonc of rihte bileue. *and* also he atent alle holi heten. he atende todai ure herte þe twifelde hete. þat is þat we ure sinnes sore bi-murnen. *and* forleten *and* beten. *and* milce bidden. oþer þat we hauen soþe luue to him seluen. *and* to u[r]e emcristene. swo us longe to him also diden hise apostles *and* teo hus to him : also he hem dide *and* understonde mid on his riche. *Qui cum patre et spiritu sancto uiuit et Regnat per omnia secula seculorum. AMEN.* Angels went before the Lord and commanded the gates of heaven to be opened. [Ps. xxiv. 7.] The Saviour is the same that gives light to all that is bright.

## XX.

## WHIT-SUNDAY.

*Apparuerunt apostolis dispersitæ linguæ, tamquam ignis, seditque supra singulos eorum Spiritus Sanctus.* When our Lord Jesus Christ went bodily from earth to heaven, he bade his apostles and their holy fellowship not to be sorry though he departed bodily from them, and said, *Non turbetur cor vestrum, neque formidet. Rogabo patrem et alium paracletum dabit vobis, et cum venerit, ille docebit vobis omnem veritatem.* Let not your hearts be troubled nor afraid; I will send you the heavenly comfort within a few days, which shall comfort you and teach you all truth, and bring tidings of things that are to come. And the fair behest (or promise) he performed this day. For this day is the fiftieth day after Easter Day, as the lord St. Luke said in the holy epistle that is read to-day in each holy church, and thus spake, *Cum complerentur dies pentecostes erant omnes discipuli pariter in eodem loco, &c.* On the fiftieth day after Easter Day all the apostles and their company were assembled into one place, sitting and singing psalms and praising God in the temple of Jerusalem. *Et factus est repente de cælo sonus tanquam advenientis spiritus vehementis et replevit totam domum ubi erant apostoli sedentes.* And close towards ‘undern,’ as saith the holy ‘singer’ in his song of praise, thus saying—*Dum hora cunctis tertia, &c.*

Then came a din from heaven, as though it were to make known that the Holy Ghost had come upon the apostles, and filled the house full wherein they were sitting. *Et apparuerit illis, &c.* Then the Holy Ghost manifested himself, to be seen in what appeared to them as many-cloven tongues and in the likeness of fire. And why they saw him such St. Ambrose thus sheweth and saith, *Verbis ut essent, &c.,* that is, in English, he made them strong (or heavy) in words; for though there was only the speech of one country in each apostle’s mouth that was there speaking, to each man who heard them, of whatsoever land he was (for there were men of every land under heaven’s course), it seemed to each



## XX.

## IN DIE PENTECOSTE.

*Apparuerunt apostolis dispertite lingue tamquam ignis seditque*

*supra singulos eorum spiritus sanctus.* Do þe ure louerd  
ihesu crist fundede lichamliche fro eorðe to heuene. he forbed his  
apostles. and here holi ferreden þat hie neren noht sorie. þeh he

Our Lord's  
promise of the  
Comforter to  
his disciples.

hem forle[te] lichamliche and seide *Non turbetur cor uestrum  
neque formidet.* *Rogabo patrem et alium paracletum dabit*

*robus. et cum uenerit ille: docebit uobis omnem ueritatem.* Ne  
beo giuer heorte noht iðreued ne ofdred. ich wile giu senden þe  
heuenliche frefringe wið-innen a lit dages. þe giu shal frefrin

and techen alle soðfastnesse and bringen tiðinge of þing þe beon  
to cumende. and þe faire bihese leste he þis dai. for þis dai is þe  
fiftungeðe dai. after estrene dai. also þe louerd seint lucas. seide on

The Com-  
forter came  
to them on the  
day of Pente-  
cost.

þe holie pistle. þe me ret to dai and ech holie chirche. and þus  
queð. *Dum<sup>1</sup> complerentur dies pe[n]tecoste erant omnes pariter*

<sup>1</sup> ? cum.

*discipuli in eodem loco et cetera.* On þe fiftuðe dai. after estrene  
dai weren alle þe apostles. and here fereden gadered on one stede.  
sittinde and salmes singende. and god heriende. in þe temple of

ierusalem. *Et factus est \*repente sonus tanquam aduenientis*  
spiritus vehementis et repleuit totam donum ubi erant apostoli  
sedentes. riht to-genes þe undrene also þe holi songere seið on

\* p. 86.

[Acts ii. I.]

his loft songe. þus queðinde. *Dum hora cuntis tercia: r. m. i.*  
*o. a. d. u. n.* Þo com a dine of heuene. ase þeh it were to kidende  
þat þe holi gost com uppen þe apostles and filde ful þat hus þere

The modes by  
which the  
Holy Spirit  
manifested  
himself.

hie inne seten. *Et apparuerit illis dispertite lingue tanquam*  
*ignis seditque supra singulos eorum spiritus sanctus.* Do openede  
þe holi gost him seluen to isende bi þan þe hem þuhte shāpen also

tunge fele twiselende. and on fires hewe and for þat hie him  
swich segen seint ambrosius shewed<sup>2</sup> þus: and seið. *Uerbis ut*  
*essent pro. et c. f.* þat is on englis he hem makede fundie on worde.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

For þeh it were ones londes speche on þe apostles muðes þe þere  
speken: ech man þe hem herden were. of wiche londe swo he  
were. for þere weren men of eche londe þat is under heuene liðe.

There was  
only one  
language in  
each apostle's  
mouth, yet it



of them severally to be the speech of his own land. So the Holy Ghost filled them with himself, and put the words in the mouths of those that spoke there, and made them to differ in those that heard them. As St. Luke saith, *Repleti sunt omnes Spiritu Sancto, et cœperunt loqui prout Spiritus Sanctus dabat eloqui illis.* Thus they saw the Holy Ghost in the likeness of tongues, and therefore were they strong in speech, as I just now said. They also saw him in the form of fire, as I said before, and were thereof boiling with truer love to God and men, so that they loved God more than themselves, and each Christian man as themselves. *Ignis enim, ut ait scriptura, triplicem vim habet, scilicet, illuminandi, calefaciendi, consumendi, quam Spiritus Sanctus effecit in apostolis augendo fidei fervorem, charitatis splendorem, et consumendo irremittendo siqua fuit in eis peccati macula.* Fire hath in itself three virtues: the first is to give heat, the second is to give light, and the third to reduce oil to nothing. These three virtues the Holy Ghost employed in the apostles, and therefore he came upon them in the form of fire, as I before said, and enlightened them with brighter and firmer belief than they had before, and made them hotter in true love to God and to men, and reduced their sins to nought. For if any had committed sins, he forgave them altogether. Thus the holy apostles were assembled in one place, and thus the Holy Ghost came upon them and filled them with himself, and comforted them of sorrow, and taught them to speak the speech of every land, and enlightened them with right belief, and made them hotter in true love to God and to man, and cleansed them all from the filth of all their sins. Let us now beseech the Holy Ghost to have mercy upon us, and give us the disposition and power to forsake, be sorry for, and amend our sins, and to gather the hearts of us all to pure thoughts (as he gathered the holy apostles in the temple) and our bodies in this holy minster, and to come upon us and abide in us and comfort us of all sorrows, as he did them; and to lighten in us right belief, and make us boiling with true love, and clean from all sins; and to give us such firm speech that the few words that we say in our prayers may be known to all the saints that dwell in

hit puhte here ech sunderlepes þat it was his londes speche. was understood by men of all nations.  
 Swo þe holie gost hem fulde of him seluen *and* sette þe word on  
 hem þe þere speken. *and* skileded on hem þat hie herden. also  
 seint lucas seið. *Repleti sunt omnes spiritu sancto et ceperunt loqui prout spiritus sanctus dabat eloqui illis.* Þus hie segen þe The apostles were full of speech, and boiling with love to God and man.  
 holi gost on tungene euene. *and* þerefore weren fundie on speche.  
 also ich nu seide. ec hie him segen on fures hewe al ich er seide.  
*and* weren þerof wallinde on soðere luue godes *and* mannen. swo  
 þat hie luueden gode more þene hem seluen. *and* ech cristene  
 man also hem seluen. *Ignis enim ut ait scriptura triplicem vim habet scilicet illuminandi. calefaciendi. consumendi. quam spiritus sanctus effecit in apostolis augendo fidei feruorem. caritati splendorem. \*et consumendo. irremittendo. siqua fuit in eis* \* p. 87.  
*peccati macula.* Fir haueð on him þre mihtes on to giuende The three virtues of fire.  
 hete. oðer to giuende liht. þridde to weldende elet to none þinge.  
 þese þre mihte notede þe holi gost on þe apostles. *and* þerefor  
 com uppen hem on fires hewe also ich er seide. *and* alihte hem  
 of brihtere *and* of festere bileue þe hie hedden er. *and* maked<sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> So in MS.  
 hem hattere on soðe luue to gode *and* mannen, *and* welde here  
 sinnes to none þinge, for gif anie hadden don he hem mid alle  
 forgaf. Þus þe holie apostles were gadered on ane stede. *and* The work of the Holy Spirit in the hearts of the apostles.  
 þus þe holi gost com uppen hem *and* fulde hem of him seluen.  
*and* freurede hem of sorege. *and* tehte hem speken eches londes  
 speche. *and* lihte hem of rihte bileue *and* makede hem hattere  
 on soðe [luue] to gode *and* to men. *and* clensede hem alle of þe  
 hore of alle sinnes. Bidde we nu þe holigost þat he haue milce  
 of us *and* gife us hige. *and* mihte. to forleten *and* bireusen *and*  
 beten ure sinnes. *and* gedere ure alre herte to elene þonke also  
 he gaderede þe holie apostles. in þe temple. *and* hure lichames in  
 þis holie minstre. þat he cume uppen us *and* wune in us. *and*  
 freure us of alle sorege also he hem dide. *and* lihte<sup>2</sup> on us rihte  
 bileue. *and* make us wallende of soðe luue *and* elene of alle  
 sinnes. *and* giue us swo findige speche. þat þe fewe word þe we  
 on ure bede seien be cuðe<sup>a</sup> alle halegen<sup>c</sup> þe wunieð on heuene

<sup>a</sup> I think we ought to read *tuðe* (cp. *tiðe* on p. 125) = favourable, acceptable. In the MS. *c* and *t* are very similar; and in *cuðe* the top of the *c* is longer than usual.

May our hearts be united to clean thoughts, and our bodies be gathered together in God's house.  
<sup>2</sup> MS. bihte.  
 May our prayers be effectual.

heaven, so that they may intercede for us with the Trinity—Father, Son, and Holy Ghost—that He instruct and aid us to follow the apostles' lore, and in their fellowship have eternal life and bliss with Him. *Qui vivit et regnat in universa secula sæculorum Deus.*

## XXI.

## SERMON ON PS. LIII. I.

*D*ominus de cælo prospexit super filios hominum ut videat si est intelligens aut requirens Deum. Omnes declinaverunt simul inutiles facti sunt, non est qui faciat bonum, non est usque ad unum. The holy prophet David saith in a passage in the psalm-book the words that I have now said here, where he speaketh of the mercy that our Lord Jesus Christ shows to man and of the hostility that men exhibit against him. He is merciful to them in two ways, as he himself saith in the holy gospel, *Veni vocare peccatores ad pœnitentiam, et recipere pœnitentes ad justificationem*—I came to call sinners to repentance, and to receive those truly amending in righteousness, and to set free the thralls from their thralldom, and to give them freedom. And in all ways he comforts those sinners that desire to receive comfort. But in return for this manifold mercy men are so hostile that the more earnestly he calleth them unto him, the more perversely they turn from him, as I said before. *Dominus de cælo prospexit super filios hominum, &c. Omnes declinaverunt simul, &c.* Our Lord, who is the Lord of all lords, stooped from heaven to men, and looked if any of them understood or sought him, and he saw that they all turned from him to their own disadvantage. And of them all there was but one (i.e. Christ) that did any good deeds. So looketh he now from heaven to us, and sees that we do not understand nor seek him as is needful for us, but we turn from his behests to the will of our flesh, except it be any God-fearing man. *Intelligens quis homo est? Qui seipsum agnoscit et Deum credit.* That man understands who knows himself and believes in God. *Ille se ipsum cognoscit qui considerat in speculo mentis quantis sit expositus miseriis;*

þat hie þingen us to þe þremnesse. fader. and sune. and holi gost. þat he wisse and fulste fulien þer apostlene lore. and on here ferreden hauen eche lif and blisse mid him. *Qv[i] viuit et regnat in vniuersa secula seculorum deus.*

## XXI.

[SERMO IN PS. LIII. 1.]

*D*ominus de celo prospexit super filios hominum vt videat si [est] intelligens aut requirens deum. [O]mnes declinauerunt simul inutiles facti [sunt] non [est] qui faciat bonum [non est] usque ad unum. De holi prophete dauid seið on anc stede on þe salm boc þe wordes þe ich her nu seide. þer he specð of þe mildhertnesse þe ure louerd ihesu crist doð men. and of þe wiðerfulnesse þe men don togenes him. Mild-heorte he is togenes heom on two wise, alse him self seið on þe holi godspel. *Veni uocare peccatores ad penitenciam et recip[er]e \*penitentes ad iustificationem.* Ich com to clepen þo forsingede to sinbote. and understonden þo sinbetende on rih[t]wisnesse. and to lesen þe þrales of þralshipe. and giuen hem freshiþe. and on alle wise he freureð þo forsinegedede þe frefringe wilen understonden Ac togenes þis manifold mildhertnesse. men bien swo wiðerfulle. þat swo he gerenluker<sup>1</sup> clepeð hem to him. swo hie wiðere turneð froward him. alse ich er sede. *Dominus de celo prospexit super filios hominum ut et cetera. Omnes declinauerunt simul.* Ure drihten þe is alre louerde louerd bihe<sup>2</sup> of heuene to mannen. and lokede gif here ani understoden oðer bi-sohten him. and seh þat alle hie turnden fro him hem seluen to unbihefe and of hem alle ne was bute on þat dide anie gode dede. Alse he lokeð nu fro heuene to us. and seð þat we ne understonden ne bisechen him noht swo us nied were. ac turnen fro his hese<sup>3</sup> to ure lichames wille. bute hit beo ani god friht<sup>3</sup> man. *Intelligens quis homo est: qui seipsum agnoscit et deum credit.* De man is understandinde þe him seluen enoweð and gode leueð. *Ille se \*ipsum cognoscit qui considerat in speculo mentis quantus<sup>4</sup> sit*

What David says of Christ's mercy to mankind.

\* p. 89.  
[Luke v. 32.] Christ came to give men freedom, and to comfort sinners.

<sup>1</sup> MS. getenluker.  
Men are hostile to God.

<sup>2</sup> ? beih.

They all turn away from him,

and turn to their carnal will.

<sup>3</sup> Top of t has been crased and looks at first like a t.

\* p. 89.

<sup>4</sup> So in MS.

*utpote natus in mœrore, vivens in labore, moriturus in dolore.* That man knows himself who considers of what vile matter he is formed, and how wretchedly he here fareth, and how ruefully he shall go hence. Hither he cometh in woe, and he shall depart hence in woe. And here he dwelleth in distress and endureth discomfort, sometimes dry, sometimes wet, sometimes cold, sometimes heat, sometimes hunger, sometimes thirst, sometimes sickness, sometimes soreness, and sometimes weariness, and sometimes the biting of worms, and many others that I am unable to enumerate; and without help he is unable to protect himself against them. Thus ought each of us to know himself. *Ille autem intelligit Deum, qui credit eum trinum et unum, omnipotentem, creatorem omnium*—That man understandeth God who believeth that the heavenly Trinity—Father, Son, and Holy Ghost—is one Almighty God, the creator, ruler, and director of all creatures. And this belief each man exhibits when he singeth the Creed. That man seeketh God who acknowledges his trespasses and forsakes his sins, and sorely bemoans, and amends according [to the best of] his power. That does each man when he singeth pater-noster, except his wicked mode of life hinder his prayers. But few are those that thus understand and seek God; and those are good and therefore remain with him; and all others do as the prophet hath said—*Omnes declinaverunt, &c.* They all turn from God to the devil except one. *Quatuor sunt genera hominum; alii enim non intelligunt Deum, requirunt tamen; et hii fatui. Alii intelligunt et non requirunt; et hii impii. Alii nec intelligunt nec requirunt; et hii mortui. Alii et intelligunt et requirunt; et hii boni et de iis dictum est, ‘nullum genus hominum facit bonum nisi unum.’* Four sorts of men there are. The first understand not God and nevertheless seek after him, and that is ‘witless’ men. The second kind comprehends those that believe in God and beseech him not, that is ‘merciless’ men, that have no mercy upon themselves. The third sort are those that do neither; they neither understand nor seek after God, and [those people] are wholly lost, soul and body. The fourth do both; they understand and seek after God, that is the good folk, and these he receiveth and retaineth with him, and giveth them everlasting life in bliss. May the same Lord, of whom I speak, who thus looketh from heaven to men with his merciful eyes, and seeth those that are hostile towards him, as those are who do not



*expositus miseriis. Vtpote natus in merore. Uiuens in labore*

*Moriturus in dolore.* Þe man cnoweð him seluen þe þencheð of The man who knows him- self, thinks of the wretched- ness of this life. wu medeme þinge he is shapen. *and* wu arueðliche he her fareð. *and* wu reuliche he heðen wit. hider he cumeð on wowe *and* heðen wit on wowe. *and* here wuneð on wanrede *and* poleð his

unwille. hwile druie. *and* hwile wete. hwile chele. wile hete. hwile hunger. wile þurst. hwile chele<sup>1</sup>. hwile unhele. hwile sori- <sup>1 Repeated in MS. by mis- take.</sup> nesse *and* wile werinesse. *and* hwile wurmene cheu *and* fele

oðre þe ich telle ne mai. *and* ne mai wið-uten helpe him seluen þer-wið werien. þus ahte ech of us him seluen to cnowen. *Ille autem intelligit deum. qui credit eum trinum et unum omni- potentem creatorem omnium.* Þe man understant god. þe leueð þat

þe heuenliche þremnesse. fader *and* sune. *and* holigost. is on almihti god. Shuppende. *and* wealdende. *and* dihtende of alle Trinity.

shafte. *and* þis leue sheweð ech man þanne crede singeð. þe He beseeches God, who knows his faults and forsakes and amends them. man bisecheð god þe beð is gultes cnowe. *and* his sinnes forleteð. *and* sore himurneð. *and* beteð bi his mihte. þat doð ech man þenne he pater noster singeð. bute his liðere lifode his bede lette.

ac lit ben þat þus understonden *and* bishechen<sup>2</sup> god. *and* þo ben Few under- stand and seek God. <sup>2 So in MS.</sup> gode *and* þefore mid him bileueð. *and* alle oðre don swo þe proph[et]e seid. *Omnes declinauerunt et cetera.* alle hie turnen

fro gode to þe deuел bute on. *Quatuor sunt genera hominum. alii enim non intelligunt deum. requirunt tamen. et hii fatui. Alii intelligunt \*et non requirunt et hii impii. Alii nec intelligunt \*p. 90. nec requirunt. et hii mortui. Alii et intelligunt et requirunt et hii boni et de is dictum est. Nullum genus hominum facit bonum nisi unum.* Fuwer kinnes men ben. þat an ne under-  
stant god. *and* naðeles bisecheð<sup>2</sup> him. *and* þat is unwiti mennisse. oðer is þat leueð god. *and* ne bisecheð him noht. þat is þat orelese mennisse. þe ne haueð ore of him seluen. Ðe ðridde ne doð noðer. ne understant ne bisecheð god. þat mannisse is þuertut forlore soule *and* lichame. þat feorðe doð. eiðer understant *and* bisecheð him. þat is þat gode menisshe. *and* þat he understant *and* mid him athalt. *and* giueð eche lif on blisse. þe ilke louerd þe ich offe speke. þe þus lokeð of heuene to men mid his milde egeu. *and* seð þo þe wiðerieð to-genes him. alse don þo þe ne

Four kinds of men there are : 1. unwitty men ; 2. pitiless men ; 3. men doomed to perdition ; 4. men who both understand and seek God.



understand or seek after him, and who knoweth those that are obedient to his behests, so look to us and give us disposition and power to understand him ; and teach and aid us to seek him with humble thoughts and with noble and blessed words, and to grant our petitions if it be his will. *Qui vivit et regnat Deus per omnia sæcula sæculorum.* AMEN.

## XXII.

## ST. JOHN THE BAPTIST.

*E*go vox clamantis in deserto, parate viam Domini, rectas facite semitas ejus. The lord St. Luke remindeth you in his gospel of the wonderful hither-coming, and the hard life here, and the wonderful departure, of our lord St. John the Baptist. And where he speaks of his coming hither, he saith that our Lord sent his archangel Gabriel to an old man who was a holy phophet and also a bishop, and was called Zacharias; and he sent him to say that he should beget a holy child and call it John, and said what life it should lead; and that in his birth much folk should rejoice, and that he should be great and mighty before God. Then the holy man considered that he was of great age, and his world's partner was past child-bearing, and barren, and for these three things he esteemed it incredible, and believed not what the angel spake unto him, and thus said, *Unde hoc sciam?*—How may I know this? Then said the angel, *Quia non credidisti verbis meis, ecce eris tacens et non poteris loqui usque ad diem nativitatis ejus*—Because thou believest not my words thou shalt be dumb until the child be born, and thereby thou shalt know that I speak the truth. Thus became the holy man dumb, and begat on his wife this holy child. On the sixth month thereafter was the holy maiden, our lady St. Mary, pregnant with the holy child our Lord Jesus Christ; and she came to her relative St. Elizabeth, of whom I before spake, who carried in her womb St. John the Baptist. And as soon as the holy maiden with words greeted the holy wife, then became true what the angel had previously said concerning this child, *Spiritu Sancto replebitur adhuc ex utero matris sue*, that the child should in its mother's

understonden. oðer bisechen *and* enoweð wo ben hersume his hese. He bise to us. *and* giue us hige *and* mihte him to understonde. *and* wisse us *and* filste us him to bishechen mid admod þone. *and* mid eðele worde *and* edie. *and* tiðe us bene gif his wille beo. *Qui uiuit et regnat deus per omnia secula seculorum.* Amen.

May God aid us to understand and beseech him.

## XXII.

## DE SANCTO IOHANNE BAPTISTA.

*Ego uox clamantis in deserto parate uiam domini rectas facite semitas eius.* Þe louerd seint lucas giu muneð<sup>1</sup> on his godspel þe wunderlich hider kumie. *and* þe erueðliche herbiwist. *and* þe wunderliche heðen sið. of ure louerd seint iohan baptiste. *and* þer he specð of his hider cume. he seið þat ure drihten sende his heg engel gabriel to on old man: þat \*was holi \*p. 91. prophete. *and* ec bisshup. *and* het zacharie. *and* sende him to seien þat he sholde strenen an holie child *and* clepen hit iohan. *and* seide wich lif hit sholde leden. *and* on his burde michel folc blisse. *and* bifore gode ben michel *and* mihti. Þo understod þe holi man þat he was of michel elde. *and* his woreldes make was teames atold. *and* unberinde. *and* for þese þre þing let hit unleslich. *and* ne lefde hit noht: þat þe engel him seide. *and* þus quað. *Vnde hoc sciam.* hwu mai ich þis wite þo seide þe engel. *Quia non credidisti uerbis meis. ecce eris tacens et non poteris loqui usque ad diem natiuitatis eius.* For þu art unles mine worde. þu shalt beo dumb forte þat child beo boren. *and* þerbi wite þat ich soð seie. þus bicom þe holi man dumb: *and* on his spuse þis holi child strende. On the sixte moneð þarafter was þat holi maiden ure lafdi seinte marie liht mid þe holi child ure louerd ih[es]u crist *and* com to hire moge Seinte elizabet þe ich er embe was þe bar on hire wombe Seinte Iohan baptiste. *and* also wat se þat holi meide mid worde grette þe holie spuse: þo warð soð þat þe engel hadde er bi þis child seid. *Spiritu sancto replebitur adhuc ex utero matris sue* þat child sholde on his

St. Luke's words concerning John the Baptist.

[Luke iii. 4.] It looks at first sight like trinneð.

The birth of John foretold by Gabriel.

The unbelief of Zacharias.

[Luke i. 18, 20].

The consequences of his want of faith.

The visit of the Virgin Mary to Elizabeth.

womb be filled with the Holy Ghost,—so it was. *Et prophetalis spiritus filii illuminavit spiritum matris et prophetavit uterque, hic gaudio, illa verbo.* For this child's prophetic spirit enlightened the mother's spirit with prophecy, so that they both prophesied of our Lord Jesus Christ's coming, and of the mother, our lady St. Mary: the child in its joy, for it sported and played before her; and the mother in her words, thus saying, *Unde hoc mihi, ut veniat mater domini mei ad me?*—Whence is this come to me that my lord's mother cometh to me? When this child was born and a name was given him, then the father came to his speech and foretold the child's austere life here, thus saying, *Tu puer propheta altissimi vocaberis, præibis enim ante faciem Domini parare vias ejus*—This child shall be called the prophet of God, and he shall go before the face of God and prepare his ways; and it so happened, for as soon as he was grown up in years and in stature, and had much of this world's things, then took he note of man's mode of life, and knew that their deeds were evil, and their speech unprofitable, and he fled their fellowship, because he would not follow their example, neither in word nor deed. And therefore he went into the desert wilderness, as St. Ambrose saith in his psalm, *Antra deserti teneris, &c.* In his youth he fled from people into the desert, for he would not with light words defile his life; and because he was sent into the desert to prepare God's ways there. Wherefore he made his dwelling in the wilderness, and settled his mode of life, both in food and clothing, as was then befitting his abode and also his office, as it is said in the psalm, *Præbuit hirtum tegimen camelus, &c.* The desert was his dwelling-place, and stiff hair of the camel was his garment, and wild honey and locust his meat, and water was his drink. Then sprang the word (or fame) of his holy mode of life wide throughout the land, and the people began to visit his dwelling for to see his holy manner of life and to hear his wise lore; and they thought then on account of his great wisdom that it was Christ himself. And he began then to prepare [the ways of God] as the book saith, *Instruendo ad fidem, invitando, ad baptismum, vocando ad penitentiam*—He taught them right belief, and

moder wombe ben fild of þe holi gost alse it was. *Et prophetalis spiritus filii illuminavit spiritum matris et prophetavit uterque. hic gaudio illa uerbo.* for þat þe þis childes witige gost lihte þe moder gost : of witienge. swo þat hie witegede boče of ure louerd ihesu cristes to cume. and of þe moder ure lafdi seinte marie. þat child on his blisse for hit floxed. and pleide to-genes hire. and te moder on hire worde þus seide. *Vnde* [Luke i. 43.] \**hoc michi. ut ueniat : mater domini mei ad me.* Wečen is me \* p. 92. cumen þat mi louerdes moder cumeð to me? Do þis child was boren. and him was name geuen<sup>1</sup> þo com þe fader his <sup>1</sup> Or giuen. speche. and witegede þe childes arueðliche herbiwist. and þus queð *Tu puer propheta altissimi vocaberis preibis enim ante faciem domini parare vias ejus.* Þis child shal hoten godes prophete. and fare bifore godes neb. and maken his weies. and hit swo warð. for þat alse wat se he was þogen on wintre. and on wastme and hadde michel of wereld þinge. þo nam he geme of mannes liflode. and cnew þat here dedes weren iuele. and here speche unnutte. and fleg here ferede. for he nolde noht folgen here forbisne ne on speche ne on dede. and perfore ferde into weste wilderne alse *Seinte ambrosii seið on his loftsonge. Antra deserti teneris s. c. tur. fugiens p. n. l. s. m. u. f. posses.* On his guweče he fleh fro folke to weste. for þat he ne wolde. noh[t] mid lihte wordes filen his liflode. and for he was send into þe weste to maken þere godes weies : þerefore he makede his wunienge in þe wilderne. and stačeledde his liflode on fode. and on shrude. swo þat he wa[s] bicumelich to his wuniunge and ec to his wike. alse hit seið on þe loft songe. *Prebuit hirtum tegimen camelus. a. s. tro. b. c. l. h. s. p. m. locustis.* The fame of the Baptist spread far and wide, and men thought he was the Messiah. Weste was his wunienge. and stark haire of oluente his wede. wilde huue and languste his mete. and water was his drinke. Do sprong þe word of his holi liflode wide into þe londe and bigan þat folc sechen to his wunienge. for to sen his holi liflode. and to here his wise lore and wenden þo for his michele wisdom : þat hit crist self \* were. and he bigan þo to maken alse þe boc \* p. 93. seið. *Instruendo ad fidem. inuitando ad baptismum. vocando ad penitenciam.* tehte hem rihte bileue. bed hem to fulninge. How John made ready the way of the Lord.

invited them to baptism, and called them to shrift, that is, to mourn and to forsake and to amend their sins, for that is shrift. Then the bishops and the other learned men that dwelt in the land desired to know who he was, for they thought that he was Christ himself, and they sent their messengers to him, thus saying, *Tu quis es?*—Who art thou? *Et respondit, 'Non sum ego Christus'*—And he answered, I am not the Christ. And they said, Art thou Elias? Nay, he replied. And they said, Art thou that prophet? Nay, he replied, none of the prophets that ye ween. *Et dixerunt, Quis igitur es, ut responsum demus eis qui miserunt nos?*—Then they said, What answer shall we give them that sent us to thee? And he answered thus, saying, *Ego vox clamantis in deserto, Dirigite viam Domini rectas; facite semitas ejus*—I am the voice of him that crieth in this desert, thus saying, Prepare the Lord's ways and make straight his paths. *Et enim vox ordine naturæ antecedit verbum, sic Johannes ordine temporum antecedit Christum, unde dicitur, hic Dei vox, ille verbum.* Listen now what this desert is, and why our Lord crieth therein. *Populus, qui malo opere dereliquit Deum factorem suum et inutili verbo recessit a Deo salutari suo, est desertus.* All people that through unprofitable speech and evil speech and ill-deeds turn from God and forsake obedience to him are called desert, because he dwelleth not in them nor they in him. Wherefore this wilderness is overgrown with brambles and with thorns and with evil weeds; that is to say, that mankind has trespassed against God in unprofitable speech, in evil deeds, and in idle thoughts. *Clamat ergo Dominus ad nos per prædicatores, tanquam surdos et longe positos*—And therefore our Lord crieth to us as to deaf men, and to those that dwell far from him. Deaf we are, or hard of hearing, when we hear God's word spoken and take little or no heed thereto. Far from our Lord we are, though we go to church and give right tithes and sing our prayers and distribute alms, [if we do so] more for to have earthly pleasure than heavenly bliss. But let us turn to God in right belief and approach him in purity of life, and prepare our way to him in true love to God and to men. *Est enim dilectio Dei et proximi regia via qua eundum est ad vitam.* For



and clepede hem to shrifte. þat is to reusende. and to forleten. and to beten here sinnes. for þat is shrift. Ðo wolden þe bisschupes. and þe oðre lerede þe wuneden in þe lond? witen hwat he ware. for þat hie wenden þat hit were crist self. and senden here erendrades to him þus queðinde. *Tu quis es?* [John i. 19-23.] hwat art tu? [E]t respondit. [N]on sum ego Christus. Ne His reply to the messengers that came to him saying, Who art thou? ami noht crist? and hie seiden. Artu helias. nai he seide. and hie seiden. artu prophete? nai he seide. nan þere prophete þe ge wenen. [E]t dixerunt. *Quis igitur es. ut responsum demus eis qui miserunt nos?* Seiden hie wiche andswere shule we giuen hem þe senden us to þe? and he answerede. þus queðinde *Ego uox clamantis in [deserto] parate uiam domini rectas facite semitas ejus.* Ich am his steuene þe remeð in þis westerne. and þus queðinde. Makeð þe louerde weies. and rihteð his peðes. *Et enim uox ordine nature antecedit uerbum. sic. iohannes ordine temporum antecedit christum.* Vnde dicitur hic dei uox ille uerbum. listeð nu wat What the wilderness is, and why our Lord crieth therein. tis westerne is. and wi ure drihten gredeð þer onne. *Populus qui malo opere dereliquit deum factorem suum. et inutili uerbo recessit á deo salutari suo. est descertus.* al þat folc þat þurh unnutte speche and iuele speche. and iue[le]dede. turneð fro By 'wilderness' we may understand those who turn from God and are disobedient to his laws. gode. and forleteð his hersumnesse. is cleped westren. for þat þe he ne wuneð noht on hem? ne he on him? for þi is þis westren for-grouwen. mid brimbles. and mid þornes and mid iuele wiedes. þat is to seien. þat folc is forgilt wið god. on \*unnitte \* p. 94. speche. and on iuele dede. and on idel þonc. *Clamat ergo dominus ad nos per predicatorum tanquam surdos et longe positos.* and for-þi gredeð ure drihten to us? alse to deue men. Our Lord cries unto us as unto deaf men. and fer fro him wunien. Deue we ben oðer þieke liste. þanne we heren speke godes word. and nimeð þer to litel geme. oðer non. fer fro ure drihten we ben. þeh we gon to chirche. and giuen rihte tiðinge. and singen ure bede. and deleð almes more We are far from God while we think more of earthly bliss than of heavenly weal. for to hauen eorðliche winne þene heuenliche wele. ac turne we to ure drihten on rihte bileue. and nehtleche him on elene liflode. and maken us wei to him. on soðe luue to gode and to mannen. *Est enim dilectio dei et proximi regia uia qua*



that true love leadeth to everlasting bliss all righteous men, who loveth God more than themselves and each Christian man as themselves. But that is difficult for any earthly man, and therefore let us do as St. John the Baptist admonishes us, thus saying, *Rectas facite semitas Dei nostri*. Make straight God's paths. *Semitæ Dei, quibus facile pervenitur ad eum, sunt opera bona*. God's paths are our good deeds, of alms and of other things, that shall lead us to eternal life. *Quæ si fecerimus pro cælestibus, declinabimus ad terram; si autem pro favore populi, ad sinistram divertemus*. If we do our good deeds to earn this world's happiness or man's praise for a reward, then we make God's ways crooked and are not in the way to heaven; but if we do and say and think well, because we love God and long for him, and we hold therein unto our life's end, then are we in the right way that leadeth us to eternal life, as did the lord St. John the Baptist, as I before said, who wonderfully came into this wretched world and hereon dwelt austerely, and herefrom at his death worthily departed; for he was beheaded in Herod's prison because he would not turn from the high way nor from the right paths (which he exhorted mankind to prepare), and was therein working and journeying until he came to the end, that is, to eternal life, *ad quam nos ducat, qui vivit [in sæculum sæculorum]*.

## XXIII.

## ST. JOHN THE BAPTIST.

*I*nter natos mulierum non surrexit major Johanne Baptista. An unlying man seldom telleth lies, and a truth-saying (veracious) man often saith the truth, and he who never lied nor will lie nor can lie, that is our Saviour, speaketh ever truth; and therefore is true what he said of the lord St. John the Baptist, thus saying, *Inter natos mulierum, &c.* Of all the bairns that are born of woman's bosom, there is none greater than John the Baptist. The first man that came into

*eundum est ad uitam.* for þat soðe luue ledeð alle rihtwise men to eche blisse! þe luueð god more þane him seluen. *and* eeh cristene man also him seluen. ac þat is arueð forþe ani eorðlich man. *and* þerfore do we also *seint iohan baptiste* us minegeð þus queðinde. *Rectas facite semitas dei nostri.* Makeð rihte godes peðes. *Semite dei quibus facile peruenitur ad eum sunt opera bona.* Godes paðes ben ure gode dedes. on elmes. *and* on oðre þinge þe us shule leden to eche liue. *Que si fecerimus pro celestibus declinabimus ad terram.* *Si autem pro favore populi ad sinistram diuertemus.* Gif we don ure gode dedes for to hauen þis weorldes selðe. oðer mannes hereword to mede. þenne make we godes weies wronge. *and* ne ben noht toward heuene. ac gif [we] don. *and* queðen. *and* ðenchen wel for þat we god luuen. *and* us longeð to him. *and* we þeron [h]alden to ure lifes<sup>1</sup> *MS. lifer.* \*ende. þenne beo we on rihte weie. þe ledeð us to eche life. also \* p. 95. dide þe louerd *Seint iohan baptiste*. also ich er sede. De wunderliche com into þis wreeche weorld *and* her-one arueðliche wunede. *and* her-offe at his ende wurliche wende. for he was bihauded on herodes prisone. for he nolde noht turnen ut of þe hege weie. ne of þe rihte paðes. þe he minegede mankin to makiende. *and* was þer-one werchende. *and* farende. for to þat he [com] to ðe ende þat is eche lif. *ad quam nos ducat. qui u[i]uit.*

True love to  
God leads  
men to  
eternal bliss.

God's paths  
are our good  
deeds.

We make  
God's ways  
wrongly, if we  
do good only  
to gain man's  
esteem.

## XXIII.

## DE SANCTO IOHANNE BAPTISTA.

*I*Nter natos mulierum non surrexit maior iohanne baptista.

Un-ligel man selde ligeð. *and* soð-sagel man seið ofte soð. *and* he þe neure ne lihgh ne lige ne wile. ne ne mai. þat is ure helende. he seið eue soð *and* þerfore is soð þat he seide bi þe louerd *Seint iohan baptiste* þus queðinde. *I*Nter natos Mulierum et cetera of alle þe bernes. þe ben boren of wifes bosem. nis non more þenne iohan þe fulcnere. De forme man þe com in þis

Our Saviour  
ever speaks  
the truth.

What he said  
of John the  
Baptist is  
true.

this world, that was Adam, the father of us all, he was greater, *quia immortalis fuit, donec peccavit*, because he was immortal, until he sinned, and ever might have been if he would have kept himself so. But he was not born of woman's bosom, and had neither father nor mother. *Sed Dominus fecit eum de virgine terra*. But our Lord created him out of earth that was undefiled. Again, our Saviour, who is the creator and ruler of all creatures, is greater than St. John the Baptist; but he was begotten of the heavenly Father before that the heavens or the earth were formed, and was not born of woman's bosom, but of the bosom of the holy virgin our lady St. Mary. Isaac (whom the life-holy woman Sarah brought forth in her old age, and whom the life-holy man Abraham begot in his old age, as our Lord had previously declared unto them that he should be) was not greater or even as great, in some wise, as St. John the Baptist, nor was any other born of woman's bosom; and that is seen in three particulars respecting him—the first in his hither-coming, the second in his [mode of] life here, the third in his departure. *Adventus ejus in mundum fuit mirabilis, status ejus in mundo difficilis multimoda afflictione carnis. Exitus ejus de mundo triumphalis, quia dum facinora viriliter obstitit, et hostem vicit, et mortem perdidit, et vitam invenit*. His coming hither was full of wonders that our Lord wrought wherewith to honour St. John the Baptist. The first miracle was that when God came from heaven to earth to become incarnate in the womb of our holy lady St. Mary, the heavenly Father spake to the heavenly Son concerning St. John, and compared him to an angel, thus saying, *Ecce mitto angelum meum qui præparabit viam tuam ante faciem tuam*—Behold I send my angel before thy face, who shall prepare thy way before thee. *Et revera fuit angelus, non naturaliter, sed officialiter*—And he was indeed God's angel; not by nature, for he was not a spirit, but by his office. The second miracle was that he chose two life-holy persons for the father and mother of St. John the Baptist, who were both too old for issue, and the woman was barren, so that she might not, through lack of nature [i.e. the power of generation], have any child. The third marvel was that God sent the holy angel Gabriel to the life-holy priest Zacharias, when he went into the temple with his incense-vessel to burn incense upon the altar; and sent to tell him that he should beget this holy child. The holy

midden-erl þat was adam. ure alre fader he was more. *Quia* Adam was greater than John the Baptist.  
*immortalis fuit. donec peccavit* for þat he was undeaðlich forte  
 he sinede. and eue beo mihte gif he him wite wolde. ac he ne  
 was boren of wifes bosme. ne ne hadde fader ne moder. *Set*  
*dominus fecit eum de uirgine terra.* ac ure drihten him shop of  
 eorðe þat was unfled. Eftsone ure helend þat is sheppende and  
 wealdende of alle shafte is more þene *Seint iohan baptiste* ac he Our Saviour  
 was strened of þe heuenliche fader. er þanne þe heuene oðer eorðe than John  
 shapen were. and ne was of wifes bosme boren. and was of þe the Baptist.  
 holi meýðenes ure lefdi *Seinte Marie*. Ysaac. þat þe lif holi Isaac was  
 wimman sarra on hire elde kennede. and te lif holi man not so great.  
 abraham. on his elde strende. \*alse ure drihten hadde er þan \* p. 96.  
 þan iscid. þat he sholde he ne was noht more ne forðe swo  
 michel asume wise swo seint iohan baptiste Ne non oðer of wifes  
 bosme boren. and þat is sene on þre þi[n]g of him. on his hider- Three things  
 cume. oðer [his] he[r] biwist. þe þridde his heðensið. [A]duentus distinguish  
*eius in mundum fuit mirabilis. Status eius in mundo difficilis* John from  
*multimoda afflictione carnis. Exitus eius de mundo triumphalis* all those born  
*quia dum facinora uiriliter obstitit. et hostem uicit. et mortem* of women.  
*perdidit et uitam inuenit.* his hidercume was ful of wundren. þe His hither-  
 ure drihten wrohten : to wurðende mid sein[t] iohan baptiste þe coming was  
 forme wunder was : þat þo þe god fundede of heuene to eorðe marvellous.  
 to fonden<sup>1</sup> mennisshe. of þe holie meidenes inneðe ure lasdi  
*Seinte Marie*. Ðo spec þe heuenliche fader to þe sune heuenliche  
 of seint iohan and efneðe him to engel þus queðinde. *Ecce* John is com-  
*mitto angelum meum qui preparabit uiam tuam ante faciem* pared to an  
*tuam.* here ieh sende min engel biforen þine nebbe þe shal engel,  
 ruden þine weie to-fore þe. *Et reuera fuit angelus non* not naturally,  
*naturaliter sed officialiter.* and he was iwis godes engel noht of but officially.  
 kinde for þat he ne was noht gost : ac on wike. þat oðer wunder  
 was : þat he ches two lif holi men him to fader. and to moder  
 þe weren boðe teames ateald. and heo þe wimman was barrage<sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> So in MS.  
 swo þat heo ne mihte for unkinde hauen no child. þat þridde  
 wunder was. þat god sende þe holi engel gabriel to þe lif holie  
 prest zacharie. þo þe he gede<sup>3</sup> in þe temple mid his rechel fat. to <sup>3</sup> MS. hegede.  
 rechelende þe alter. and sende him seggen þat he sholde þis holi

man saw the archangel at the end of the altar, and became afraid and terrified; and the angel spake unto him and said, *Ne timeas Zacharia, quoniam exaudita est oratio tua, et Elizabeth uxor tua pariet tibi filium, et vocabis nomen ejus Johannes, [et erit gaudium tibi et exultatio] et in nativitate ejus multi gaudebunt*—Zacharias, be not afraid; thou hast long wished for offspring, and God hath heard thy prayers, and granted thy petition, and Elizabeth thy wife shall have a male child, and he shall be named John, and he shall be a great joy to thee, and many shall rejoice at his birth, *erit enim magnus coram Domino*, for he shall be great before God. *Et adjecit angelus explicare seriem magnitudinis Johannis contentam in quatuor scilicet, virtute abstinentiæ, donis gratiæ, officii dignitate, et palma victoriæ.* The angel showed the child's greatness in four things—one is the refraining from all bodily lusts and evil vices, *Et vinum et siceram non bibit*, &c.; the second is unattainable grace, the third is high functions, the fourth is the termination of his splendour. His greatness was manifested in a tenfold way, and more. One is that the heavenly Father compared him to an angel—*Ut ecce mitto angelum meum*, &c. The second is that he sent the archangel to the holy man that should beget him—*Et uxor tua pariet tibi filium.* The third is that his father became dumb because he believed not what the angel said to him—*Et eris tacens usque ad nativitatem ejus.* The fourth is that his mother bore him after she was past child-bearing and never before was with child, for nature denied it her—*Et processit in diebus suis sterilis.* The fifth is that when he was in his mother's womb yet unborn, he prophesied of the coming of our Saviour and of the virgin's who yet bare him in her sweet womb, that is our lady St. Mary—*Et exultavit infans in utero meo.* The sixth is that Elizabeth was enlightened by the Holy Ghost, who was in the child that she travelled with; so that she also prophesied of our Saviour's coming—*Et unde hoc mihi ut veniat mater Domini mei ad me?* The seventh is that he gave his father power to speak, who had been dumb ever since he disbelieved the angel—*Et*



child strenne. Ðe holi man sah þe heg engel atte alteres \*ende. \* p. 97.

and warð of-grisen; and ofdred. and te engel quað to him: [Luc. i. 13, 14.]

and sede *Ne timeas zacharia. quoniam exaudita est oratio tua et elizabet vxor tua pariet tibi filium et vocabis nomen eius*

*Iohannem . . . et in nativitate eius multi gaudebunt. Ne beo*

þu zacharie noh[t] of-grisen. þu hauest longe iwist after strenne and god haneð herd þine bede; and tiðed te bene.

and elizabet þi spuse shal haue a cnauechild. and him shal to name iohan. and hit shal beo þe to michel blisse. and fele shule fagenien on his burde. *Erit enim magnus coram domino.* for he shal ben michel bifore gode. *Et adiecit angelus explicare seriem magnitudinis iohannis contentam in quatuor. scilicet. Virtute abstinencie. Donis gracie. Officii dignitate. Et palma victorie.*

þe childes michelnesse sheude þe engel on fuwer þingen. On is wið-teinge of alle lichames lustes. and iuele lastes. *Et vinum et siceram non bibit et cetera.* þat oðer is un-erned giue. þat þridde is heh wike. þat feorðe is wites<sup>a</sup> ending his michelnesse was unhiled

on ten fold wise and mo. an is þat þe heuenliche fader heuenede him to engel. *Vt ecce mitto angelum meum et cetera.* Oðer is þat he sende þe heh engel to þe holi man þe him strenne sholde.

*Et uox<sup>1</sup> tua pariet tibi filium.* þat þridde is þat þe fader bicom dumb. for he ne lefde hit noht þat þe engel him sede. *Et eris tacens usque ad natiuitatem eius.* þe feorðe is. þat his moder

him bar siðen heo was teames atold. and neure er ne was mid childe; for kinde hit hire werende<sup>2</sup>. *Et processit in diebus suis sterilis.* þe fifte is. þat þo þe he was on his moder wombe get un-

boren he witegede of ure helendes to cume. and of þe maidenes þe him bar get on hire swete wombe. þat is ure lafli seinte marie. \**Et exultauit infans in utero meo.* þe sixte is þat elizabet was liht of þe holie gost þe was on þe child þe he

miðe hiede. swo þat he ec witegede of ure helendes to cume. *Et unde hoc michi ut ueniat mater domini mei ad me?* þe seueðe is þat he gias his fader mihte to speken þe hadde dumb

The birth of John the Baptist was predicted by Gabriel.

Four things were to mark the child's greatness.

In ten ways was his greatness manifested;

1 He is called an angel.

2 = uxor.

2. His birth was predicted.

3. His father became dumb through unbelief.

2 = wernede.

4. His birth was an extraordinary one.

5. While yet in his mother's womb he prophesied.

\* p. 98.

6. His prophetic spirit caused Elizabeth to prophesy.

<sup>a</sup> Originally *whites*, but the second stroke of the *h* is dotted in order to serve for an *i*.



*apertum est os Zachariæ et prophetavit.* The eighth is that our Lord bade him to baptize in water for repentance, and to proclaim baptism, and also to say, *Super quem videris Spiritum descendentem, &c. Hic est qui baptizat in Spiritu Sancto*—When thou seest the Spirit come and abide upon a man, he shall baptize with the Holy Ghost for the forgiveness of sins. The ninth is that the heavenly Trinity was with him when he baptized our Saviour; *Pater in voce, Filius in homine, Spiritus Sanctus in specie columbæ*—The Father in the voice, the Son in man's likeness, and the Holy Ghost in the form of a dove. The tenth is the great praise that our Saviour gave him, thus saying, *Inter natos mulierum.* Of all children of woman there is none greater than St. John the Baptist. This child himself in his mode of life had his own greatness in three ways—*scilicet, abstinentia, humilitate, patientia.* One is abstinence, the second is humility, the third patience. He had power to keep himself from all fleshly lusts, as the apostle biddeth, *Abstinete vos a carnalibus desideriis quæ militant adversus animam*—Keep yourselves from fleshly lusts that fight against the soul. Restrain thine eyes that they behold no evil, nor unprofitable, nor even vain thing. Restrain thy body from pride, from vanity, from extravagant clothing. Restrain also thy concupiscence altogether, if thou hast no wife. And if thou hast a wife, restrain thyself in unlawful places and at unlawful times, that is, when thou shalt fast or keep holy-day. Be not thou wont to do it illicitly nor be wilful to stir up thy lust thereto, *Quoniam qui sic agit vehemens amator est et propriæ uxoris adulter*—For all those who so do commit adultery towards their own wives. He had also humility. When all the people heard how high and how holy he was, and what a holy life he led, they weened that it was Christ himself, and said so; and he denied it, and said, *Non sum ego Christus, nec etiam dignus ut solvam corrigiam calceamenti ejus*—Ye ween that I am Christ; but I am not, nor even worthy to unknit his shoe-thong. He could not with any words better show that he was humble and modest. *Quia in spiritu lenitatis peccatores corripuit, et ad pœnitentiam vocavit*—With gentleness

ben : siðe he þe engel mislefd. *Et apertum est os zacharie et prophetauit.* Þe egteðe is þat ure drihten him bed fulnen on watere to synbote. *and fulning beden and ec seggen Super quem uideris spiritum descendantem. et cetera. Hic est qui baptizat in spiritu sancto.* wanne þu sest gost cumen *and* wunien uppe mannen he shal fulnen on þe holie gost to sinnes forgiuenesse. þe nigeðe is þat þe heuenliche þremnesse was mid him þo he fulnede ure helende. *Pater in uoce. Filius in homine. Spiritus sanctus in specie columbe.* Þe fader on stefne. þe sune on mannes efene. þe holi gost on culures hewe. þe tieðe is. þat michele hereword þat ure helend him gaf þus queðinde. *INter natos mulierum.* Of alle wifes children nis nōn more þanne Seint iohan baptiste. Þis child him self on his lifode hadde his agen michelnesse on þre wise. *scilicet. Abstinencia humilitate. Paciencia.* On is wiðteung. oðer is admodesse. þe þridde þoleburdnesse. he hadde mihte te witen him of alle flesliche lustes. also þe apostel bit. *Abstinete uos a carnalibus desideriis que militant aduersus animam.* Wið-teod giu of þe flesliche lustes. þe fihteð togenes þe soule. Wiðteo þine egen þat hie ne biholden non iuel ne non un-nut<sup>1</sup> ne forðen idel. Wiðteo<sup>2</sup> þi lichame fro orguil. \**and* idel. *and* ouer mete wede. Wiðteo ec þine golliche deden mid alle : gif þu spuse ne hauest. *and* gif þu spuse hauest : wiðteo þe on unluuede stede. *and* on [un]luued time. þat is þanne þu fasten shalt. oðer halgen. Ne beo þu noht wuned to don hit on unluued wise ne wilful to wecchen lust þat<sup>3</sup> to. *Quoniam qui sic agit uehemens amator est et proprie uxoris adulter.* For alle þo þe swo don : don ewuebruche on here agene spuse. he hadde ec admodesse þo al folc herde. hwu heb. *and* hwu holie he was. *and* hwu holi lif he ladde *and* wenden þat hit were self crist *and* seden hit. *and* he wið-quað *and* sede. *Non sum ego christus. nec etiam dignus ut soluam corrigiam calciamentj eius.* ge wenen þat ich beo crist. ac ich nam noht ne forðen wurðe þat ich un-cnutte his sho þuong. Ne mihte he mid none worden kiðen betere : þat he admod was *and* him seluen mece. *Quia in spiritu lenitatis peccatores corripuit. et ad penitentiam uocauit.* Mid softnesse he castede

7. He gave his father power to speak.

8. He baptized our Lord.

9. The Trinity was with him when he baptized our Saviour.

10. Our Saviour gave him great praise.

This child had its own greatness in three ways ;

1. Abstinence.

2. Meekness.

3. Patience.

<sup>1</sup> Or unnith.

<sup>2</sup> MS. þidteo.

\* p. 99.

<sup>3</sup> Read þer.

The people thought John was the Messiah.

His answer to them displays his meekness and humility.

he chastised the sinful, and exhorted them to repentance and to pure life. *Et semet ipsum præbuit exemplum*—And gave them fair example of himself, since he was not sinful, as St. Ambrose saith, *Antra deserti teneris sub annis confugit turmas*. In his youth he perceived that he was sent into this world to perform threefold functions, *scilicet, adventum Christi prænunciare, baptismum prædicare, baptizare*. One is to make known Christ's coming; the second is to preach baptism; and the third is to baptize. And then he ordered his mode of life so that he was fit for such duties. *Ne forte, cum aliis prædicaret reprobis ipse fieret*—For he would not live amiss when he was teaching men. *Nam cujus vita despicitur restat ut ejus prædicatio contemnatur*—For the instructor is not to be allowed if his life is evil and foul. And therefore he turned out of the city into the wilderness, and from men's abode to that of wild animals, and chose there a cave for a hall and an 'earth-hole' for an abode, and bare earth for his bed, and hard stone for a bolster, stiff hairs for a shirt and a great sack for his 'kirtle.' Roots and wild honey were his food, and nought but water was his drink. In vigils, in mortifications, and in all modes, he warred against his own body; and through such a mode of life his lore appeared sweet to all that heard it. Then no longer could his holiness be kept secret, but his fame spread abroad into all the world, and drew folk to him to hear his wise words and to see his wonderful manner of life; and he exhorted all men to forsake and repent of their sins and receive baptism for repentance of sin. And many thereof he himself baptized. And in those days Herod the king loved his brother's wife and took her away from him. And St. John forbade it and opposed it as far as he could; and the king stood in fear of him on account of his holiness, and bade him cease [his rebukes]. And he durst not for fear of God leave off reproving the king for this conduct. Then was the king wroth, and ordered him to be bound and put into prison unless he would refrain from his words. Then St. John knew that if he should permit the king to continue his sin, he might live and be loved and honoured by him; but if he should follow righteousness, he would therefore lose his life: and so he did at last. For a maiden asked the king for his head, and he bade it be hacked off and given to her; and

þe sinfulle *and* minegedede hem to sinbote. *and* to clene liflode.

*Et semet ipsum prebuit exemplum.* *and* gíaf hem faire forbisue of him selfen þeh he sinful ne were also seint ambrosii seið

[A]ntra deserti. t. s. a. c. turmas. On his guweðe he understod

þat he was send into þis midden erd. to donde þrefolde wike. His functions were three-fold.

scilicet *aduentum christi prenunciare. baptismum predicare. baptizare.* an is to kiçen cristes to cume. oðer is bodien fulninge þat þridde is fulnenen. *and* meðede þo his liflode \*swo \* p. 100.

þat he was bicumelich to swiche wike. *Ne forte cum aliis predicaret reprobis ipse fieret.* For þat he ne wolde noht mis leued þenne he men lerde. *Nam cuius uita despicitur restat ut eius predicatio contempnatur;* for nis þe lorþeau noht to luuene:

gif his liflode is iuel. *and* ful. *and* for þi he turnde ut of þe burh into wilderne. *and* fro mennes wunienge to wilde deores. *and* ches þere crundel to halle. *and* eorðhole to bure bare eorðe to bedde. *and* hard ston to bolstre. Stiue here to shurte *and* gret sac to curtle. Moren *and* wilde uni was his mete. *and* noht bute water his drinke. On wecche. *and* on swinche. *and* on alle wise he wan wið his hagene lichame. *and* þurh swiche liflode þuhte swete his lore alle þo þe hit herden. Ðo ne mihte his holinesse ben no lengere for-hole. ac sprong his word wide into al þe worlde *and* teh folc to him to heren his wise word. *and* to sende his wunderliche liflode. *and* he minede alle men to for-

The teacher should enforce his teaching by a good life.

leten here sinnes *and* beten. *and* on sinbote understonden fulnenge. *and* fele þer of him seluen fulnede. *and* bi þo dages luuede herodes þe king his broðer wif: *and* bi-nam hire him.

*and* Seint Iohan hit wið seide. *and* lettete hit bi his mihte. *and* te king stod eie of him. for his holinesse. *and* bad him swike. *and* he ne dorste for godes eie forleten: þat he þe king þat þeau ne binome. Ðo was þe king wroð: *and* bad binden him *and* don him in to prisune bute he wolde his word wiðteon. þo cneu seint iohan. þat gif he wolde polen þat te king drige his unriht he mihte liuen *and* ben him lief *and* wurð. ac gif he wolde folgen ri[h]twisnesse he sholde þer\*fore his lif forleten *and* swo dide atten ende. for þat a maiden bad te kinge his heued. *and* he hit bad of aken.<sup>1</sup> *and* hire bitechen. *and* he þat eðcliche deað

All the people flocked to John to hear his preaching.

He rebuked King Herod for his adultery.

1 ? read of-acien = be demanded.

\* p. 101.

Herod commanded him to be be-headed.

he that sudden death meekly suffered and therewith obtained eternal life in bliss. Now we have said the three things that we promised you ; how wonderful was his coming hither, how wretched was his [mode of] life here, and how sure his departure ; and in what way he was greater than any other man born of woman's bosom, and in what way he departed from this world's woe into eternal weal. So may we all, and there dwell with him without end. *Eo præstante quem ore prædicavit, et digito monstravit. Qui vivit et regnat per omnia sæcula sæculorum.*

## XXIV.

## MARY MAGDALENE.

*M*ulier quæ erat in civitate nomine Maria jam pœnitens venit ad domum Simonis ubi erat Jesus et procidens, lacrimis pedes ejus rigavit, et capillis suis iersit, et oscula affixit, et unguento unxit, cujus odore domus impleta est. The lord St. Luke, who composed the holy gospel that is read in holy church, saith therein that our Lord received meekly a sinful woman and forgave her her sins, for two reasons : the first is her great hatred to her sins ; the second is her great love to him. These words admonish us to take example of this woman, and hate and forsake and amend our sins, and love and follow our Lord as she did. Listen now then and take note of three things :—the first is the woman's name ; the second is in what way she besought Jesus ; and the third is what answer he gave her. *Nomen igitur est Maria, quod interpretatur stella maris.* She has the same name as the holy maiden our Saviour's mother, Mary, queen of angels, that is, in our language, 'sea-star,' and it well suits each of them. *Utraque enim lucis sue radium, id est, exemplar in mari, id est, in mundo diffundit. Illa pudicitie, ista pœnitentiæ.* Each of them illumines the sea, that is this world, with fair example. The queen gave example of virginity, that is of purity. The other [gave example] of penitence, that is of cleansing, that is what maketh the filthy clean. And many more go on this sea, that is in this world, following the light of penitence, that is, example of the



admodliche þolede. *and* þe mid bigat eche lif on blisse. Nu we hauen seid þreo þing þe we giu biheten. hwu wunderlich was his hider-cume. *and* hwu wrecchede his her-biwist. *and* hwu siker his heðensið. *and* wiche wise he was more þenne ani oðer man of wifes bosme boren. *and* a wiche wise he of þis woredes wowe wot: in to eche wele. swo mote we alle. *and* þere wunen mid him abuten ende. *Eo prestante quem ore predicauit. et digito monstrauit. Qui. uiuit et Regnat per omnia secula seculorum.*

May we all leave this life to go into eternal bliss.

## XXIV.

## DE SANCTA MARIA MAGDALENA.

*M*ulier que erat in ciuitate nomine maria iam penitens uenit ad domum symonis ubi erat ihesuc. et procidens. lacrimis pedes eius rigauit. et capillis suis tersit. et oscula affixit. et unguento unxit. cuius odore domus impleta est. De lauerd Seint l. þe trenneð<sup>1</sup> þat holi godspel þe men ræd inne holie chireche seið þar on þat ure drihten underfeng eadmodliche ane sinfulle wimman *and* forgiaf hire hire sinnen. for two þinge. an is muchel leððe to hire sunne. oðer muchel luue to him. Ðas word munegeð us þat we nime forbisne after þes wimman. *and* hatien. *and* forleten. *and* beten ure sinnen. *and* luuen *and* fulien ure drihten also hie dide. Lusteð nu þanne *and* under-nimeð þreo þing. on his þes wimmannes name. Oðer wiche wise hie hine bisohte. þridde hwich andswere he hire gïaf. *Nomen igitur est maria quod interpretatur stella maris.* Hie is ihaten also þat holie maiden. ure helendes moder. \*englene \*p. 102. quen marie. þat is on ure ledene se-steorre. *and* þe geriseð wel here eiðer. *Vtraque enim lucis sue radium. id est exemplar in mari. id est in mundo diffundit. Illa pudicie. Ista penitencie.* Hur eiðer alunð þe se þat is þis worlde of faire forbisne þe quen gaf forbisne of maiðhode þat is of clenness. De oðer of penitence<sup>2</sup>. þat is of clensunge, þat is þat brinð hori to clene. <sup>2</sup> So in MS. and muclele mo fareð on þisse sæ. þat is on þisse worlde.

St. Luke gives our Lord's reasons for forgiving the sins of Mary Magdalene.

<sup>1</sup> Part of ð cut off in MS.

Three things to be noted.

Mary means sea-star.

Mary showed penitence.



cleansing, rather than follow the light of virginity. *Mundus nomine maris appellatur, tum propter procellas adversitatum tum propter affluentiam copie, tum propter refluentiam inopie tum quia extra navem in mari non est fiducia salutis.* Holy book calleth this world ‘sea,’ because that various accidents, sometimes of weal, sometimes of woe, come therein, as do the waves in the sea. And as the sea ebbs and flows, so this world sometimes gives weal and sometimes takes it away again. And as a man soon perishes in the sea, unless he be in a ship, so also goeth each man into hell from this world, unless he be in the church, through right belief and pure life and true love to God and to each christian man. This woman had also an additional name, Magdalene, *quod interpretatur turris, et significat elationis altitudinem ante conversionem, et contemplationis post conversionem*, that is, in our language, *tower*, and denoteth sometimes highness of pride, which she had when she loved sin, and sometimes heavenly thought, that she had when she forsook and repented her sins, as our Lord said, *Maria optimam partem elegit, quæ non auferetur ab ea.* Mary hath chosen the best part, that is the heavenly abode that she shall have without end. Now ye have heard the woman’s name, and also her additional name, and what each of them signifies; ye hear where she came to our Saviour and brought a present to him, and in what way she besought his mercy; and how she there previously acted when she had sinned so greatly, that seven devils took up their abode in her. When she heard what our Lord said in his teaching, that all men should suffer death and on Doomsday rise again from the dead, and that those who had forsaken and repented of their sins (or therein commenced to do before they died) should go to heaven and with our Lord have eternal life and bliss; and those that did not so should suffer eternal torment with devils in hell; then she bethought her of her mode of life, and knew that she was hateful to God and loathsome to men, and therefore her sins became very loathsome to her and she thought that she would forsake and repent of them. Then came tidings that our Saviour was come to Simon’s house, then she thought that she would seek him and bring him a present and

fuliende þe leome of penitence. þat is forbisne of clenness<sup>a</sup>. þane don þe leome of maiðhod. *Mundus nomine maris appellatur. tum propter procellas aduersitatum tum propter affluentiam copie. tum propter reffluenciam inopie. tum quia extra nauem*<sup>1</sup> *in mari non est fiducia salutis.* Hali boc nemmeð þes worold sæ. for þan þe mistliche gelimpeð. hwile of wele. and wile of wawe walkeð þar-onne, also doð þe uče in þar sæ. and also þe sæ ebbeð and flowð; also þis worold hwile gifð wunne. and hwile hit eft binimð. and also man sone forfarð in þe sæ bute he on shipe be; also fareð efrich man into helle of þesse worlde bute he on chirche bie. þurh rihte gielese. and elene liflade. and soče luue to gode. and to eche cristene mane. Ðes wimman hadde ec on toname magdalene. *quod interpretatur turris. et significat elacionis altitudinem. ante conuersionem. et contemplacionis post conuersionem.* Ðat is on ure ledene tur. and taeneð hwile heinesse of oregel þe hie hadde þo hie sinne luede. and hwile heuenliche þone þe hie hadde þi<sup>2</sup> hie sunne forlet. and bette also ure drihten sede. *Maria. \*optimam. partem elegit que non auferetur ab ea.* Marie haueð icore þat beste del þat is heuenliche wunienge. þe hie hadde shal abuten ende. Nu ȝie haddeð iherd þes wimmanes name and ec hire toname. and wat here eiðer bitoceneð. ȝe hereð ware heo com to ure helende. and heo him to loc brohte. and awiche wise his milee bisohte. and hwi hie þare ierdede<sup>3</sup> þo heo hadde se swiçe heo selue forsineged. þat seuen awergede gastes ware on hire ȝeherbereȝede. Ða iherde hie seggen þat ure drihte on his larspelle sede. þat alle men sholden deað þolien. and an domes dai eft arisen of deaðe and þo þe hadden here sinnes forleten and bet; oðer þar-on biuonge are hie here lif forleten. hie sholden faren to heuene. and mid ure drihten eche lif habben and blisse. and þo swo ne duden hie sholden þolien mid deflen eche pine. on helle. Ða biðohte heo on hire liflode and ȝe-cnew þat hie was lað gode. and ladlich amang manne. and þaruore hire sinne hire bi come swiçe laçe and heo þohte þat heo wolde hem forleten. and beten. þo com tiðinge þat ure helende was cumen to symones huse. þa þohte hie þat hie hine

More people show penitence than practise virginity.

<sup>1</sup> MS. navim.

The world is called the sea because it is full of vicissitudes.

Of the name Magdalene.

It signifies tower, that is, 1. pride, 2. heavenly thoughts.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

\* p. 103.

[Luc. x. 43.]

<sup>3</sup> So in MS. Read er dede.

Mary Magdalene was converted by Christ's preaching.

She was fully convicted of sin,

and determined to come to Jesus and pray for mercy.

<sup>a</sup> Evidently an error for *clensunge*.

pray for mercy. And she took a box made of marblestone and filled it with precious ointment and came where he was, and sought his holy feet and sorely bewept her sins, so that she laved his feet with her hot tears and wiped them thereafter with her fair hair, and kissed them with her mouth and thereafter anointed them. Then the house became filled full with the sweet scent. With such deeds she cleansed herself of every sin. *Et respiciens dominus eiecit septem dæmonia et dixit ei : Mulier dimittuntur tibi peccata tua.* When our Lord meekly beheld her penitence, and saw that she was bitterly tormented in each of the limbs with which she had formerly sinned, he had pity on her and drove out of her seven devils who were dwelling in her, and thus spake, ‘Woman, thy sins are forgiven thee.’ So be [forgiven us] all ours. *Eo dimittente. Qui vivit et regnat per omnia sæcula sæculorum. AMEN.*

## XXV.

## ST. JAMES.

*Euntes ibant et flebant mittentes semina sua, venientes autem venient cum exultatione, portantes manipulos suos.* The holy prophet David (was king of Jerusalem many hundred winters before our Lord became man and was there born of the holy virgin our lady St. Mary) had abiding in him the Holy Ghost, who made him clearly to understand that our Lord would become man, and where, when, and of whom be born, and where he should suffer death, and within what time thereafter he should arise from the dead, and in what way he should ascend to heaven and again come to the doom (or judgment); and how men should live to him in this world, and what life they should lead, and how they should be obedient to him, and what reward they should, in return, receive in heaven’s kingdom. And he speaketh of each thing separately, at various times in the psalter. And in the few words that I now bring forth he speaketh of the holy men who followed our Saviour bodily on earth, as the

geseeche wolde *and* him lac bringe. *and* milce bidden. *and* nam  
 ane box gemaked of marbelstone *and* hine fulde mid derewurche  
 smerieles. *and* cam þar he was *and* his holi fet gesohte. *and* sore  
 hire sinne biwiep þat he his fet lauede mid hire hote teres. *and* She washed  
 wipeð his þer after mid hire faire here *and* mid hire muðe the Saviour's  
 euste. *and* þarafter smerede. þe warð þat hus \*al ful of þe \*p. 104.  
 swote swote breche. Mid swiche dede he clenstede heo seluen  
 of ache synne. *Et respiciens dominus eiecit vii demonia. et*  
*dixit ei. Mulier dimittuntur tibi peccata tua.* Ða biseh ure  
 drihte mildeliche to hire penitence. *and* geseh þat he biterliche For her peni-  
 elche þare limene on hire seluen þe he hadde erur mide tence her sins  
 iseneged. *and* hadde reuðe of hire. *and* drof ut of hire. vij. were forgiven  
 deoflen þe ware on hire geherbered. *and* þus quað. Winman her.  
 þine sunnen þe beð forgiuene. Swo beo us alle ure. *Eo*  
*dimittente. Qui vivit et Regnat per omnia secula seculorum.*  
*Amen.*

## XXV.

## DE SANCTO IACOBO.

*Erntes ibant et flebant mittentes semina sua. Venientes autem* [Ps. cxxvi, 6.]  
*uenient cum exultatione portantes manipulos suos.* Ðe holi  
 prophete dauid þe was king of ierusalem fele hundred wintre er  
 ure drihten man bi come *and* were boren of þe holi maideu ure  
 lafdi seinte Marie. he hadde wuniende on him þe holi gost þe  
 him dide suterliche<sup>1</sup> to understonden þat ure drihten wolde man  
 bieumen. *and* ware. *and* wanne *and* of wam ben boren. *and* <sup>1 So in MS.</sup>  
 hware deð þolien. *and* wiðinne wiche firste þar-after arisen David's pro-  
 of deaðe. *and* hwiche wise to heuene stie. *and* eft to þe dome phesy of  
 cumen. *and* wet<sup>2</sup> man him sholden on þis worlde abuten wunien. <sup>2 ? þet.</sup>  
*and* wich lif leden. *and* wiche him hersumien. *and* wich mede  
 þerto-genes understonden in heuenriche. *and* spekeð of ech  
 þinge sunderlepes *and* in þe salmboe stundmele. *and* þe fewe  
 word þe ich nu forð-tegh he speeð of þe holie mannen þe folgeden He spake of  
 ure helende lichamlich[e] on eorðe : also þe louerd Seint iame was the holy men  
 our Lord ;

lord St. James whose day it is to-day, and other holy apostles, thus saying, *Euntes ibant*, &c. They went weeping and sowing, and shall come with bliss and mow. He spake of what should happen as though it had come to pass, for he knew surely that it would come, *Sed quo euntes, in mortem*. But whither were they going? from world's weal unto bodily woe, from rest into toil, from health to unhealth (sickness), from youth to old age; and in this rueful way they were walking until they came unto bodily death. *Quas lacrimas fundentes, tum compunctionis, tum passionis, tum peregrinationis, tum contemplationis*. Such tears shed they in this rueful way, first for sorrow for their own sin when they first learnt that they had sinned. And sore they bewept their sin, and forsook the world and earthly weal, and turned withal to our Saviour, and in tribulation they repented of their sins and prayed for mercy thereof. *Talibus lacrimis lavit Maria Magdalena pedes Domini*. With such tears laved (washed) our lady St. Mary Magdalene our Saviour's feet, and she herself was thereby washed and was clean from her foul sins. *His etiam lacrimis lavit Petrus maculam trine negationis*. With such tears laved St. Peter the filth of the foul sin of the denial of our Saviour, *Quando exivit et flevit amare*, when he bethought him how he had sinned, and it sorely repented him, and he bewept it with bitter tears, and with that weeping became cleansed from the sin. *Interdum autem videntes aliquos affligi fuderunt lacrimas compassionis*. Sometimes when they saw men suffer affliction, or fall into sin, or afflicted with sorrow, thereof they had compassion and sorely bewept it. *Has lacrimas Dominus fudit quando Lazarum suscitavit*. Such tears wept our Lord himself when he saw the two sisters Martha and Mary Magdalene weep for their brother's death, and he commanded him to rise from his tomb, and he did so, and their weeping was stopped, and they turned their weeping into bliss. *Item Dominus videns civitatem flevit super illam*. At another time our Saviour beheld the city of Jerusalem, and knew, as he knoweth all things, that it should soon thereafter be destroyed. And so it was; and therefore from his holy eyes [he shed] hot tears, and so admonished us all and gave



dai hit is to dai. *and oðre \*holie apostles. and þus queð. Euntes* \* p. 105.  
*ibant et cetera.* Hie hiden wepende *and* sewende. *and* shule  
 cumen mid blisse *and* mowen. he spec of þat þe sholde wurðe who sowed weeping.  
 also þeþg hit wurðen were. For þat he wiste siker þat hit  
 wurðen solde. *Set quo euntes: in mortem.* Ac wider zeden They went from joy into bliss.  
 hie: fro wureld wele to lichamliche wowe. fro reste to swinche.  
 fro hele: to unhele. fro guweðe to helde. *and* on þis reuliche  
 wei hie weren walkinde forte þat hie comen to þe lichamliche  
 deaðe. *Quas lacrimas fundentes: tum compunctionis. tum*  
*passionis: tum peregrinationis. tum contemplacionis.* Swiche They shed hot tears for their sins, 1 MS. shend-  
 teares shedden<sup>1</sup> hie on þis reuliche wei: erest of reuðe of here  
 agene sinnes. þo þe hie erest understoden þat hie sinaged hadden  
*and* þat sore bi-wiepen. *and* forsoken þe wereld. *and* corðliche  
 wele. *and* turnden mid alle to ure helende. *and* mid wosiðes  
 betten here sinnes. *and* þerof milce beden. *Talibus lacrimis*  
*lauit Maria Magdalena pedes domini.* Mid swiche teres lauede  
 ure lafdi Seinte Marie magdalene ure helendes fet. *and* werð as did Mary Magdalene.  
 hire seluen laued. *and* was clene. of hire fule synnes. *His*  
*etiam lacrimis lauit petrus maculam trine negacionis.* Mid  
 swiche teares lauede Seint peter þe hore of þe fule sinne. of  
 ure helendes andseeche *Quando exiuit et fleuit amare* Ðo he  
 him understod hwu he syneged hedde<sup>2</sup>. *and* hit him sore reu. <sup>2</sup> Or hadde.  
*and* he hit mid bitere teares biwiep. *and* mid þat wope werð  
 elensed of þe synne. *Interdum autem uidentes aliquos affligi*  
*fuderunt lacrimas compassionis.* Oðerwile wanne hie segen They shed tears for others' woes, \* p. 106.  
 men wanred polien. oðer on sinne \*bifallen. oðer mid sorinesse  
 bistonden. þer-of hie hadden reuðe: *and* sore hit bi-wipen.  
*Has lacrimas dominus fudit quando lazarum suscitauit.* Swiche as did our Lord for Martha and Mary's grief.  
 teares wep ure drihten seluen. þo þe he sah martha *and* marie  
 Magdalene þo two sustres wepen for here broðres deað. *and*  
 he him bed risen of his biricles. *and* he swo dide. *and* hem was  
 staðed wop. *and* turnden here wop to blisse. *Item dominus*  
*uidens ciuitatem fleuit super illam.* At oðer time ure helende  
 biheold ierusalemes bureh. *and* wiste also he alle þing wot. þat  
 it sholde sone þar after ben astruid. *and* swo was. *and* þerfore of  
 his holie egen: hote teares. *and* minede swo us alle. *and* gaf



example of himself that we should bewEEP the sins and woes of each other, and forsake laughter and idle songs. Such weeping is advantageous to wash sins with. *Plerumque etiam tedio vitæ præsentis affecti, fudere lacrimas peregrinationis.* And sometimes holy men shed their tears because of this world's life; for this poor life seemed to last too long for them. *Tales lacrimas fudit Job quando dicebat. Tædet anima mea vitæ mee*—Woe is my soul that I abide here so long. Such tears shed the holy prophet when he said these words, *Heu mihi! quia incolatus meus prolongatus est*—Woe is me that I must dwell in a strange land, and that my life here is so prolonged. *Hoc autem dixit quia non habemus hic manentem civitatem, sed in cælis debet esse conversatio nostra.* The holy man said that, because we are all here as exiles. But our abode is in heaven if we strive thereafter—*Iustus autem cum languet desiderio patriæ cælestis quando fudit lacrimas contemplationis.* The righteous man, who with his heart and with his eyes looketh into heaven and seeth the endless bliss to which all God-fearing men are invited, and turneth then his love thereto, will soon long after it. And when he greatly longeth thither and cannot appease himself, he sendeth [thither] his thoughts and his hope with his hot tears. *Has lacrimas fudit sponsa sponso, quando dicebat, Trahe me post te.* Such tears wept the holy wife for her husband, when she said, ‘Lord, draw me after thee, for I may not come to thee except thou help me.’ *Utrasque lacrimas, scilicet peregrinationis et contemplationis, fudit apostolus fortassem cum dicebat. Cupio dissolvi et esse cum Christo.* Loathsome is this to me! Each of these tears shed, I think, the holy apostle, when he said, *Cupio dissolvi, &c.*—Hateful to me is this earthly life, and I long for Christ. *Hæ quatuor lacrimæ sunt quatuor aquæ, de quibus lavari jubemur, per Isaiam dicentem, Lavamini, mundi estote.* These four

forbisne of him seluen. þat we sholden biwepen ure elch oðres sinne. *and wosiðes. and forlete lahtres. and idele songes.* Swich wop is fremful to wassende mide sinnes. *Plerumque etiam tetido<sup>1</sup> uite presentis affecti. fudere lacrimas peregrinationis.* *and oðer hwile þe holie men shedden here teares for lif of þis worlde for þat hem þuhte þat tis arme lif hem<sup>2</sup> lastede.* *Tales lacrimas fudit iob quando dicebat. Tedet anima mea uite mee.* wuo is mi soule þat ich bide here swo longe. Swiche teares shedde þe holie prophete. þo þe he þese word sede. *Heu [Ps. cxix. 5.] michi quia incolutus meus prolongatus est* wumme þat ich shal wunien on uncuðe erde. *and þat min biwist is teged here swo longe.* *Hoc autem dixit quia non habemus hic manentem civitatem. sed in celis debet esse conuersacio nostra.* Ðet seide þe holi man for þat we ben here alle on fleme. *Ac ure erd is on heuene\*!* gif we þar-after aueleð. *Iustus autem cum languet* \* p. 107. *desiderio patrie celestis quando fudit lacrimas contemplacionis.* Ðe riht-wise man þe mid his heorte *and* mid his egen bihalt into heuene. *and* seoð þe endelese blisse. þe alle godfruhte nien ben to elepede. *and*<sup>a</sup> turneð þenne his hne þerto. him wile sone longe þar after. *and* þenne him swiçe longeð þider. him seluen leðien ne mai. he sent his þoht! *and* his to-hope mid his hote teares. *Has lacrimas fudit sponsa sponso. quando dicebat. Tra[h]e me post te.* Swiche teares wiep þe holie spuse uppen hire spus. þo þe hie seide lauerd drah me after þe. for ich ne mai cumen to þe bute þu me helpe. *Vtrasque lacrimas. scilicet peregrinacionis. et contemplacionis. fudit apostolus fortassem cum dicebat. Cepio dissolui et esse cum christo.* loð is me þis. Eiðer þese teares shedde ich wene þe holie apostel þo þe he seide. *Cepio dissolui. et cetera.* Loð is me þis eorðliche lif. *and* me longeð to criste. *He. iiij.<sup>or</sup> lacrime. sunt. iiij.<sup>or</sup> aque. de quibus lauari iubemur. per ysayam dicentem. Lauamini mundi estote.* Ðes fower

<sup>1</sup> ? tedio.

They shed tears because weary of the world.

<sup>2</sup> After hem read to longe.

Our abode is in heaven.

The good man sends his tears there.

Four kinds of tears.

\* Instead of 'and turneð þenne . . . teres' the Lambeth MS. reads 'him wile sone longe þiderward and hwenne he ne mei þider cume alse raðe se he walde: he send þider his hate teres.' For leðien we ought, I think, to read leðen (= lēðan, līðan), to travel, go. The translation then would run thus:—And when he greatly longeth, and he himself is unable to go [there], &c. See Old English Homilies, First Series, p. 157.

kinds of tears that I have here mentioned, are the four waters in which we should wash ourselves, as our Lord bade us by Isaiah the prophet, thus saying, Wash you and continue clean. *Lacrima autem compunctionis, amara ut aqua maris.* The weeping that man weepeth for his own sins is very bitter, like salt water, and is therefore called sea-water. *Lacrima compassionis est tepida sicut aqua nivis, quæ defluit ad calorem solis.* The weeping that a man weepeth for his fellow christians' woe cometh from the warm heart as the sun heateth the snow and melteth it to water. *Lacrima quidem peregrinationis comparatur aquæ fontis, quia sicut hæc ebullit de terra, sic illa de cordis angustia.* The tears that a man weepeth because he is sorry that he must dwell in hateful abode, are named well-water, for they well (flow) from the heart's roots as water doth from the well. *Lacrimæ vero contemplationis comparantur aquæ roris, quia sicut illa nutu Dei curritur ab imo in altum, ita ille emanant propter alti desiderium.* The tears that a man weepeth for longing to heaven are called rain-water or dew-water ; for as the sun draweth water from the earth up to the clouds and thereof cometh rain, so the Holy Ghost draweth man's love to heaven, and causeth him to long greatly to go thither, and for that longing he washeth his face with his tears. These four kinds of tears wept our lord St. James, and in these four waters he washed himself from sins, and then sowed in woe that which he shall again hereafter mow in bliss. *Quæ sunt semina ? qui manipuli ? Verba veritatis, opera caritatis.* The seed that he sowed was true words and deeds of mercy ; the blossoms (or fruit) that he shall hereafter mow are *Lux perpetua, salus æterna, lætitia sempiterna*, that is, lasting light and endless salvation, and eternal bliss with angels in heaven's kingdom. Let us now follow the lord St. James's fair example, and go with our heart and with our feet out of unbelief into right belief, and from good unto better, and sow noble words and good deeds ; and weep the four kinds of tears, and with the waters that I before spake of wash ourselves clean from our sins, and have in us what his name denoteth. *Jacobus interpretatur supplantator viciorum.* Jacob in book-language

kinnes teares. þe ich haue here seid. ben þe fower wateres þe we shulen us one wasshen. also ure drihten us bad. bi ysayas þe prophete þus queþinde. wassheð giu! and wunieð elene. These tears are four kinds of waters:

*Lacrima autem compunct[i]onis! amara ut aqua maris* Ðe (1) sea water; wop þe man wepeð for his agene sinne is swiþe biter also saltwater. and þere-fore is nemmed se water. *Lacrima compassionis est tepida sicut aqua n̄ivis. que defluit ad calorem* \*solis. Ðe wop þe man wepeð for his emeristenes wowe. \* p. 108.

cumeð of þe wlahe heorte. also þe sunne hete þe snow. þat he hit for-melteð to watere. *Lacrima quidem peregrinacionis comparatur aqua fontis. quia sicut hec ebullit de terra sic illa de cordis angustia.* Þe teares þe man wepeð. for þat him wo beð. þat he wunie shal on loþe erde! ben nemmed welle water. for (2) snow water; þat he walleð of þe heorte rotes! swo water doð of welle. *Lacrimæ uero contemplacionis comparantur aqua roris. quia sicut illa nutu dei curritur ab imo in altum! ita ille emanant propter alti desiderium.* Þe teares þe man wepeð for longenge (3) well water; to heuene ben eleped rein water. oðer deu water. for þat also þe sunne teð water fram eorþe up to þe wolcne! and þer-offe cumeð reines. swo þe holi gost teð þe mannes luue to heuene. and makeð þat him longed swiþe þider. and for þat longenge wasseð his neb mid teares. Ðese fower kinne teares wiep ure

louerd *Seint Iame*. and on þese fower wateres wuesh him seluen of sinnes. and siew þo on wowe! þat he shal eft on blisse mowen. *Que sunt semina! Qui manipuli! Verba ueritatis. Opera caritatis.* þe sed þat he sew were soþe wordes. and mild heorte dedes. þe blostmes þe shal eft mowen! ben. *Lux perpetua. Salus eterna. Letitia sempiterna.* þat is ilestende liht. and endelese hele. and eche blisse mid angles in heueneriche. folge we nuþe þe louerd *Seint iames* faire forbisne. and gon mid ure heorte. and mid ure fote ut of unbileue. in to rihte bileue. and of gode in to betere. and swo<sup>1</sup> \*eðele word. and edie deden. and (4) dew or rain water. wepen þo fuwer kinne teares. and of þe fower wateres þe ich er embe spec! wassen us elene of ure sinnes. and hauen on us þat his name bitocneð. *Iacobus interpretatur supplantator uiciorum.* St. James wept these four kind of tears.

Iacob on boc leden is icleped on englisse under-plantere of fule 1 So in MS.; ? read sowen. \* p. 109. The meaning of the name James.

is called in English 'supplanter of foul customs.' *Et merito, supplantavit enim vicia, bene vivendo, in se docendo bene vivere, in aliis.* And rightly he was called Jacob, for he supplanted foul customs by himself with his pure manner of life. So ought we all to do, both clergy and laity, and with fair lore receive God's word. *Quod nobis præstet, qui sæcula per omnia regnat.* AMEN.

## XXVI.

## ST. LAURENCE.

*Qui parce seminat parce et metet, et qui seminat in benedictionibus de benedictionibus et metet.* Our lord St. Paul, the greatest of all teachers next to our Saviour himself, speaketh in the holy book and exhorts both clergy and laity to God's words and to good deeds. *Specialiter quidem monens nos, ut ait Gregorius, ad sanctæ prædicationis officium, generaliter vero hos, et illos ad salutarem obedientiam mandatorum.* The clergy he admonishes to instruct well [the laity], and both clergy and laity he exhorts to lead a good and pure life, and saith that each man shall receive recompense for his former deeds, and according as he ordereth now his deeds so shall his reward hereafter be estimated, and thus said, *Qui parce seminat, parce.* The man that soweth little shall mow (reap) little, and he that soweth in blessings shall reap in blessings; that is to say, the man who doeth well shall be well recompensed. *Sacra scriptura nomine seminis appellat tria, scilicet, hominis progenituram, Dei verbum, opus bonum.* Holy book commonly nameth three things as seed; one is man's progeny, the second is God's word, the third is good deeds. Our Saviour called man's progeny seed when he spake with the holy man Abraham of his offspring, and said that so great a people should spring from him that no man should be able to number them any more than one may number the stars in heaven, and thus said, *Suspice cælum, et numera stellas, si potes, sic erit semen tuum.* Look up to heaven, said he, and number the stars if thou canst, for so great shall be thy offspring. *Sed advertendum est, quod prudens sator observat et glebæ aptitudinem et temporis opportunitatem.* But as the wise husbandman taketh note



customes. et merito. supplantavit enim uicia! bene uiuendo. in se docendo bene uiuere! in aliis. and rithliche<sup>1</sup> he was cleped iacob! for he under-plantede fule customes. of him selfen! mid his clenliche liflode. Swo we agen alle to don. boȝe lerede. and lewede. and mid faire lore understonden godes word. Quod nobis prestat. qui secula per omnia Reguat. amen.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS. Read rithlice. St. James supplanted foul customs by himself.

## XXVI.

## DE SANCTO LAURENTIO.

**Q**ui parce seminat parce et metet. et quia seminat in benedictionibus d. [b.] et Metet. Ure louerd seinte poul hegest alre lorpew after ure helende seluen specȝ on þe holi boc. and mineȝȝ eiȝer hodede. and lewede to godes wordes and to weldede. Specialiter quidem monens nos. ut ait gregorius ad sancte predicationis officium. Generaliter uero hos<sup>2</sup>. et illos ad salutarem obedienciam mandatorum. Hodede he mineȝȝ wel to lerende [lewede] hodede. and lewede feir and clene lif to leden and seiȝ þat ech man shal understonden mede of his er dede. and efter þat þe he meȝȝȝȝ nu his dede. shal eft ben meȝȝȝȝ his mede. and þus queȝ. Qui parce seminat. parce. þe man þe litel soweȝ! he shal litel mowen. and he þe soweȝ on blescinge he shal eft mowen on blescinge. þat is to seien þe man þe wel doȝ! he wel underfoȝ. Sacra scriptura nomine semen is<sup>3</sup> appellat. tria scilicet hominis progenituram dei uerbum. opus bonum. holi boc nemneȝ iwunelich þre þing to sed. on is mannes stren. þat oȝer is \*godes word. þe þridde is wel dede Ure helende clepede mannes streon sed. þo he spae wiȝ þe holi man abraham! of his strenne. and seide þat swo michel mankin sholde springen of him. þat no man hit ne mihte tellen. nan more þene men mugen tellen þe sterres<sup>4</sup> on heuene. and þus seide. Suspice celum et numera stellas si potes. sic erit semen tuum. Bi-hold up to heuene quaȝ he and tel þe sterres<sup>4</sup> ȝif þu miht! for swich shal ben þin of spri[n]g Set aduertendum est quod prudens sator obseruat. et glebe aptitudinem. et temporis oportunitatem. Ac alse þe wise

[2 Cor. ix. 6.]

<sup>2</sup> Originally hos, but the top of the h has been erased and it looks like n.

The clergy are admonished to lead a pure life.

<sup>3</sup> Read seminis.

Three things spoken of as seed in Holy Writ:

\* p. 110.

(1) man's progeny;

(2) God's word;

(3) good deeds.

<sup>4</sup> MS. strerres.



of two things when he soweth seed (the first is whether the earth be fit for the seed, the second is whether it be right time thereto), so also ought each Christian person, man and woman, to do when they will labour for issue. They ought to take great care that they do it in a proper place and at the right time. There is never any place fit for procreation unless those that procreate are lawfully married, nor indeed is it right time when they should fast or keep holy day. God's word is also called seed in the beautiful parable that our Saviour said to his apostles, thus saying, *Exiit qui seminat*, &c. A husbandman went out and sowed, and some of the seed fell upon the stones and there dried up, and some fell among thorns and perished, and some fell by the way and became trodden under, and fowls devoured it, and some fell upon the good earth, and that throve well. Then the holy apostles begged him to tell them what the sower denoted, and he said as follows—*Semen est verbum Dei, sator autem Christus; omnis autem qui audit eum manebit in æternum*. God's word is the seed, and Christ himself is the sower, and he who joyfully listens to God's lore shall have everlasting life in bliss. *Sed est advertendum est quod hoc semen aliquando spargitur tum ore proprio tum ore ministrorum*. But our Saviour soweth his holy word, sometimes by his own mouth and sometimes by the mouth of his apostles and other teachers, who know holy book-lore, and therewith teach God's people. In such wise speaketh the heavenly king with each man to whom he sendeth his holy writ. *In hac etiam satione observa agri competentiam et congruentiam*. And when the instructor of the people soweth his seed he ought to take great care to sow it in proper soil and at the right time, where the hearts of men listen joyfully to God's lore, where God is spoken of, and where God is honoured. Those are fitting earth in which to sow God's word. But those who love their sins and will not forsake them, or have not believed or received God's word, are not fitting earth for the seed of God's word. Every Sunday and other high day is the right time to sow the holy seed, that is God's word, and in church where all church-folks ought to be assembled. *Bonum opus etiam nomine seminis appellatur, tum quia seritur in futuro metetur, tum quia more frugum multiplicabitur*. Good works are called seed for two reasons—one, that as seed is sown at one time, and afterwards the

tilie nimeð ðeme of two þing þanne he sed soweð. On is weðer Two things to be taken heed of in sowing seed.  
 þe eorðe beo bicumeliche to þe sede. þat oðer weðer hit beo riht  
 time þer to. Also [ahte] ech criste man to don wapman. and wim-  
 man þanne hie wilen tulien after strenen. hie oȝen to nime michel  
 ðeme. þat hie it on<sup>1</sup> stede and on rihte time Nis nefre no stede <sup>1</sup> Read don on bicumeliche stede.  
 to strenen bicumeliche bute hie ben bispused rihtliche to-gedere.  
 ne hure riht time þenne men fasten shal: oðer halgen. Godes<sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> MS. Goges.  
 word is ec sed cleped on þe faire forbisne þe ure helende seide to  
 his apostles. þus queðinde *Exiit qui seminat.* et cetera. on tilie The parable of the Sower.  
 ferde ut and sew. and sum of þe sed ful uppe þe ston. and dride  
 þere. and sum ful among þornes. and forwarð, and sum fel bi þe  
 wei: and was fortreden. and fugeles it freten. and sum ful on  
 þe gode eorðe. and þat com wel forð. Ðo beden þe holi apostles  
 seien hem wat þe sowere bitocneð. and he seide þus. *Semen est*  
*uerbum dei.* *Sator autem Christus.* *omnis autem qui audit eum*  
*manebit in eternum.* Godes word \*is þat sed. and crist seluen God's word is seed. \*p. 111.  
 þe sowere. and he þe luweliche hlisteð godes lore he shal hauen  
 eche lif on blisse. *Set hoc semen aliquando spargit[ur] tum ore*  
*proprio. tum ore ministrorum.* Ac ure helend saweð his holie  
 word hwile þurh his hagen muð hwile þurh his apostles. and  
 oðre lorðeawas þe cunnen holie boc-lore. and þermide godes folc  
 lereð. A swiche wise specð þe heuenliche king wið ech man þe  
 he to sendeð his writ. *In hac etiam sacione obserua agri*  
*competenciam et congruenciam.* and þanne folkes lorpeawas his  
 sed soweð he oh to nime michel ðeme þat he hit sowe on Things to be regarded by the spiritual sower.  
 bicumeliche eorðe. and on rihte time. þere mennes heortes  
 hlisteð luweliche godes lore þere me of gode specð. and þere  
 me god wurðeð. þo ben bicumeliche eorðe godes word on to  
 sowende ac þo þe luueð sinne and forleten nelleð. oðer bileued  
 ne haueð. ne understonden godes word noht ben unbicumeliche  
 eorðe to þe sede of godes wordes. Ech sunedai. and oðer hegh Holy seed to be sown on Sunday and high days.  
 dai is riht time to sowen þe holie sed: þat is godes word. and  
 in chirche þer al chirche folc ohg to ben gadered. *Bonum opus*  
*etiam nomine semen is appellatur. tum quia seritur in futuro*  
*metetur. tum quia more frugum multiplicabitur.* Wel dede is Why good deeds are called seed.  
 cleped ec sed. for two þing. on is. þat also me soweð on an time.

fruit is gathered at another time, so also doth man his good deeds now, and in the other world he shall receive everlasting life and bliss. The second reason is that [as of one seed come manifold fruits] so also of one little (but good) deed a man shall receive manifold and great rewards. *Multa quidem sunt genera bonorum operum, sed hic agitur de uno eorum, scilicet de largitione eleemosynarum, unde prophetam inducit dicentem, dispersit, dedit pauperibus, &c.* There are many kinds of good deeds; but the holy apostle exhorts us here to one of them, that is to distribute alms, and saith that it shall be given to destitute men, and not all to one, but as the holy psalmist David saith, Distribute it so that every needy man that asks it may have something thereof. And so he will do if he (who distributeth it) be wise. All good works are profitable for amendment, but none more advantageous than almsdeeds. *Quia sicut aqua extinguit ignem, ita eleemosyna extinguit peccatum.* For as water quencheth fire, so almsdeed quencheth sin; and if the alms be sold, then it loseth its name and its power. *Quatuor modis venditur eleemosyna, et tunc inde aut populi favor emitur, aut pudoris molestia redimitur, aut recompensatio rei temporalis adquiritur, aut debiti beneficii solutio impenditur.* In four ways a man selleth his alms: one is when he buyeth praise therewith. *Et hoc animi morbo laborat fere omnis homo*—And this custom hath almost all men, for nearly every man giveth his alms both for the sake of God and for to have praise, and to be honoured far and near where that he is known. In the second mode a man selleth his alms when he giveth it to such men as he may not refuse, because they are his neighbours or else friends, and thereby frees himself from shame, which he should have if he gave not to them. In the third mode a man selleth his alms when he giveth it to such men as do for him, or have done, or shall do, services and good turns (chares), and thinketh with his alms to requite this man's time (or services). In the fourth mode a man selleth his alms when he giveth them to such men as he ought rightly to help, to feed and to clothe, as the man doth who giveth his alms to father or mother, sister or brother, or others so akin whom he ought rightly to help, to feed and

*and* gadereð þe blostmes eft on oðer. Alse man doð nu his wel dede. *and* on þat oðer woreld shal understonden eche lif: *and* blisse. Oðer is þat [alse of on sede cumeð fele-felde westme] alse of on eðeliche dede man shal understonden fele-felde. *and* michele mede *Multa quidem sunt genera bonorum operum* \*Set \*p. 112. *hic agitur de uno eorum. scilicet de largicione elemosinarum. unde p[ro]phetam inducit dicentem. Dispersit dedit pauperibus* Alms-deed the best of good deeds.  
 et cetera. Fele kinne weldede ben. ac þe holie apostel munegeð here to on of hem. þat is almes-delen. *and* seið þat me hit shal giuen hauenlese men. *and* noht al on. Ac alse þe holie salmwrihte *dauid* seið. dele hit swo þat ech nedi þe hit bisekeð haue sum þing þer-of [swo he doð<sup>a</sup>] gif he wis beoð þe hit deleð. alle wel dede beð fremfulle to sinbote. ac non fremefuler þanne almes-deled<sup>1</sup>. <sup>1</sup> *Read* delen. *Quia sicut aqua exstinguit ignem: ita elemosina exstinguit peccatum.* for alse water quencheð fur: alse almes quencheð sinne. *and* gif man selleð þe almes: þenne for-lest heo hire name. Do not sell thy alms. *and* hire mihte. *Quatuor modis uenditur elemosina et tunc inde. aut populi fauor emitur. aut puloris molestia redimitur. aut recompensacio rei temporalis adquiritur. aut debitum<sup>2</sup> beneficii seculo<sup>3</sup> inpenditur.* On fuwer wise man sulleð his almes. on. is. þenne he bihð þer mide here word. **Et** *hoc animi morbo laborat fere omnis homo. and* þis custume haueð mestwat alle men. For þat welnehg ech man gifeð his almesse eiðer for godes lue. *and* for hauende hereword. *and* for to ben wurðed fer *and* ner: þe þe he cnowen is. On oðer wise man silleð his almes þanne he it gifeð swiche men þe he wernen ne mai for he his neghebore beoð. oðer elles frend. *and* þermide leseð him ut of shame þe he hauen sholde gif he him ne geue. On þe þridde wise man selleð his almesse. þenne he gifeð swiche men. þe him doð. oðer don haueð. wike *and* cher. oðer don shal. *and* þencheð þis mannes wile boht mid \*þe almesse. On þe (1) When given for the sake of getting praise; <sup>2</sup> *Originally debiti.* <sup>3</sup> *Read solucio.* (2) To avoid the reproach of his neighbours; (3) For good services; (4) When a man gives alms to those whom he is bound to support.  
 feorðe wise man silleð his almes þenne he gifeð swiche men þe he ahte mid rihte to helpe: to feden. *and* to shruden. Alse þe man doð. þe gifeð his almes fader. oðer moder. suster. oðer broðer. oðer oðre swo sibbe: þat he ahte mid rihte to helpen to feden.

<sup>a</sup> In fainter ink above the line.

clothe. And all the alms that a man doth specially to please God, they all quench sin and intercede for the penitent to our Lord ; and all that a man doth in any other wise and for other causes, though it be done for God's sake also, nevertheless he selleth it (alms) and receiveth here the reward thereof, and never again shall he receive any, as our Saviour saith in the gospel, *Amen dico vobis, receperunt mercedem suam*—Of a truth I say unto you that those who do their good works for to have reward in this life, shall not have any reward in the other world. But for all that a man doth specially for God's love, he shall have eternal life in bliss, and his reward shall be then determined according as it is merited here, as our Lord saith in the gospel, *Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis, remetietur vobis* ; with the same measure that ye mete now your good works, your reward shall be meted out. This the holy apostle said as I previously mentioned. *Quia parce seminat, parce et metet*. Each man shall hereafter reap according as he now soweth, and he that soweth in blessings shall afterwards reap in blessings ; and that is every man that joyfully listeneth to God's lore, and according to his ability distributes alms, and deserves that men should bless him and pray for him ; and may our Lord Jesus Christ for their prayers give him his blessing, that is the everlasting habitation and bliss in heaven. *Quod nobis præstet qui secula per omnia regnat*. AMEN.

## XXVII.

## ASSUMPTION OF ST. MARY.

*M*aria virgo assumpta est ad æthereum thalamum, &c. One of the holy epistles that is read herein to-day brings us blissful tidings of a blessed maiden who was bespoused to the heavenly king as his wife, and saith that he fetched her home. Listen now what maiden this is, and what she is called, and where she was fetched, and who led her, and how and whither ; and learn, if we may, to follow her, for we are all invited thither. Of this maiden speaketh the holy book and saith, *Hæc est virgo virginum, regina cælorum, domina angelorum, mater et filia regis regum omnium*. This maiden bore our Lord Jesus Christ, the father of us all, of her holy body, and her virginity nevertheless was



*and* to shruđen. *and* al þat man doð for sunderlepes to quemen Alms-deed quenches sin.  
 gode. alle hie quencheð sinne. *and* þingeð þe sinbetinde to ure  
 drihten. *and* al þat man doð on oðre wise *and* for oðre þinge  
 þehg hie ben don ec for godes luue. naðeles hie hit sellen. *and*  
 here understonden þer-of mede *and* nefre eft non. also ure  
 helende seið on þe godspelle. *Amen dico uobis receperunt*  
*mercedem suam.* To soðe ich giu sie þat þo þe don here  
 weldede for to hauen mede on þis liue ne shulen hie hauen  
 no mede on þat oðer woreld. Ac al þat man doð sunderlepes All those who do good deeds for God's sake shall be rewarded in heaven.  
 for godes luue. he shal hauen eche lif on blisse. *and* his mede  
 shal ben þanne garked: also hit beoð here aueled. also ure  
 drihten seið on þe godspelle. *Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis*  
*remicietur uobis.* Bi þat ilke met þe ge meteð nu giwer  
 weldede: shal ben meten giwer mede. þis seide þe holie apostel.  
 also ich er seide. *Qui parce seminat, parcat et metet.* Ech man  
 sal eft mowen bi þan þe he nu soweð. *and* he þe soweð on bles-  
 cinge. he shal eft mowen on blescinge. *and* þat is ech man þe  
 luueliche lh[i]steð godes lore. *and* bi alle here mihte almes  
 delen. *and* aulen þat men hem blescen. *and* for hem bidden  
*and* ure louerd iesu crist for here bene giue hem his blescinge.  
 þat is echeliche erding. *and* blisse on heuene. *Quod nobis*  
*prestat qui secula per omnia Regnat. AMEN.*

## XXVII.

## (ASSUMPTIO S. MARIE VIRGINIS.)

**M**ARIA uirgo assumpta est ad ethereum thalamum. et cetera. p. 114.

On of þe holie writes þe ben red herinne to dai bringen Of the Assumption of the Virgin Mary.  
 us blisfulle tiðinges. of an edie meiden. þe was iferen bispused  
 þe heuenliche kinge. *and* seið þat he hes fette hom. Lusteð nu  
 wich maiden þat is. *and* hwat he hatte. *and* hware he was fet.  
*and* hwo hire ledde. *and* wu. *and* hwider. *and* cunnen gif we  
 mugen cumen after. for þan þe we ben alle boden pider. Of þis Mary is virgin of virgins, queen of heaven, and lady of angels.  
 maiden specð þe holie boc: *and* seið. *Hec est regina uirginum.*  
*Regina celorum. Domina engelorum. Mater et filia regis regum*  
*omnium.* Ðis maiden bar ure louerd iesu crist ure alre fader:  
 of hire holie lichame. *and* nis hire maiðhod þere fore noht a-



not impaired. She is the daughter of the heavenly king and also his mother, and maiden of all maidens and queen of heaven, and lady of angels. Her name is Mary, *quod est interpretatum stella maris*, that is in English, 'sea-star.' When the seafaring men see the 'sea-star' they soon know whither they shall hold their course, for the star's light is a good leader for them. *Mundus mari comparabitur quia fluctus erigit naves obruit ; ita mundus effluit, dum opes confert ; refluit, dum aufert, turbine, id est, ultione divina vel fraude diabolica turbatur. Discordiarum motus concitat, ecclesiarum pacem perturbat.* This world is called sea, which floweth and ebbeth : and so doth also this world—it it floweth when it gives world's weal, and it ebbeth when it taketh it away again. Storms fall upon the sea and disturb it, and God's vengeance cometh on this world to take vengeance on the sins of sinful men, and even on just men who dwell near them ; and it [God's vengeance] depriveth them sometimes of their cattle, sometimes of other possessions, and sometimes of their health, and sometimes of their life ; and sometimes the devil hinders them in many ways, and harmeth them and injureth them, and stirs up among them strife and war, and withdraws (or disturbs) true love, and destroyeth right belief. And as the 'sea-star' sheddeth light from herself that lighteth seafaring men, so this blessed maiden St. Mary, from her holy body, sheddeth the true light that lighteth all bright things upon earth and also in heaven, as St. John saith in his gospel, *Erat lux vera quæ illuminat omnem hominem venientem in hunc mundum.* He is the true light that lighteth all men that cometh into this world, and are illumined. And on account of this light this holy maiden is called 'sea-star.' She was fetched from her desert habitation where she was found, *scilicet, in terra deserta in loco horroris et vastæ solitudinis*, that is to say, in a desert land and in a horrible place. That land is called desert ; that is to say, it has without tillage long lain idle : and wilderness it is called, if many roots (or weeds) grow therein. This world's abode is compared to a desert, because that it has long lain idle without holy tillage, *hinc ex quo veteres emigravere coloni*, ever since the old tillers (husbandmen) went hence. The while that they were here they turned over the earth and cast good seed therein, and it waxed and throve well and brought forth various and many fruits. But after that they went

wemmed. hie is þe heuenliches kinges dohter *and* ee his moder. *Mary is the queen of heaven.*  
*and* alre maidene maide. *and* heuene quen. *and* englene lafdi<sup>1</sup>.  
 hire is to name maria *quod est interpretatum stella maris* Ðat  
 is on englis sæ sterre. Ðan þe safarinde men seð þe sa sterre. *Her name signifies 'sea-star.'*  
 hie wuten sone wuderward hie sullen weie holden. for þat þe  
 storres liht is hem god latæu. *Mundus mari comparabitur quia fluctus erigit. naues obruit. Ita mundus effluit: dum opes confert. refluit: dum aufert. turbine. i[d est] ultione diuina. vel fraude diabolica turbatur. Discordiarum motus concitat. ecclesiarum pacem perturbat.*  
 Ðis worlde is cleped sæ. þe floweð *and* ebbeð. *This world is like the sea.*  
 swo doð ee þis worlde floweð. þanne he worlde-wunne ȝieueð. *and* ebbeð: þanne hie hit eft binimeð. Storemes falleð in þe  
 sæ. *and* to-worpeð hit. *and* godes wrake cumeð on þis worlde to  
 wrekende on sunfulle men here gultes. *and* forþæn \*onrih[t]wise  
 men þe hem neih wunien. *and* binimeð hem hwile oref. hwile  
 oßer aihte. *and* hwile here hele. *and* hwile here ogen lif. *and*  
 hwile lat te deuel hem on fele wise. *and* haremeð hem. *and*  
 shendeð. *and* weccheð among hem flite. *and* win. *and* fordraueð  
 soð lunc. *and* struieð rihte bileue. And also þe sa storre shat  
 of hire þe liht. þe lihteð sa farinde men. also þis edie maiden  
 seinte marie. of hire holie licame shedeð þat soðe liht. þe lihteð  
 alle brihte þinges on eorðe. *and* ee on heuene. also *Seint*  
*Iohannes* saið on his godspel. *Erat lux uera que illuminat omnem hominem uenientem in hunc mundum.* He is þat soðe  
 liht. þe lihted alle men. þe on þis worlde cumeð. *and* aleomed  
 ben. And for þis leome is þat holie maiden cleped sa sterre. Hie  
 was fet of weste wunienge þar he funden was. *scilicet in terra deserta in loco [h]orr[or]is et uaste solitudinis.* Ðat is to seien  
 on weste londe. *and* on grisliche stede. Weste is cleped þat londe  
 þat is longe tilðe atleien. *and* wildernesse ges<sup>2</sup> þare manie rotes  
 onne wacseð. Ðis worldes biwest is efneð to wastene: for þat  
 þe hit is ferren atleien holie tilðe. *Hinc ex quo ueteres emigra- uere coloni.* Aure seððen þe ealde tilie heune wenden. Ðe hwile  
 þe hie here waren. hie wenden þe eorðe: *and* wurpen god sad  
 þaronne. *and* hit waexs. *and* wel þeagh. *and* brabte forð blostmes  
 fele *and* manie. Ac seðen hie henen wenden: atlai þat lond

*Mary is the queen of heaven.*

<sup>1</sup> *M.S. lasdi.*

*Her name signifies 'sea-star.'*

*This world is like the sea.*

*God's vengeance and wrath are the storms that trouble the world.*

\* p 115.

*On account of this light the Virgin Mary is called 'sea-star.'*

*Wilderness means uncultivated land.*

<sup>2</sup> *Read gef. This world is like a wilderness.*

*The holy husbandmen who sowed good seed have long since departed.*

hence the land lay idle and unturned, and became a desert covered all over with roots, and so became a wilderness. Now birds and wild animals and reptiles dwell therein. This land that I now speak of is the people that now live. The old husbandmen were the holy teachers, prophets, apostles, popes, archbishops, bishops, priests, who led a holy life. The husbandmen turned up this land that was previously down, when they by their wise words turned man's heart from earthly to heavenly thoughts, from unright to right, from whoredom to purity, from evil vices to love God and to obey Him; and afterwards they sowed on this land God's word for seed, and it took root in their hearts and waxed and throve well, when the people listened diligently to God's word and firmly observed it, and led their lives according to it. But now has this land lain idle and for a long while has been so, for those that should till it, the teachers of holy church, sowed more diligently the devil's seed than our Lord Jesus Christ's, and by example of their foul manner of life invited men to hell and not to heaven. God's seed is God's word, which men sow in church in psalms and in songs, and in lessons and sermons, and in faithful prayers which the clergy sow seldom and carelessly. The devil's seed is idle, unprofitable, and evil words, opprobrium, scorn, stories, songs, jangling, double speech, cursing, leasings, swearing, and all deceitful speeches, &c. Many clergy speak as the laity, as our Lord said through the mouth of a prophet, *Erit sicut populus sacerdos*—the priest shall lead his life as the lay man: and so they do now, and somewhat worse; for the lay man honoureth his spouse with clothes more than himself, and the priest not so his church, which is his spouse, but adorns his servant, who is his whore, with clothes more than himself. The church cloths are utterly rent and old, and his woman's must be whole and new. His altar cloth large (coarse) and soiled, and her chemise small (fine) and white. And the aube soiled and her smock white, the head-linen black and her wimple white, or made yellow with saffron. The mass-cloth of common fustian, and her mantle green or burnet (*or brown*). The corporas soiled and mis-shapen, her hand-cloths and her table-cloths made white and pleasant to look on. The chalice of tin, and her cup of mazer, and her ring of gold; and the priest is so much the worse than

unwend. *and* bicam waste. *and* was roted oueral. *and* swo bicam wildernesse. Nu wunieð þar inne fueles. *and* wilde deor. *and* wurmes. Ðis lond þe ich nu of speke. \*is þat mennisse þe nu liueð. \* p. 116.

Ðe olde tilien waren þe holie lorðewes. prophetes. apostles. popes archebissopes. bissopes. prestes. þe holie lif ladden. Ðe tilien wenden þis lond þat up : þat was ar dun. þanne hie mid here wise word turneden mannes herte fram corðeliche þankes. to heuenliche þanke. fram unrihte to rihte. fram hordom to elennesse. fram alle iuele lastes to luuen gode. *and* heren him. And after þat sewen on þis lond godes word for sede. *and* hit morede on here heorte. *and* weacs. *and* wel þeazh. þanne þat fole godes word zierneliche listede. *and* fastliche hield. *and* ter after here lif ladden. Ac nu is þat lond tilðe atlein. *and* ifuren was. for þo þit<sup>1</sup> sholden tilien.

The old husbandmen were prophets, apostles, popes, &c.

<sup>1</sup> i. e. þe hit.

Ðo þe lorðewes of holie chireche. þe sewen gerneluker þe defles sed : þan ure louerdes ihesu crist. *and* mid forbisne of here fule liflode. beden men te helle *and* naht to heuene. Godes sed : is godes word. þe men tilien in chireche. on salmes. *and* on songes. *and* on redinges *and* lorspelles. *and* on holde bedes : þe lerd men selde *and* gemelesliche sowen. Ðe defles sed : is idel. *and* unnet. *and* iuele word. hoker. *and* scorn. spel. *and* leoð. cheast. *and* twispeche. *and* curs. *and* leasinges. *and* sware. *and* alle swikele speches. And oðre fele lerdemen speken : also lewede. also ure drihten seide þurh anes prophetes muðe. *Erit sicut populus sacerdos*. Prest sal leden his lif also lewede mæn. *and* swo hie doð nuðe : *and* sumdel werse. For þe lewede man wurðeð his spuse mid cloðes more þane mid him seluen. *and* prest naht sis<sup>2</sup> chireche þe is his spuse : ac his daie þe is his hore. awlenceð hire mid \*cloðes. more þan him seluen. Ðe chire[che] cloðes ben to brokene : *and* calde. *and* hise wiues shule ben hole : *and* newe. His alter cloð great *and* sole : *and* hire chemise smal. *and* hwit. *and* te albe sol : *and* hire smoc hwit. þe haued line sward : *and* hire winpel wit. oðer maked geļu mid saffran.

The teachers of holy church now sow the devil's seed rather, and lead men to hell instead of to heaven.

The devil's seed is idle, useless words, scorn, &c.

The priest lives like the layman, only far worse.

He honours his concubine more than his lawful spouse, the Church.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. swo his. \* p. 117.

*and* newe. His alter cloð great *and* sole : *and* hire chemise smal. *and* hwit. *and* te albe sol : *and* hire smoc hwit. þe haued line sward : *and* hire winpel wit. oðer maked geļu mid saffran. Ðe meshakele of medeme fustane<sup>3</sup>. *and* hire mentel grene oðer burnet. Ðe corporeals sole : *and* unshapliche. hire handcloðes. *and* hire bord cloðes makede wite. *and* lustliche on to siene. Ðe caliz of tin : *and* hire nap of mazere. *and* ring of golde.

<sup>3</sup> The e is imperfect, and looks like i.

the layman, the more he honoureth his whore than his spouse [the church]. Priests are those whom the apostle speaketh of, thus saying, *Quorum deus venter est*. Their belly is their Christ, and all evil examples they manifest in themselves, and the laity diligently follow them, and exhibit practices like wild animals, some like bears, some like wolves, some like other animals. And as the fowls (birds) fly from one place to another and are never steadfast, so do these people—they fly from ill to worse in speech and in deed, and they bring into their hearts pride, wrath, envy, and hatred, and other evil vices, just as reptiles breed in the wilderness, that is in this world, this horrible place to dwell in ; for here is hunger and thirst, and old age and sickness, and debate and strife, and aching, smarting, sorrowfulness, weariness, and other great woes. Of such may men be afraid who know any good. Again, in this abode there is a great desert void of holy virtues ; all right is laid low and wrong is raised, as the wise man said, *Nusquam tuta fides, non hospes ab hospite tutus*. There is nowhere any truth, for the guest is not sure of the host nor either of the other, *Non socer a nuro*, nor the father-in-law of his son-in-law. *Fratrumque gratia rara est*. Seldom one brother trusteth the other. *Filius ante diem patrinos inquiri annos*. The son wisheth the father's death before his day has come. *Imminet exitio vir conjugis, illa mariti*. The wife would that her lord were dead and he that she were. From this desert and horrible place was fetched this holy maiden of whom I speak, that is our lady St. Mary, and the heavenly king fetched her, as the prophet saith in his discourse, *Tenuisti manum dexteram meam*, &c. Thou didst hold my right hand and didst lead me in thy will and received me with honour. *Ter ascendit primo quidem passibus corporis ante templum ab imo quindecim graduum, usque ad summum. Secundo, in templo passibus mentis de virtute in virtutem, ubi videtur deus deorum in Syon. Tertio, corpore et anima assumpta in cælum*. Three times this holy maiden ascended—first bodily, when she was three years old, before the temple upon the ladder of fifteen steps, from downwards (bottom) to upwards (top), without man's help. The second time she went up into the temple spiritually



And is þe prest swo muchele forcuðere. þane þe lewede. Swo he wurðeð his hore more þan his spuse. Prestes ben þo. þe apostel of specð. þus queðende. *Quorum deus uenter est.* Here wombe is here crist. and alle iuele forbisne hie ippen of hem seluen. and te lewede men hem zierneliche folegen. and teð forð geres after wilde deore. Sume after beore. sume after wulue. sume after oðer deor. And also þe fugeles fram ó stede to oðer. and ne ben nafre stedefaste. swo doð þis mannisse flieð fram iuele to werse. on speche. and on dede. and bringeð on here heorte oregel. and wrače and onde. and hatinge. and oðer iuele lastes. also wuremes breiden on wilderne þat is þis worlde. þis grisliche stede on to wunien. For here is hunger. and þurst. elde. unhale. flit. and win. cehe. and smertinge. sorinesse. werinesse. and oðre wowe muchel. Of swilch mai grisen men þe ani god cunnen. Eft sone on þis biwiste is muchel weste of holie mihte. Al riht is leid! and wogh \*arered also þe wise queð. *Nusquam tuta fides non hospes ab hospite tutus.* Nis nowre non trewðe. for nis þe gist siker of þe husebonde! ne noðer of oðer. Non socer á nuro Ne þe aldefader of hi[s] oðem. *Fratrumque gratia rara est.* Selde leueð þe broðer þat oðer. *Filius ante diem ante diem<sup>1</sup> paternos inquirat annos.* Ðe sune wussheð þe fader deað, ar his dai cume. *[I]mminet exicio uir coniugis. illa mariti.* Wif wolde þat hire louerd dead ware. and he þat hie ware. Of þesse waste and grisliche stede was þis holi maide fet þe ich of speke. þat is ure lafdi seinte marie. and hire fette þe heuenliche king. also þe prophete seið on his stefne. *Tenuisti manum dexteram meam. et cetera.* Ðu helde mi riht hond. and leddest me on þine wille and understode me mid wurdshipe. *Ter ascendit. primo quidem passibus corporis ante templum ab imo quindecim graduum. usque ad summum. Secundo in templo passibus mentibus<sup>2</sup> de uirtute in uirtutem. ubi uidetur deus deorum in syon. Tercio corpore. et anima assumpta in celum.* Þreo siðes stegh þis holie maiden. erest liehamliche þo hie was þreo gier heold. biforen þe temple on þe steire of fiftene stoples. fro nepewarde to unewarde. wiðute mannes helpe. Oðer siðes<sup>3</sup> hie stegh in þe temple gostliche. fram mihte to mihte forte

They exhibit  
the habits of  
wild beasts.

This world is  
a desert, being  
devoid of all  
holy virtues.  
\* p. 118.

Mary was  
taken from  
this world by  
holy angels.

<sup>2</sup> Read  
mentis.

She had three  
ascensions.

<sup>3</sup> So in MS.



from virtue to virtue, until that she beheld the lord of all virtues, as she wished to. The third time she ascended on this day when angels bore her with soul and body into the heavenly habitation, where she was honourably received. And Solomon the wise, who was king in Jerusalem many hundred years before this, saw these marvellous ascensions as manifestly as if he had lived at this day, and marvelled thereof and said, *Quæ et ista quæ ascendit sicut aurora, consurgens pulera ut luna, electa ut sol*—Who is this that ascendeth as the dawn, fair as the moon, choice (adorned) like the sun? May our lady St. Mary, as surely as she was on this day exalted into heaven, bear our petition to our Lord Jesus Christ, and may he give us eternal bliss in heaven. *Quod ipse præstare dignetur qui vivit et regnat per omnia sæcula sæculorum. AMEN.*

## XXVIII.

## OF THE DEAD.

*L*ibera me domine de morte eterna in die illa tremenda, quando cæli movendi sunt et terra, dum veneris judicare sæculum per ignem. *Dies illa, dies iræ, calamitatis et miseriæ, dies magna et amara valde.* The life-holy man Job, whom the book speaketh of and saith, *Erat vir ille simplex et justus, et timens deum, ac recedens a malo*, he was meek in word, and just in deeds, and God-fearing in mind, and innocent withal, and therefore pleased our Lord so well that he praised him above all men and said, *Non est similis in terra*—There is none other on earth like him. This holy man had three states of life; the first was in great worldly prosperity, as the book saith, *Perdidit omnem substantiam ejus filios et filias. Caro quoque ejus gravi vulnere vulnerata est.* And our Lord who loved him so much gave the devil leave to deprive him of his cattle, and of his property, and of all his children, and of all the worldly wealth that he enjoyed. And the devil did so; and after that afflicted his body, and thereon brought so much sickness through his dire crafts, that the body [of Job] became brim-full of wounds, and from each wound there welled out virus, so that no man might come near him on account of the stench; Not even would his wife, whom he had so greatly honoured, but most

þat hie alre mihtene louerd biheold also hie hit wolde. Ðe  
 pridde siþe hie stehþ þis dai þo engles hire beren mid soule *and* The third we  
 commemorate  
 to-day.  
 mid lichame. in to þan heuenliche bure! þar heo was wurðliche  
 \*understonden. *and* salomon þe wise þe wes fele hundred wintre \*p. 119.  
 þer bifore king in ierusalem sehþ þese wunderliche stienge. also  
 suterliche also he þis dai were. *and* wundrede þer offe! *and*  
 seide. *Que est ista que ascendit sicut aurora consurgens pulera  
 ut luna electa ut sol.* Hwat is þis þe astihþ also dai rieme.  
 fair also mone. icoren also sunne. Vre lafdi *Seinte Marie.* also May she bear  
 our petition  
 to our Lord  
 Jesus Christ.  
 wisliche also hie þis dai was houen in to heuene. bere ure arende  
 to ure louerd ihesu crist. þat he ȝife us eche blisse on heuene.  
*Quod ipse prestare dignetur qui uiuit et Regnat per omnia  
 secula seculorum. amen.*

## XXVIII.

## DE DEFUNCTIS.

*L*ibera me domine de morte eterna in die illa tremenda, quando  
 celi movendi sunt et terra. dum veneris iudicare seculum  
 per ignem. [D]ies illa, dies ire. calamitatis et miserie, dies  
 magna et amara valde. Ðe lif holi man iob þe þe boc of specð. The character  
 of Job,  
*and* seið. *Erat uir ille simplex et iustus. et timens deum. ac re-  
 cedens á malo.* he was admod on worde. *and* rihtwis on dede.  
*and* godfriht on þonke. *and* loðles mid alle. *and* þerefore likede  
 ure drihten swo wel þat he herede him ouer alle men! *and* seide.  
*Non est similis in terra.* Nis on eorðe non oðer his liche. þis holi and his three  
 conditions.  
 man hadde þre biwistes þe forme was on michel worold wele. also The first was  
 one of worldly  
 prosperity;  
 þe boc seið. *Perdidit omnem substanciam eius. filios. et filias. Caro  
 quoque eius graui uulnere uulnerata est. and* ure drihten þe him  
 swo michel luuede ȝaf leue þe deuel to binimende him his oref.  
*and* his ahte. *and* his children. alle. *and* alle þe worold winne þe  
 he weald hadde. *and* þe deuel swo dide. *and* after þan toc his  
 oȝen lichame. \**and* þer one brohte swo michel sicnesse þureh his  
 þre creftes. þat te lichame warð bretful of wunden. *and* at eche  
 wunde wul ut atter. Þo ne mihte no man for stenche cumen  
 him enden. ne his wif nolde. þe he hadde swo swiþe wurðed. ac

the second of  
 pain and  
 poverty;  
 \* p. 120.

men scornfully reviled him. The third state he had in such prosperity, that it was twofold greater than the former, as the book saith, *Reddidit deus Job omnia duplicia, et melior fuit ejus finis principio*. Our Lord requited Job twofold what the devil had deprived him of in youth, and in all the weal that he previously possessed, and his end was more blissful than his beginning. And in the intermediate state in which he suffered grievous torments he made a pitiful lamentation, and therein mentioned all his afflictions that he had endured in this wretched world, or should endure in the other. And then he raised his eyes to heaven and his heart to God, and his hands to his breasts, and sorely sighed, and beat his heart (*or breast*) and intreated God's mercy, thus saying, *Libera me domine, &c.*; deliver me, Lord, from eternal death in the horrible day, that heaven and earth shall quake and be in dread, when thou comest to judge all mankind with fire. Thus the holy man himself prayed, and gave example to all men so to pray; and as often as the priest singeth this prayer at the sepulchre he remindeth all those who are there thus for themselves to pray—*Libera me domine, de morte, &c.* Deliver me, Lord, from eternal death. *Tres siquidem mortes sunt scilicet, una ut supra scripsi; una momentanea, scilicet, corporis quando ab eo recedit anima*. There are three deaths—one is brief, that the body undergoes when the soul turneth from it. All believing men are afraid of death, as the book saith, *Metuentes non metuenda*. They have fear of what they ought not. *Altera diuturna scilicet animæ quanda declinat a justicia*. The second death is sometimes long, which the soul undergoes when the body sinneth and separateth herself from righteousness, but of this death are all righteous and God-fearing men afraid, and no others. *Tertia corporis et animæ simul, quando in ignem eternum mittentur a divina sententia dicente, ite maledicti, &c.* The third death is everlasting and endless, and that suffereth man in soul and body together, except his sins be previously forgiven him or repented of, when he shall hereafter on Doomsday arise from the dead, when our Lord, who is both life and death, shall drive him from him to torment, thus saying, *Ite maledicti in ignem eternum*—Depart, ye accursed spirits, into everlasting fire. Of this

mest manne him gremede mid seorne. Ðe priddre biwist he <sup>the third of surpassing prosperity.</sup> hadde on swich wele. þe was bi twifold more : þane þe fornie  
 also þe boc seið. *Reddidit deus iob omnia duplicia et melior fuit eius finis principio.* vre drihten ȝiald twifoldliche iob. þat þe deucl him hadde binumen. on guweče. and on alle þe winne þe he erur wield. and warð blisfuller his ende : þene was his biginninge. and on þe midleste biwist þe he þolede þe gimere pine he makede ane reuliche meninge. and þer one minegedre alle his wrecche sičes. þe he þolede on þis wrecche worelde. oðer in þat oðer sholde. and an hefde þo his egen to heuene. and his heorte to gode. and his honden to his breste. and sore sihte. and his heorte biet. and bed godes milce þus quečinde. *Libera me domine et cetera.* Ared me louerd of eche deače. on þe grisliche dai. þe heuene and eorče shulen quakien. of-dred. þanne þu cumest to demen al mankin mid fire. þus þe holi man him bad. and ȝaf alle men forbisne swo to bidden. and alswo ofte swo prest singeð þis bede at lich huse. he mineȝeð alle ȝo : þe þer ben. hem þus to bidden. *Libera me domine. de morte. et cetera.* Ales me louerd of eche deače. *Tres siquidem mortes sunt scilicet una ut supra \*scripsi. Vna momentanea.* \*p. 121. *scilicet corporis quando ab eo recedit anima.* Ðre deačes beð. <sup>There are three deaths to which man is liable.</sup> on is ečelich þat poleð þe lichame. þan þe sowle turneð fram him. Of deače ben alle bileffulle men of-dradde. also þe boc seið. *Metuentes non metuenda.* Hie habbeð [drede] of þat hie no sholden. *Altera diuturna scilicet anime quando declinat a iusticia.* Þat oðer deač is oče[r] hwile long. þat poleð þe soule : þane þe licame senegeð. and sundreð hire fram rihtwisnesse. ac of þis deače ben alle rihtwise men and godfrihte of-dradde : and non oðre. *Tercia corporis et anime simul. quando in ignem eternum mittentur á diuina sententia dicente. Ite maledicti et cetera.* Ðe priddre deač is eche and endeles. þat poleð man on soule and <sup>The third death is endless.</sup> on licame to gadere. þane he beð eft on domes dai á-risen of deače. bute his sunnes him ben ere forgieue. oðer bette hwane ure drihten þe is boče lif and deač. driueð him fram him. to pine. þus quečinde. *Ite maledicti in ignem eternum.* Witeð ȝie awariede gostes in to eche fur. Of þis deač ben alle men

death are all men afraid who believe on our Lord. And Job intreated our Lord that he would deliver him from this death on the sorrowful day when he cometh to judge all the world, when both heaven and earth shall quake for fear. Unbelieving men are called earth, and believing men are called heaven, and they shall scarcely be secure. *Tremebunt etiam angeli et archangeli.* Then shall angels and archangels quake for fear. *Non quia conscientia sua eos accuset, sed quoniam judicem videbunt terribilem.* Angels shall become afraid, not for their sins, for they have none, but because they shall know our Judge's wrath by his stern looks, by his awful speech. When our Lord cometh to judge all mankind, neither in heaven nor in earth but between the two, in the clouds, fire shall come before him, as the prophet saith, *Ignis ante ipsum procedet et inflammabit in circuitu inimicos ejus.* Fire shall burn the earth and all that is therein or thereupon, and shall cleanse all believing men of all the sins that they had renounced or repented of or commenced to repent of, and shall make them sevenfold brighter than the sun, as the book saith, *Fulgebunt justi septies splendidius quam sol.* The righteous shall be sevenfold brighter than the sun, and else would they not be fitting to dwell in heaven. But the unbelieving men, who while alive did not forsake nor repent of their sins, nor firmly promise amendment, shall in the fire become so black and so awful and so horrible, that they shall be a hundredfold more horrible than any 'night-darkness,' and be then fitting to dwell in hell with all devils. Then shall it be as the book saith, *Deus manifeste veniet.* Then shall come our Lord openly to behold all that shall there be assembled. *Ignis in conspectu ejus exardescet et in [circuitu] ejus tempestas valida.* And then the fire shall still burn before him, and a great storm shall be all about him. *Advocabit cælum desursum, &c.* Then will he call the heavenly men, who are the life-holy men, and the earthly men, who are the sinful, and judge each man according to his deserts. Those who in this life had all their sins forsaken and repented of, or began to repent of and prayed for mercy—all these he will call innocent and will send them to heaven, thus saying, *Venite benedicti patris mei, &c.*—Come, ye blessed, and receive eternal



ofdradde: þe on ure drihte bileueð. And Iob witnede ure drihten. þat of þis deað him redde. on þe carefuldai. þan he cumeð almiddeneard to demen. Ðanne shule boðe quakien ofdradde heuene *and* eorðe. Unbileuede men ben cleped eorðe. *and* bileffulle men ben heuene nemnede. *and* hie shule ben unneað boregen. *Tremebunt etiam angeli et archangeli.* Ðar shulen engles *and* archangles quakien ofdradde. *Non quia conscientia sua eos accuset. sed quoniam iudicem uidebunt terribilem.* Engles wurðen ofdradde. naht for here gultes þe none ne habbeð. ac for þat hie shulen enowen ure demendes wraððe. bi his \*grimeliche lete. *and* bi his eifulle speche. þan ure drihten cumeð to demen alle mankenne. noðer on heuene ne on eorðe. ac bitwien two. on þe wolcne. Fur cuned biforen him also þe prophete seide. *Ignis ante ipsum precedet. et inflammabit in circuitu inimicos eius.* Fur berneð þe eorðe *and* al þat beð þar inne. oðer þar uppe. *and* clenseð alle bileffule men of alle þe sunnes þe hie hadden forleten. oðer bet. oðer bigunnen to beten. *and* makeð hem seufealde brihtere þane þe sunne also þe boc seið. *Fulgebunt iusti septies cplendidius quam sol.* Ðe riht-wise<sup>1</sup> shulle ben seufeald brihtere þane þe sunne. *and* elles naren hie naht bicumeliche to wunien in heuene. Ac þo unbileffule men þe bi here quica liue here sunnes ne forleten. ne betten. ne fastliche bote ne bihten. hie bicumeð in þe fure swo bloke. *and* swo eiseliche. *and* swo ateliche. þat bi hundred fealde grisluker þan ani niht peoster. *and* ben þanne bicumeliche to wunien in helle mid alle deffen. þanne wurð also þe boc seið. *Deus manifeste ueniet.* Ðanne cumeð ure drihten openliche to bihealde alle þe þare shulle ben gaderede. *Ignis in conspectu eius exardescet. et in eius. tempestas ualida.* And giet þanne þat fur berneð biforen him. *and* storem beð muchel al abuten him. *Aduocabit celum desursum et cetera.* Ðanne wule he clepien þe heuenliche men. þo ben þe lif holie. *and* to<sup>2</sup> eorðeliche men: þo ben þe sunffulle. *and* demen elch man after his erninge. Ðo þe hadden on þesse liue alle here sunnes for-\*leten. *and* bet. oðer bigunnen to beten. *and* beden milce: alle he quað hem saclese: *and* sent hem to heuene þus queðende. *Venite benedicti patris*

Of it ought  
all believers  
to be afraid.

On doomsday  
even the  
angels shall  
be in dread.

\* p. 122.

The Lord  
shall then  
appear in the  
clouds.  
[Ps. xevi. 3.]

The righteous  
shall be made  
bright by the  
fire;  
[MS. rihtwile.

but the  
wicked shall  
be made black  
and ugly, and  
so fitted to  
dwell with  
devils in  
hell.

[Ps. xlix. 3.]

þo<sup>2</sup> Read te.

\* p. 123.



life and bliss in heaven. But all those that have not so done, he will bid their unrepented sins of thought, speech, and deed to come before him and surround them firmly, and to shamefully cry out upon them, and to sting them vehemently, and they will do so. Every sin shall there appear to them, except it be here forgiven or hidden by repentance. Then shall stand those wretches, as those that are woe-begone, and they shall look up and down and all about, and shall see above them God's wrath, which driveth them from him, and they shall be thereof greatly afraid; and no wonder is it, for they shall see beneath them devils, who shall greedily seize them, and they shall be greatly terrified and full easily may. They shall see beside them such as were here familiar with them, and they shall be greatly ashamed on account of them and of their own sins, that shall so accuse them, and shall be sorely incensed, and with themselves, sorest of all because they had so foully sinned. This shall be on the day that the book speaketh of. *Dies illa dies iræ.* On that day God's wrath shall come upon the sinful, and they shall be powerless against the devils, and they shall be under them and shall wholly suffer woe at their hands, and such (woe) shall last them all the endless day which is ever without end. And when they change their habitation they turn from evil to worse, from bitter to more bitter, and from the doom to hell, to the habitation below that is full of all afflictions, for there they shall have shame and wrath and darkness, cold and hunger, thirst and stench, and gnawing of worms (reptiles), and boiling fire and the greatest of all woes. May Christ shield us therefrom, if it be his will, and all the sinful that are dead or shall die, and that men may entreat for them; and may he grant us all an eternal dwelling-place in heaven. *Qui vivit et regnat per omnia sæcula sæculorum.* AMEN.

## XXIX.

ST. ANDREW.

*Ambulans Ihesus juxta mare Galilee vidit Petrum et Andream fratrem ejus mittentes rete in mare, &c.* The holy gospel of this day speaketh of our Saviour and of two brethren—the one is St. Peter and the other

*mei et cetera.* Cumeð ibledsede *and* underfoð eche lif *and* blisse on heuene. Ac alle þo þe nabbeð swo idon. he bit here unbette sennes on þonke. *and* on speche *and* on dede cumen bi foren hem. *and* bistonden hem fastliche. *and* bigraden hem shameliche. *and* biten hem unradeliche. *and* hie swo don. *and* elch sinne þare him seluen biseið. bute hit be here forgieue. oðer mid bote iheled. Ðanne stondeð þo wrechtes also þo. þe wo beð. *and* lokeð up. *and* dun. *and* al abuten. *and* sen buuen hem godes wraððe. þe hem fram him driueð. *and* beð þar of swiðe ofdradde. *and* no wunder nis. Hie iseð bineçen hem deffen þe hem grede-liche kepeð. *and* beð swiðe of grisen: *and* ful eaðe mužen. Hie iseð bisides hem swilche þe hem waren her cuðe. *and* bieð swiðe of-shamede. of hem. *and* mid here owen sinnes þe hem swo bielepieð. *and* ben sore ofgramede. *and* wið hem seluen alre sorest. for þat hie hadden swo fulliche suneged. þis beð on þe daie. þe þe boc offe specð. *Dies illa dies ire.* On þe dai cumeð godes wraððe uppen þe sinfulle. *and* hie beð unmilti to-ge-nes deffen. *and* hie beð bineçen hem. *and* polieð fulle wowe in hem. *and* swilch hem shal leste al þe endelese dai. þat is afre abuten ende. *and* gies<sup>1</sup> hie wunienge hwarefeð. hie tu[r]neð fram iuele to werse. *and* fram bitere to biterure. *and* fram þe dome to helle. to þe niðer wunienge. þat is ful \*of alle wosiðes. for þere hie shulen hauen shame. *and* grame. *and* pesternesse. chele. *and* hunger. þurst. *and* stench. *and* wurmene cheu. *and* wallende fir *and* alre wowe mest. Crist us þerwið shilde. gif his wille beo. *and* alle þe sinfulle þe forð sende farene. *and* þat faren shulen. *and* þat men moten fore bidden. *and* giue us alle on heuene eche erdingstouwe. *Qui uiuit et Regnat per omnia secula seculorum. amen.*

The Judge will summon before the sinner all the sins he has committed while on earth.

The sinner shall be powerless to withstand the devils.

<sup>1</sup> Read gief.

\* p. 124.

Their habitation shall be full of all the most horrible tortures.

May God grant us an eternal resting-place in heaven.

## XXIX.

### DE SANCTO ANDREA.

*A*mbulans ihesuc iuxta mare. galilee uidit petrum et andream fratrem eius mittentes rete in mare. et cetera. Ðe holi godspel of þis dai specð of ure helende *and* of two broðren.

St. Andrew ; and it saith that our Saviour went by the sea and saw these two brethren on the sea in their ships throwing out their nets into the sea ; and he called to them and said, *Venite post me*—Come after me, and follow me ; and they waited not for the second word, but did as the book saith, *Ad unius jussionis vocem relictis retibus et navi, secuti sunt eum*. At the first word they forsook their nets and their ship and came to our Saviour and followed him until their life's end. So may we all do who are after them ; and by them our Saviour called us to follow him, and we may do so the more easily if we carefully heed and fully understand that our Lord was on the land and that these brethren were on the sea, when he called them unto him ; and if ye also comprehend what the land signifieth and what the sea. Let us now entreat our Lord to instruct and enable me to say truly to you what it signifieth, and you profitably to understand it. *Mare semper est in motu, et significat ruinosam civitatem, id est, seculum de qua dicit apostolus. Non habemus hic manentem civitatem, &c.* The sea is ever waving, and therefore unsteadfast, and signifieth the ruinous city that is in such an unsafe place that nought may therein remain that can any while last ; that is, this wretched world that is ever waving, not from place to place, but from time to time, and that is full well seen in many things, and most of all in man, for one taketh most notice of him. *Qui fugit velut umbra et nunquam in eodem statu permanet*—He is fleeting as a shadow and standeth never in one place, but declines ever from youth to age, from health to sickness, from comeliness to uncomeliness, from love to hate, from honour to dishonour, from bliss to sorrowfulness, from laughter to weeping, from weal to woe, and lastly, from life to death. *Qui numero cuncta trahit secum vertitque volubile tempus*—And all worldly affairs turn with time and go from one time to another. *Item sicut tempestas mare incidens aquas turbat, fluctus agit, naves subvertere temptat, sic facit in seculo superbia et ira principium*—Again, the storm comes in, and throws the water upward and raiseth many showers, and driveth them before it ; and if it findeth a ship it endeavours to sink it

*pat* on is *Seint peter and pat* oðer *Seint andreu. and seið* *pat* ure  
 helende giede bi þe se. *and* segh þos tweie broðren in þe se on  
 here shipe werpinde ut here fishnet in þe se. *and* he clepede to  
 hem *and* seide. *Venite post me. Cumeð* after me. *and* folgeð  
 me. *and* hie ne abiden noht *pat* oðer word, ac diden also þe boc  
 seið. *Ad unius iussionis uocem relictis retibus et naui. secuti*  
*sunt eum.* At te forme worde hie forleten here net *and* here  
 ship. *and* come to ure helende *and* him folgeden to here lifes  
 ende. swo moten we alle don þe ben after hem. *and* bi hem  
 clepede ure helende us him to folgen. *and* we muge þe eðere gif  
 we nimeð michele geme *and* wel understonden *pat* ure helende  
 was on þe londe! *and* þese bræðren weren on þe se! þo þe hem  
 clepede to him. *and* gif we understonden ee wat bitocneð *pat*  
 lond. *and* hwat þe se. Vte we nu bidden ure drihten. *pat* he wisse.  
*and* fulste \*me heuliche<sup>1</sup> to seggen wat it bitocneð. *and* heu frem-  
 fulliche to understonden. *Mare semper est in motu. et signi-*  
*ficat ruinosam ciuitatem. id est seculum. de qua dicit apostolus.*  
*Non habemus hic manentem ciuitatem et cetera.* Ðe se is eure  
 wagiende. *and* þere fore unstedefast. *and* bitocneð þe abroidene  
 bureh *pat* is in swo warliche<sup>2</sup> stede! *pat* noht ne mai per inne  
 bileue. *pat* muge ani wile ileste. *pat* is þis wrecche worold. *pat* eure  
 is wagiende noht fro stede to stede! ae fro time to time. *and* *pat* is  
 on fele þinge ful michel iseone. *and* on þe man. alre mast for me  
 nimeð of him mest geme. *Qui fugit uelut umbra et nunquam*  
*in eodem statu permanet.* He is fleonde also shadewe *and* ne  
 stont neure on one stede. Ac sigeð eure fro zuweðe to helde.  
 fro hele to unhele. fro wenliche to ateliche. fro lieue to loðe. fro  
 wurðe to unwurðe. fro blisse to sorinesse. fro lehtre to wope. fro  
 wele to wowe. *and* attan ende fro liue to deaðe. *Qui numero*  
*cuncta trahit secum uertitque uolubile tempus. and* alle worold  
 þing turneð mid time. *and* sigeð fro one time to oðer. *Item.*  
*Sicut tempestas mare incidens aquas turbat fluctus agit naues*  
*subuertem<sup>3</sup> temptat. sic facit in seculo superbia et ira principium.*  
 Eft sone bicumeð in þe se storm. *and* werpeð *pat* wafer upward  
*and* arereð shures fele. *and* driueð hem biforen him. *and* gif he  
 ship findeð! he fondeð to drenchen hit gif he mai. Swo doð in

The call of  
St. Andrew  
and St. Peter.

They followed  
Christ as  
soon as he  
bade them.

Our Lord was  
on the land  
and they were  
on the sea.

\* p. 125.

<sup>1</sup> ? read heu  
[ful]liche or  
[heu] treowe-  
liche.

The sea is  
ever in motion,  
and is a type  
of the world.

<sup>2</sup> Or werliche.  
At first sight  
it looks like  
parliche.

? un-warliche  
see p. 191,  
l. 32.

This is seen  
in the fleeting  
condition of  
man.

<sup>3</sup> So in MS.

The sea is  
troubled by  
storms.

if it can. So do in this world pride and wrath of kings and of barons, who send their officers to bring evil tidings, and therewith trouble the land (which is called water) and bring upon the hearts of the people great storms of malice, and of envy, and of hatred, and curses in their mouths, and miseries; and war upon churches, or lessen their rights or hinder them, or withal deprive them of them, if they can, just as the storm sinks the ship if it is able—*Singula quid referam? non novi nomina quorum; more fluentis aque currunt mortalia queque*. I cannot tell all the things, nor can I here mention all their names, but all worldly things are fleeting like running water. *Item: mare effluit et refluit, similiter et seculum effluit, dum fletus multiplicat, refluit, dum mortis manu metit*. Again, the sea floweth when she casteth out the water from her channel up on to the land, and it ebbeth when the water that had flowed from its place upon the land turneth back again. So floweth this world when men multiply greatly, and also cattle and wild animals, and fishes and fowls, and their progeny greatly increaseth and thriveth well, and for a long while go well in hand, and there is great bliss among men. And of this flood it is said, *Elevaverunt domine flumina vocem suam*. The ‘water-storms’ raised their voice; for what is people but fleeting (flowing) water, that flits from this world as the water-storm doth, from place to place? And again this world ebbeth when it withhold its fruitfulness, and there cometh pestilence or death and destroyeth much thereof. Then have indigent men much woe in their hearts and lamentation in their mouths, and each of them the more woe on account of another’s mourning, and of such ebbing it is said, *Elevaverunt flumina fluctus suos*, &c. The ‘water-storms’ raised up their waves, that is the people, who sorely bemoan and greatly bewail such misfortunes. In a second mode this world floweth and ebbeth. Towards summer it (the world) floweth, when all roots quicken and earth and trees grow and blow and bear blossoms. Again towards winter it ebbeth, when all leaves fall. And on account of such flowing and such ebbing the prophet calleth this world a sea, thus saying, *Mirabiles elationes maris*, &c. Marvellous are the ‘out-sendings’ of the sea, and wonderful is our



pis woreld þe oreguil *and* þe wraððe \*of kings. *and* of barones  
 þe senden here sergantes to bringen iuele tīðinges. *and* þer mide  
 dreuen þat lond þat is to water nemned. *and* bringen on þe  
 folkes heorte grete stormes. of nið. *and* of onde. *and* of hatienge.  
*and* on here muðe curses *and* werginges. *and* wurreð uppe  
 chirches. oðer wanieð hire rihtes. oðer letteð. oðer mid alle  
 binimeð gif hie mugen. also þe storm bisinkeð þe ship gif he  
 mai. *Singula quid referam non noui nomina quorum. More*  
*fluentis aque currunt mortalia queque.* Ne mai ich noht alle  
 þing tellen. ne ich ne can here alre name nemnen. Ac alle  
 woreld þing ben fleted<sup>1</sup> also water erninde. *Item mare effluit et*  
*refluit. Similiter et seculum effluit: dum fletus multiplicat.*  
*refluit: dum mortis manu metit.* Eft sone þe se flouweð þe hi  
 casteð ut þat water of hire stede. into þat lond: *and* ebbeð þanne  
 þat water of hire stede [floweð] in to þat lond: *and* eft agen  
 turneð. Swo floweð þis woreld þenne men michel tuderīð. *and*  
 oref. *and* deor. *and* fishshes. *and* fugeles. *and* here tuder swiðe  
 wexeð. *and* wel pieð. *and* goð wel on hond: longe wile. *and*  
 beð michel blisse among mannen. *and* of þis flod is iseid.  
*Eleuauerunt domine flumina uocem suam.* Ðe water stormes  
 an-hefden here stefne. for wat is folc bute fletende water. þe  
 flitteð fro þis þat was. also water storm fro stede to stede. *and*  
 eft þis worl[d] ebbeð. þenne hit þat tuderinde wið-teoð *and*  
 cumeð coðe oðer qualm. *and* michel þerof felleð. Ðanne  
 hauen wanspedie men on heorte wowe. *and* on muðe woninge.  
*and* here ech þe more wowe for oðres woninge. *and* of swiche.  
 \*ebbinge is iseid. *Eleuauerunt flumina fluctus suos et cetera.* \* p. 127.  
 Ðe water stremes on-heueden up here undes. þat is þat folc þe  
 sore bimurneð. *and* swiðe bimeneð swich unilimp. On oðer  
 wise floweð *and* ebbeð þis woreld. To-genes sumere heo floweð  
 þanne alle moren quiken. *and* eorðe *and* trewes growen. *and*  
 blouwen. *and* blostinen bereð. Eft to-ganes wintre heo hebbeð  
 þenne alle leues fallen. *and* for swiche flode. *and* for swich  
 ebbinge þe prophete nemmeð þis worlð se. þus queðinde.  
*Mirabiles elationes maris. et cetera.* Wunderliche ben þe sæ.  
 ut sondes. *and* wonderful is ure louerd on þeunesse. *Item. in*

So are poor  
 men troubled  
 by the storms  
 of pride and  
 malice.  
 \* p. 126.

All worldly  
 things are  
 like running  
 water.  
 1 So in MS.;  
 read fletende.

The world  
 flows when  
 all things  
 go on well.

People are  
 like running  
 water.

Towards  
 summer roots  
 grow and  
 blow, when  
 winter ap-  
 proaches  
 leaves fall.



Lord in virtue. *Item : in mare pisces majores devorant minores.* Again, the greater fishes in the sea eat the smaller and live on them. So in this world do the rich who are lords, destroy the poor men who are underlings, and moreover live on them and obtain from their labour hounds and hawks and horses and weapons and spotted and grey (fur) and dainty meats and drinks, and all that they possess they have from their common labours.

The underlings think daily how they may labour most and expend their flesh and blood in hard toil, with feet and with hands, and with all their servile limbs ; and yet they with difficulty obtain their lord's rights, and they themselves eat the worst that they get from the earth, and yet will not their lord be pleased with his just portion, but by treachery, or by violence, will rob his underling of that by which he should live. And, if he forces him to give, that becomes violence and robbery, and he commits a breach of the peace, where he ought to observe it ; and if he involves him in litigation and by unjust judgment depriveth him of his sustenance, he hath dearly bought that with his own soul, *Et sic ultricem Domini provocat iram* ; and thus he stirs up against him God's wrath, who saith to the lord, *Ne facias alii quod tibi non vis fieri* ; do not thou to another man that which would grieve thee if one did it to thee. To the man he saith, *Mihi vindictam, et ego retribuam.* Avenge thou not thyself by [evil] wishes and maledictions, but reserve vengeance for me and I will requite him his ill [deeds] with worse ones. *Item : mare est amarum, similiter et seculum ab introitu usque ad exitum.* Again, the sea is bitter ; so is this world from one end to the other, and all earthly men who dwell therein, as the wise man saith, *Nascimur in dolore, vivimus in labore, morimur in merore* ; in sorrow we each came hither, in toil we here abide, in woe we depart hence. Listen now why, and in what wise. Sorrowful is our birth for Eve's guilt, to whom our Lord said, *In dolore paries filios* ; in sorrow thou shalt conceive and bear ; and so she did, and all others, except our Lady St. Mary—*Quæ peperit sine dolore salvatorem*, who neither ached nor smarted when she bore our Lord Jesus Christ, thanked be he ! But every other woman doth ; and sorely acheth and smarteth

*mari pisces maiores deuorant minores.* Eft-sone þe more fishes The greater fishes eat the smaller, so do rich lords live on poor men.  
in þe se eten þe lasse; *and* bi hem liuen. Swo don in þis  
woreld þe riche þe ben louerdinges struien þe wrecche men þe  
ben underlinges. *and* naðeles bi hem libben. *and* habbeð of here  
swinche hundes. *and* haukes. *and* hors. *and* wepnas. *and* fogh.  
*and* grei. *and* estliche metes *and* drinkes. *and* al þat hie bi  
ben<sup>1</sup>: hie hauen of here mene swinche. Ðe underlinges þenchen <sup>1</sup> *So in MS.*  
oðe dai hu hie muȝen mest swinken. *and* spenen here flesh *and*  
here blod; on iuele swinche; mid foten *and* mid honden. *and*  
mid alle here hund-limes. *and* unneðes hie winnen giet here  
louerdes rihttes. *and* hem seluen eten þe werste þat hie of eorðe  
tilien. *and* giet ne wile þe louerd ben paid mid his rihte mol. The master is not satisfied with his proper dues, and extorts more from his underlings.  
ae mid swike-dome oðer mid strengðe. *and*<sup>1</sup> binimeð his under-  
linge. þat he sholde biliuen. *and* gif he net him to giuene þat  
beoð,\*strengðe. *and* refloc. *and* brecð grið. þar he hit healde  
sholde. *and* gief he him set a speche. *and* mid woȝe-dome \*p. 128.  
binimeð him his biliue. þat he haueð dere boht mid his oȝene  
sowle. *Et sic ultricem domini prouocat iram.* And þus aweeð  
to-ȝenes him seluen godes warðe<sup>1</sup>: þe seið to louerde. *Ne facias*  
*alii quod tibi non uis fieri.* Ne do þu non oðer man þing.  
þe þe wolde ofþunche gief me hit dude þe. To þe man he seið.  
*Michi uindictam; et ego retribuam.* Ne wrec þu þe mid  
wussinge. ne mid warienge. ae heald me þe wrache. *and* ich  
him wile his iuel mid werse forȝelde. *Item mare est amarum.*  
*similiter et seculum ab introitu usque ad exitum.* Eft-sone þe The s.a. is bitter, so is this world.  
sæ is biter. swo is ee þis woreld fram ende to oðer. *and* alle  
eorðeliche men þe þar onne wunien. also wise queð. *Nascimur in*  
*dolore. Vivimus in labore. Morimur in merore.* On sore eche  
we hider eumen. On swunche we here wunien. In wowe we  
henne witeð. Hlisteð nu for hwat. *and* o wilche wise. Serehful Our whole life from birth to death is sorrowful.  
is ure burde for eues gulte to wan ure drihten sede. *In dolore*  
*paries filios.* On soreȝe þu shalt child kennen; *and* beren. *and*  
swo hie dude. *and* alle oðer don. bute ure lafdi Seinte Marie.  
*Que peperit sine dolore saluatorem.* Hire ne dide noðer. ne oc.  
ne smeart. þo þe hie bar ure louerd ihesu crist. þouked wurðe  
him. Ae elch oðer wimman doð. akeð. *and* smerteð sore. þan

when she is in labour with child, and at times such bitter throes seize her that she cannot stop her mouth, but shrieketh and ruefully wails and is wellnigh dead, because she goes wellnigh to her life's end ; and many altogether lose their lives. The child in its birth suffereth also bitter throes, and cometh at a doleful time into a grim habitation, and that it showeth by its weeping. But when it becomes thereto accustomed it weepeth less, because, though not sweet, it is used to it ; but woe is wontsome (customary) though it be not winsome (or lovesome). In this life we are in sorrowful toil for Adam's guilt, to whom our Lord said, *In sudore vultus tui vesceris pane tuo* ; in the sweat of thy face thou shalt enjoy bread ; so he did first, and afterwards we all do so ; every man in his way employs such labour as he is tied to. Clerk after his mode, the knight in his way, the husbandman in his way, and the practice of each craft as he is tied to. And to increase the toil, each man's servile limbs all toil and obey the belly most of all. The feet support it, and heavily thereon it (belly) beareth ; the hands take to it all things that are needful to it ; the eyes look for, and the ears listen to, what and where it be that shall well please it ; mouth receives its sustenance, teeth grind it, and tongue swalloweth it ; throat turneth it, and most all the servile limbs obey the belly alone, and all this labour appears very little to them, if it well pleaseth it. Thus was Adam a slave when God's mouth cursed the earth, and for his transgression thus said to him, *Quia comedisti ex prohibito, maledicta terra in opere tuo* ; because thou didst eat what I had forbidden thee, cursed be the ground in thy works. On the earth he toiled when he would fill his belly, and he did in himself what we do in ourselves, for we honour only the servile limbs and keep under the soul, and so evilly requite her good deeds, and dishonour our Lord and honour the devil. Again, in woe we depart from this life on account of Adam's guilt, to whom our Lord said, *Si ex ligno vetito comederis, morte morieris* ; if thou eatest of the forbidden tree, thou shalt die. Once he thereof did bite and was therewith choked, and through that one morsel all his offspring became choked, so that death came to him as it doth to us all. When the soul seeketh to go out of her body she closeth to her five gates and penneth them full fast, and

hie beð mid childe histonden. *and* nimeð hire stundmele swo  
 bittere þrowes þat hie ne mai hire muð holden. ac shrikeð. *and*  
 reuliche biginneð. *and* is welneih dead. for hie goð welneih to  
 hire liues ende. *and* fele here lif fulliche lateð. Ðat child \*on \* p. 129.  
 his burde poleð ec bittere þrowe. *and* cumeð of gemere hwile in <sup>The new-born</sup>  
 to grimme wunnienge. *and* cuð mid his woþe. Ac hwanne hit beð <sup>child comes</sup>  
 parto wuned ! hit wepeð þe lasse. for þat wune beð. þeih hit ne <sup>into a grim</sup>  
 be naht swete. Ac wowe beð wunsum. þeih hit ne bie naht <sup>abode.</sup>  
 lefsum. On þisse liue we beð on balfulle swinche for adames  
 gulte. to hwam ure drihten seide. *In sudore uultus tui uesceris*  
*pane tuo.* On þine nebbes swote. þu shalt þin bred noten. swo <sup>There is toil</sup>  
 dude erest. *and* we alle don after. Ilch man of his wise ! noteð <sup>in every craft.</sup>  
 his swinhe<sup>1</sup> swilch se he is to iteied. Clerc on his wise. Cniht <sup>1 So in MS.</sup>  
 on his wise. Tilie on his wise. *And* ilches craftes þeau ! swo  
 he beð to iteied. *and* to eche þat iswinch ilches mannes hund-  
 limen alle swinkeð. *and* hersumeð mest ! alle þo þere wombe. Ðe <sup>All the</sup>  
 fet up aweigeð. *and* heuie þar onne bereð. Ðe honde foð to alle <sup>members of</sup>  
 þinge þe hire beð biheue. Eien loken. *and* eare lusteð *and* hwat <sup>the body</sup>  
 hware beo þat hire wel likeð. Muð fogð to hire bileue. Teð <sup>labour in</sup>  
 hine grindeð. Tunge hine swolegeð. Ðrote turneð hine. *and* <sup>support of</sup>  
 Mast alle þe hund limen hersumieð þe onre wombe. *and* alle hem <sup>the belly.</sup>  
 þincheð to litel gief<sup>2</sup> hit hire wel licað. Ðus was adam þeu ; þo <sup>2 MS. gies.</sup>  
 godes muð cursede eorðe. *and* for his ouerdede quað þus to him.  
*Quia comedisti ex prohibito ! maledicta terra in opere tuo.* For þat  
 þu ete þat ich þe forboden hadde ! waried wurðe [þe eorðe] on  
 þine werke. On eorðe he wrohte þo þe he his wombe fulde. *and*  
 on him dude þat we<sup>3</sup> on us doð. For we<sup>3</sup> one awlencð alle þe <sup>3 MS. he.</sup>  
 hundlimen. *and* welt þe sowle. *and* hire weldede swo mid inle <sup>The body is</sup>  
 forgieldeð. *and* unwurðeð ure drihten ! wurðeð þe deuel. Eft- <sup>honoured, but</sup>  
 sones. \*on wowe we of þisse liue witeð. for adames gulte þe ure <sup>the soul is</sup>  
 drihten þus to seide. *Si ex ligno uetito comederis. morte morieris.* <sup>dishonoured.</sup>  
 gief [þu] etest of þe forbodene trewe. þu shalt adeðe swelte. Enes <sup>\* p. 130.</sup>  
 he þar-offe bot, *and* wearð þar mide acheked. *and* þureh þat one  
 snede wearð al his ofspring acheked. Ðat him cam to deaðe  
 swo hit doð us alle. Ðan þe sowle fundeð to faren ut of hire  
 licame. hie tuneð to hire fif gaten. *and* penneð wel faste. *and* <sup>When the</sup>  
<sup>soul leaves</sup>  
<sup>the body she</sup>  
<sup>closes to her</sup>  
<sup>five gates,</sup>

depriveth them of their functions which they before enjoyed ; the eyes their sight, the ears their hearing, the nose its sniffing (suivelling), the mouth its smelling, the teeth their grinding, and the tongue its speech. And she takes away from all the limbs their power to protect themselves. If the body was righteous in this life, sorrowful shall the soul be when she must leave it, and ruefully will bewail it, and thus will say to it, *Heu dilecta mihi caro, quod te ponere cogor*, alas, dear wert thou to me ! now I must leave thee. Thou wert obedient to me in all that I wished. We were of one mind to do God's will. How shall I in such longing live without thee. And if the body be evil, loathsome is it to the soul, and it appears long for her to remain in it, and she continually purposeth to go therefrom, but the time appears tedious to her, for she is displeased therein. Then piteously she complains, and to the body speaks the following words, *Heu mihi, cur olidum fueram tibi juncta cadaver ?* Alas ! thou foul abode, that I was ever tied to thee. Long have I dwelt in thee, and woe worth me the while ! for all that was dear to me was distasteful to thee. Thou wast joyful if I was angry ; thou wast slow and slack to [do what was] good, but quick and eager to [do] evil. All that God enjoined appeared hateful to thee, and what he prohibited appeared sweet to thee. May evil worms chew (gnaw) thee ; so woe be to thee that thou didst not pity me ; for thy faults I must now go into torment ; mayest thou rot for ever ! Thus the soul curseth the body because it hath yearned after it. As soon as the soul departs, the body changes colour. The friends, if there be any, beweepe it ; they take care of the body but disregard the soul ; then strangers take possession of the property that was formerly his, as the book saith, *Relinquent alienis divitias suas*, they shall leave to strangers the possessions that they have left. That man is a stranger to the other if he will not know him nor help him if he need it. Thus acteth the living friend towards the dead ; if the living hath property that was previously the dead man's, which he bequeathed to him when he himself was unable to keep it, the living applies it to his own advantage and not to the profit of the dead man's soul. But he saith to every one he speaketh with, Why should I love him since he was hostile to himself, why should I help him since he would not help himself when he was able ? Why should I distribute for him that which he could not part with while it was his ? He did his will therewith, so will



here wiken hem binimeð. þe hie ar noteden. Eien here sene.  
*and* Earen he[re] luste. nose here sneuenge. *and* muð here smel.  
 Toðen here grind. *and* tunge here speche. *and* alle limen hie  
 binimed mihte<sup>1</sup> to friðende. Gief þe licame was riht[is] on pisse <sup>1 MS. milte.</sup>  
 liue. wo beð þe sowle þanne hie him shal forleten. *and* rewliche  
 beginneð. *and* þus to him seið. *Heu dilecta michi caro. quod te*  
*ponere cogor.* Awi leof ware þu me. nu ich shal þe forleten. þu  
 ware me lastful on alle þo þe ich wolde. we ware onmode godes  
 wille to done. Hwu shal ich of-longed wið-ute þe libben.  
 And gief<sup>2</sup> þe licame beð<sup>3</sup> cruel. loð is heo þe sowle. *and* hire <sup>2 MS. gief.</sup>  
 þuncheð lang: þat hie on<sup>4</sup> him bileueð. *and* hie þencheð <sup>3 MS. bed.</sup>  
 fastliche þar-offe to witen. Hit þincheð<sup>5</sup> hire let. for hire is <sup>4 MS. om.</sup>  
 loð þar-inne. Ðane beginneð hie rewliche. *and* to þe licame  
 swilche wordes seið. *Heu michi cur olidum. fueram tibi iuncta*  
*cadauer.* Aweilewei þu fule hold þat ich auere was to þe iteied. <sup>5 MS. pincher.</sup>  
 longe habbe ich on þe wuned. swo wo is me þe hwile. for al þat  
 me was leof: hit was þe loð. þu ware a sele gief ich was wroð.  
 To gode þu ware slau *and* let. *and* to enele spac *and* hwat. Al þat  
 good het. þe þuht[e] andsete. þat forbode þe þuhte \*swete. Iuele \* p. 131.  
 wurmes mote þe chewe: swo we<sup>6</sup> þe be þat tu me [ne] rewe. for <sup>6 ? read wo.</sup>  
 þine gulte ishal nu to þine. rotie mote þu to time. Ðus wareð þe  
 sowle þe licame. for þat hit haueð þar after ierned. Among þat  
 þe sowle witeð. þe licame worpeð hewe. þe frendmen him  
 biwepeð gef þar anie ben. bigemeð þe licame: *and* forgemeð þe  
 sowle. þanne fon uncuðe me[n] to þe ahte þe arure his waren.  
 also þe boc seið. *Relinquent alienis diuicias suas.* Hie bileueð  
 uncuðe me[n] þe ahte þe hie forleten habbeð. þe man is uncuð  
 þe oðer: þe nele naht him enowen. ne helpen him gief he neod  
 haueð. þus doð þe libbende frend to-genes þe liggende. Gief þe  
 quike haueð ahte þe were þe dedes ærrure. þe he him biqueð. þo  
 he him seluen habben ne mihte. þe quike hem doð him selue  
 to note. *and* nohte deades sowle to note. Ac seið to hwam he  
 wið spekeð, hwi sholde ich him luuien siðen he was him seluen  
 loð. hwi sholde ich him helpen: him self ne wolde: þo he mihte.  
 Hwi sholde ich dele for him: þat he ne mihte bileuen. þe  
 hwile he hise waren: he dude his wille þar-offe. Swo ich wile

The soul's  
complaint on  
leaving a  
good body.

The soul's  
lament on  
leaving a  
wicked body.

How the  
living treat  
the dead.

The living  
despises the  
dead and  
refuses to  
help him,  
because while  
alive he  
helped not  
himself.



I do mine now it is turned over to me ; and let each man learn to help himself the while he is able. Now ye have heard that sorrowful is our coming hither and sorrowful is our departure, and our abode here is very grievous. Then let us now follow St. Andrew's fair example, and long to go hence to a sure habitation where our Lord dwelleth, and to which he hath invited us—*Scilicet terra promissionis, civitas habitationis, conversatio celestis*. That is the promised land in which is the most winsome city and the most heavenly abode wherein all angels dwell. There hath each patriarch, prophet, apostle, martyr, confessor, and virgin made a fair city to dwell in, as bright as the sun. Each believing man who is bidden thither shall find there his city as he here maketh it by his fair mode of life ; and in the fellowship of our Lord himself and of all saints shall have eternal life and endless bliss, and all happiness and perfect mirth, which is so great and so beautiful and so sweet, as St. Paul saith, *Quod oculus non vidit, et auris non audit, et in cor hominis non ascendit* ; so much mirth is in the city of heaven, that eye may not behold so much, nor ear hear, nor heart think. *Ad quam nos ducat, qui vitæ præmia donat.*

## XXX.

## BE STRONG IN WAR.

*E*stote fortes in bello et pugnate cum antiquo serpente. These few words that I here now declare, our Lord spake in his holy gospel at a time when he dwelt bodily upon earth among mankind and wandered in the land of Jerusalem, and in these words exhorted those to whom he spake to a fearful conflict ; and because that the conflict was and is difficult to undertake, he promised them a great reward, provided that they would meekly undertake it, and thus said, *Estote fortes in bello*, &c., be strong in battle and fight against the old serpent, and if ye be stronger than she (the serpent) ye shall receive for a reward the endless kingdom—*Quia vero diversa hominum genera sequebantur ut audirent eum, et*

mine nu hit is to me iturnd. *and* leren elch man to helpen him seluen þe hwile he mai. Nu ge habbeð iherd þat sorehful is ure hider cume. *and* sorilich ure henen sið. *and* hure he[r]-wunenge is swiðe reulich. Wule nu þanne foleg seinte andreues faire forbisne. *and* þenchen heðen to fare to siker wunienge. þar ure helende wuneð. *and* haueð us to cleped. *Scilicet terra promissionis. Ciuitas habitacionis. Conversacio celestis.* Ðat is þat bihotene lond. þar is \*on þe wunsume<sup>1</sup> bureh. *and* on þe heuenliche wunienge þar alle englen inne wunien. Ðar haueð elch patriarche. *and* prophete *and* apostles. *and* martirs *and* confessors. *and* uirgines maked faier bode inne to wunien. swo briht se sunne. Elch bilefful man þe is pider iboden. shal finden þare his buttle. swulc se he hit here makeð. mid his faire liflode. *and* on þe fereden of ure helende seluen. *and* of alle halegen. shal habben eche lif. *and* endelease blisse. *and* alle selðe *and* fulle muriðe. þe is swo muchel *and* swo faier. *and* swo swete. also *Seint paulus* seið. *Quod oculus non uidit. et auris non audiuit et in cor hominis non ascendit.* Swo muchel muriðe is in þe bureh of heuene þat eie ne maig swo muchel biholden. ne [ere] llisten ne herte þenchen. *Ad quam nos ducat. qui uite premia donat.*

<sup>1</sup> MS. wunsume.

Each believer is invited to that abode where St. Andrew dwells in eternal bliss.

## XXX. ✓

## [ESTOTE FORTES IN BELLO.]

*E*sto[te] fortes in bello. et pugnate cum antiquo serpente. Ðos

feawe word þe ich nu here forð-teah seide ure drihten. on his holie godspelle. at sume sele þo þe he wunede licameliche on eorðe. among mannen *and* wandrede ine þe lond of ierusalem. *and* mid þese wordes munegede þo þe he wið spac<sup>1</sup> to griseliche fihte. *and* for þat þe þat fiht was *and* is arueð to polien. he bihet hem muchele mede. wið þan þat hie wolden hit admodeliche polien. *and* þus quað. *Estote fortes in bello. et cetera.* Beoð stronge on fihte. *and* fihteð wið þe ealde neddre. *and* gef<sup>2</sup> [gie] ben strengere þane hie<sup>1</sup>. gie shulle fon to mede þat endeles kineriche. *Quia uero diuersa hominum genera sequebantur ut audirent eum.*

All men are exhorted to undertake a fearful conflict.

They are promised a reward for bravery.

<sup>2</sup> MS. ges.

*ipse sermones suos direxit, tum ad discipulos, tum ad populum, tum ad hos et illos, aperiendum est et quibus, et de qua fortitudine et de quo bello, et de quo serpente et de quo regno dixit.* Many people followed our Lord to hear his wise words and to see his wonderful works, and to have from him their sustenance, and some to get their health from him. And therefore I will say to you what people he thus admonished. Some men lay in their sins and would not renounce them, and in that wise held with their foe; he did not exhort them to this conflict, but he admonished those who had forsaken, repented, or began to repent of their sins, and therefrom kept themselves and prayed for merey. And chiefly the twelve apostles, and among them the lord St. N[athaniel], whose day it is to-day, and for whose sake we are here assembled, and thus spake, *Estote fortes in bello*, &c.—Be strong in battle, and fight the old serpent, and receive eternal bliss for a reward. Of the strength that our Lord exhorts us to have, the ‘wisdom-book’ speaketh and saith, *Fortitudo simplicis via domini*—God’s way is strong to the simple man. Simple or double is each man. Of the double man speaketh the lord St. James, thus saying, *Vir duplex animo inconstans est in omnibus viis suis*. The double man is unsteadfast in all his words [ways]. Double or manifold is the man who is unsteadfast, in works or in words or in thought, towards God or towards man, and therefore is wholly lost, life (body) and soul. But that man is simple who hath a humble mind and noble speech and good works, and is steadfast towards God and men; as Job was, who fought against the devil, of whom the book saith, *Erat vir ille simplex et rectus ac timens domini et recedens a malo*. He was a simple, righteous, and God-fearing man, strong in the fight, of which I spoke. And that strength he had of God’s way in which he was—*Via domini, qua venit ad nos et nos ad eum, est misericordia et veritas*. God’s way—in which he cometh to man and man to him—is merey and truth. Mercy he showed man when he sent his holy prophet to comfort the guilty of this wretched world, and promised them that he would come and deliver them from eternal woe. Truth he showed them when

et ipse sermones suos direxit. tum ad discipulos tum ad populum. tum ad hos et illos áperiendum est. et quibus. et de qua fortitudine. et de quo bello. et de quo serpente. et de quo regno dixit. Manie mannisshe folgeden ure \*drihte. to herende his wise word \* p. 133.

for to isen his wunderliche deden. and of him to habben heore bileue. and sune to fechen at him here hele. and for þi wilen segen eow hwile mannisshe he þus munegeðe. Sume leien on here sunnes. and ne wolden hem naht forleten. and on þat wise mid here fô hielden. hem ne munegeðe he naht to þisse fihte. Ac þo he munegeðe. þe hadden heore sinnes forleten and bette. oðer bigunnen to beten. and hem þarwið buregen and milce beden.

How our Lord admonished those that sought him to be strong in fighting against the devil.

And nameliche þe twolue apostles. and among hem þe louerd saint N. hwos dai hit is to dai. and for hwos luue we beð here gadered. and þus queð. *Estote fortes in bello. et cetera.* beoð strange on fihte. and fihteð ealðe neddre. and foð eche blisse to mede. Of þe strengþe þe ure drihten us to munegeð. specð wisdom boc and seið. *Fortitudo simplicis uia domini.* Godes wei is strong þe ofealde man. Ofeald oðer twifeald is ilch man. Of þe twifealde man specð þe louerd *Seint Iame* þus queðende.

Simple or double is every man.

*Uir duplex animo inconstans est in omnibus uis suis.* Ðe twifealde man is unstedefast on alle his spechen<sup>1</sup>. Twifold oðer manifold is þe man. þe nis stedefast ne on dade. ne on<sup>2</sup> speche. ne on þonke. ne [to-]genes gode. ne to-genes man. and þarfore is forloren lif and sowle. Ac þe man is ofeald. þe haueð edmod þanc. and eðele speche. and edie dade. and is stedefast to-genes god and men. also Iob was. þe wan wið þe wurse. of hwam þe boc seið. *Erat uir ille simplex et rectus ac timens domini. et recedens á malo.* He was ofeald man and rih[t]wis. and Godfriht. and strong on þe fihte þe ic offe speke. and þat strengþe he hadde of godes weie. þe onne was. *Via domini qua uenit ad nos et nos ad eum : est misericordia et ueritas.* \*Godes weie þe he comeð one to mannen. and men to him : is mild-hertnesse. and soðfastnesse. Mildhertnesse he kidde mannisse þo þe he sende his holi prophete to freurende þo forsinegeðe of þis wrecche wored, and bihet hem þat he eumen wolde. and lesen hem of eche wowe Soðfastnesse he cudde him : þo þe he him seluen

<sup>1</sup> Read weies.

<sup>2</sup> MS. os.

Of the simple man.

Of God's mercy and faithfulness to man.

that he himself came and performed his promises, and by his own death delivered all mankind from eternal death, thanked be he! That same way ought all men to hold who purpose to come to God, and who show themselves mercy and truth according to their ability. That man shows himself mercy who bethinketh of his sins and understands that he hath there-through lost heaven's weal and merited hell's torment, and sorely bemourneth it and forsaketh those sins and cometh to shrift. Truth he showeth, also, to himself when he showeth his sins [to the priest] as they were done, and omits nought thereof, nor aught that he hath left undone, and thereof promiseth amendment, and as far as he can performeth it and prayeth for mercy, and thenceforward keeps himself from sin. Now ye have heard to what strength our Lord exhorts us, hear now to what conflict we ought to apply this strength. The holy man Tobias saith what fight this is, thus saying, *Militia est vita omnis super terram*; man's life above earth is warfare. And against what foe man ought to fight the holy apostle tells us, where he saith, *Non est nobis colluctatio adversus carnem et sanguinem sed adversus rectores tenebrarum*—We fight not against flesh and blood, but against accursed spirits that rule the darkness; and in another place more plainly thereof speaketh, thus saying, *Caro concupiscit adversus spiritum, spiritus autem adversus carnem, ut quæcunque vultis illa [non] faciatis*; the body warreth against the spirit and the spirit against the body, and so strive and contend with one another, so that all that is hateful and displeasing to the one is pleasing to the other. And in this conflict each man is strong who subdueth the body and restraineth his will and adorneth his soul and performeth her will. And in another place he saith, *Abstinete vos a carnalibus desideriis, quæ militant adversus animam*; abstain from fleshly lusts that war against the soul, and tempt her in many ways with deceitful wiles, and strongly attack and sorely wound her; and it is easier for him to deceive her because they dwell nigh together, as the book saith, *Nulla sævior pestis quam familiaris hostis*; there is no worse foe than a deceitful friend. *Ab invisibili hoste difficile caretur assultus*; hard it is to preserve ourselves from this foe, for one knoweth not in what quarter he is. And hard it is to ward off the dints (blows),



com. and his bihese lestedē. and mid his ogene deaċe al mankin  
 alesde of eche deaċe þonked wurċe him. þat ilke wei ogh al  
 mankin to holden þe þencheð to cūmene to gode. and kiċeð him  
 seluen mildhertnesse. and soċfastnesse. and after his mihte. þe  
 man kið him selūen mildhertnesse þe biċencheð on his sinnen. How a man  
is merciful  
to himself.  
 and understant þat he haueð þer þurh forloren heuene wele. and  
 of-erned helle pine and þat sore bimurneð. and þo sinnes for-  
 leteð. and to shrifte cumeð. Soċfastnesse he kið ec him seluen  
 þenne he his sinnes alle swo sheweð also hie don weren. and noht  
 þer-offe forleten. ne noht þat to non ne don. and þer offe bote  
 hihat. and bi his mihte lesteð hit. and milce bit. and þanen-forð-  
 ward wið sinne him beregeð. Nu ge hauen herd to wich  
 strengċe ure drihten us to munegeð. hereð nu to wiche fihte we  
 ozen þis strengċe notien. þe holi man tobias seið wiche fiht þat The words  
of Tobias,  
 is þus queċinde. *Milicia est uita hominis super terram.* Man-  
 nes liflode buuen eorċe is fardung. An[d] to-genes hwuch fo man  
 agh furċien seið þe holi apostle. þer he seið. *Non est nobis col-  
 luctacio aduersus carnem carnem<sup>1</sup> et sanguinem. sed aduersus rec-  
 tores tenebrarum.* We ne fihteð noht to-genes flesh. and blod. ac to-  
 genes aweregeðe gostes þe \*weldeð þesternesse. and on oċer stede Fight against  
the spirits of  
darkness.  
\* p. 135.  
 wislucker þe[r] of specð þus queċinde. *Caro concupiscit aduersus  
 spiritum spiritus autem aduersus carnem. ut quecunque uultis  
 illa faciat.* De lichame winneð togenes þe gost. and þe gost  
 togenes þe lichame. and swo fliten and wiunen bitwenen hem.  
 þat al þat is on unlef and unqueme. hit is þat oċer iqueme. and  
 on þis fihte is ech man strong. þe awelt is lichame. and his wille  
 binimeð. and wleneð his soule. and hire wille drigeð. and on  
 oċre stede he seið. *Abstinete uos á carnalibus desideriis que mili-  
 tant aduersus animam.* Wið-teoð giu þe fleshliche lustes þe Restrain  
fleshly lusts.  
 fihteð to-genes þe soule. and fondeð hire á fele wise! mid swikele  
 wrenchen. and feste bisetteð. and sore for-wundeð. and beoð þe  
 smeċere him to biswikende. for þan þe þei nehgie wunien. also  
 þe boc seið. *Nulla seuior<sup>2</sup> pestis quam familiaris hostis.* Nis non  
 werse fo! þene frakede fere. *Ab inuisibili hoste difficile cauetur  
 assultus.* Arueð it is wið þe fo to berċende. for me ne wot a  
 wiche halfe he beoð. and arueð hit is þe dintes to kepende. for

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.Fight against  
the spirits of  
darkness.

\* p. 135.

Restrain  
fleshly lusts.<sup>2</sup> MS. senior.  
No worse woe  
than a false  
friend.



for one knows not whence he (the foe) will come. To such conflicts our Lord bids us, and to manifest therein our strength, and in every battle against the old serpent who deceived Eve and Adam and all their offspring—*Diabolus nominatur sic serpens propter tria; invidia tabescit, sine strepitu serpit, quod pungit veneno afficit*. The serpent doth three things bodily that the devil performeth spiritually. The serpent hath malice and envy, and creeps about secretly and poisoneth all she stingeth. So hath the devil malice and envy to men, because to them is promised the exalted seat in heaven, from which he fell through his pride, therefore he endeavoureth to hinder them with all his hostile wiles, and would not that mankind should have that which he cannot have; but would that man were dead though he himself were the worse, as the apostle saith, *Per invidiam mors intravit in orbem terrarum*; through envy came death into the world all-about. Again, the adder creeps secretly; so doth the devil. When he findeth man's heart empty of right belief and of true love, he seeketh until he findeth an opening, and secretly sneaks therein; at the eyes, if they be open to behold aught idle or unprofitable; at the ears, if they are open to listen to what is idle or unprofitable; at the nose, if it is open to sniff up illicit smells; at the mouth, if it is open to speak amiss; or in eating or drinking to do amiss; at the privy parts, if they be ready for lascivious deeds. *Hæ sunt autem v. portæ mortis, per quas ingreditur auctor mortis, ut occidat et efferrat mortuos*; at these five gates goeth in the worker of death and therein acts, as the Psalmist saith, *Per mille meandros agitât quîeta corda*, with a thousandfold devices he troubles the heart, and seeketh out the thought that was previously feeble, and woundeth the heart with his treacherous wiles, and with the penetrating venom searcheth through all the soul. Thus warreth the devil against all men, and subdues too many thereof to his will, and those are all unarmed against him who have not that wherewith they may protect themselves. They know not when, nor on what side, nor in what way he will attack them when he unexpectedly giveth them his dints. But all who bear God's weapons and can defend themselves shall be preserved. Let us now intreat our Lord that he may keep us in this conflict and give us those weapons to defend ourselves with, which the apostle speaketh of, thus saying, *Induite vos armatura dei, ut possitis stare adversus insidias*

me ne wot hwanene he shal cumen. To swiche fhte bedeð ure drihten us. *and þat* we kiden þer one ure strengþe. *and* at ech fhte to-genes þe alde neddre þe biþehte eue : *and* adam : *and* al here ofspring. *Diabolus nominatur hic serpens propter tria. Inuidia tabescit. Sine strepitu serpīt. Quod pungit ueneno afficit.* Neddre doð þre þing lichamliche : þe þe deuел drigeð gostliche. hie haueð nið. *and* onde. *and* smugð digeliche. *and* attreð hwat heo prikeð. Swo haueð þe deuел nið. *and* onde to men for þan. *Why the devil is called a serpent.* \*hem is bi-hoten þe hege sete on heuene. þe he fel of. þurgh is oregeþ þerefore he cumeð<sup>1</sup> letten hem mid alle his widerfulle wrenches *and* ne wolde þat mankin hadde þat he hauen ne mai. ac wolde þat man dead were þehg him seluen þe werse were. also þe apostle seið. *Per inuidiam mors intrauit in orbem terrarum.* Ðurch onde com deað in to þe worlde : al umbegonge. Eft-sone. neddre smuhgð digeliche. Swo doð þe werse. þenne he auint mannes heorte emti of rihte bi-leue. *and* of soðere lue. he secheð forte þat he open fint. *and* digeliche smuhgð þer inne. at te egeþ gif it open ben to bi-holden idel. oðer unnut. atte earen gif it open ben to listen unnut oðer idel. at te nose gif it beoð open to snuende unluuede breð. at te muð gif hit open beoð to spekende mis. oðer on ete. oðer on drinke to mis don. at te shape gif hie redie ben to golliche deden. *He sunt autem. v. porte mortis. per quas ingreditur autor mortis. ut occidat. et efferat mortuos.* attese fif gaten fareð in deaðes wrihte. *and* þer inne doð : also þe loftsongere seið. *Per mille meandros agitāt quietā corda.* Mid þusendfeld wrenches he þe herte to-wendeð *and* al te secheð þat þone þe was er swo fieble. *and* wundeð þe hertes mid hinderfulle wrenches. *and* mid te shene attre þurh secheð al þe soule. Ðus fliteð þe fiend wið alle men. *and* to fele þer-of walt to his wille. *and* þo ben alle unwepnede. þe ne hauen mid hwan hie hem werien. Ne ne wite wanne. ne awiche. halue ne awiche wise he hem wile bisette þanne þe he hem unwarliche his dintes giueð. Ac alle \*þo þe godes wapne bereð. *and* hem burege cunnen : hie ben boregen. Bidde we nu ure helende þat he us healde þis win. þat he geue us þo wapnes mide us to weriene : þe þe apostles offe spekeð. þus queðende. *Induite uos armatura dei. ut possitis*

Why the devil is called a serpent.

\* p. 136.

1 Read cunneð?

The devil creeps into man through the five senses.

He has a thousand tricks.

\* p. 137.

*diaboli* ; clothe you with God's weapons, and defend yourselves from the assaults of the devil. *Sumentes lorica[m] fidei, galeam spei, clipeum caritatis, gladium spiritus sancti, quod est verbum Dei*—Have right belief for a hauberk, and hope for a helmet, and true love for a shield, and God's word for a sword. *His armis munitus vicit David Goliath*—With these weapons did David invest himself when he overcame Goliath. So desireth Christ that we may, and also use all these weapons in this conflict against the old serpent, that is the enemy of all men, and that we may overcome him and have for a reward eternal bliss in the endless realm—*Quod nobis præstet qui sæcula per omnia regnat.*

## XXXI.

## [BE WARY AND WATCHFUL IN PRAYERS.]

*E**stote prudentes et vigilate in orationibus.* The heavenly keykeeper St. Peter saw that our elders had many foes, and we also have, who are very crafty in treachery and quick to betray us, and will do so unless we are on our guard ; and they may much the easier if they find us sleeping, since no man defends us, nor are we ourselves able ; and God will not, I am afraid, unless we the more diligently beseech him, and therefore the apostle in these few words that I now bring forward, exhorts us to three things : one is prudence, the other is watching, and the third is prayer, thus saying, *Estote prudentes*, &c. Be prudent and wary and watchful, and pray to God that he may give you prudence and wariness wherewith to defend yourselves ; and these three things useth every man in two ways—well and badly. Man useth it badly who with shrewdness deceiveth his fellow-Christian and hindereth his own soul, as do chapmen (traders) of every kind in every bargain, and slanderous men who spread reports about and turn wrong to right and right to wrong, and all those who do wrong and deceive their fellow-Christians. That man hinders his own soul and separates himself from

*stare aduersus insidias diaboli.* Shrudeð eow mid godes wapne. Our spiritual armour.  
*and* werieð eow wið þe defles waitinge. *Sumentes loriam fidei.*  
*Galeam spei. Clipeum caritatis. Gladium spiritus sancti quod est*  
*uerbum dei.* Habbeð rihte bileue to brunie. *and* hope to helme.  
*and* soðe lue to shelde. *and* godes word to swerde. *His armis*  
*munitus uicit dauid goliath.* Mid þos wapnes dauid shrude him David was armed with these weapons when he overcame Goliath.  
mid þe he ouercam goliath. Swo wille crist þat we moten. *and*  
alle þese wapnes here noten on þis filte to-genes þe ealde neddre.  
þat is alre manne fo. þat we him moten ouereumen. *and* habbe  
to mede eche blisse! *and* þat endelese kineriche. *Quod nobis*  
*prestat qui secula per omnia regnat.*

## XXXI.

[ESTOTE PRUDENTES ET VIGILATE  
IN ORATIONIBUS.]

*Estote prudentes et uigilate in oracionibus.* Ðe heuenliche [1 Pet. iv. 7.]  
keiherde sainte peter iseið þat ure elderne hadden fele fón. St. Peter says we have many foes.  
*and* we habbeð alswo. þe ben alto smiele<sup>a</sup> on swikedom. *and*  
hwatte us to biswikende. *and* wulled swo don bute we wurðen  
us warre. *and* mugen mucheles þe eðere. gef hie findeð us  
slepende. Ðane no man us ne wereð. ne us seluen ne mugen.  
ne god nele ieh adrade! bute we him þe gernere bidden. *and* God alone can help us against them.  
þar-fore þe apostel on þos feawe wordes þe ieh here forð teagh!  
muneged us to þrie þinges. On is giepsþipe þat oðer is The apostle tells us of three needful things:—  
wakienge. þe þridde is bede. þus queðende. *Estote prudentes. et*  
*cetera.* Beð giepe. *and* warre. *and* wakieð. *and* \*biddeð giu to \*p. 133.  
gode. þat he giue giu gepþipe. *and* warþipe giu wið to werien.  
*and* þese þreo þing noteð ech man on two wise! wel! *and*  
wroðe. Man hit noteð wroðeliche. þe mid gepþipe bicheð his wariness, of which there are two kinds;  
emcristen. *and* hindreð his agene soule. alswo doð eches kinnes  
chapman! on eche cheþinge. *and* talewise men þe speches  
driuen, *and* maken wrong to rihte! *and* riht to wronge. *and*  
alle þo! þe unriht don. *and* here emcristen bicharen. þe man  
hindreð his agene soule! *and* deleð him .fro gode. *and* fulsteð

<sup>a</sup> Read *smiehe* or *smieliche*. See p. 195, l. 5, and p. 205, l. 19, where the correct reading, *smche* or *smehliche*, is suggested.

God and lendeth himself to the devil, who is greedy for world's riches and greedy to gain them, and wary in keeping them. Such craftiness the apostle forbiddeth where he saith, *Nolite esse prudentes apud vosmetipsos*; be not wary against yourselves. That man is crafty against himself that is wily to deceive and cheat another man and [all] to serve his own purposes, as the fox that with his wiles overcometh other animals and hath his will thereof. That man useth well his wariness who preserveth himself from his own soul's loss and meriteth afterwards his soul's gain. To such wariness exhorted our Lord his apostles, thus saying, *Ecce ego mitto vos, &c.* When our Lord sent them they were meek as sheep, among the unbelieving people that would annoy them, and did so, as the wolf doth (annoy) the sheep; and he thus said, *Estote prudentes sicut serpentes*; lo, I send you as sheep among wolves; be then wary; and he said to them how wary—as the serpent. Though the serpent is evil, nevertheless one may profitably take heed of her. *Est equidem genus serpentum quod, cum timet periculum, occultat caput sub corpore, et corpus obicit periculo.* There is one sort of serpent that covereth her head with her body when harm is offered her, for her life is in her head. So did Job, to whom there was none like upon earth in alms (? holiness), when the devil tempted him and would deprive him of his life, who was to our Lord the dearest of all living things; and if he had striven with God as the devil instigated him, then would he have lost God, Who is eternal life. But he used the serpent's wiliness, and, with its help, put his body before his head against the harm that the devil would do to him, when he brought the manifold misfortunes upon him. First he stript him of his sheep, which were his worldly possessions, *Scilicet septem millia ovium, et tres millia camelorum, et quinquaginta juga bouum, et quingenti asini*, which comprised seven thousand sheep, and three thousand camels, and fifty yokes of oxen, and five hundred asses; all these riches adorned his dignity, as beautiful garments do the body. *Sicut legitur, temporalia sunt quasi quedam corporis indumenta.* As the wise man said—Earthly riches are man's garments. *Inde tulit ei septem filios, et tres filias, et familiam multam nimis—*



him to ȝe deuēl þe is gredi uppen woredl richeise. *and* gredi him to pinende<sup>1</sup> *and* ȝiep him to biwitiende. Swich ȝepshipe forbedeð þe apostel. þere he seið. *Nolite esse prudentes apud uosmetipsos.* Ne beo ȝe noht ȝepe to-ȝene ȝiu seluen. Ðe man is ȝiep to-ȝenes him seluen? þat is smegh oðer man to bi-charren. *and* to bi-swiken *and* his aȝene wille to fremen. Also þe fox þe mid his wrenches walt oðer deor? *and* haueð his wille þerof. Ðe man noteð wel his ȝiepshipe. þe birgeð him seluen wið his aȝene soule unfreme. *and* erneð after his soule freme. To swich ȝiepshipe mineȝede hure helende his apostles. *and* us bi hem þus queðinde. *Ecce ego mitto uos et cetera.* Ðo ure helende sende hie þe weren milde also shep among þat unbilefde folc þe wolden dreuen hem. *and* swo diden also wulf doð shep *and* seide þus. *Estote prudentes sicut serpentes.* Here ich ȝiu sende also shep amang wulfes. beoð þenne ȝiepe. *and* seide hem wu ȝiepe. also þe neddre. þegh neddre beo iuel naðeles man nimeð of hire ȝeme of gode. *Est equidem genus serpentum quod cum timet periculum occultat caput sub corpore. et corpus obicit periculo.* anes kinnes neddres is þe mid hire lichame heleð hire \*heued. þanne he beð of harme offered. for hire lif is on hire \*p. 139. heued. Swo dude Iob. þe nes non abuuen eorðe him ilich on almesse<sup>2</sup>. þo þe deuēl him fondede. *and* wolde him binimen his lif. þat was ure drihte leuest of alle liuiende þing *and* gief [he hadde] werred wið god also þe deuēl him to eggede. þanne hadde he forloren god þe is eche lif. Ac he notede þe naddre ȝiapshipe. *and* dude his licame mid his helpe biforen his heued? to-ȝenes þe harm þe þe deuēl him dude. þo þe he brohte þe manifeald unlimpes uppen him. Erest he strepte of him his shep. þe waren his woredl winne. scilicet vii milia ouium. et iiij. milia camelorum et. l. iuga boum. et quingenti asini. þat waren seuen þusend shep. *and* þrie þusend oluontes. *and* half hundre giokes of oesen. *and* fif hundred assen. alle þos wennen huihten his wurðshipe. also faire wedes don þe licame. Sicut legitur. *Temporalia sunt quasi quedam corporis indumenta.* Also þe wise seide. Eorðeliche winne ben mannes wedes. *Inde tulit ei. vij<sup>tem</sup> filios? et iiij. filias. et familiam multam nimis.* After þat

shrewdness shown in cheating our neighbours is forbidden.  
1? read winende.

A man is truly wary when he takes care of his soul.

Our Lord bade his disciples to be as wary as serpents.

Job used the serpent's cunning in his contest with the devil.

2? halinesse.

How Satan dealt with Job in regard to his worldly possessions and offspring.

Afterwards the devil deprived him of all his offspring, which were, his seven sons and three daughters, and all the great household that should honour him, which had formed his strength against his bodily foe. *Cum percussit eum ulcere pessimo* ; finally, he wounded him wellnigh to death, so that he could not find a place in all his body where he might put his finger except upon wounds. And in all these afflictions Job never distrusted our Lord, but thanked him for that woe, as he previously did for the weal, thus saying, *Dominus dedit, Dominus abstulit : sicut Domino placuit, ita factum est : sit nomen Domini benedictum*—Our Lord gave it, our Lord hath taken it away ; it has happened as our Lord has wished it—exalted and praised be his holy name ! *Caput quod occultavit fides ejus fuit*. The head that he covered from the devil's instigation was his right belief which he held fast, for as man's head is his highest limb and leader, so right belief directeth the soul and leadeth it aright to God. *Est et aliud genus serpentis, quod habet in capite gemmam ; ne exaudiat incantantes, alteram auriculam ad lapidem applicat, alteram postremittit sue obturat*. There is another sort of serpent, out in other lands, that hath in her head a precious stone, and the inhabitants sometimes charm her and so capture and kill her to obtain possession of the jewel ; but when the serpent perceiveth that they are seeking her, she guards herself from them, as the Psalmist saith, *Sicut aspidis surdæ, et obturantis aures suas, quæ non exaudiet vocem incantantium*. The adder seeketh a stone and layeth one ear thereto, and in the other ear she putteth her tail and so stoppeth up both, that she may not hear their voice nor their song, and thus she escapeth her foe and preserveth her life. Let us observe this good example and follow her according to our ability. *Nos sumus quasi serpentes ; terre corpore adherentes caput, nostrum fides ; nostra gemma in capite, deus in mente. Diabolus incantator, suggestio incantatio ; petra Christi divinitas ; postremittas ejus humanitas ; auricula intellectus noster*. We are as the serpent that creepeth prostrate upon the earth, and we do so when we seek and use and enjoy the earth's fruits in corn and other acquisitions. The serpent sometimes turneth herself to her

þe deucl hadde binumen him al his strenge : þat waren his seuene  
 sunes and þrie dochtres. and al þat muchele husshepe : þe him  
 sholde heren. þe hadde boden his strengþe to-genes his licames-  
 lice<sup>1</sup> fo. *Cum percussit eum ulcere pessimo.* Siþen-mest he <sup>1 So in MS.</sup>  
 wundede him wel neih to deþe. Swo þat he ne mihte finden on  
 al his licame hwar he his finger on sette bute uppen wunden.

And on alle þese limpes. ne untrowede neure Iob to-genes ure <sup>Job thanked  
God equally  
for wee as he  
did for weal.</sup>  
 drihten. ac þonkede him of þan wowe. also dude ar of þe wele.  
 \* þus queþinde. *Dominus dedit dominus abstulit sicut domino* <sup>[Job i. 21.]</sup>  
*placuit ita factum sit nomen domini benedictum.* Ure louerd <sup>\* p. 140.</sup>  
 hit gaf ure louerd it binam. hit is worþen also ure louerd wolde  
 heged. and hered beþ his holi name. *Caput quod occultauit fules*

*eius fuit.* þat heued þat he heled. wiþ þe deules eginge. was his  
 rihte bileue. þat he held faste. for also mannes heued. is hegest  
 lime : and latten. swo wisseþ rihtte bi-leue þe soule : and ledeþ  
 hem<sup>2</sup> riht to gode. *Est et aliud genus serpentis. quod habet in* <sup>2 So in MS.</sup>  
*capite gemmam ne exaudiat incantantes. alteram auriculam ad*

*lapidem applicat.* *Alteram postremmitatis sue obturat.* Oþer <sup>Of the adder  
that has a  
jewel in its  
head.</sup>  
 kinnes neddre is ut in oþer londe. þat haueþ on hire heued  
 derewurþe ȝimston. and te londes men hire bigaleþ oþer wile.

and swo lacheþ. and doþ of line : for to hauen þe ȝimston. ac  
 wanne þe neddre hit underȝit þat hie sechen after hire. hie warneþ  
 hire wiþ hem also þe salu wurhte seiþ. *Sicut aspidis surde et* <sup>[Ps. lviii. 4.]</sup>  
*obturant. aures suas que non exaudiet uocem incantantium.* þe  
 neddre secheþ á ston and leiþ hire on eare þer to. and hire oþer  
 eare pilteþ hire tail þer inne. and swo for-ditteþ eiþer. þat hie ne  
 muge beren here remenge. ne here gal. and þus atbresteþ hire fo.  
 and berged hire liue. Nime we ȝeme of þis faier forbisne. and

folȝen hire bi ure mihte. *[N]os sumus quasi serpentes terre cor-*  
*pore adherentes* *Caput nostrum fides nostra.* *[G]emma in capite*  
*deus in mente.* *Diabolus incantator. suggestio incantacio petra*  
*christi diuinitas postremitas<sup>a</sup> eius humanitas. auricula intellectus*  
*noster.* we bed also þe neddre. hie smugþ street bi þe eorþe and <sup>The adder  
speaks along  
the ground.</sup>  
 we don also. þenne we þe eorþe blostmes. on corne and on alte  
 bisecheþ. and weldeþ. and noteþ. þe neddre hire turneþ wile to

<sup>a</sup> Originally *postremmitatis*. By means of a strong glass a faint line appears to be drawn through *tremita*.

destruction, so do we when we so firmly hold our world's wealth as not to come to honour God's Table on high days, nor to help the poor each day according to our wealth. The serpent hath in her head a precious jewel, and in our belief we have our Lord in whom we believe, who is the father of all lights and the well of all virtues. The wicked one with his charms instigateth us and tempteth us and leadeth us on to idle thoughts and unprofitable and evil speech, and with his wiles deceiveth us, except we the more warily defend ourselves ; but when we draw away from the evil that assaults us, as I before said, let us go to the stone that the apostle speaketh of when he said, *Petra autem erat Christus*, that is, our Saviour Christ, who is called stone on account of his steadfastness. Upon him we lay our right ear when we understand that he is true God, and therefore let us approach him and so stop up the ear against the devil's lore. Our left ear we close with our tail when we understand that he became man for us (not for our deservings, but for his meekness) and suffered death in his body, and raised us from death, and promised us eternal life if we merit it here ; and so we stop up the ear and do not hear the devil's charming. *Est et aliud genus serpentis, quod, cum senescit, de fonte gurgitat et virus exomat, per lapidis artum foramen transit et pellem deponit, sicque se novum efficit.* There is another kind of serpent that, when it is old, becometh young through its wisdom. Listen now in what way. When she is very thirsty she cometh to a well and drinketh so great a draught that she bursteth asunder and then vomiteth her venom, and cometh to a stone that has been pierced, and creepeth forcibly through the narrow hole, and so leaveth her skin behind her ; then she gets another skin and becomes quite new. We are all as the serpent ; she hath lived long, and we have long lien in sin. She hath much venom in her, and is hateful to man, and we hide vile sins in ourselves through which we are hostile to God ; she becometh very thirsty and then seeketh a well and drinketh until she bursteth and vomiteth her venom ; and when we think of our sins we sometimes desire to learn how we may forsake and repent of our sins, and come where sermons are preached, and we listen, and our heart becomes then so sore for our sins that wellnigh it bursteth. Then with our hearts we forsake sins and renounce them with our mouth, and by our Lord's direction we come to the stone that hath

tresle. *and* we don also \*panne we ure wored winne swo faste \* p. 141.

bi-witen. þenne we ne mugen atemien to wurðen godes bord hege dages ne eche dai bi ure haue helpe wrecche men. Neddre haueð on hire heued derewurðe gimston. *and* we hauen on ure bileue ure drihten. on wam we bileuen. þe is alre lemene fader. *and* welle of alle mihtin. Man<sup>1</sup> mid is gele. egged us *and* fondeð. *and* <sup>1</sup> *So in MS.*

forð-teð to idele þonke. *and* unnutte speche. *and* iuele speche. *and* mid wiges bipecheð. bute we þe warlucker us buregen. ac þenne we ateð þat te iuele fondeð us. also ich er seide. buge we to þe stone þe þe apostel of spac þo he sede. *Petra autem erat christuc.* þat is ure helend crist þat is ston nemmed. for his stede-  
Christ is the stone of steadfastness. fastnesse. To him we leggeð ure riht eare þenne we understondeð þat he is soð god. *and* þere-fore nehleche[ð] us to him. *and* ditteð

swo þat care wið þe werses lore. Ure left eare we ditteð mid ure after ende. þenne we understonden þat he bi-com man for us. *and* noht for ure erninge. ac for his admodnesse þolede on his lichame deð. *and* arerde us of deðe. *and* eche lif us biget<sup>1</sup> gif we it here ofernið. *and* swo ditteð þe eare. *and* noh[t] ne herenið here gal. *Est et aliud genus serpentis quod cum senescit de fonte gurgitat ut uirus euomat. per lapidis artum foramen transit et pellem deponit sicque se nouum efficit.* Oðer kinnes neddre  
We close our left ears when we understand aright the incarnation &c. of our Lord.  
1? read bihet.

is. þenne hie beð old. þurh hire ȝepshipe wurð eft zung. Listeð nu awiche wise. þenne hie beð of-þurst cumeð to sum welle. *and* drinkeð á draht swo michel þat heo chineð. *and* þenne speweð hire atter. *and* cumeð to anc þurlede ston. *and* eriepeð nedlinge þureh nerewe hole. *and* bileueð hire hude baften hire. þenne<sup>2</sup>

\* þanne<sup>2</sup> cumeð hire oðer hude. *and* hie beð al newe. We ben also þe nedre hie haueð longe liued: *and* we longe leien in sinne. Hie haueð muchel atter on hire: *and* is loð maunen. *and* we hudeð liðere sinnen on us. for hwan we beð andsete gode. Hire þurst swiðe. *and* secheð þanne welle *and* drinkeð þat hie to-chineð. *and* hire atter aspeweð. And þane we biðencheð on ure sinnes. Oðer hwile us luste leornie hwu we mugen ure sinnes forleten. *and* beten. *and* cumen þar man lorspel seið. *and* lusten. *and* wurð<sup>3</sup> ure heorte þanne swo sor for  
Of the adder that renews her youth.  
She creeps through a perforated stone and leaves her old skin behind her.  
\* p. 142.  
2 So in MS.

ure sinnes. þat wel neih hie to-chineð. Ðanne forsake we ure sinnes mid heorte. *and* for-hoteð mid muðe. *and* bi ure lorðewes



five narrow holes, that is our Saviour Christ, who suffered his holy five wounds for us, thanked be he ! and there-through with difficulty we creep when we with fivefold penance make amends for our sins. The serpent leaveth her hide behind her and there cometh a new skin, and she becometh young. And we change our form when we forsake our foul mode of life and become young in purity, as we were before we sinned, as the book saith, *Veterem hominem exuimus et novum induimus*—We have put off the old man that defiled us all, and have put on the new that cleanseth all. Such wiliness have these three sorts of serpents, and our Saviour exhorted his apostles to have them, and [he exhorted] us by them ; as St. Peter saith, *Estote prudentes et vigilate*—Be prudent and watchful. *Alii quidem dormiunt, alii autem vigilant.* Some men sleep fast, and some nap, and some are altogether watchful. That man sleepeth fast who lieth in such sins as seem sweet and are well-pleasing to him, but if our Lord findeth him thus sleeping, that is, in sin, he will never wake again. *Dormitans nunc oculos claudit nunc aperit, sed homo qui peccatum gemit, nec tum relinquit ;* the man that nappeth sometimes raiseth his eyes and then seeth, and sometimes closeth them and then seeth not. So doth the sinner that greatly bemourneth his sins and sorely grieveth and thinketh to forsake them, and thereto endeavoureth and doth not follow it up. And if our Lord so findeth him he will send him to hell. The man who forsaketh his confessed sins, and by his priest's directions amendeth them, or beginneth to amend them, is altogether watchful. To such watching our Lord exhorts us in the gospel, where he saith, *Omnibus dico, vigilate ;* all believers I bid thus to watch ; but the heavenly Lord hath bidden us to watch in prayer, and to use such prayers as are needful for us. All holy prayers are needful for God-fearing men, but they are so many that they are hard to enumerate. Nevertheless thou mayest include so many in a few ; and so doth each man when he sayeth his Paternoster. May our lord St. Peter, who thus exhorteth us to prudence and to watchfulness and to prayer, entreat for us with our Lord that He will give us such prudence and power thus to watch and pray, and will grant that our prayers may be successful, *qui vivit et regnat per omnia secula seculorum.* AMEN.

wissinge cumeð to þe stone. þe haueð fif hole narewe. þat is ure  
helende crist. þe polede his holie fif wunden for us. þanked  
wurðe him. *and* þar-þurh arueðliche crepeð! þane we mid  
fif-folde pine ure sinnes beteð. Ðe neddre bileued hire hude  
baften hire. *and* cumeð newe fel. *and* hie wurð jung. *and* we  
worpeð ure hewe. þane we forleteð ure fule lifode. *and* wurðeð  
junge on clenesse swo we waren ar þan we sinegeden. also þe boc  
seið. *Veterem hominem exuimus. et nouum induimus.* We  
habbeð don of us þe ealde man. þe us horegede alle. *and* don on  
þe newe þe clenseð alle. Swilch giepshepe habbeð þese þrie  
kenne neddre. *and* ure helende minegede his apostles hem to  
habben. *and* bi hem us. also seinte peter queð. *Estote prudentes*  
*et uigilate.* Beð warre *and* wakieð. *Alii quidem dormiunt.*  
*Alii autem uigilant.* Sume men slapeð faste. *and* sume nappeð.  
*and* sume mid alle wakieð. Ðe man slapeð faste. þe lið on  
swilche sinnes þe him þuncheð swete. *and* wel likeð. Ac gef  
ure drihten hine fint þus slepende. þat is on sinne! \*ne wakeð  
he nafre ef[t]. *Dormitans nunc oculos claudit. nunc aperit. Sed*  
*homo qui peccatum gemit! nec tum relinquit.* Man þe nappeð  
wile to heueð his egen *and* þenne seð. *and* wile leið togadere  
*and* þenne noht ne seð. Swo doð þe sinfulle. þe his sinnes  
swiðe bimurneð. *and* sore bisicheð. *and* þencheð hem to forleten.  
*and* þerto fundeð *and* noht ne folgeð. *and* gif ure drihten hine  
swo fint he wile hine sende to helle. þe man þe hise nemde sinnes  
forleten. *and* bi his shriftes wissinge bet. oðer on bote bifongen.  
he wakeð mid alle. To swiche wecche us minegeð ure drihten on  
þe godspelle. þer he seið. *Omnibus dico uigilate.* Alle bileffulle  
ich hote þus waken ac þe heuenliche louerd us het wakien on  
bede. *and* notien swiche bede. swo us biheue bie. Alle holie beden  
ben godfruchte men biheue. Ac þe ben swo fele þat hie ben arfeð  
tellen. Naðeles þu miht swo fele mid fewe biluken. *and* swo doð  
ech man þenne he singð is *pater noster.* Ure louerd seinte peter  
þe us minegeð þus to gepshipe. *and* to wecche *and* us to bidden.  
he þinge us to ure drihten þat he us giue swiche gepshipe *and*  
mihte þus to wakien. *and* us to bidden. *and* gife us bene tuðe.  
*Qui uiuit et regnat per omnia secula seculorum. amen.*

Our stone is  
our Saviour's  
five holy  
wounds.

We become  
young when  
we lead new  
lives.

If we are  
found sleep-  
ing in sin,  
we shall  
never rise to  
life eternal.

\* p. 143.

Prayers are  
needful for  
all Christian  
men.

The Pater-  
noster con-  
tains many  
things in a  
small com-  
pass.

## XXXII.

## DISCOURSE UPON MARK VIII. 34.

*Qui vult venire post me, abneget semetipsum et tollat crucem suam et sequatur me.* Sorrowful may that man be that is in great affliction and one threateneth him with greater, and can and will bring it upon him ; but that man may be blithe that is led from great woe to great weal, and such bliss is promised to us all. We are all in manifold afflictions in this world for our ancestors' transgressions and also for our own sins, but our Lord comforteth us with his gentle words, thanked be he! and inviteth us from our wontsome (habitual) woe unto his great bliss, and telleth in what mode and by what way we may come thither, thus saying, *Qui vult venire, &c.* Let the man who will follow me deny himself and bear his cross and come after me. When that he intended to go from earth into heaven he said these words to all those who then lived, or have lived, or who now live, and to those who will come hereafter ; and he inviteth all, each in some wise, to endless bliss. But few thereof come [after Christ], and many remain, because it seemeth hard to them to forsake what they so greatly love. *Alii quidem amant peccata sua, alii parentes, alii vero possessiones atque alii voluptates et vicia ;* some men love their sins, and some their kin, and some their earthly possessions, some their will and fleshly lusts and loathsome vices. Those who love their sins our Lord exhorteth, thus saying, *Pœnitentiam agite, appropinquabit enim regnum cœlorum,* cease from your sins and amend them, and preserve yourselves from them and from others ; and pray for mercy while ye may, for doomsday is nigh at hand. Those who love their kin our Lord exhorteth, thus saying, *Omnis qui reliquerit patrem et matrem, fratrem et sororem, aut ceteros, propter nomen meum, centuplum accipiet et vitam æternam possidebit ;* every man who for my name forsaketh father or mother, sister or brother, or others, and followeth me, shall in return receive a hundredfold reward, and

XXXII. ✓

SERMO IN MARCUM VIII. 34.

**Q***Vi uult uenire post me abneget semet ipsum et tollat crucem suam. et sequatur me.* Sori mai þe man ben þe beð on michele wowe. *and* me him more bihat. *and* mai *and* wile hit him lesten. Ac þe man mai ben bliþe þe me ledeð fram michele wowe to michele wele. *and* swich blisse me bihat us alle. Alle we ben on manifolde wowe on þis worelde. for ure eldrene gyltes. *and* ec for ure agene sinnen. \*ac ure drihten us frefreð mid his admodie worden þonkeð wurðe him. *and* laðeð us ut of ure wunsume wowe. to his michele blisse. *and* seið us on wiche wise. *and* bi wich weie we mužen þider cumen. þus queðinde. *Qui uult uenire. et cetera.* Þe man þe wile folge me forsake him seluen *and* bere his rode *and* cume after me. þo þe he fundede to faren of eorðe in to heuene. he seide þos word to alle þo þe þo weren<sup>1</sup>. *and* siðen hauen ben. *and* þo þe nu ben. *and* þo her after cumen. *And* alle he laðeð ech asume wise to endelese blisse. Ac feawe þer-offe cumeð. *and* fele bileueð. for þat hem þincð inel to forleten þat hie swiðe luueð. *Alii quidem amant peccata sua. Alii parentes. Alii uero possessiones. atque alii uoluptates. et uicia.* Sume luueð heore sinnen. *and* sume heore kin. *and* sume here eorðliche ahte. *and* sume here wille. *and* fleshliche lustes. *and* liðere lahtres. þo þe luuieð here sinnen laðeð ure drihten þus queðinde. *Penitentiam agite aporpinquabit enim regnum celorum.* Swikeð of giure sinnes. *and* bedeð<sup>2 2</sup> *Read beteð.* hem. *and* beregeð giu wið þo; *and* wið oðere *and* biddeð milce þe wile þe ge mužen. domes dai nehlecheð. þo þe luuieð here kin. he laðeð þus queðinde. *Omnis qui relinquerit patrem et matrem fratrem et sororem aut ceteros propter nomen meum centuplum accipiet et uitam eternam possidebit.* Ech man þe for mine name forsakeð fader. oðer moder suster oðer broðer. oðer oðre. *and* folgeð me he shał fon þer-to-genes hundredfeld mede. *and*

We are all invited to leave our woe and come into bliss.

\* p. 144.

We are invited to follow Christ and to bear his cross.

<sup>1</sup> MS. þeren.

The reasons why men do not follow Christ.

Of the reward those shall receive that bear the cross of Christ.

shall have life without end. Those who love world's wealth he inviteth, thus saying, *Qui non renunciaverit omnibus quæ possidet non potest meus esse discipulus*. No man may follow me unless he forsake all the world's wealth that he enjoyeth. *Duobus autem modis renunciatur possessio, scilicet, desinendo habere et desinendo amare*; in two ways a man may forsake worldly wealth: one is to remove it from him so that he have it not [*i.e.* by giving it to the poor]; the second is to think so little thereof as not to love it. It is a venial sin if a man have wealth, but it is a great sin if a man love his wealth, because no man may love God and manimon. Those who love their will and their lusts and their vices our Lord exhorteth, thus saying, *Si quis vult post me venire, &c.* Every man who will come after me let him forsake himself and bear his cross and follow me. It is difficult to understand unless one pay very great attention thereto, how a man may forsake himself. Take heed now thereto, and by God's help I will tell you. *Duo sunt in homine alterum per naturam conditum, alterum per culpam illatum*. Two things are there in man—the one is the pure and bright and beautiful nature that God hath therein brought through his wisdom [*i.e.* the soul]; the second is wilfulness, and bodily lusts, and loathsome vices, through which no man may follow God nor come to him, unless he forsake and leave the foul incomer that the malicious devil hath brought into him, and keep also the pure nature that our Lord hath created, and therein continue and bear his cross. *Tres igitur cruces sunt de quibus hic agitur duce mentis, et una corporis*; three crosses are there that I now speak of—two spiritual and one bodily. *Cruce corporis est afflictio carnis, quando corpus membratim punitur*; the bodily cross is the pain that a man endures when his body is spread out and fastened to the cross, as our Saviour's holy body was on the holy rood, when that he suffered thereon, as his will was, and had a crown of thorns upon his holy head, which pricked him severely, and in his hands iron nails, and in his feet also; and was pierced in his side by a spear, and his holy body was spread and drawn out on the cross, and for our trespasses pitcously drawn asunder. But a man may follow God and come to him though his body undergo no such torture nor be so spread



habben lif abuten ende. þo þe luueð wored winne he laðeð þus  
 queðinde, *Qui non renu[n]ciauerit omnibus que p. non p. m. e.*  
*di.* No mau ne mai folge me bute he forsake alle þe wored  
 winne þat he weld ahg. *Duobus \*autem modis renunciatur*  
*possessio. scilicet desinendo habere. et desinendo amare.* On two  
 wise man mai forsake wored winne. on is fersien hit fro him  
 swo þat he it nabbe. oðer is. lete swo litel þer of: þat he it  
 noht ne luuie. hit is eðeliche sinne þat man ahte welde. ac  
 it is michel sinne: þat man ahte luuie. for þan no man ne  
 mai luuien god *and* ehte. þo þe luuieð here wil. *and* here  
 lustes. *and* lehtres. laðeð ure drihten. þus queðinde. *Si quis*  
*uult post me uenire et cetera.* Ech man þe wile cumen  
 after me forsake him seluen. *and* bere his rode. *and* folge me.  
 Hit is arfeð to understonden bute me nime þe more geme þer-to  
 hwu man mai hine selue forsake. nimeð nu geme þerto. *and* ich  
 giu wile seggen. bi godes fultume. *Duo sunt in homine. alterum*  
*per naturam conditum. Alterum per culpam illatum[.]* Two þing  
 ben in þe manne. on his þat clene *and* brehte *and* faire kinde þat  
 god haueð þer-on broht þureh his smehnesse. þat oðer is wilful-  
 shipe. *and* lichamliche lustes. *and* liðere lahtres. þi ne mai no  
 man gode folgen ne to him cumen bute forsake. *and* forlete þe  
 fule on-cume. þe þe ondfulle feond on him brohte. *and* hilede  
 þat clene ichinde. *and* þer-on bilef þe ure drihten shop *and* bere  
 his rode. *Tres igitur cruces sunt de quibus hic agitur. due*  
*mentis. et una corporis.* Pre rodes ben þat ich nu of speke. Of the three  
 two gostliche. *and* on lichamliche *Cruce corporis est afflictio*  
*carnis. quando corpus membratum punitur.* þe lichamliche rode  
 is þe pine þe man poleð þenne his lichame beð tospred. *and*  
 to-tiht on þe rode. also ure helendes holi lichame wes. \*on þe  
 holi rode. þo þe he þer-one þrowede also his wille was. *and*  
 hadde þornene helm uppen his holi hafde. þe him swiðe prikede.  
*and* on his honden irene nailes. *and* on his foten also. *and* on  
 his side was mid spere istungen. *and* his holi lichame to-sprad  
*and* to-tuht. *and* for ure gulten reuliche atogen. Ac man mai  
 folgen gode *and* to him cumen. þeh his lichame swich pine ne  
 polie ne swo ne beo to-spred ne to-tuht on lichamliche rode. *and*

If a man  
 follow Christ  
 he must  
 forsake all  
 worldly  
 wealth.  
 \* p. 145.

No man can  
 love God and  
 mammon.

Of the two  
 things in man.

Of the three  
 crosses that  
 are to be  
 borne.  
 Of the bodily  
 cross.

\* p. 146.

and drawn out on the bodily cross, and therefore our Lord does not invite us to bear such a cross, but exhorteth us to another which this denoteth, which is called *Carnis maceratio*, that is, leanness of body (flesh); man's body is truly emaciated when he is tormented by hunger, by thirst, by vigils, by labour, by stiff garments next the body, and when he is smartly smitten by slender long switches, and sometimes by great cold. These crosses must all men bear who will have mercy for their sins. This cross is, in the book, called *Scala peccatorum*, that is, the ladder of sinful men by which they shall ascend into heaven. Now ye have heard what the bodily cross is, hear now what the spiritual cross is that hath two names—*Cordis contritio et proximi compassio*, that is, 'heart-sorrow' for one's own sins and pity for one's fellow-Christian's woe. The man that will bear this cross must know that he hath oft and in many ways sinned; with his eyes he has beheld what he ought not, sometimes what was vain, sometimes what was unprofitable, sometimes what was evil; and also with his nose hath sniffed, and with his ears hath heard, and with his mouth spoken sinfully and in many ways that which he ought not, and hath omitted those good words in his prayers that he ought to speak; and [hath committed sin of mouth] in excesses of eating and drinking when he ought not. And if he thinketh of that, and in his heart sorely bemourneth, then acheth his heart and smarteth on account of his sins, as his head would, if he had thereon a crown of thorns and the thorns severely pricked him. Again, if he remembers that he hath sinned often with his hands and in many wise hath refused alms, and done what was vain, unprofitable, and wicked, and with his feet gone when and whither he should not, and seldomer than he should to his church and to other holy places, and sorrowfully in his heart bemourneth, then acheth his heart and smarteth, as the hands and the feet would if they were pierced through with iron nails. Again, if he understandeth that he hath often sinned in lustful deeds, unseasonably or in unlawful places, or with illicit looks, or in any other disallowed manner, and in various thoughts and in manifold ways, and if he sorely bemourneth all that in his heart, then will his heart ache as his side would if one had

pere-fore ure drihten ne laðeð us noht to beren swiche rode. ac laðeð us to an oðer. þe þis bitocneð þat is cleped. *Carnis maceracio*. Þat is lichames helsing<sup>a</sup>. Mannes lichame ihalsneð<sup>b</sup> Of bodily mortification. iwis. þenne me hine pined mid hunger. *and* mid þurste. *and* mid wecche. *and* mid swinche. *and* mid stiuwe wedes next þe liche *and* smerte smiten of smale longe ȝerden. *and* mid michele chele oðer wile. þos roden moten beren alle sinfulle men. þe wile milce habben of here sinnes. þis rode is cleped on þe boc. *Scala peccatorum*. þat is sinfulle manne leddre. þe hi shulen oue stien to heuene. Nu ȝie hauen herd. wic is þe lichamliche rode. hereð nu wic is þe gostliche rode. hie haueð twei names. *Cordis contricio et proximi compassio*. Þat is herte sor for Of heart's sorrow. mannes oȝene sinne *and* reuðe for his emcristenes wowe. þe man þe wile þis rode beren he mot cnowen þet he haueð ofte A man must recollect how often he has sinned. *and* afele wise agilt mid his egen bihelden þat he ne sholden. wile idel. wile unmut. wile ifel. *and* also mid nose snened. *and* mid care list. *and* mid muðe agilt speken \*þat he ne sholde ofte. \*p. 147. *and* afele wise. *and* forlete þo gode word. on his bede þe he speken sholde. *and* on ouerdede on ete. *and* on drinke þenne he ne sholde. *and* gif he þet þencheð, *and* on his herte sore His heart will ache when he bethinks him how oft he has sinned with all his bodily members; bimurneð. þenne akeð his heorte. *and* smerteð. for his sinnes also sholde his heued gif he hadde þer-uppe þornene helm. *and* þe þornes swiðe priken. Eft-sone gif he þenkeð þat he haueð agilt mid his honden ofte *and* a fele wise forlete almesdede. *and* don idel. *and* unmut. *and* ifel. *and* mid his foten gon þenne he ne sholde. *and* þider he ne sho[l]de. *and* seldere þeue he sholde to his chirche. *and* to oðre holie stowen. *and* soriliche on his heorte bimurneð. þenne akeð þe heorte *and* smerteð also þe honden *and* te fet sholden gif hie mid irene nailen weren þurh stungen. Eft-sone gif he understant þat he hadde ofte agilt on golliche dedes. on untime. oðer on unlouede stede. oðer mid unloued loke. oðer on unloued wise. *and* mistliche þoht ofte *and* a and in various unlawful thoughts. manifeld wise. *and* al þat sore bimurneð on his heorte. þenne wile his heorte aken *and* smerten. also his side sholde

<sup>a</sup> ? read *hlensing*. Lambeth MS. has *lensing*.

<sup>b</sup> ? read *ihlanseð*. Lambeth MS. has *lenseð*.

pierced it with a spear. And if a man tortureth himself as I have said, and if he seeth his fellow-Christian suffer woe and in his heart sorely pitieth him, and protecteth his fellow-Christian from pain, as far as he is able, he may be God's knight (servant), for he beareth his cross. Let us take heed and beseech Him to help us to forsake ourselves and the foul incomer that our enemy has brought within us, and to bear our cross, that is the purification of our body, and sorrow of heart, and so come after him and follow him and remain with him. *Quod nobis præstet qui vivit et regnat per omnia sæcula sæculorum.* AMEN.

## XXXIII.

[DISCOURSE ON PSALM CXIX. 110.]

*Posuerunt peccatores laqueum mihi et de mandatis tuis non erravi.*

The sinful have laid a snare to take me, and I forsook not thy commandment. Our enemy goeth a-hunting and layeth a snare in the wilderness to take the animals that dwell therein. Let us guard ourselves and pray God to help us and to shield us therefrom, that he may not deceive us, and let us say with the prophet, *Custodi me a laqueo quem statuerunt mihi*, Lord, shield me from the snares that are laid to take me. Listen now and receive it in your heart, and have it in your mind, for you have much need, and I will tell you why the devil is called 'sinful' and a 'hunter,' and this world a 'wilderness,' and evil vices 'snares,' and these men 'wild animals.' The devil is called sinful because through his pride he foully sinned when he separated himself from God. He is called man's *foe*, for he '*foe-ed*' (set at enmity) the first man with God; that was Adam and all his offspring, that is, all mankind. He is called 'hunter' for he lieth in wait for each of us and endeavours to bring us into loathsome vices which are his snares, and therein catcheth us, as the hunter driveth wild animals into the snare or net and so catcheth them. And of this hunter speaketh the prophet and saith, *Anima nostra sicut passer erepta est de laqueo venantium*, our soul is snatched out of the hunter's snare. Holy book calleth this world 'wilderness,' because few men dwell there who are 'tamed' and go to God's hand to do his will, but all of them, for the most part, are wily and have

gif me him mid spere stunge. *and* gif man him seluen pineð  
 also ich seid hadde. *and* gif he seð his emcristene polien  
 wosið. *and* him þat on his heorte sore reuweð. *and* wereð his  
 emcristene wið pine bi his mihte. he mai ben ure helendes cniht.  
 for he bereð his rode. Nime we geme *and* bide we þat he us  
 filste to forsakende us seluen. *and* þe fule on-cume þe ure fo on  
 us brohte. *and* to beren ure rode. þat is ure lichames clensing  
*and* ure heorte reusinge. *and* swo after him cumen. *and* him  
 folgen. *and* mid him bileue. *Quod nobis prested qui uiuit et*  
*Regnat per omnia secula seculorum. amen.*

He who pities  
 and helps his  
 fellow Chris-  
 tians is  
 Christ's ser-  
 vant.

### XXXIII.

[SERMO IN PS. CXIX. 110.]

*Posuerunt peccatores laqueum michi et de mandatis tuis non*  
*erravi.* Ðe sinfulle haueð leid grune me to henten. *and* ich  
 ne forlet pine bode. Ure fo fareð on hunteð. *and* leið grune in  
 a wilderne to henten þe deor þe wunieð per-inne. Ute we bergen  
 us. *and* bidden god þat he us filste *and* shilde per-wið þat he us ne  
 shrenche *and* seien mid þe prophete. *Custodi me á laqueo q. s.*  
*michi.* louerd shild me wið þat grune þat hie leid hauen me to  
 henten. listeð nu *and* ich giu wile seggen. *and* under-nimeð hit on  
 heorte. *and* haddeð hit on minde giu is ned michel. wi þe deucl  
 is nemd sinful. *and* hunte. *and* þis woreld wilderne. *and* liðere  
 lahtres grune. *and* þes men deor. þe deucl is cleped sinful for he  
 purh his oregel fulliche sinegede. þo þe he sundrede him seluen  
 fro gode. he is cleped mannes fo. for he fode þe forme man wið  
 god. þat was adam. *and* al his ofspring. þat is al mankin. he is  
 cleped hunte. for þan þe he waiteð ure ech. *and* cunneð te  
 bringen us on liðere lahtres. þe beð his grunen. *and* per-one  
 henteð us also hunte driueð deor to grune. oðer to nette.  
*and* swo henteð. *and* of þis hunte specð þe prophete. *and*  
 seið. *Anima nostra sicut passer erepta de laqueo uenantium.*  
 Ure soule is abroiden: of þe hunte grune. holi boc clepeð  
 þis woreld wildren for þe fewe men þe wunieð [ð]erone þe  
 ben temed. *and* wend to godes hond. his wille to don. ac  
 alle mest hie beð iwilegeð *and* haddeð<sup>2</sup> geres after wilde<sup>2</sup>

p. 148.  
 [Ps.cxix.110.]  
 The devil  
 lays a snare  
 in the wilder-  
 ness.

The devil is a  
 hunter, the  
 world a wil-  
 derness, and  
 men are wild  
 animals.

The devil  
 drives men  
 into his  
 snares.

<sup>2</sup>MS. habbed.



wiles like wild animals, and therefore each man is compared to the wild animal whose wiles he takes after; some fox, some wolf, some bear, some lion: and each man is named according to what his wiles are; and as the great animals oppress the little ones and live upon them in the wilderness, so oppresseth and destroyeth rich men the poor, and moreover live upon them in this world. *In hoc deserto sunt quatuor saltus quos bestiae deserti frequentant, scilicet, corea, cervisia, forum, monasterium*—In this wilderness are four lairs, to which all wild animals most resort. The first is play, the second is drink, the third market, and the fourth church. *In primo saltu ponunt venantes laqueum vanitatis, in secundo impietatis.* In these four lairs layeth our foe four snares wherewith to catch us. May Christ shield us therefrom if it be his will. At play he setteth the trap of idleness—for all is idle that is beheld, heard, and done at play, and it is displeasing to God and unprofitable for the soul; and the body toils, thigh and shanks and feet hop, belly wags and shoulders twist about, and hands are nimble; the heart thinketh that she must sing a song; tongue, teeth, and lips frame words; mouth sendeth out the voice. And each man that cometh thereto to look on, or to hear, or to behold, if it is well pleasing to him, is entrapped and caught in the trap of idleness that the devil hath set there. Of this snare speaketh the prophet and saith, *Non sedi cum concilio uanitatis et cum iniqua gerentibus non introibo*—I never held well with them that go to idleness. *Secundus saltus hujus deserti est compotatorium;* the second lair in this wilderness is drink: there setteth the devil the snare of unright, for there no man doth what is right, but each man doth wrong there against God and against his own soul, and against his fellow Christian. He doth wrong against God, who is his lord, and who preserveth his life and his health (the while he hath it) and giveth him all that he liveth by and biddeth him thereof minister to his wants, and keep himself from excess; and nevertheless he will not do what God biddeth him, but doth what God hath forbidden, and doth what the devil hath bidden; and so he dishonoureth God and honoureth the devil, and sinneth against God and pleaseth the devil, and forfeits heaven's weal and hath hell's woe. Wrong he doth also to his soul's displeasure, and adorneth his body and keeps down his soul, and

deore. *and* for is ech man efned to þe deore. þe he nimeð  
 after geres. sum fox. sum wulf. sum bere. sum leun. *and* ech  
 man me nemneð after þan þe his geres beoð. *and* also þe michele  
 deor heneð þe little. *and* bi hem libbeð on þe wilderne. Swo  
 heneð. *and* astruzeð þe riche men þe wrecches. *and* naðeles  
 libbeð bi hem on þis worlde. *In hoc deserto sunt iii<sup>or</sup> saltus*  
*quos bestie \*deserti frequentant scilicet corea ceruisia. forum* \* p. 149.  
*monasterium.* on þis wilderne ben fuger lages. þat mest alle wilde  
 deor to secheð. þat on is pleze, þat oder<sup>1</sup> drinch. þe þridde chep-  
 inge. þe ferðe chirche. *In primo saltu ponunt uenantes laqueum*  
*uanitatis. In secundo impietatis.* On þis fuwer lages leið ure fo  
 fuwer grunes us mide to henten. crist us shilde þerwið gif his  
 wille beo. At pleze he teldeð þe grune of idelnesse. for al hit  
 is idel þat me at pleze bihalt. *and* listeð. *and* doð *and* un-  
 queme gode. *and* unbiheue þe soule. *and* swinch þe lichame. þih.  
*and* shonkes. *and* fet oppieð. wombe gosschieð. *and* shuldres  
 wrenchieð. armes. *and* honden frikieð. herte biðencheð þat hie  
 seggen shal on songe. Tunge *and* teð. *and* lippe word shuppieð.  
 Muð sent ut þe stefne. *and* ech man þe þerto cumeð pleie to  
 toten. oðer to listen oðer to bihelden. gif he him wel likeð. he  
 beð biseid *and* hent on þe on þe<sup>2</sup> grune of idelnesse. þe þe werse<sup>2</sup> *So in MS.*  
 pere haueð itelded. of þis grune specð þe prophete *and* seið.  
*Non sedi cum concilio uanitatis et cum iniqua gerentibus non*  
*[introibo].* Ne held ich nefre wel mid hem þe gon to idelnesse.  
*Secundus saltus huius deserti est compotatorium.* þat oðer lage  
 on þis wilderne is drinch. þere teldeð þe werse þe grune of  
 unrihte. for þere ne doð no man riht. ac ech man doð þere  
 unriht to genes gode *and* to genes his agene soule. *and* to  
 genes his emcristene. To-genes gode he doð unriht. þat is his  
 lounerd. *and* halt his lif. *and* his hele. þe wile he hit haueð. *and*  
 doð him al þat he bi beð. *and* bid<sup>3</sup> him þerof beten his nede<sup>3</sup> *So in MS.*  
*and* beregen him wið ouer dede *and* naðeles ne wile don þat god  
 him het. ac doð þat god forþed. *and* doð þat þe deuel het. *and*  
 swo unwurðeð god. *and* wurðeð þene deuel. *and* agilt wið gode.  
*and* quemeð þe deuel. *and* forgilt heuene wele. *and* haueð helle  
 wowe. unriht he doð ec to-genes his soule unwille. *and* awlencð

The great  
animals op-  
press the little  
ones, so do the  
rich the poor.

The four lairs  
where the  
devil sets his  
traps.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

<sup>1</sup> Play, where  
the snare of  
idleness is set.

<sup>2</sup> Drink,  
where the  
snare of  
wickedness is  
set.

<sup>3</sup> So in MS.

exalts his body and oppresses his soul ; and he maketh the body, that ought to be the soul's joyous chamber, a horrible prison for her ; and therein she never turneth through excess and unreasonable drink, so that she is sorrowful that she must dwell therein, and therefore desireth to go out. Wrong he doth also against his fellow Christian when he leadeth him to drink, not what was willing or pleasant, but what was more than needful for him, and bringeth upon him a burden greater than he can bear, and wasteth upon him what he should spare for poor men, or should rather pour it out than make men drunken therewith, and not waste what God has made, nor spend (use) unprofitably what God has made for men's assistance, nor dishonour God's handywork. This is at drinking. And there are numerous other wrongs ; here are slanderous words, and idle vices, and wine-red brows (and they incline pleasantly to these vices) which are named adultery ; and other numerous wrongs—witchcraft, fraud, theft, song, leasing, and rapine, and all the evil vices that man hath through the devil's lore. Of this dreadful snare speaketh the prophet and saith, *Cum iniqua gerentibus non introibo*—I will never go in thither where such wrong is practised. The life-holy man who knew God's will reproveth such drink and the wicked habit and the place wherein one so drinketh. *Tertius saltus hujus deserti est forum ubi ponunt laqueum malignitatis*—The third lair in this wilderness is market, where the devil setteth the trap of *hindering*, that is, of fraud ; for when a man deceives another he maketh him to be *behind* in that which he weened to be before, that is the custom of us all that buy and sell. The seller priceth his goods dear and saith they are well worth it or better worth it. The buyer biddeth little for them and saith they are not worth it, and they both lie ; the seller bateth somewhat of his price, and sweareth that he will not sell it for less ; the buyer increaseth his bid and sweareth he will not give more. Then cometh the devil and communeth with the thoughts of each, and causes the seller to take less than he swore and then the buyer to give less than he swore. And if it be chaffer that must be measured or weighed, the seller maketh it smaller than he ought and the buyer [wanteth to make it] larger than he ought. And thus they cheat each other and are then caught in the snare of 'hindering.' One is leasing, the second

his lichame. \*and walt his soule. and heseð his lichame. and \* p. 150.  
heneð his soule. and þe lichame þe sholde ben þe soule hiht-  
liche bure. makeð hire to ateliche *quarterne*. and þer inne neure <sup>By excess in</sup>  
twisteð. mid ouerdede. and untimliche drinche. þat hire beoð wo <sup>eating and</sup>  
þat hie sal þer-inne wunien. and þere-fore wilneð ut. Unriht <sup>drinking the</sup>  
heo doð ee togenes his emcristene. þenne he hine laðeð to <sup>body is made</sup>  
drinken more. noht þe him beo wille. oðer *queme*. ac þenne him <sup>a prison for</sup>  
ued were. and bringeð uppen him birden more þene [he] bere <sup>the soul.</sup>  
muze. and spilleð on him þat he sholde spelien wrecche men.  
oðer raðer helden hit ut þene men þermide fordrenchen. and noht  
sheden<sup>1</sup> godes shafte ne spenen on uniðor. þat god shop mannen <sup>1 ? shenden.</sup>  
to helpe. ne swo unwurðin godes handiwerc. þis beoð at drinche <sup>The drunkard</sup>  
and oðer unriht inoh. þere beð ollende word. and idele lehtres. <sup>dishonours</sup>  
and winrede bruwes. and buweð wenliche. þe beð bispeke ewe- <sup>God's handy-</sup>  
bruche and oðer unriht inoh. wicching. and swikedom. stale. <sup>work.</sup>  
and leoð. and lesing. and refloc. and alle þe luðere lastes þe <sup>The evils</sup>  
man hafeð þureh deules lore. of þis grisliche grune specð þe pro- <sup>arising from</sup>  
phete. and seið. *Cum iniqua gerentibus non introibo*. Nelle ich <sup>drunkenness.</sup>  
nefre gon þider in ? þere me swich unriht drigeð. þe lif holi man  
þe wiste godes wille. swic drinch wið queð. and þe luðere wune.  
and þe stede þer me swo one drinkeð. *Tercius saltus huius deserti*  
*est. forum ubi ponunt laqueum malignitatis*. þe þridde lage on  
þis wilderne is cheping. þere teldeð þe werse þe grune of hindre <sup>3. Market,</sup>  
þat is of bipeching for þenne man bipecheð oðer. he him makeð <sup>where the</sup>  
to ben bihinden. of þat he weneð to ben biforen. þat is ure alre <sup>snares of trick-</sup>  
wune þe biggeð. and silleð. þe sullere loueð his þing dere. \*and <sup>ery is set.</sup>  
seið þat it is wel wurð. oðer betere. Ðe beger bet litel þar fore  
and seið þat hit nis noht wurð. and ligeð boðe. þe sullere lat  
sumdel of his lofe. and swereð þat he hit nele lasse selle. þe  
beggere ecneð his bode and swereð þat he nele more geuen.  
þanne cumeð þe werse and runeð wið here eiðeres þane. and doð  
þe sullere lasse to nimende<sup>2</sup> þanne he swore. and þanne þe biggere <sup>2 MS. geu-</sup>  
more to geuende þanne he swore. And gif hit chepinge be. þe <sup>ende.</sup>  
me shule meten oðer weien. þe sullere doð narewere þane he  
sholde. and te biggere runluker þan he sholde. and þesse wise  
biwikeð her aiðer oðer. and beð þanne bisaid in þe grune of

perjury, the third fraud; and with this snare catcheth the devil all who thus buyeth and selleth: wherefore saith the prophet, *Odivi ecclesiam malignantium*—Hateful to me is the assembly of the treacherous, for I know that they are hateful to God. *Quartus saltus hujus deserti est monasterium ubi ponuntur laquei impietatis*—The fourth lair of this wilderness is the church, in which the devil setteth up the snare of pride, and entraps therein, sometimes the clergy, and sometimes the laity, and sometimes both. The clergy he catcheth in this snare, sometimes single and sometimes double, when he causeth the clerk to let his church stand without a service when it is time to perform the services; and as often as he speaketh in church what he ought not, or is silent about what he ought not, that is to teach well the sinful and to admonish those that are slow to church and to good works to be diligent thereto, and those that lie in sin to forsake their wickedness, and to comfort them with kind words, and on each ‘high day’ to feed with God’s word the hungry souls whom he hath to protect; and as many things as I have told that he should speak in church, if he will not or cannot do, or careth not, with so many traps the devil ensnareth him and catcheth him. And if he sing with voice to be well-pleasing to women or directeth willingly his eyes to them to seek their looks, then shall he be caught and be led to hell. The laity the devil catcheth in church with his snares in three ways—when the priest speaketh in church of the church’s necessities that they should find new cloths or repair the old ones, book, bell, chalice, or mass-surplice, or altar-cloth or other cloths; then cometh the devil to the man’s heart and holdeth private converse with his thoughts, thus saying: Why shouldst thou find this, of which thou receivest nothing; but he taketh all that cometh there, let him provide this now. Moses did not thus answer our Lord when he bade him to make a ‘minster’; and he well-furnished it all, although he received nought thereof. So also did Solomon, to whom God sent his message. So ought each congregation to do when they see there is need. When the priest admonishes them to give their tithes aright, then cometh the devil to a man’s heart and advises him not to do so, and whispers in the man’s thoughts and thus misadvises him. ‘If thou givest the priest all thy tithes he will



hinder. On is leasing, oðer is mon-oð. þe þridde swikedom. *and* The sins of  
mid þis grune henteð þe werse alle þo þe sus<sup>1</sup> biggeð. *and* sulleð. [Ps. xxv. 5.]  
þare fore seið þe prophete. *Odiui ecclesiam malignantium.* Me<sup>1</sup> So in MS.;  
is andsete þe samninge of þe hinderfulle for ich wot þat þat<sup>1</sup> hie ? þus.  
ben loðe god. *Quartus saltus huius deserti est monasterium ubi*  
*ponuntur laquei impietatis.* Ðe feorð[e] lage of þisse wilderne is 4. Church,  
chireche. þare teldeð ðe werse þe grune of oregelnesse. *and* bisaið where the  
par-one hwile hodede. *and* hwile lewede. *and* hwile boðe. Ðe is set, which  
hodede henteð mid þis grune. hwile ofeald. hwile twifeald þaune catches both  
he makeð þat þe hodede lat his chireche stonde wið-uten tide. laity and  
þane hit time beð to done þe tiden. *and* also swo ofte swo he clergy.  
spekeð in chireche þat he ne sholde. oðer swikeð of þat he sholde.  
þat is þe sinfulle wel tachen. *and* minigen þo þe ben slowe to  
chireche. *and* to weldede. þat he be snel þar-to. *and* lehtrie<sup>2</sup> þo þe 2 So in MS.  
on sinne lið. to forleten. \**and* mid milde worde to frefrien. *and* \* p. 152.  
eche hege dai fede mid godes worde þe hungrie soule þe haueð to  
witen. *and* also fele þing swo ich iteld hadde þat he ine chirche  
speken sholde. gif he nele oðer ne can. oðer ne reccheð mid also  
fele folde grunen þe werse hine biseið. *and* henteð. *and* gif he  
wliteð mid stefne for to liken wimmannen. oðer ledeð hem his  
life<sup>3</sup> egen for to sechen hire luke. þenne beð he laht forto leden to 3 So in MS.  
helle. þe lewede men henteð þe werse ine chirche mid his grune  
on þre wise. þanne prest specð inne chirche of chirche neode *and* There are  
minegeð þat me niwe cloðes oðer elde bete. boc oðer belle calch three ways in  
oðer messe-ref. oðer waferiht<sup>a</sup> oðer oðre cloðes. þenne cumeð þe which the  
werse to þe mannes heorte. *and* wið his þonc sunderune halt laity are  
þus queðinde. wi sholdest þu þis finden þe noht ne fost þerof. ac trapped.  
he fohð al þat þere cumeð. he finde þis nu. Swo ne andswerede  
noht moyses ure drihten þo he bad him minster maken. *and* They won't  
be hit al wel forðede. þeh he noht þer-offe fenge. also dide sale- give aught for  
man þe god sende his writ to. swo hoh ech chirche socne don the needs of  
þenne hie nede sen. þenne þe prest þe menegeð rihtliche teðien. the Church.  
þenne cumeð þe werse to sumne mannes heorte. *and* minegeð hine  
þat he swo ne do. *and* runeð wið þe mannes þonc *and* þus him  
misredeð. gif þu þe prest bitechest alle þine teðinge. nele he hit  
They hold  
back their  
tithes.

<sup>a</sup> ? Waferiht = wafec-rift = wafed-rift.

not distribute as he ought, but will sell them dear and spend them unprofitably. Give thou thyself alms thereof, and distribute some to poor men;' thus he beguiles him to rob the church. Under the old law our Lord bade that no one should commit aught to any man, unless he were bound over to repair the church. *Undecim generationes jussunt adnumero solis levitis decimas solvere.* When 'high day' cometh God ought to be praised with right belief and with true love; and of that which God hath lent him one ought to bring a gift to the church, and to honour therewith God's table according to his means: then cometh the devil to a man's heart and whispers in his heart, and causes him to keep back his gifts, and thus saith:—'This church is rich enough, and many men are poor; the rich have no need, but the poor have much; withhold thy gift and give it to the poor. *Sed ait in evangelio, hæc oportuit facere, et illa non omittere.* It behoveth a man sometimes both to bring gifts to the church and also to help poor men, and therewith he shall free himself if he be caught in the merciless snare; then may he say with the psalmist David, *Oculi mei semper ad domino, &c.*, 'Ever be my eyes open to our Lord, for I trust that he will not punish me according to my desert, but of His mercy will set my feet free from the devil's snare,' and so may He do [the feet] of us all, Who liveth and reigneth, &c. AMEN.

## XXXIV.

[DISCOURSE ON ISAIAH XI. I.]

*Egredietur virga de radice Jesse, &c.* A rod shall sprout from the root of Jesse and a blossom shall come up from the root of it, and upon the blossom shall rest the Holy Ghost. On these few little words lie hid many good words, if they were well explained; but I may not, nor cannot, explain these words, but yet I will tell you what I understand therein through the power of the Holy Ghost. When the

delen also he don sholde. ac wile hit dere sellen *and* spenen on uniȝor. do þu almes þer-of. *and* del sum wrecche men. þus he hine bi-pecheð þat he chirche bireueð. on þe helde lage het ure drihten þat me ne sholde none man bitechen \*bute he were teid \* p. 153. to menden chirche. *Vndecim generationes iusse sunt adnumero solis leuitis decimas soluere.* Þanne heh dai cumeð man hoh They do not bring gifts to church. herien god mid rihte leue. *and* mid soðe luue. *and* of þan þe god him haueð lend. loc to chirche bringen. *and* wurðin þer-mide godes bord! also his haue beð. þenne cumeð þe werse to sumes The devil persuades them that the church is rich enough. mannes heorte *and* runeð wið his heorte. *and* doð hine his loc to wið teonde. *and* þus queð þis chirche is riche inoh. *and* fele men ben wrecches þe nes riche non nod. ac wrecches habben michele. wið-teo nu [h]ere þi loc *and* del hit wrecches. *Set ait in ewangelio. hec oportuit facere. et illa non omittere.* eiðer bihoueð þat man do þe wile loc to chirche bringe. *and* helpe wrecche me[n]. *and* þer-mide hine aleseð gif he laht beð. on þe orelese grune. þenne mai he seggen mid te salm wirhte *dauid.* *Oculi mei semper ad domino et cetera.* Eure beo mine egene opene to ure drihten. for ich triste þat he nele neng bi mine wrihte. ac for his milde, wille. of þis verses grune mine fet breiden. swo do he ure alre þe liueð *and* rixleð *Amen.*

# XXXIV.

[SERMO IN ISA. XI. I.]

[*E*]grediatur uirga de radice iesse, et cetera. An gerd sal The prophecy of Isaiah concerning the 'root of Jesse.' spruten of iesse more. *and* an blosme stien of pare more. *and* uppe þare blosme resten þe holie gost. On þesse fewe litele wored lotied<sup>1</sup> fele gode wored gif hie weren wel ioponen<sup>1</sup>. Ac <sup>1</sup> *So in MS.* ich ne mai ne ich ne can þosse on openi.. Ac napeles ich wille ew segge þat ich þronne understonde þur[h] þe mihte of þe holi gost. *Egrediatur. et cetera.* Ðo þe heue[n]liche fader fundede to

heavenly Father determined to send the heavenly Son, he sent many messengers to make known that he would come; and one of those was Isaiah the prophet, on whom it was incumbent to say these words that I now say, and now begin to explain. He was a man dwelling in this world many hundred winters before the maiden was conceived or born, and spake of her and said what should happen with respect to her as plainly as if it had happened; and he compared her kin to a root and herself to a rod and her royal child to a blossom, and said, *Egreditur virga, &c.* Hear now and understand for what reason he compared her kin to a root and herself to a rod, and her royal child to a blossom. *Quemadmodum rami arboris prodeunt a stipite, et ille a radice, sic domina nostra de posteris Jesse, et ipse prodierunt de ipso Jesse*—As the uppermost bough of the tree springeth from the lowest root, so sprang our lady from her elders, and her elders from Jessie; and as the uppermost bough is of kin to the lowest root, so sprang [man from his elders, and] the last man shall be akin to the first man who was before us, and therefore are all men brothers and sisters, and all men should love one another. But pity it is, for now is every man a foe where he ought to be a friend—*Nunquam tuta fide, &c. Filius autem diem, &c., Domina nostra comparata est virgæ, propter quatuor quæ sese inveniuntur adjuncta virgæ, quæ est recta, plana, excisis longa.* Our lady is compared to a rod for four things that one finds commonly in a rod, that it is (1) straight, (2) small, (3) long, and (4) smooth—*Rectitudinem virgæ habuit in perseverantiam vitæ.* Rod's straightness she had in her mode of life, for she turned not aside in herself to do nor to say any of those things that she ought to forsake—*Et sic medio tutissima ibat.* And she understood holy-lore, &c. If I knew more I would say more!<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The curious termination of this Homily looks like an attempt at facetiousness on the part of the scribe. He seems to have been unable to carry on the comparison he commenced. Perhaps the Latin original had no more leaves, having been damaged, so he *knew* no more because his original was imperfect. The orthography and grammatical forms are less accurate than in the preceding Homilies.

senden þene heuenliche sune! he sende mani herendrake to  
 cūpen þat he cume wolde And on of þo was ysaie þe prophete.  
 on was leid to segen þos wored þat ich nou sege. and nu þe  
 beginne on opini. þe was man wuniinde on þese worlde mani  
 hundred wintre are þe maiden ware iken<sup>1</sup>. oþer istren<sup>1</sup>. and spac  
 of hire and seide wat of hire iwurþen solde also suteliche swo it  
 wurþe were. and heuenede hire cun to more. and hire su[l]f to  
 gerde. and hire cunebern to blosme. and seide. *Egredietur uirga*  
*et cetera.* Hered<sup>1</sup> nu and understoded<sup>1</sup> for woche þinge he  
 nemnede hire cun to more. and hire su[l]f to gerde and hire  
 cune bern to blosme. *Quem ad modum rami arboris prodeunt a*  
*stipite. et ille a radice. sic domina nostra de posteris iesse et ipsi*  
*prodierunt de ipso iesse.* Also þe huuemeste bou of þe treuwe  
 springed<sup>1</sup> of þe neþemeste rote. also sprong ure lafedī of hire  
 helderne. and hire helderne of iesse. and also þe uuemeste bou is  
 sib þe neþemeste rote. Also sprond word<sup>a</sup> þe laste man isib þe  
 forme\*ste þe was biforn us. And for þi bed<sup>1</sup> alle man ibropren  
 and isustren. and solden auerihe man loueien oþer. Acke nu is  
 reweþe. for nu is euerihe man ifo þare he solde fren<sup>1</sup> be. *Nun-*  
*quam tuta fide et cetera. Filius autem diem. et cetera. Domina*  
*nostra comparata est uirge propter .iiii<sup>or</sup>. que sepe inueniuntur*  
*adiuncta uirge que est recta. plana. excisis longa.* Vre leuedi is  
 iuened<sup>b</sup> to gerde for foure þinges þe man find<sup>1</sup> ilome on gerde þat  
 he be riht and smal and long. and smeþe. *Rectitudinem uirge*  
*habuit in perseueranciam uite.* Gerde rihtnesse he heuede on  
 hire liflode. for he ne turnde naht on hire to doinde ne queþende  
 nan þer þinge þe he leten solde. *et Sic medio tutissima ibat.*  
 And he understod holie boc lore. et cetera. *Si plus scirem,*  
*plus dicerem.*

Isaiah, one of  
 the old mes-  
 sengers who  
 prophesied of  
 Christ's com-  
 ing.

<sup>1</sup> So in MS.

The kin of  
 Mary is com-  
 pared to a  
 root; herself  
 to a rod and  
 her child to a  
 blossom.

All men are  
 akin, like  
 the topmost  
 bough to the  
 nethermost  
 root of a tree.

\* p. 157.

Four reasons  
 why Our  
 Lady is  
 likened to a  
 rod.

<sup>a</sup> ? Also sprong [man of his elderne and] worð, &c.

<sup>b</sup> The MS. originally had 'the leuedi isuedidin is iuened.'



## XXXV.

A MORAL ODE.<sup>1</sup>

My wit is not  
equal to my  
years.

Ich am nu elder þan ich was a wintre *and* a lore.  
 Ich wealde more þan idude mi wit oh to be more  
 To longe ich habbe child iben a worde *and* a dade.  
 Þeih ibie a winter eald to jung ich am on rade. 4  
 Vnnet lif ich habbe ilad. *and* giet me þincheð ilade.  
 Þan ibiðenche me þar on wel sore ime adrade.  
 Mast al ich habbe idon is idelnesse *and* chilce.  
 Wel late ich habbe me biþoht bute me god do milce. 8  
 Fele idel word ich habbe ispeken seðen ich speken cuðe.  
*And* fele geunge dade idon þe me ofðinkeð nuðe.  
 Alto lome ich habbe igult a werke *and* a worde.  
 Alto muchel ic habbe ispend to litel ileid on horde. 12  
 Mast al þat me likede ar nu hit me mislicað.  
 Þe muchel folgeð his iwil him selfen he biswicað.  
 Ich mihte habben bet idon. hadde ich þo iselðe.  
 Nu ich wolde ac ine mai for elde *and* for unhalðe 16  
 Elde me is bistolen on ar ich hit iwiste.  
 Ne mai ich isien bifore me for smeeche ne for miste  
 Arge we beð to don god to juel al to þriste  
 More eie stondeð man of man þan him do of criste. 20  
 Þe wel ne deð þe hwile he mai wel ofte hit sal him  
 rewen.

We shall reap  
what we have  
sown.

þan alle men sulle ripen þat hie ar sewen.  
 Do al to gode þat he muze ech þe hwile he beð aliue.  
 Nu lipne noman to muchel to childe ne to wiue. 24  
 Þe þe him selfe forgeit for wiue oðer for childe  
 He sal cumen on eucl stede bute him god be milde.  
 Sende god biforen him man þe hwile he mai to heuene.  
 For betre is on almesse biforen þan ben after seuene. 28

<sup>1</sup> For a translation of this poem, See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 158.

- Ne bie þe leuere þan þe self ne þi mæi ne þi mowe  
 Sot is þe is oðer mannes frend betere þan his owen.  
 Ne hopie wif to hire were ne were to his wiue
- 32 Be for him self afric man þe hwile he beð alieue.  
 Wis þe him selue biðencheð þe hwile he mōt libben  
 For sone willeð him forgiete þe fremde *and* þe sibbe.  
 Þe wel ne doð þe hwile he mai ne sal he þan he wolde.
- 36 For mani mannes sore iswinc haddeð ofte unholde.  
 Ne solde noman don a furst ne laten wel to done  
 For mani man bihoteð wel þat hi forgieteð sone.  
 Þe man þe wile siker ben to habben godes blisse.
- 40 Do wel him self þe hwile he mai þanne haueð hes mid  
 iuisse.  
 Þe riche men weneð siker ben þurch wallen *and* thurh  
 dichen.
- He deð his aihte an siker stede þe hit sent to heueriche.  
 For þarf he ben of-drad of fure ne of þieue.
- 44 Þar ne mai hit him binime þe loðe ne þe lieue.  
 Þar ne þarf he habben care of here ne of gielde.  
 Þider we sendeð *and* ec bereð to litel *and* to selde.  
 Þider we solden drawen *and* don wel ofte *and* ilome.
- 48 For þar ne sal me us naht binime mid wrongwise  
 dome.  
 Þider we solde gierne drawen wolde gie me ileuen.  
 For ne mai hit us binime no king ne no sýrreue.  
 Al þat beste þat we haddeð her þider we solde sende.
- 52 For þar we mihte finden eft. *and* habben abuten ende.  
 Se þe her doð ani god forto haben godes ore  
 Al he hit sal eft finde þar *and* hundredfealde more.  
 Se þe aihte wile holde wel þe hwile hes muze wealden.
- 56 ȝieue hes for godes luue þanne doð hes wel ihealden.  
 For ure swinch *and* ure tilðe is ofte wuned to swinde  
 Ac al þat we ȝieueð for godes luue al we hit sulen eft  
 finden.
- Ne sal þar non euel ben unboht ne god unforȝolden.  
 60 Euel we doð al to muchel *and* god lasse þan we solden.

Be a true  
friend to thy-  
self.

Delay not  
amendments.

Heaven is a  
secure place  
for our trea-  
sures.

Give alms to  
the poor.

No good shall  
be unre-  
warded.

- Se þe mast doð nu to gode *and* se last to lothe.  
 Eiðer to litel *and* to muchel hem sal þunche boðe.  
 Þar me sal ure werkes weigen bifore þan heuen kinge  
 And ȝieuen us ure werkes lean after ure erninge. 64
- Every one  
 may purchase  
 heaven—the  
 poor as well  
 as the rich.  
 Africh man mid þat he haueð mai bugge heueriche  
 Þe þe more haueð *and* þe þe lasse boðe iliche.  
 Also on mid his peni se oðer mid his punde.  
 Þis is þet wunderlukeste ware þat ani man funde. 68  
 And se þe more ne mai don mid his gode iþanke.
- <sup>1</sup> So in MS.  
 Also wel se þe þe haued<sup>1</sup> goldeð fele manke.  
 And ofte god can more þanc þan þe him ȝieueð lasse.  
 Al his werkes *and* his weies is milce *and* rihtwi[s]nesse. 72
- A good-will  
 offering is  
 acceptable to  
 God.  
 Litel lóc is gode lef þe cumeð of gode wille.  
 And eðlate muchel ȝieue þan his herte is ille.  
 Heuene and erðe he ouer sihð his eien beð ful brihte.  
 Nis him no þing forholen swo muchel is his mihte 76  
 Ne bie hit no swo derne idon ne on swo þuster nihte.  
 He wot hwat þencheð *and* hwat doð alle quike wihte  
 Nis louerd swilch is crist ne king swilch ure drihte.  
 Boðe ȝiemeð þe his bien bi daie *and* bi nihte. 80
- God is omni-  
 scient and  
 omnipotent.  
 Heuene *and* erðe *and* al þat is biloken is in his honden  
 He doð al þat his wille is awatere *and* alonde  
 He makeð þe fisses in þe sa þe fueles on þe lofte.  
 He wit *and* wealdeð alle þing *and* he sop alle safte. 84  
 He is ord abuten ord *and* ende abuten ende.  
 He is one afre on eche stede wende þar þu wende.  
 He is bunen us *and* bineðen biforen *and* bihinde  
 Þe godes wille doð aihware he maig him finde 88  
 Elche rune he hereð *and* he wot alle dade  
 He þurh sihð elches mannes þanc wi hwat sal us to rade.  
 We þe brekeð godes has *and* gulteð swo ilome
- What will sin-  
 ners say on  
 doomsday  
 when angels  
 are afraid.  
 Hwat sulle we seggen oðer don ate muchele dome 92  
 We þe luueden unrilt *and* eucl lif ladden.  
 Hwat sulle we seggen oðer don þar ængles beð ofdradde.  
 Hwat sulle we beren us biforen mid hwan sulle we iqueme  
 We þe nafre god ne duden þan heuenliche deme. 96

- Par sulle ben deffen swo fele þat willeð us forwreien.  
 Nabbeð hie no þing forgieten of þat hie her iseien.  
 Al þat hie iseien her hie willeð cučen þare  
 100 Bute we haben hit ibet þe hwile we here waren.  
 Al hie habbeð on here write þat we misduden here.  
 Þeih we hes ne niseien hie waren ure iferen.  
 Hwat sullen horlinges don þes wichen *and* þe forsworene  
 104 Wi swo fele beð icleped swo fewe beð icorene  
 Wi hwi waren hie biȝiete to hwan waren hie iborene.  
 Þe sulle ben to deače idemd *and* afremo forlorene  
 Elch man sal þar biclepien himselfen *and* ec demen.  
 108 Hie<sup>1</sup> ogen were *and* his þanc to witnesse he sal temen.  
 Ne mai him noman else wel demen ne else rihte  
 For non ne cnoweð hine else wel buten one drihte.  
 Man wot him self best his werkes *and* his wille.  
 112 Se þe last wot he seið ofte mast se þit al wot is stille  
 Nis no witnesse else muchel se mannes ogen hierte  
 Hwo se seið þat hie beð hol him self wot his smierte.  
 Elch man sal him selfen demen to deače oȝer to liue.  
 116 Þe witnesse of his ogen were to oȝer þan hine sal driue.  
 Al þat afri man haueð idon sečen he cam to manne  
 Swo he hit iseie abóc iwrite he sal hit þenche þanne  
 Ac drihte ne demeð noman after his biginninge  
 120 Ac al his lif sal ben teald after his endinge  
 ȝief þe endinge is god al hit is god. *and* euel ȝief euel  
 is þe ende.  
 God ȝieue þat ure ende be god *and* ȝieue þat he us  
 lende.  
 Se man þe nafre nele don god ne nafre god lif lade.  
 124 Are deað *and* dom cumeð to his dure he maiz him  
 sore adrade.  
 Pat he ne muȝe þanne bidden ore for þat itit ilome  
 For þi he [is] wis .þe bit *and* biȝiet *and* bet bifore dome  
 Þanne þe deað is ate dure wel late he biddeð ore  
 128 Wel late he lateð euel were þan he hit ne mai don no  
 more.

Devils shall  
be our accu-  
sers.

Our own  
words and  
thoughts  
shall appear  
against us.  
1 ? = His.

All will be  
well if our  
'ending' is  
well.

It is too late  
to ask mercy  
when death is  
at the door.

Senne lat þe *and* þu nah him þan þu hit ne miht do  
no more :

The repent-  
ant sinner  
shall find  
mercy.

For-þi he is sot þe swo abit to habben godes ore.  
þeih hweðere we hit leueð wel for drihte self hit sade.  
Elche time sal þe man of-þunche his misdade 132  
Oðer raðer oðer later milce he sal imete.  
Ac þe þe her naueð ibet muchel he haued to bete  
Mani man seið hwo reche pine þe sal habben ende  
Ne bidde ich not bet bie ich alesed a domesdai of bende. 136  
Litel wot he hwat is pine *and* litel he enoweð

The pains of  
hell are not  
realized as  
eternal.

Hwilch hit is þar sowle wunieð hwu biter wind þar  
bloweð.  
Hadde he ben þar on oðer two bare tiden.  
Nolde he for almidden eard þe þridde þar abiden. 140  
þat habbeð isaid þe come þanne þit wiste mid iwisse.  
Wo wurðe sorege seue gier for seue nihte blisse.  
*And* ure blisse þe ende haueð for ende-lease pine  
Betere is wori water þan atter imengd mid wine. 144  
Swines brade is wel swete swo is of wilde diere.  
Ac al to diere he hit abuið þe giefð þar-fore his swiere.  
Ful wombe mai lihtliche speken of hunger *and* of fasten  
Swo mai of pine þe not hwat is pine þe sal ilasten. 148  
Hadde [he] fonded sume stunde he wolde seggen oðer  
Eðlate him ware wif *and* child suster *and* fader *and*  
broðer.

If men  
thought of  
everlasting  
pain they  
would under-  
go any tem-  
porary pain  
to escape it.

Al he wolde oðerluker don *and* oðerluker þenche  
þan he biðohte an helle fur þat nowiht ne mai quenche 152  
Afre he wolde her in wo *and* in wane wunien  
Wið þan he mihte helle fur biþen *and* bisunien.  
Eðlate him ware al wele *and* erðeliche blisse  
For to þe muclele blisse cume þis muric<sup>a</sup> mid iwisse. 156  
¶ Ich wulle nu eumen eft to þe dome ich eow ar of  
sade.  
On þe daie *and* on þe dome us helpe crist *and* rade.  
þar we mugen ben sore offerd *and* harde us ofdrade.

<sup>a</sup> See Old Eng. Homilies, First Series, p. 169, l. 154.



- 160 þar elch sal al isien him biforen his word *and* ec his  
dade.  
Al sal þar ben þanne cuð þat men lugen her *and* halen. All secrets  
shall be made  
Al sal þar ben þanne unwrien þat men her hudden *and* known at  
doomsday.  
stalen.
- We sullen alre manne lif icnowen also ure ogen
- 164 þar sullen efninges ben to þe heie *and* to þe loge.  
Ne sal þeih no man samie þiar ne þarf he him adrade.  
ȝief him her ofþincheð his gult *and* bet his misdade.  
For hem ne sameð ne ne grameð þe sulle ben iborege
- 168 Ac þoðre habbeð same *and* grame *and* oðer fele sorege.  
þe dom þal<sup>1</sup> ben sone idon ne last hit nowiht longe <sup>1</sup> *Read sal.*  
Ne sal him noman mene þar of strence ne of wronge  
þo sulle habben hardne dom þe here waren hardde The merciless  
shall have a  
hard sen-  
tence.
- 172 þo þe euel hielden wreche men *and* euel lage arerde.  
Elch after þat he haueð idon sal þar ben þanne idemd  
Bliðe mai he þanne ben þe god haueð wel iquemd.  
Alle þo þe sprunge beð of adam *and* of eue
- 176 Alle hie sulle þider cume for soðe we hit ileued.<sup>2</sup> <sup>2</sup> *So in MS.*  
þo þe habbeð wel idon after here mihte  
To heueriche hie sulle fare forð mid ure drihte.  
þo þe deueles werkes habeð idon *and* þarinne beð ifunde
- 180 Hie sulle fare forð mid hem into helle grunde. Christ shall  
never more  
die to save  
the lost in  
hell.  
þar hie sulle wunien abuten ore *and* ende.  
Brecð nafre eft crist helle dure for lesen hem of bende  
Nis no sellich þeih hem be wo *and* þeih hem be uneače
- 184 Ne sal nafre eft crist þolien deað for lesen hem of deače.  
Ænes drihten helle brac his frend he ut brohte Christ died  
for us, yet we  
do nothing  
for his sake.  
Him self he þolede deað for hem wel diere he hes bohte.  
Nolde hit moge don for mai ne suster [for] broðer
- 188- Nolde sune don for fader ne no man for oðer.  
Vre alre louerd for his þralles ipined he was arode  
Ure bendes he unbond *and* bohte us mid his blode.  
We ȝieueð uneače for his huue a steche of ure breade
- 192 Ne þenche we naht þar þat sal deme þe quica<sup>3</sup> *and* þe<sup>3</sup> <sup>3</sup> *So in MS.*  
deade.

Death came  
into the world  
through our  
elders' mis-  
deeds.

Muchel lūne he us kedde wolde we hit understonde.  
 Þat ure elderne misduden we habeð euel an honde.  
 Deað cam in þis middenærð þurh ealde deueles onde  
*And* senne *and* sorege *and* iswinch awatere *and* [a] 196  
 londe.

Vre foremes faderes gult we abugeð alle  
 Al his ofsprung after him in harem is biualle  
 Þurst *and* hunger, chele *and* hete *and* alle unhalþe  
 Þurh deað cam in þis middeneard *and* oþer unisalþe. 200  
 Nare noman elles dead ne sic ne [non] unsele  
 Ac mihte libbe afremo ablisse *and* an hale.  
 Litel lac is gode lief þe cumeð of gode wille  
*And* eðlate muchel gieuē þan his herte is ille 204

Sin causes us  
all to live in  
sorrow and  
toil.

Litel hit þuncheð maniman ac muchel was þe senne  
 For hwan alle þolieð deað þe comen of here kenne  
 Here senne *and* ec ure oȝen us muȝe sore ofþunche  
 For senne we libeð alle her in sorege *and* in swunche. 208  
 Seþen god nam swo mukel wrache for one misdede  
 We þe swo ofte misdoð we muȝen us eaþe ofdrade.  
 Adam *and* al his ofsprenȝ for one bare senne.

<sup>1</sup> MS,  
muchel.

Was fele hundred wintre an helle a pine *and* unwenne<sup>a</sup>. 212  
 Þo þe ladeð here lif mid unrihte *and* mid wronge  
 Bute hit godes milce do hie sulle wunie þar longe.  
 Godes wisdom is wel muchel<sup>1</sup> *and* alsse is his mihte  
 Ac nis his mihte nowiht lasse ac biþer ilke wihte. 216  
 More he one maig forgiene þan alle fole gulte cunne

All may ob-  
tain God's  
mercy.

<sup>2</sup> Egerton  
MS. is; Lam-  
bert MS. ha.

Self deuel mihte habben milce gief he hit bigunne.  
 Þepe godes milche seeð iwis he mai hes<sup>2</sup> finden  
 Ac helle king is ore-leas wið þo þe he mai binden. 220  
 Se deð his wille mast he sal habbe werest mede

Hell's king is  
piteless.

<sup>3</sup> Egerton  
feoude.

His bað sal be wallinde pich his bed barnende glede.  
 Werse he doð his gode wines þan his fiendes<sup>3</sup>  
 God silde alle godes friend wið swo eneie friende. 224  
 Nafre an helle iue cam ne cumen ich þar ne reche  
 Þeih ich aches woreldes wele þare mihte feche.

<sup>a</sup> *Read* helle pine and an unwenne.

- 228 Peih ich wille seggen eow þat wise men us saden  
*And* [a] boc hit is write þar me hit mai rade. Wise men  
have written  
of hell tor-  
ments.  
 Ic wille seggen hit þo þe hit hem self nesten  
*And* warnin hem wið here unfreme ġief hie me willeð  
 hlesten.  
 Vnderstondeð nu to meward eadi men *and* arme  
 232 Ich wille tellen eow of helle pine *and* warnin eow wið  
 harne.  
 An helle hunger *and* þurst euel two iferen. Hunger and  
thirst,  
whining and  
weeping,  
cold and heat.  
 Þos pine þolieð þo þe ware meteniðinges here.  
 Þar is woning *and* wop after ache strate  
 236 Hie fareð fram hate [to] chele fram chele to hate.  
 [Þ]an hie beð in þe hate chele hem þuncheð blisse  
 [Þ]an hie cumeð eft to chele of hate hie habbeð misse.  
 [E]iðer doð hem wo inoh nabbeð [hie] none lisse.  
 240 [N]iten hweðer hem doð wers to nafre none wisse.  
 [H]ie walkeð afre *and* secheð reste ac hie hes ne mугen Want of rest.  
 imeten.  
 [F]or þi þe hie nolde þe hwile hie mihten here senne  
 beten.  
 [H]ie secheð reste þar non nis ac hie hies<sup>1</sup> ne mугen<sup>1</sup> <sup>1</sup> Lambeth  
MS. es.  
 ifinden.  
 244 [A]c walkeð weri up *and* dun se water doð mid winde  
 [Þ]at beð þo þe waren her an þanc unstedefaste.  
 [And] þo þe gode biheten aihte *and* hit him ilaste.  
 [And] þo þe god were bigunnen *and* ful endin hit  
 nolden.  
 248 [N]u waren her *and* nu þar *and* nesten hwat he wolden  
 [Þ]ar is pich þat afre walleð þar sulle wunien inne Boiling pitch.  
 [Þ]o þe ladeð here lif on werre *and* an unwinne.  
 [Þ]ar is fur þis<sup>2</sup> hundredfeald hatere þan be ure. <sup>2</sup> Read þat is.  
 252 [N]e mai hit quenche salt water ne auene stream ne sture.  
 [Þ]is is þat fur þat afre barneð [hit] ne mai no wiht Ever-burning  
 quenche. fire.  
 [Þ]ar inne beð þe was to lef wrecche men to swenche.  
 Þo þe swikele men *and* ful of cuele wrenchen.

- In the fire of hell shall dwell all evil-doers. *And þo þe nihten euel don and lief hit was to þenchen.* 256  
*Þe luueden rauing and stale hordom and dru[n]ken*  
*And an defles werkes bliðeliche swunken.*  
*Þo þe waren swo lease men þat mes ne mihte leuen*  
*Medgierne domes men and wrongwise reuen.* 260  
*Þo þe oðer mannes wif was lief her ogen eðlate*  
*And þo þe sunegeden muchel on dru[n]ken and on ate.*  
*Þe wreche men binomen here aihte and leide his on*  
*horde.*  
*Þe litel lete of godes bode and of godes worde.* 264  
*And þe his ogen nolde gieue þar he iseih þe niede*  
*Ne nolde ihere godes men þan he sat at his biede.*  
*Þo þe was oðer mannes þing leuere þan hit solde*  
*And waren al to gradi of siluer and of golde.* 268  
*Þo þe untrewnesse deden þan þe he solden ben holde.*  
*And leten al þat hie solden don and deden þat hie*  
*wolden.*  
*Þo þe waren gietceres of þis wereldes aihte*  
*And dude al þat þe loðe gost hem tihte to and taihte.* 272  
*And al þo þe[n] ani wise deucl iquemde*  
*Þo beð mid hem<sup>1</sup> in helle fordon and demde.*  
*Bute þo þe ofðuhte sore [her] here misdade*  
*And Gunne here gultes bete and betere lif lade.* 276  
*Þar beð naddren and snaken cueten and fruden*  
*Þe tereð and freteð þo euele swiken þe niðfule and þe*  
*prude*  
*Nafre sunne þar ne sineð ne moñe ne storre.*  
*Þar is muchel godes hete and muchel godes oerre<sup>2</sup>.* 280  
*Afre þar is euel smech piesternesse and eie*  
*Nis þar nafre oder liht þan þe swarte leie.*  
*Þar ligeð ateliche fiend in stronge raketeie*  
*Þat beð þo þe waren mid god angles swiðe heie.* 284  
*Þat beð ateliche fiend and Eiseliche wihten*  
*Þo sulle þe wreche sowle isien þe sinegeden þurh sihte*  
*Þar is þe loðe sathanas and belzebub se calde*  
*Eaðe he mužen ben sore ofðrad þe sullen hes bihealde.* 288

And all those  
who tried to  
please the  
devil.

<sup>1</sup> Read him.

In hell are  
adders and  
snakes.

<sup>2</sup> So in MS.

Smoke and  
darkness.

Ne mai non herte hit penche ne tunge hit ne mai telle  
 Hwu muchele pine ne hwu fele senden<sup>1</sup> in helle  
 Of þo pine þe þar bieð nelle ich eow naht lie

No tongue  
 can tell the  
 pains of hell.  
<sup>1</sup> *Jesus MS.*  
 heop.

292 Nis hit bute gamen *and* glic of þat man mai here  
 drie.

*And* giet ne doð hem naht also wo in þe loðe bende  
 Swo þat he witen þat here pine sal nafre hebben ende  
 þar beð þe haðene men þe waren lage-lease

296 þe [hem] nes naht of godes bode ne of godes hease.  
 Euele cristene men hie beð here iferen  
 þo þe here cristendom euele hielden here.

*And* giet he beð awerse stede aniðer<sup>2</sup> helle grunde

300 Ne sullen [hie] nafre cumen út for peni ne for punde.  
 Ne mai hem noðer helpe þar ibede ne almesse  
 For naht solden bidde þar ore ne forgiuenesse.

<sup>2</sup> *Egerton MS.*  
 on þere; *Jesus*  
*MS.* anyþe.  
 No prayers  
 nor alms will  
 be of any  
 avail in hell.

Silde him elch man þe hwile he mai wið þos helle  
 pine.

304 [*And*] warnie his frend þar wið swo ich habbe ido mine.  
 þo þe silde hem ne cunnen ich hem wille tache  
 [*I*]ch can ben aiðer gief isal lichame *and* sowle lache.  
 Late we þat god forbet alle mankenne

308 *And* do we þat he us hat *and* silde we us wid senne.  
 Luue we god mid ure herte *and* mid al ure mihte  
*And* ure emcristen also us self swo us tached drihte.  
 Al þat me radeð *and* singed bifore godes borde

Love to God  
 and to man  
 are taught by  
 the Ten Com-  
 mandments.

312 Al hit hangeð *and* halt bi þese twam worde

Alle godes<sup>3</sup> lages hie fulleð þe newe *and* þe ealde

<sup>3</sup> *MS.* godel.

þe þe þos two luues halt *and* wile hes<sup>4</sup> wel healde.

<sup>4</sup> *Egerton MS.*  
 hi.

Ac hie bieð wel arefeð-beald swo ofte we gulteð alle

316 For hit is strong te stonde longe *and* lilt hit is to falle.  
 Ac drihte crist geue us strengðe stonde þat we moten  
*And* of alle ure gultes gieue us cumc bote.

We wilnieð after wereldes wele þe longe ne mai ilaste

320 *And* legeð mast al ure swinc on þing unstedefaste.

Swunke [we] for godes lune half þat we doð for eihte.

Nare we naht swo ofte bicherd ne swo euele bikeiht



ȝief we serueden god half þat we doð for erminges  
 We mihten hebben more an heuene þa[n] ȝierles *and* 324  
 kinges

In heaven  
 there is  
 neither  
 hunger nor  
 thirst,

<sup>1</sup> *So in MS.*

Ne muge we werien naðer ne wið þurst ne wið hunger  
 Ne wid <sup>1</sup> elde ne wið elde ne wið deað þe elder ne þe  
 zeunger

Ac þar nis hunger ne þurst. deað ne unhalðe ne elde.  
 Of þesse riche we þencheð to ofte of þare alto selde. 328

We think too  
 little of  
 heaven.

<sup>2</sup> *MS. ilomo.*

We solden biþenchen us wel ofte *and* ilome <sup>2</sup>  
 Hwat we beð to hwan we sullen *and* of hwan we come.

Hwu litle hwile we bieð her hwu longe elles hware  
 Hwat we mugen hebben her *and* hwat we findeð þare. 332

ȝief [we] waren wise men þus we solden þenchen  
 Bute we wurðen us iwar þis wereld us wile drenchen  
 Mast alle men hit ȝieueð drinken of on euele senche.  
 He sal him cunnen silde wel ȝief hit him nele screnche 336  
 Mid al mihtin godes luue úte we us biwerien

The world's  
 love will de-  
 stroy us un-  
 less we pre-  
 serve our-  
 selves by alms,  
 fasting and  
 prayer.

<sup>3</sup> *So in MS.*

[W]ið þesses wreches worldes luue þat hit ne muge us  
 derien

Mid almesse. mid fasten *and* mid ibeden werie we us  
 wid senne.

Mid þo wapne þe god haued <sup>3</sup> ȝieue alle man kenne. 340  
 [L]ate we þe brode strate *and* þane weg bene  
 [þ]e lat þe nieðe dal to helle of manne me mai wene.  
 Go we þane narewe pað *and* þene wei grene  
 [þ]ar forð fareð wel litel fole *and* eche is fair *and* 344  
 isene

The broad  
 way is our  
 will.

[þ]e brode strate is ure wil þe is loð te læte  
 [þ]o þe folgeð here iwil hie fareð bi þare strate.  
 Hie mugen lihtliche eumen mid þare niðer helde  
 [þ]urh one godelease wude to one bare felde 348

The narrow  
 path is God's  
 behests.

[þ]a narewe pað is godes has. þar forð fareþ wel feawe  
 [þ]at beð þo þe hem sildeð ȝierne wið achen unðeawe.  
 [þ]os goð uneaðe aȝien þe eline *and* aȝien þe heie  
 hulle

[þ]os leten al here iwil for godes luue to fulle. 352

Go we alle þane wei for he us wile bringe  
 Mid þo feawe faire men bifore þe heuen kinge  
 [P]ar is alre blisse mast mid angles songe.

The joys of  
 heaven.  
 Bliss and song  
 of angels.

356 [P]e is a þusend wintre þar ne þuncheð hit him naht  
 longe.

þe last haueð blisse he haueð *sswo*<sup>1</sup> muchel þat he ne *So in MS.*  
 bit no more

þe þat blisse forgoð hit sal him rewen sore.  
 Ne mai non euel ne non wane ben in godes riche

360 þeih þar ben wuniinges fele elch oðer uniliche  
 Sume þar habbeð lasse *and* sume þar habbeð more  
 Elch after þat he dude her after þane þe [he] swanc sore

364 Ne sal þar ben bread ne win ne oðer kennes este  
 God one sal ben ache lif *and* blisse *and* ache reste.

No bread or  
 other dainties  
 will be there,  
 but eternal  
 life and rest.

Ne sal þar ben foh ne grai ne cunin ne ermine

Ne aquerne ne metheschele<sup>2</sup> ne beuer ne sabeline.

<sup>2</sup> Egerton  
*MS. has mar-*  
*tres cheole.*

Ne sal þer ben naðer scat ne srud ne wereldes wele  
 none.

368 Al þe blisse þe me us bihat al hit sal ben god one  
 Ne mai no blisse ben also muchel se is godes sihte.  
 He is soð sunne *and* briht *and* dai abute nihte.

The sight of  
 God should  
 be supreme  
 bliss.

He is aches godes ful nis him no wiht uten

372 Nones godes hem nis wane þe wunieð him abuten.  
 þar is wele abuten wane *and* reste abuten swunche.  
 þe mugen *and* nelleð þider eume hit hem mai ofpunche.  
 þar is blisse abuten treige *and* life abuten deaðe

Old age, sick-  
 ness and sor-  
 row shall be  
 absent.

376 þo þe afre sulle wunie þar bliðe hie muge ben eaðe.  
 þar is gieuð abuten elde *and* hale abuten unhalðe  
 Nis þar sarege ne sor non ne nafre unisalðe.

þar me drihte self isien swo se is mid iwise

380 He one mai *and* sal al ben angles *and* manne blisse.  
*And* þeih ne bed<sup>3</sup> here cien naht alle iliche brihte

<sup>3</sup> *So in MS.*

Hi nabbeð naht iliche muchel alle of godes lihte

On þesse liue he naren naht alle of ore mihte

384 Ne þar ne sullen habben god alle bi one wihte.

þo sullen more of him isien þe luueden hine more

*And* more icnowen *and* ec witen his mihte *and* his ore  
 On him hie sulle finden al þat man mai to hleste  
 On him he sullen ec isien al þat hie ar nesten. 388

Christ shall  
 be sufficient  
 for all his  
 darlings.

[C]rist sal one bien inogh alle his derlinges.  
 [P]e one is muche more *and* betere þan alle oðer  
 þinges.

[I]noh he haueð þe hine haueð þe alle þing wealdeð  
 Of him to isiene nis non sæd swo fair he is to bihelden 392

<sup>1</sup> *Jesus MS.*  
 swete.

God is swo mere<sup>1</sup> *and* swo muchel in his godcunnesse

[P]at al þat elles was *and* is is fele werse *and* lasse.

[N]e mai hit nafre noman oðer seggen mid iwisse

[H]wu muchele murliče habbeð þo þe beð in godes 396  
 blisse

May God  
 bring us to  
 His everlast-  
 ing bliss!

[T]o þare blisse us bringe god þe rixleð abuten ende.

[P]ane he ure sowle unbint of lichamliche bende

[C]rist gieue us laden her swilch lif *and* habben her  
 swilch ende.

[P]at we moten þider cumen þane we henne wende. 400

AMEN.

## NOTES AND EMENDATIONS.

---

P. 3, l. 3. *þit* = *þe* + *hit* = who it. This form is not uncommon in these Homilies.

8. *wisten* = wished (see p. 3, l. 14) : *s* for *sh* is very common in these Homilies. (See Preface to the Story of Genesis and Exodus.)

10. *seggen* = *to seggen*.

P. 5, l. 2. For *lichanliche* read *lichamliche*.

17. *muneġed* = *muneġeð*.

26. *eche deaðe*, from eternal death.

33. *þes* = *þesse* (dative).

P. 7, l. 2. *dieliche* = *digeliche*. See p. 5, l. 14.

19 from bottom. *mannen* = *manne*, gen. pl. after *mast*.

11 from bottom. *swoldred*, probably for *swaltre* = *swaltreð*. Cp. *squalterin*, Prompt. Parv. pp. 471, 481. But as O. E. *sweltan* is connected with *swêlan*, so *swoltren* may be connected with O. E. *swol*, *swoleð*, heat, burning.

P. 9, l. 2. *waxest* may be right if *gierne* be taken as an adverb, and then we must translate as follows:—If thou diligently increasest. But the Latin quotation shows that *gierne* corresponds to *cupis*.

P. 11, l. 11. *cursinge* = excommunication.

12. *cleþinge*, = calling, seems used in the sense of (false) pleadings. Cp. *bezechinge* in Ayenbite, p. 39, and *bicleþieþ*, plead for, Ayenbite, p. 40.

*ascinge* = (false) claiming. ‘*Þe nerþe boȝ auarice is acsyngþe þet is to ȝerne ope oþre mid wrong.*’ Ayenbite, p. 39.

13–19. *hwate*, fortune, luck (see p. 105). Stratmann, s. v. *Hwate*.

24. *wigeles* = witchcrafts, sorceries, wiles. See Lazamon, 19250 ; St. Marharete, p. 13 ; Ancren Riwe, p. 92.

30. *eten*, probably for *etten*, at the ; if so, *and to eat* in the translation must be deleted

31. *masthwat*, mostly ; used as late as Fabyan’s time. Cp. *somhwat*, *otherhwat*, which crop up during the twelfth and thirteenth centuries. In St. Katherine we have *anhwat* = one thing, something. Here we see that these forms arise out of the oldest English compounds *a-hwa*, *a-hwæt* = anyone, anything, where the particle *a* = ever. Thus *somewhere* is formed upon the analogy of *everywhere* = O. E. *ever-ihwer* = *efre-gehwær*. *Nowhere* = the negative of *a-hwær* (later forms *owhar*, *owhar*, *aiwhar*.)

*metisupe* = O. E. *mete-scipe*, a feeding, feast.

P. 11, l. 31. *at ferme*, meal, repast. O. E. *feorm*. See La<sub>3</sub>. 14426.

*laðeð* = *laðede*, from *laðien*, to invite. See Anceren Riwle, p. 144 ; La<sub>3</sub>. 14427 ; Allit. Poems, pp. 2, 81.

34. *iueid*. Cp. O. E. *gefêge*, fit, adapted, from *gefêgan*, to join, unite.

P. 13, l. 3. *scule*. Cp. *skele* in Shoreham, 154 ; *skil* in Ormulum, 1652, = skill, reason.

5. *forðe* = *forðen* (see p. 137), = O. E. *furðum*, *furðan*, *furðon*, even, indeed. Cp. *na forþon* in Old English Hom. First Series, p. 5.

7. *chew* = jangling, jaw (= *chaw*). Cp. *ajar* = *a-char*, *on-char* (on the turn).

10. *of his* = *some* of his. Cp. the use of *some*, in Prol. to Chaucer's Canterbury Tales, l. 146.

'*Of* smale hundes hadde seche that seche fedde.'

This use of *of* is very common in Bacon's writings.

19. *medeme*, O. E. *medume*, *medeme*, moderate. See p. 123, l. 3.

22. *oder* = *oðer*.

*emlice*, evenly ; O. E. *emre-lice*.

24. *miswune* = ill habits. I have not met with this compound in the oldest English.

25. *waker*, vigilant, watchful. 'Bi nihte onh ancre forte beon *waker* and hisi abuten gostliche biȝite.' Anceren Riwle, p. 142.

*snel*, quick, rapid, fast ; see Owl and Nightingale, l. 918. 'Bi burne þat is *snel*.'

*seli*, from *sel*, time. Cp. *tidy* in the sense of seasonable ; and *untidi*, unseasonable, St. Kath. (ed. Morton), p. 130.

34. *hukhted* ; *hihteð* = adorn. See p. 89, l. 9 from bottom. The usual meaning is to rejoice. O. E. *hyhtan*, *huhten*. See Owl and Nightingale, l. 436.

P. 15, l. 3. *bilige* = ? *biligge*, lie to, belong to. See *biliggeð*, p. 61, l. 4 ; and *bilien*, p. 95, l. 5.

4. *pingie*, to reconcile, plead for ; see Orm. 8997.

7 from bottom. *wane* ; see Old Eng. Hom. First Series, pp. 21, 29.

P. 17, l. 20. *inboreges*. This seems to be a true compound ; cp. O. E. *inborh*, the giving of goods as pledge or security.

26. *paste*. If not an error for *leste þet*, at least, = *þæs þe*, for that, as far as. The corresponding passage in Hom. VII. First Series, p. 75, is 'Alle ȝe kunnen *leste þet* ich wene ower credo.' For the phrase '*leste* ich wene,' see Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 157.

17. *attred*, poisoned. The First Series, p. 75, expands this passage.

P. 21, l. 17. [*a*]-*trineð*. The MS. has *trineð* plainly enough, but the First Series, p. 77, has *irineð*. The sense is the same.

27. *smearþ*. A very unusual though a very good form. It does not occur, I believe, in the oldest period.

*awemmed*, so in MS. The correct form is *awemmed*.

32. *tuked* : cp. 'So scheomeliche *ituked*,' Anceren Riwle, p. 366.

P. 25, l. 10. *sene*, sight. See Owl and Nightingale, 368.

12. *on* (the second) : read *no*. The sense evidently requires it.

15. *nuten*, animals, brute beasts.



P. 25, l. 27. *mid wisse* = *mid iwisse*, with certainty.

P. 27, l. 10 from bottom. *bene-tiðe* = successful in prayer. O. E. *tīð*, = possession, favour (see p. 135, l. 7); *tīðian*, to allow, grant.

P. 29, l. 6. *heuið*, lie heavy on; see p. 79, l. 6; La3. 18408.

12. *wenlukest*, most pleasant, acceptable; cp. O. E. *wyn-līc*, pleasant. Sansk. *van*, to accept; Lat. *venus*, *venustas*, *venerari*, &c. (See *wenliche* = fair, pp. 83, 175.)

17. *rum-handed*: cp. O. E. *rām*, *gerām*, roomy, wide; *rām-heort*, large-hearted, liberal.

20. *forcuðer*; see La3. 28240, St. Kath. (ed Morton), l. 2242, where *forcuð* = wicked, bad.

23. *biremen*, to cry out upon. This compound does not occur in the oldest period. Cp. *remen* (= *hremen*), to cry, cry out, p. 89, l. 36; La3. 5795; Ancren Riwle, p. 242; St. Marh. p. 18; Allit. Poems, A. 1180.

25. *þe þe*; read *þe ne*, thee not.

26. *a-tiereð* = *a-teoreð*, from O. E. *ateorian*, *a-têran*, to fail.

*eiht-gradi* = wealth-greedy, a compound like O. E. *med-ierne*, bribe-greedy, Moral Ode, l. 256. *lof-zeorn* = greedy for praise.

P. 31, l. 4. *spelest*; not *spillest*, but *sparest*. See Orm. 10133. Cp. 'spele and spare,' Piers Plowman. See Stratmann, s. v. *Spelen*.

11. *lignēð*, from O. E. *lygnian*, to belie. Cp. *lihnēn*, to contradict, in Orm. 7440. Stratmann connects this verb with O. E. *lean*, *leuhan*, to blame; reproach.

8 from bottom. *se*, an error of the scribe for *þe* or *þo*.

3 from bottom. *bilihte*. The more ordinary form is *ilihte*. See Castle of Love, ll. 778, 794.

P. 33, l. 14. *i-waned*, taken away, cut off. The verb *wanien* has usually an *intransitive* use in this period, but see p. 176.

25. *hateringe* (? *hatienge*, see p. 177, l. 4) = hatefulness, *misery*, as opposed to *edinesse*, l. 24.

29. *unerned*, unattainable, from *ernien* to attain; a rather unusual sense of the word. See p. 135.

P. 35, l. 6. *woninge* may mean *waning*, want, but the more usual sense is *weeping*. See Hali Meid. p. 37; Owl and Nightingale, l. 311; and *wanunge* in Sawles Warde, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 253.

13. *icheu* (see p. 123, l. 8), a very unusual form, pointing to an older *ge-ceow*. Cp. *chew* = jaw, p. 13, l. 7.

19, 20. *for-gremede*. The *r* is rather faint in the MS., but it was originally *r* and not *i*. The sense requires perhaps *for-giemede*.

*For-ȝemen* usually signifies to *neglect*, disregard. See p. 183 of these Homilies, where *for-ȝeme* is opposed to *bi-ȝeme*. As *bi-ȝeme* = to keep (by having an eye on) regard, so *for-ȝeme* may signify to lose (through neglect).

5 from bottom. *bicachen*. See Orm. 12288.

1 from bottom. *teð-forð* = *forð-teð*, from *forð-teon*, to carry on, exhibit. See p. 37, l. 2.

*geres*, tela; also used in the sense of wiles (see p. 37, l. 2).

P. 37, l. 9. *winned* . . *tiliget* = *winneð* . . *tiligeth*. *Tiligeð* = toil, till.

15. *egerne*: so in MS., ? read *gerne*, diligent (the *e* seems repeated on account of *swiðe*), or ? *giuer* = greedy.

25. *uлиеð* = *fulieð* = foul, defile.

26. *sneueð* points to an older *snifian*, to sniff, which however is not met with in O. E. Cp. *snofel*, secretions from the nose; Eng. *snuff*. *Sni-fian* must be a causative of root *sni*, to drip. Cp. Sansk. *snu*, to distil, flow; O. E. *sny-t-an*, to snite. The more common form is *nevelen*. Cp. *nifle*, Rel. Antiq. ii. 211; *nevelinge*, Piers Plowman.

27, 31. *floddri*, a very unusual word, meaning probably mire or fen. Cp. 'Fette swin þet fule *fen* [*luueð*] to liggen in.' O. E. Hom. First Series, p. 81.

29. *senibhakel*. I can make nothing of this except to suggest that it is written for *sam-hakel* = *semi-cope*, a kind of short cope. (See Prol. to Cant. Tales, l. 264.) Cp. O. E. *mes-hakele*, = mass-cloth. Or for *semð-hakel* = loaded, or heavy cloak, or *sem-hakel* = ? a bag-cloak, a cloak with many pockets in it.

30. *bisulieð* is not a very common form: but compare *sulieð* in Ancrén Riwle, p. 158; Owl and Nightingale, l. 1238. See Old Eng. Miscell. p. 225.

P. 39, ll. 13, 25. *leseweð*. See *leswe*, pasture, l. 14, and p. 37, l. 16. Cp. Ancrén Riwle, p. 100.

19. *hlonēð*, leans, reclines, from *hleonien* to lean, cognate with Latin *clinō*: the *h* is often dropped in O. E. Cp. *leonede*, Laz. 10776; *leonic* (subj.), Ancrén Riwle, p. 142.

20. *non eige ne stand of*. See note to l. 392 of Story of Genesis and Exodus. 'Stand in awe of' is quite a modern expression.

29. *iefneð*, originally made even or equal to, hence compared to. Cp. *effneð* in Orm. i. 39, 321, 336.

*ateliche* = *atel-liche*, horrible, foul. See Orm. 4803, Ancrén Riwle, p. 6.

33. *frumberdligges* = *frumberdliges* = young men, an unusual form: *frum* = first; *berd* = birth. See p. 41, l. 1.

*hancrau*, cock-crow. I have not met with this form before, but compare oldest English *han-craēl*, cock-crow.

P. 41. l. 29. *cūð-leche*, to acquaint (oneself), enter into friendship with. See p. 45 and Laz. 17103.

31. *forwened*. Bosworth gives *forwened* the sense of proud; but the meaning 'spoilt,' occurs in Piers Plowman (ed. Wright), 2541.

P. 43, l. 6. *bistonden*, the p.p. of *bistanden*, to stand about, surround, attack, assail. See p. 173, l. 4. See St. Marherete, p. 3; Ancrén Riwle, p. 264; Laz. 30323.

11. *forþe* = *forþen* or *forþien*, from *iforþien*, to offer, afford. Cp. p. 49, l. 8 from bottom; and O. E. *ge-forðian*, to offer. See p. 31, l. 15, and note on p. 308 of Old Eng. Hom. First Series.

*gersum*, sometimes written *garsum*. See Laz. 1293.

15, 19. *dune*, *denēð*, from *duuien* or *dusien*, to dive, sink. Cp. *duuelunge*, divingly, in Juliana.

P. 43, l. 17. *wecheð*, excite, raise (see p. 137). See Laz. 798, 26216. Cp. 'waken' in Allit. Poems, A 1171, B 323, C 132.

18. *wanrede*, the same as *meseise*, poverty, as opposed to *woreldes richeise*. See Orm. 3145.

19. *ortrowe*, properly an adjective (the substantive is *ortrowpe*), diffident, distrustful. See p. 73, and Orm. 11589.

36. *waiteden* = were on the look-out for, kept watch. See p. 87, l. 30.

*oðer*, used in its etymological sense of *one*.

P. 45, l. 1. *hit acorede*, bore it (the sin). Cp. 'Du schalt *acorien* the rode: þ is *acorien* his sunne,' Ancren Riwe, p. 60. There is another sense much like O. E. *abye*, *abye*, pay the penalty of, to atone for, and hence to be sorry for, complain. See Stratmann, s.v. *Acorien*.

3, 4. *gemeleste*, *recheleste*, abstract nouns formed from the adjectives, *gemeles*, *recheles*, heedless and reckless.

5. *þe deað him wes iwealde*, that death had exercised power over him. Cp. 'Ac 3oure tongen 3e wealde,' but have control over your tongues, Shoreham, p. 100.

9. *foshiþe*, enmity. See Allit. Poems, pp. 918, 919.

13. *est-riche*. O. E. *east-ricē*, an Eastern kingdom.

20. *king . . . kenneð*. Cp. *rex* and *regere*. The etymology is of course wrong. *King* is cognate with Sansk. *janaka*, father.

33. *cuðčen* = *cučien*, to become or make known.

P. 47, l. 28 from bottom. *chirchgang* = *chirchegang*. See l. 20, p. 47. Robert of Glouc. p. 380, has *chirche-gong*. See Gen. and Ex. 2465.

18 from bottom. *ferede* = *fer-rede* = *ferreden*, company. See p. 49, l. 2, and St. Kath. (ed. Morton), l. 703.

16 from bottom. *hie*; ? read *hire*. *aisie*, easy, convenient. Fr. *aisé*. The earliest use of our word *easy*. Cp. *mes-eise*; and *eise* in Ancren Riwe, pp. 20, 108.

9 from bottom. *heren*, so in MS. ? *beren* = *bear*.

4 from bottom. *sene* is an adjective = visible, manifest.

P. 49, l. 3. *þes loc* = these gifts; *loc* is an old neuter, like *deor*, *swin*, &c.

9. *drih*, patient. I have not met the adjective *drih* in this sense. Like *dreggh*, sorrowful, hard (Troy Book, l. 935); *dryȝ*, *dryȝe*, heavy, sorrowful (Allit. Poems, A. 823, B. 342), *drih* comes from *dreozen* or *drigen*, to suffer, bear, endure. (See p. 31 of these Homilies, l. 10).

14. *eð-winne*, easily won; cp. O. E. *eað-fynde*, easily found.

23, 24. *hurend hure* = *hure and hure*, at least, &c. See *hure and hure* in Ancren Riwe, p. 390; *hur and hur*, Owl and Nightingale, 11; *la hwure*, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, pp. 237, 245; *lan hure*, St. Kath. 1074. For *hure and hure* in Ancren Riwe (Nero A. xiv), the Titus MS. has *hure*, and Cleop. *lanhure*.

P. 51, l. 15 from bottom. *þigges* = *þinges*. Cp. *fruberdligges* = *frumberdliges*.

4 from bottom. *ouer-sette* = *of-sette* = oppress.

P. 53, l. 10. *hem sume* = some of them.

15. *unen* = *cumen*, come; or *unnen*, granted.

l. 28. *ȝoleburdnesse* (O. E. *polebyrdnes*), patience; from *poleburde*. See p. 79, ll. 7, 9, 10; l. 25, *infra*. It has the same sense as the more common *polemōdnesse*.

P. 55, ll. 9, 10. *tuderende*. See Gen. and Ex. 630; Orm. 18307.

24. *unluwed*, illicit. See p. 71, l. 10 from bottom. For *unlofne[d]* *breð* in Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 153, the corresponding phrase in the present Homilies is '*un-luuede breð*,' p. 191, l. 17 from bottom. Cp. *loueð* and *lofe*, p. 213, ll. 6, 9 from bottom; Allit. Poems, l. 173, and Glossary, s.v. *Lorne*.

P. 57, l. 1. *warnie fore*. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series (Sawles Warde), p. 247.

10. *swinginge*, whipping, scourging. Cp. *swungen*, beaten, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 281, and *iswingla*, scourge, *ib.* p. 13.

20. *egen* = *hegen*. See l. 19.

21. *wassheshtren*. *Wasshestre* is a true feminine in *-stre*, the only one that occurs in these Homilies.

P. 59, l. 7. *mo* (so in MS.) = *moten*.

18 from bottom. *cið* = *kið* = *kiðeð*; *hus* = us.

14 and 9 from bottom. *hinder* = underhand, deceitful; see p. 213, ll. 23, 25. *hinderfulle* (= gen. pl.) for *hinderfulre*, deceitful, wicked? Cp. *hindre*, p. 213; *hinderling*, in Orm. 4860.

P. 61, l. 2. *erming*. See La3. 16690; Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 41, l. 32; Moral Ode, l. 323.

7. *enden*, an error for *ended*; see *fulended* in the following line. The verb is weak. Cp. *hidden* for *hid*.

20. *bute lesten* = bute we lesten.

21. *anradliche*, promptly. Cp. O. E. *anrād*, one-minded, prompt. See *an-rad*, unanimous, Ancren Riwe, p. 228 (footnote); *anrednesse*, unanimity, *ib.* p. 12.

24. *bredlinge* = broadwise, with the broad or flat side as opposed to *eggelinge*, edgewise.

36. *þitege* = [pe] *witege*, the prophet. Cp. *witige* in St. Kath. (ed Morton), l. 484; Hali Meid. p. 5; *witege*, *witega*, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 19; *witezung*, Orm. 15149.

P. 63, l. 6. *nuteluste*, used to translate 'ignorantia.' See p. 71, l. 1 from bottom. The first instance of this form that I have met with. Unless an error for *nutelnesse*, it is evidently a negative form of an original *wit-leste*, which itself means 'ignorance,' as if the origin of the *-les* was forgotten. *Nuteluste* = *nuteleste*, ought to mean 'uselessness.'

22. *wið-tiging*, a substantive formed from the verb *wið-teōn*, to withdraw. In l. 26, *infra*, it is wrongly written *wið-tigig* = *wið-tigigge* = *wið-tigginge*. See *wið-tieð*, l. 28, *infra*.

24. *mēseliche*. This must be distinguished from *metelike*, meetly, moderately (Orm. 10703). *Mēselike* occurs in Gen. and Ex. 1758. Cp. *mepe* (Allit. Poems, B. 247, 436, 565); La3. 977; Gen. and Ex. 3601; *mēcleas*, Ancren Riwe, p. 96; *mepelez*, Allit. Poems, B. 273.

See these Homilies, p. 11, l. 5 from bottom, where *meðe* and *met* are used in the same sense.

P. 63, l. 34. *over semde*, overloaded. See p. 65, l. 4. Bosworth has *ofersymed*, oppressed, overwhelmed. *Semeð* = weigh, press upon, occurs on p. 93, l. 13; *semde* = loaded, occurs in Shoreham's Poems, p. 85 :

‘O swete lavedy wat the was wo  
Tho that me Jhesus demde  
Tho that me oppone hys swete body  
The hevy crouche *semde*.’

See *seme* = load, burden, in Gen. and Ex. 1365, 1368.

34. *wiðerið* (see p. 123, l. 36) properly means ‘offer opposition,’ resist. See Orm. 1181; St. Marh. p. 14.

36. *wiðerfulnessse*, the sin of enmity or opposition (see p. 121). This compound does not occur in Bosworth or in Stratmann. The form one expects is *wiðer-ward-nessse*. See *wiðerful* on p. 121.

P. 65, l. 12. *meninge*, moaning, lamentation; from *menen* (= O. E. *mænan*) to moan. Cp. *menende*, ll. 20, 24 infra.

15, 17. *gabben*, to reprove, rebuke. See St. Kath. (ed. Morton), p. 38. The ordinary sense of this verb is to lie, jest.

36. *gide* = *gede* = *yede*, has gone.

to *uniðor*, used to translate ‘ad malum.’ Can *uniðor* be a corruption of *ungeþwer*?

P. 67, l. 11. *o tige* = *o time*, or *o siþe*, once; *tige* may be an error for *tigeðe*, tenth. See p. 83, l. 17 from bottom.

P. 69, l. 3. *bigredeð*. See Owl and Nightingale, l. 279, where *bigredeþ* = cry after.

10. *of gramede*; see *gramien*, l. 22 infra, and p. 173. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann. *Agramed* occurs in Alis. 3310.

29. *bi ben* = be by, exist, live by. See p. 211, l. 31.

35. *alitelwan* = a *litelhwan*, a little what, = the older *lit-hwon*. See Hist. Outlines, p. 137, § 213.

P. 71, l. 2. *alse wat swo* = as soon as. See p. 101, l. 5 from bottom. *wat* = O. E. *hwæt*, *hwat*, quick.

6. *freþringe* (also *froþringe*) from *frêþrian*, to console. See p. 95, l. 35; Orm. 150.

14. *liððroweres*, for *lic-ðroweres*. ‘And manega *lic-proweras* wæron on Israhel,’ &c., Luke iv. 27. *Lic-prowere* = one who suffers in the body.

28. *smeihliche*, craftily. See *smegh*, crafty, pp. 193, 195; *smehnessse*, craft, p. 205. Cp. the oldest English *smea*, fine, acute; *smeagung*, machination; *smealic*, subtle, deep.

*bichared*, deceived, ensnared. See pp. 105, 195.

36. *forgetelnesse* is a true form; *forgetfulness* is comparatively modern. Gower has *foryetel* = forgetful, and *foryetelnesse*.

*recheles*, an error of the scribe for *recheleste*. See p. 63.

P. 73, l. 1. *Trewðeleas* is an adjective used as a substantive, if not an error for *trewðeleaste* or *trewðeleasnessse*, and is probably a gloss on *ortrowe*.



P. 73, l. 1. *Softgerne* = love of softness or luxury. Cp. the use of *nesch* and *heard* in Sawles Warde (Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 255).

P. 75, l. 3. *ednesse* (so in MS.) = *edlinesse*, prosperity.

8, 9. *sad, sed*, are variant forms of the O. E. *sæd*, full, glutted, weary.

P. 77, l. 34. *for-quichieð* = *for-quickieð*, revive.

35. *licwurðe*. See Ancren Riwe, 120 ; Orm. 12919. Cp. *dear-wort, stal-wort*.

36. *beloken*. The ordinary sense of this verb is to look at, behold. See Orm. 2917 ; Ancren Riwe, p. 132.

P. 79, l. 17. *ettileð*, striveth, endeavoureth. The verb *etete* is not peculiar to the Lowland Scotch dialect. See Allit. Poems, B. 207, 688 ; La3. 30846, 25761. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 263, l. 28, and note on the same p. 327 ; William of Palerne, 205.

27, 32. *unfele*, bad, wicked. See La3. 22018 ; Orm. 8034 ; Owl and Nightingale, 1001.

P. 81, l. 1. *after-boht*. This compound is not found in the oldest period.

6. *at ende* = *atten ende*, or *on ende*, lastly ; see *ettan ende*, p. 39.

9 from bottom. *eifulle* = *eis-fulle*, fearful = O. E. *eges-ful* ; cp. *eiliche* = *eislich*, p. 5 (= O. E. *egeslic*). See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 19. Cp. *eieleste* = *eigeleste*, fearfulness, La3. 19291.

6 from bottom. *for-hored* = adulterous. Cp. *for-hored* in Orm. 2043 ; Shorcham, p. 59. Cp. *horegede*, defiled, p. 201.

P. 83, l. 5. *dom-kete*, a compound, = *doom-sharp*, like *blood-red*. For latter part of the compound, see William of Palerne, 330 ; Stratmann, s. v. *Kete*.

20. *here* = here, not *praise*.

26. *on-neðer-ward*, a compound, like O. E. *on-iinnen*, *an-inne*, *an-under*, *an-uxen*, &c.

32. *soðe* = *suðe*, south ; not *true*.

33. *mote* = moot, assembly. See La3. 31616 ; St. Kath. (ed. Morton), l. 1324 ; Old Eng. Miscell. p. 45, l. 280.

*frakede* = ? *frakele*. Cp. *frakel*, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 25 ; Hali Meid. p. 7 ; Ancren Riwe, 102.

P. 85, l. 15 from bottom. *ende* for *endest*. The verb is weak ; *bigunne* is of course correct.

8 from bottom. *swo leng þe werse* = *swo leng swo werse*. *Swo*, like *þe* before these comparatives, is instrumental. See p. 87, l. 4 from bottom.

4 from bottom. *weueð*. See Stratmann, s. v. *Wæven*.

P. 87, l. 2. *embe-ponke*. Cp. O. E. *embe-pane*, *ymb-ponc*, consideration, care.

22. *weruende* = *hwervende*, from *hwerfen*, to turn (= *hweorfan*, *hweorfan*) go about. See p. 173, l. 21 ; Orm. 9658, 14137 ; La3. 31680.

30. *bitrumede*. See St. Marh. p. 6 ; St. Kath. (ed. Morton), footnote to l. 1659.

*for-tehte*. This seems to be the pret. of *for-techen* (= *for-tæc-an*,

pret. *for-tæhte*, = misteach, mislead), but it is not met with in the oldest period. It may be a compound of *tihtan* (pret. *tihthe*), to allure, seduce. See p. 107, ll. 5, 10.

31. *bi-wunden*. See p. 95, l. 22, and Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 51, where *biwunden* simply means to wind about.

*bi-walden*, not a common compound. It occurs in Gower's *Confessio Amantis*, i. 312.

P. 89, l. 1. *se he* = as it (liflode). In the oldest period *liflade* is fem.; hence I have taken *he* for *hie* = they (devils).

27 from bottom. *chirchsoene*. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 45, l. 25, and p. 310 (note).

22 from bottom. *prop* = *þorp*. Used by Nash in his 'Lenten Stuff.' Chaucer has *prop*. *þorp* occurs in Allit. Poems, B. 1178.

19 from bottom. *wig* = oldest English *wicg*, originally a war-horse.

13 from bottom. *admod*. See *edmoddre*, *edmodnesse*, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 5.

*sander-bodes*, a rare compound; but see *sander-man* = messenger, Gen. and Ex. 1410, 2791, and p. 144 (note on l. 1410). Cp. O. E. *sand*, *sond*, a sending, messenger.

8 from bottom. *bihengen*, hung round about. See La3. 3637; Orm. 951.

2 from bottom. *understoden*, received. This is not an unusual sense of the verb *understanden*. See Gen. and Ex. 2393, 3434.

P. 91, l. 2. *Silof* = *si lof*. *Si* is the 3rd sing. subj. of *am* (root *as*). It occurs only in this passage. *Si* occurs in Orm. 3378, *seo* in La3. *Lof* = praise, Orm. 3379, La3. 8376, Ancren Riwe, 104. See l. 34; p. 93, ll. 2, 3; p. 103, l. 26.

5. *briggeden*, bridged, the only rendering I can give; the sense requires *bi-streweden* = strewed (see Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 4, l. 36, where *strehiten* is used in the same sense).

7. *heg settle*, dat. of *heg-setl* = *heah-setl*, supreme settle (seat) or throne. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 113.

18. *noten*. See Orm. 12228; La3. 30603; Gen. and Ex. 3144.

19. *wike* = *wiken*, offices, duties. Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 137; La3. 29751; Orm. 7208; Owl and Nightingale, 603.

24. *soð* [= *siht*] of *saktnesse* = visio pacis. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 313.

31. *bi* = *bie* = *beo* (subj.). See p. 95, l. 25.

P. 93, l. 11. *forsinegede* = those who have deeply sinned: not in Bosworth or Stratmann. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, pp. 95, 316.

10 from bottom. *gestninge*, entertainment. See *gistninge* in La3. 14262; Ancren Riwe, p. 414.

7, 6, from bottom. *bord*, table. See p. 95, l. 11, 'godes borde,' Moral Ode, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 177, l. 307.

P. 95, l. 3. *bimurneð*. See p. 111, l. 13, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 149.

8. *liðe* = *liðeð*. See Allit. Poems, A. 357; Shoreham, p. 19.

P. 95, l. 9. *cruche*. See Kath. (ed. Morton), l. 1171.

10. *fant-ston* = *fontston*. Cp. *funt-vat*, Old Eng. Miscell. p. 4, l. 108. See St. Marh. 1, Orm. 17208.

17. *here oðer*, one of them. See note on p. 11, l. 1 of Old Eng. Hom. p. 307.

22. *crisme-cloð*. See Gen. and Ex. 2458 ; Hampole's Pricke of Consc. 2791. Cp. *creme* = *cresme*, Shoreham, p. 15.

26. *biheue*. See Ancren Riwe, 96, 158, 176, 230 ; Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 213.

29. *arm-hertnesse*, *arm-heorted*. Cp. the oldest Eng. *earm-heort*, merciful ; *erm*, poor. Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 113 ; La3. 6608, 9435.

33. *mild-heorted* has the same sense as *arm-heorted*. Cp. *mild-heorte*, La3. 16813 ; Orm. 2896 ; Ancren Riwe, p. 120 ; Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 199.

P. 97, l. 19. *þe togenes* (so in MS.) = *þer-to-genes*.

30. *ne muge* = *ne muge ge*.

35. *swi-messe* = *swie-messe*. Cp. *swi-dages* (p. 101, l. 18 from bottom) = O. E. *swiga-dæg* = a day of silence ; *swið-wike* = *swi-wike*, still week, Ancren Riwe, p. 70 ; *swie*, St. Marh. p. 157. See *swiede*, p. 101, l. 17 ; *swigeð*, p. 103, l. 23.

P. 99, ll. 1, 6. *ouslete* = O. E. *of-læte*, *of-lete*, the sacramental bread.

9. *da* (so in MS.) = *dai*.

12. *sleðrende*. The only instance I know of this form. Cp. the oldest English *slīðerian*, to slide or glide away.

P. 101, l. 26 from bottom. *eðeliche*. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, pp. 255, 318. Cp. *eðelich* in Hali Meid. p. 11.

4 from bottom. *imint*, intended. See Shoreham, p. 151.

P. 103, l. 11. *leire*, dat. of *leir*, = O. E. *leger*, bed, grave. Eng. *lair* and *ledger* (book), *ledger-bait*. Cp. *leirede*, prostrate, l. 16, which seems to be a coinage of the writer, and intended perhaps as a play upon *leir*.

14. *bote* (so in MS.) = *bute*, but, except.

16. *leirede* and *slaine*. The final *e* here marks the plural.

27. *dageð*. Lazamon has *dazedede*, *dawede*. Cp. *daweð*, Ancren Riwe, p. 352 ; *dagen* (inf.), Gen. and Ex. 16, 91.

P. 105, l. 13 from bottom. *neðen* = *neoðan*, from beneath. Cp. *henan*, *heonan*, hence, &c.

9 from bottom. *sheppendes*. See Orm. 346 ; St. Kath. (ed. Morton), l. 305. Cp. *sseppere* in Ayenbite, p. 7 ; *schruppare*, Ancren Riwe, p. 138.

8, 7. *hwate*, *wate*. See note on p. 11, ll. 13, 19.

P. 107, l. 3. *sleht* = sleight. The more ordinary form is *sle3þ*, *slei3þ*, *sleiht*.

5, 9, 10. *for-tihting*, *fortuhting*. Not in Stratmann. See note on p. 87, l. 30.

- P. 107, ll. 8, 9. *sam . . sam*, a very unusual form at this period.
8. *angun* = *ongyn*, beginning.
10. *bileande*. The only instance I know of this verb after A.D. 1100; cp. O. E. *bi-leân*, *bi-leāhan*, to forbid, hinder.
18. *alimeð* = *alemeð* = *aleomeð*. See p. 109, ll. 1, 2, 3. The verb *aleoman* is not in Bosworth.
36. *atend*, p.p. of *atenden*, to enkindle. See *atent*, p. 111, l. 12. Not in Stratmann.
- P. 109, l. 4. *understondinesse* = *understondingnesse*. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann.
- 19 from bottom. *suterliche* = *sutelliche*.
- 15 from bottom. *efed* = *hefed*, raised, exalted, heaved. See p. 111, ll. 16, 30; La<sub>3</sub>. 9010; Ancren Riwe, p. 156.
- 12 from bottom. *sigeð*. See p. 175; La<sub>3</sub>. 2918, 11255, 14589; St. Kath. (ed. Morton), l. 2353; Hali Meid. p. 47.
- 2 from bottom. *to-glade* = *to-glad*, the pret. of *to-gliden*. Not in Stratmann.
- 1 from bottom. *aseh*, the pret. of *asigen* to settle, fall. Not in Stratmann.
- P. 111, l. 32. *strides*; ll. 34, 35, *stridende*, *strit*. *Bestridan* occurs in Bosworth, but not *strīdan*. See La<sub>3</sub>. 17982, and Stratmann, s. v. *Strīden*.
35. *cnolles*. See Gen. and Ex. l. 4129; Prompt. Parv. 280; Ps. lxiv. 13.
- P. 113, l. 4. *stalle*. See Stratmann, s. v. *Stal*.
8. *maisterlinges* = *loverdinges* = *principes*, a very early hybrid.
6. *herre*: cp. *harre*, in Prologue to Chaucer's Canterbury Tales, l. 552.
- ‘Ther nas no dore that he nolde heve of *harre*.’
- Prompt. Parv. p. 237. O. E. *heor*, *heoru*, *heorra*, a hinge.
- to-shiurede*. See Stratmann, s. v. *To-schivren*. *Shivren* points to an older *sci-fri-an*, to divide, a causative of the root *ski*, to divide.
23. *stundmele* = *stundmehum*, by times, intervals. Cp. *wuke-malum*, by weeks, Orm. l. 536.
33. *atellen*, to tell out, number. Not in Stratmann.
- P. 115, l. 10. *feord* = *ferd*, host.
13. *andsete*. Mostly used adjectively. O. E. *and-sæt*, odious, hateful. See Orm. 16071.
19. *untineð*. Not in Stratmann. See Bosworth, s. v. *Untynan*.
- P. 117, l. 8. *iðreued* = *idreued*. See Gen. and Ex. l. 318, and p. 125 (note).
9. *lit* takes the genitive case after it. See Stratmann, s. v. *Lut*.
11. *leste*. See Stratmann, s. v. *Ilæsten*, *Læsten*.
20. *undrene*, dat. of *undren* = *undern*, the third hour of the day, or nine o'clock in the morning. Cp. *undern-time*, Orm. 19458, from *under* in the sense of *inter*; ‘*under þis*’ = *interea*, l. 1880, and ‘*under þat*,’ La<sub>3</sub>.

P. 117, l. 22. *dine*. Not in Stratmann. See An Old Eng. Miscell. 25, 782; Gen. and Ex. 3467; Allit. Poems, B. 862, T. B. 1197. O. E. *dýne*, *ge-dýne*, thunder, din.

27. *twiselende*, double. This seems to be the pres. part. of a verb *twiselien*, to double; cp. O. E. *twisel-toð*, *twisil-tunge* (Wiclif). I at first took *twiselende* for *twi-scelende* = dividing in two.

33. *fundie* (*findige*, p. 119, l. 35). See a full discussion of this word in White's ed. of the Ormulum, note to l. 13327.

P. 121, l. 1. *þremnesse*. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, pp. 99, 161; Ancrer Riwle, p. 160; Orm. 11177. *þremnesse* is the form one would expect.

10 from bottom. *bihe*. Evidently an error for *beih*, the pret. of *buzen*, to bend.

8 from bottom. *unbihefe*. Not in Stratmann. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 265. Cp. O. E. *unbihêfu*, unprofitable, inconvenient.

P. 123, ll. 5, 6. *poleð his unwill* = *poleð his unwilles*, suffereth against his will; *unwilles* = genitive. Cp. *hire unwil[le]*, Hali Meid. p. 31, used adverbially. *Unwill* is also an adjective = displeasing, Owl and Nightingale, l. 422; Ancrer Riwle, p. 338. Cp. *willes*, Hali Meid. p. 27; Ancrer Riwle, p. 6.

31. *þuert-ut*, throughout, entirely; *þweorrt-üt*, *þwerret-ut*, occur in Orm. i. pp. 4, 8; ii. pp. 7, 8, 78, 79.

P. 125, l. 2. *hige*, mind, thought. I have not met with this word except in the *first* period of the language. It is not in Stratmann.

24 from bottom. *muneð*. The MS. has *trinneð*, and *trenneð* (? *trennede*) occurs on p. 141, Hom. xxiv. l. 5. The sense of the verb *trennen* seems to be 'to relate,' 'make mention of,' 'touch upon,' 'discourse of.'

14 from bottom. *atold* (so in MS.), not in Bosworth or Stratmann; ? *at-old*, too old. See *ateald*, p. 133, l. 32. If we could read *a-cold* (the p.p. of *acolden*) the difficulty would perhaps be got over.

13 from bottom. *unleftlich*. See St. Kath. (ed. Morton), l. 345.

P. 127, l. 3. *witige*, originally *wise*, prudent, = O. E. *witig*. The author has given it a new meaning to show its connection with *witegede* in l. 4.

6. *floxed*. I know of no such verb as *floxen*; ? from *flocsien*, from *flocan* to clap (Exeter Book, p. 402, l. 23).

20. *wilderne*. See Laz. 1238; Ancrer Riwle, p. 160.

22. *weste*, desert. See Orm. 17409.

25. *staðelede*, made stable or firm; from *staðel*, foundation, basis, station. See *Staðed*, p. 147.

29. *olunte*, dat. of *oluent*, = O. E. *olfend*, camel.

P. 129, ll. 18, 21, 22. *westren*, a desert place, wilderness, = O. E. *western*. See *wasturn*, in Allit. Poems, B. 1674. Not in Stratmann.

23. *for-growwen* = grown over, grown to excess. Not in Bosworth. See Stratmann, s.v. *For-grôwen*. See Fabyan's Chron. (ed. Ellis), p. 605.



P. 129, l. 23. *brimbles*. The form *brimbil*, = *brimbel*, occurs in the Prompt. Parv. The more ordinary form is *brembel* or *brember*.

29. *Deue*, the pl. of *def*, deaf.

*picke-liste* = of thick hearing. Cp. *lust*, *hlust* (= O. E. *hlyst*), hearing.

34. *nehleche* (so in MS.) = *nehleche*.

P. 131, l. 3. As *forpe* = even, it is probably an error for *for*.

6 from bottom. *unligel* . . . *soð-sagel*. *Soð-sagel* occurs in Bosworth; but not *unligel*. Neither are given by Stratmann.

P. 132, l. 22. *fundede*. See Gen. and Ex. 2831, 2958; Allit. Poems, A. 903.

28. *ruden*. The only instance I have met with of this verb. Is it connected with *rid*?

35. *rechel-fat* = O. E. *rêcels-fæt*, a censor.

36. *rechelende* = *recheleenne*. Not in Stratmann. Cp. O. E. *recelsian*, to perfume or incense.

P. 137, l. 1. *mislefd*. See Ancren Riwe, pp. 68, 146.

21. *over-mete*. See Ancren Riwe, p. 296; Orm. 10720.

35. *mece* (so in MS.), ? *mete*, = O. E. *mæt*, meet. The form one would expect is *mec* = *meoc*, meek. It is very difficult to distinguish between *c* and *t* between two *e*'s.

P. 139, l. 15. *crundel*. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann.

16. *Stiue*, the pl. of *stif*. Cp. *deue*, the pl. of *def*.

36. *acken* = *hacken*, to hack, cut (O. E. *haccan*, *haccian*). See Ancren Riwe, p. 298.

P. 141, l. 30. *ge-riseð*, it becomes. Not in Stratmann. See *biriseð*, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 109.

33. *hur* = *here*, of them.

*alumð*, see note to p. 107, l. 18.

35. *brinð* = *bringð*, bringeth or *brinneð* = burneth.

P. 143, l. 6. *mistliche*. Cp. O. E. *mistlic*, various.

*gelimpeð* = *gelimpe*, accidents.

11. *gielefe* = *gelefe* = O. E. *geledæfa*, belief.

P. 145, l. 4. *lauede*, bathed. See La<sub>3</sub>. 7489.

29. *firste*, time. See Old Eng. Miscell. 59, 38; Orm. 261; La<sub>3</sub>. 287.

P. 147, l. 2. *hiden* = *giden* = *geden*, went. Cp. *giede*, p. 175, l. 2. The First Series, p. 155, has *oden* = *eoden*.

21. *andseche* = O. E. *and-sacu*, *and-sæc*, denial.

27. *bistonden*, afflicted. The verb *bistanden* generally means to surround. See La<sub>3</sub>. 30323; Ancren Riwe, p. 264.

32. *staðed* = *staðeled*, stilled. The First Series, p. 157, for *was staðed* has *weren stille*.

35. *astruid* = ? the older *astregd*: or is it the p.p. of *a-streowian*? See *struieð*, p. 161.

P. 149, l. 3. *fremful*. See p. 157, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 135. *Uremuol*, Ayenbite of Inwyt, p. 80.

P. 149, l. 11. *biwist*, living, being. See Ancren Riwe, pp. 156, 160. The First Series, p. 157, has *utbiwist*; and for *teged* it reads *ituped*. ? *teged* = the p.p. of a verb *tegien* (= O.E. *teôhhian*, *têhian*, to design, appoint).

15. *auelēð*. See p. 159, ll. 11, 19. The First Series, p. 157, has *erneð* = merit; and *ierned*, p. 137. Is *a-uelēð i-uelēð*, feel, or = O.E. *-fyligean*, to follow?

23. *spus* is evidently masculine, and *spuse* feminine. See Ancren Riwe, p. 98. In Fabyan's Chron. p. 655, *spuse* is masc. and *spowsesse* fem.

P. 151, l. 9. *wlache* = O.E. *wlæc*, luke-warm, tepid. Ancren Riwe, 202; Gen. and Ex. 3300. The First Series, p. 159, has *ne[s]che* = soft. See *wlech*, St. Juliana, p. 70.

*for-melten* See Hali Meid. 13. The First Series, p. 159, transposes this, and has *for hit melteð*.

14. *walleð* = *welleð*, First Series, p. 159. See Allit. Poems, A. 365; Ancren Riwe, 118.

20. *teð* = *drach[eð]*, First Series, p. 159.

28. *ilestende* = *lestende*, First Series, p. 159.

P. 153, l. 21. *mēðegeð* = O.E. *mæðegian*, *mæðian*, temper, moderate. See La3. 25231; Gen. and Ex. 1242.

P. 155, l. 11. *forwarð*, perished. The First Series, p. 133, has *aswond*.

12. *for-treden*. The First Series has *to-treden*, p. 135.

P. 157, l. 13. *almes-deled* = *almes-idal*, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 185.

25. *pe pe* = *per pe*, First Series, p. 15.

31. *wike and cher* = *wiken and cherres*, First Series, p. 137.

P. 159, l. 8 from bottom. *He hes fette hom*, he (the heavenly king) fetched *her* (the maiden) home. See p. 165, l. 25, where *hire fette* occurs. Mätzner alters this to '*he wes fet hom*.' There is good authority for *hes* = *her*.

P. 161, l. 13. *to-worpeð*, to cast asunder, disturb. See Orm. 16199, 16277.

18. *fordraueð* = ? *fordreveð*, disturbs, or ? *for-draueð* = *fordraweð*, scatters, divides.

30. *atleien*. See l. 36. Cp. O.E. *ætlicgan*, to lie still, or idle.

*ges* = *gef*, if. Mätzner proposes to read *gesne* = sterile, or *gres* = grass.

34. *wenden* (see l. 36, and p. 163, l. 6), turned up. Mätzner has *wetiden* = watered!

P. 163, l. 10. *morede*. The earliest instance I know of a verb *moren*, to take root. See *i-moreð*, 'Legends of the Holy Rood,' p. 28, l. 126. It is still common in Devonshire.

13. *pit* (see p. 3). Mätzner alters to *pe hit*.

*ifuren* = *gefyrn*, formerly, heretofore, long ago. See Old Eng. Miscell. 122, 335; 193.21; La3. 24017; Owl and Nightingale, 1304.

P. 163, l. 17. *redinges*. See Ancren Riwe, p. 286.

18. *holde*, faithful, true. Orm. 6177; La3. 14091; Old Eng. Miscell. 38, 48; 141, 20; Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 313.

19. *selde* = seldom. Mätzner is inclined to take it as the pret. of *sellen*!

20. *leoð*, song. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 153, where the phrase *hoker spel*, and *leow* (= leop) occurs. La3. l. 30054.

27. *sis* = *swo his* or *se his* = *so* (as) + *his*. Mätzner alters to *his*.

*daie*, female servant. Chaucer (Nonnes Prestes Tale) has *deye*.

28. *awlencð*. See p. 181. Cp. *a-wlancian*, to be proud (Bosworth). See *wlencð*, p. 189, l. 27.

30. *sole* (see l. 31, infra), dirty. Cp. Old Eng. Miscell. pp. 151, 162; Ancren Riwe, p. 234. Not in Stratmann.

31. *smoc* is used by Chaucer.

32. *sward* = swart, black. See La3. 10189; Gen. and Ex. 286.

*saffran*. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, pp. 53, 311.

33. *meshakele* = *messe-hakele*. Cp. *senibhakele*, p. 37, l. 28.

*fustane*. The MS. seems to have *fustani*. Mätzner reads *fustain*.

34. *unschapliche*, unseemly. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann. Cp. O. E. *ge-sceaplice*, properly, well.

36. *nap*, cup, bowl; Old Eng. *hnæp*. See *nep* in Ancren Riwe, p. 344; Old Eng. Miscell. p. 174, l. 107; p. 175, l. 107.

P. 165, l. 4. *ippen*. See Ancren Riwe, pp. 88, 146, 150.

5. *teð forð geres*: *teð forð* = *forð-teð*. See note to p. 35, l. 1. Mätzner takes *forð* with *geres* and renders it 'later in the year'!!

16. *leid* = *aleid*, prostrate.

*oðem* = O. E. *aðum*, son-in-law, brother-in-law. See Orm. 19832; La3. 23106.

34. *steire*, dat. of *steir*. O. E. *stæger*, stair, step. 'The fallynge of a *steyer*' (= ladder), Fabyan's Chron. (ed. Ellis), p. 612. Cp. *stayre*, steep, high, in Allit. Poems, A. 1022.

35. *stoples*. The oldest Eng. *steopl* = a steeple: but *stople* is evidently formed from O. E. *stæp*, *steap*, a step.

P. 167, l. 5. *stienge*. Wright and Mätzner have (wrongly) *streng*.

8. *dai-rieme*, day-dawn, day-break. See Owl and Nightingale, l. 328. See Stratmann, s. v. *Rime*.

15, Hom. XXXVIII. *toe*, took possession of, seized.

17. *pre*, dire, severe. It occurs in the oldest Eng. in this sense only in composition, as *prea-nyd*, compulsion.

*bretful*. See Chaucer's Prol. l. 689. Cp. *brerdful*, Orm. 14529; *brurdful*, Allit. Poems, B. 383.

18. *wul* (= *weol*; see St. Kath. l. 1925), the pret. of *wallen*, to boil, flow. There is a weak form *wellen*, *wellien*, pret. *welde*, *walde*, to well, boil.

19. *enden* = *henden* = *hende*. Cp. *i-hende* (= *ge-hende*), Owl and Nightingale, 1129; *henden*, Gen. and Ex. 3361, 3370.

P. 169, l. 2. *bitwifold* = *twifoldliche*; cp. *bi hundredfealde*, p. 171. See Historical Outlines, p. 113. *By manyfold*, Occleve, De Reg. l. 613; *by felefold*, Piers Plowman.

7. *gimere* = *gemere*. See p. 181, l. 5; Allit. Poems, B. 971; Old Eng. Miscell. pp. 28, 30.

10. *anhefde*, the pret. of *an-hebben* or *an-heffen*? Bosworth has *an-hefedness*, exaltation. La3. 21625 has *an-hof*, the pret. of *an-haven*.

17. *lich-hus* = *lich-tun*, sepulchre; *lich* = *lic*, body: cp. *lic-hame*, *liche-wake*, &c.

P. 171, l. 4. *unbileuede*; cp. *unbileave* = O. E. *ungeleafa*, St. Kath. l. 261.

11. *lete*, look, countenance. The same as *late* in Orm. 1213; Ancren Riwe, p. 90; *lote*, Gen. and Ex. 1162. See *lete* in Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 59, l. 90.

23. *bloke*, pl. of *blok* = *blak*, black. Ancren Riwe, p. 234.

35. *saclese*, without guilt (*sake*). See Gen. and Ex. 916; Orm. 1900.

P. 173, l. 4. *bistonden hem fastliche*, assail them vehemently. See note to p. 147, l. 27.

5. *unradeliche* (= *unrædlice*), without consideration, remorselessly. Cp. *unræd*, Gen. and Ex. l. 1906; La3. 6517.

6. *biseið*, 3rd pers. sing. of *bi-seon*,<sup>?</sup> to see to, look after. See Old Eng. Miscell. p. 240.

11. *kepeð*, seize. For this sense see Gen. and Ex. l. 3164; Old Eng. Miscell. p. 41, l. 137.

13. *of-shamede* = *a-shamed*; cp. *of-dred*, *of-friht*, *of-thirst* = adread. affright, athirst.

14. *biclepieð*. See Ancren Riwe, p. 344; Castle of Love, 498.

27. *forð sende farene* = *forð-farene sende*; *sende* = *senden*, are.

P. 175, l. 15. *heuliche* = *eu fulliche* or *trewliche*, you fully or truly. Cp. *heu fremfulliche*.

19. *wagiende*. See La3. 26941.

*abroidene*, the p.p. of *a-breiden* or *abregden*, to overturn, overthrow, from *breiden*, to turn, throw (pret. *braid*, p.p. *broiden*). Cp. *for-broiden* = decayed, Old Eng. Miscell. p. 5, l. 124.

*warliche*, usually means cautious, prudent. The context shows that the sense is troubled, disturbed. Cp. O. E. *were*, doubt, confusion; Du. *werre* a muddle: Fabyan has 'a *warely* wepyn' = a dangerous weapon. See Chron. (ed. Ellis), p. 630. I believe the writer intended to connect *warliche* with *woreld* (l. 21); cp. Hampole's derivation of *world* from *wer*, *war*, worse (Pricke of Conscience, p. 41, l. 1479).

23. *iseone*, the gerundial infinitive, *to be seen*; not the perfect participle.

P. 177, l. 5. *werginges*, maledictions, from a verb *wergien*, to curse. Cp. *weri*, Hampole's Pricke of Conscience, 7422; *waried*, Gen. and Ex. 544; *waruinge*, Ancren Riwe, p. 200. See *warienge*, p. 179.

P. 177, l. 5. *wurreð* = *weorreð*, or *werreð*, trouble, disturb, wage war on. St. Marh. p. 8; Ancren Riwe, p. 60; Aȳenbite of Inwyt, p. 29.

7. *bisinkeð*. See Orm. 19690; Ancren Riwe, pp. 334, 400.

16, 17, 23. *tuderð*, *tuder*, *tuderinde*. See Gen. and Ex. 164, 630; Orm. 18307. Stratmann has no instance of the substantive *tuder*. For *tuderinde* ? read *tuderinge*.

24. *coðe* (O. E. *coðu*). See Prompt. Parv. p. 96; King Alis. 2815.

25. *wanspedie*. There is no example of this in Stratmann. See Bosworth, s. v. *Wan-spedig*.

28. *undes*, ? *unðes* = *uðes*, waves. See *uðe*, p. 143. Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 43; Laȳ. 4578. Not Lat. *unda*.

29. *unilimp*: cp. *limpes*, p. 197, l. 7. See Old Eng. Miscell. p. 110, l. 148; *unilimp*, p. 195; and Ancren Riwe, p. 274.

36. *ut-sondes*: cp. O. E. *ut-sendan*, to send out. (Bosworth.)

*þeu-nesse* (from *þeu* = *þeaw*, manner, virtue). Not in Bosworth or Stratmann.

P. 179, ll. 1, 2. See Met. Hom. p. 5.

*fogh* = O. E. *fah*. See *foh* in Old Eng. Miscell. pp. 39, 164, 165; '*fou ne grey*,' ib. p. 70, l. 357.

6. *bi ben* = exists by; not *bi[lib]ben*. See l. 14, infra.

7. *mene* = *i mene* (see p. 9): cp. *mænelike*, Orm. 2503. See Hali Meid. p. 19; Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 261, and p. 201.

10. *hund-limes*. See p. 181, l. 20. As this word occurs nowhere else, I have connected it with O. E. *hyme*, a servant, *hind*; *hean*, poor; cp. *hinderling*, in Orm. 4860; *hine-fole*, Gen. and Ex. 3655.

12. *mol*: cp. *mol*, tribute, mail, Old Eng. Miscell. p. 151, l. 161; Orm. 10188.

14. *Bileuin*. Not in Stratmann. Cp. O. E. *bi-libban*, to live by, or upon.

*net* = *nedeð*, forces, compels. See Ancren Riwe, p. 304; Old Eng. Miscell. pp. 5, 7, 37.

16. *set* = setteth, placeth; *a* = in.

*speche* = strife, suit, or action at law. See Bosworth, s. v. *Spræc*. As I have not seen the phrase *set a speche* before, the translation is merely conjectural.

*woȳe-dom*. This compound does not occur in Stratmann. See Bosworth, s. v. *Woh-dom*.

23. *wussinge*, a substantive, from *wussen* = *wuschen*, to wash; cp. *wussheð*, p. 165.

*wrache*, variously written *wreche*, *wrake*.

P. 181, l. 3. After *biginneð* a verb seems wanting; or does *reuliche biginneð* = 'is woe begone'?

6-9. Notice the play on *wunienge*, *wuned*, *wune*, *wunsum*; and see p. 185.

8. *wun-sum* = *wune* + *sum*, a coinage by the writer. *Wunsum* or *wynsum* always means pleasant, as on p. 185, l. 8. See Bosworth, s. v. *Wyn-sum*; Stratmann, s. v. *Wunsum*.



P. 181, l. 9. *balfulle* = *balefulle* (O.E. *bealu-ful*). See Ancren Riwe, p. 114.

18. *and hwat* ; ? *hwat and*.

21. *onre* : see l. 16, *supra*. *Wombe* is feminine.

33, 34. *acheked* : cp. *a-ceocan*, to suffocate, choke (Bosworth).

36. *penneð*. Not in Bosworth. Cp. *bipennen* in Ancren Riwe, p. 94.

P. 183, l. 7. *Awi, awei*. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 21.

8. *lastful*, dutiful. Cp. *gelast*, duty (Bosworth). The usual sense of *lasteful* or *lesteful* is lasting.

9. *oflonged*, sometimes corrupted to *alonged*. See Owl and Nightingale, 1585 ; La3. 19034 ; Old Eng. Miscell. p. 37. See l. 17, *infra*.

12. *let*. The same as *lat*, late, tardy. See p. 11, l. 36. O. E. *let*.

15. *hold* = *hald*. See Stratmann, s. v. *Hald*.

18. *spac*. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 305.

22. *þar-after i-earned*, ? merited accordingly. See note to p. 149, l. 15.

*Among þat* = *under þat*, meantime, whilst.

30. *lygende*, the one lying [dead].

11. *bode* ; ? *abode*, dwelling, from *abide* ; cp. *iboden*, l. 12, *infra*. I do not recollect *bode* in this sense ; ? *bolde*, house. See St. Kath. l. 1664 ; Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 283.

P. 185, l. 4. *folge*, *folge* = follow.

*buttle*, house, city. See *boile* in Orm. 2788.

Hom. XXX. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 151.

3. *et sum sele* = at some time. First Series, p. 151, l. 3.

5. *griseliche*, strong ; First Series, p. 151, l. 4.

6. *arueð to polien* = *uuel to underfone*, First Series, p. 151, l. 6.

10. *þane hie* = *þe heo*, First Series, p. 151, l. 9.

P. 187, l. 18. *ofeald* = *anfeald*, First Series, p. 151, l. 25.

21. *unstedefast* = *unstaþelfæst*, First Series, p. 151, l. 27 ; La3. 1140, 2843.

26. *wurse*, the devil. In the Owl and Nightingale he is called 'the ille.' See p. 191, *werse*.

P. 189, l. 7. *of-erneð*. See Ancren Riwe, p. 194 ; St. Kath. l. 2167.

16. *fardung* = O. E. *fyrd-ung*, military service (Bosworth) ; cp. *ferding* in Gen. and Ex. 842. In Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 243, *militia* is translated by *cniht-scepe*.

17. *furðien*. The First Series, p. 153, has to *fechte* ; ? read *furdien* = O. E. *fyrdian*, to go against, be at war.

19. *We ne fliteth* = 'We ne aȝen naut to *fihten*,' First Series, p. 153.

25. *unlef* = *unleaf*, hateful (Bosworth). Not in Stratmann.

*unqueme* = *un-cweme*. See Orm. 1527 ; *uniqueme*, Old Eng. Miscell. p. 128, l. 444.

*iqueme* = *icweme*. La3. 117 ; Ancren Riwe, p. 120.

35. *arueð . . to bergende* = *uuel . . to werein*, First Series, p. 153.

P. 191, l. 3. *bipehte*, the pret. of *bipechen* (p. 199). See La<sub>3</sub>. 8301; Old Eng. Miscell. pp. 72, 75, 125, 176, 177.

6. *drizeč* = *deč*, First Series, p. 153.

7. *hwat* = *al bet*, First Series, p. 153.

14. *umbegonge*. Cp. *umgang*, *umbegang*, a going about, circuit (Bosworth).

17. *diželiche* = *derneliche*, First Series, p. 153.

18, 19. *it* = *ho* = *heo*, First Series, p. 153.

20. *snucende* = *smelle*, First Series, p. 153.

22. *redie* = *zaru*, First Series, p. 153; *golliche* = *galiche*, First Series, p. 153.

26. *wrenches* = *wrenche*, First Series, p. 155.

*to-wendeč* = *to-drefeč*, First Series, p. 155. Cp. *to-wendan*, subvert, destroy (Bosworth). *To-wenden* and *to-sechen* are not in Stratmann; *to-sechen* is not in Bosworth.

28. *shene*, ? wounding, deadly; from *scenan*, *scenan*, to wound, break.

P. 193, l. 18 from bottom. *kei-herde*. This compound is not given by Stratmann; but Bosworth has *cæg-hyrde*, key-keeper, steward.

17 from bottom. *smiele*. See note to p. 195, l. 5.

15 from bottom. *mucleles*, genitive adverb. See Ancren Riwe, p. 368; Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 45.

9 from bottom. *zlep*. See Allit. Poems, 13881, 1708; Orm. 13499; La<sub>3</sub>. 7581.

8 from bottom. *giepshiþe*, *geþshiþe* (*giapshiþe*, p. 195). See La<sub>3</sub>. 2760.

6 from bottom. *wroče*, *wročeliche* = with wrath, badly. See Stratmann, s. v. *Wráp*.

4 from bottom. *talewise*. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann.

P. 195, l. 2. *pinende* = *winnene* = *biwinnene*, to obtain; *biwitiende* = *bitwitiene*. See La<sub>3</sub>. 2613, 13782, 24678, 31013; Old Eng. Miscell. pp. 45, 52, 116, 184, 259.

9. *unfreme*. See Gen. and Ex. 1566.

P. 197, l. 2. *hus-shiþe* = *hus-ciþe*, a family (Bosworth); not in Stratmann. Cp. *hiw-sciþe*, Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 87, ll. 5, 6.

7. *limpes* = *ilimpes*. Cp. O. E. *gelimp*, *ilimp*, accident.

15. *latteu* = *lätteow*, *latþeow*, a leader, guide (Bosworth); not in Stratmann.

20. *bigaleč*. Cp. *gal*, l. 9 from bottom, p. 197. See La<sub>3</sub>. 19256; 'Gleo and *gal*,' Old Eng. Miscell. p. 97, l. 126. Cp. *galan*, to sing, enchant; *galere*, incantator, enchanter (Bosworth).

29. *at-bresteč*, bursteth from. See Orm. 14734.

34. *strect* may be another form of *strect*, the p.p. of *strecchen* or *strect*, O. Fr. *estreiet*, Lat. *strictus*; or of *streken*, to stretch out, become prostrate. See Gen. and Ex. 481.

P. 198, l. 1. *tresle*, ? *treize* = destruction. ? *trefle* = *truffle*, delusion, Ancren Riwe, p. 106, where *truzles* is given in the footnote as the reading of the Cleop. MS.

P. 198, l. 2. *atemien*. In the oldest period *atemian* = to tame. In the translation I have looked upon it as a compound of *temen*, to come, approach. See Glossary to Allit. Poems, s. v. *Teme*, p. 201.

6. *Man* (so in MS.), ? = *mān*, sinful, wicked—i. e. the *devil*. Cp. *man-sworn*.

*gele* = dative of *gel* or *geal*, the same as *gal* on p. 197.

9. *a-teð*, from *a-teon*, to draw from, withdraw from.

15. *after-ende*, tail. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann.

21-27. See Bestiary in Old Eng. Miscell. for a similar account of the adder.

31. *aspeweth*. Not in Stratmann. Cp. *asprūwan*, to spew, eject (Bosworth).

36. *for-hote*. See Ancren Riwe, pp. 192, 340.

P. 201, l. 9. *horegede*. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann. Cp. *for-hored*, p. 81, and Old Eng. *hyrwian*, to defile; *horu*, filth; *horh*, dirt.

22. *bisicheð* = sigheth. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann. Cp. *siche*, a sigh, Old Eng. Miscell. pp. 50, 75, 143.

P. 203, Hom. XXXII. This discourse is in the First Series, p. 145.

P. 205, l. 6. *on is tofersien*. The First Series has *an is that he hit do for him! pet he hit nabbe* (p. 147). *Fersien*, to remove. See Ancren Riwe, p. 76; Orm. 14198.

17-23. The First Series, p. 147, here differs very much, and is more intelligible.

29. *to-tiht*; 34, 36. *to-tuht*. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann; and omitted in the First Series, p. 147.

P. 207, l. 3. *helsing, ihalsneð*. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 147, l. 1 from bottom.

P. 209, l. 21 from bottom. *grune* (plur. *grunen*, l. 6 from bottom), snare, *grin*. For other forms see Stratmann, s.v. *Grin*.

18 from bottom. *shrenche*. See Orm. 11861; St. Kath. 1189.

11 from bottom. *fō...fode*. Notice the attempt to express the etymology of *fō*.

4 from bottom. *abroiden* (= O. E. *abrogden*, freed), the p.p. of *abreden*, or *abreiden*, to draw out, set free.

2 from bottom. *temed*. Cp. *temie*, Laz. 25231; *itemed*, St. Kath. 1291.

1 from bottom. *iwilezeð* = *iwilezede* = possessed of *wiles*. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann.

P. 211, l. 8. *lages* = lairs. Cp. *lehe* in St. Kath. p. 35 (ed. Morton).

14. *and*, &c. So in MS. ? read *and is unqueme*.

15. *swinch*, *swincheð*.

16. *gosskieð*. The meaning given in the text is quite conjectural.

P. 213, ll. 2, 3. *hihtliche*. Sometimes written *hukhtliche* (O. E. *hihtlic*), pleasant, hopeful.

4. *twisteð*, twineth, turneth.

13. *ollende*. It cannot be for *ellende*, strange, but perhaps is for *unluuede*, illicit, unlawful. In the translation I have connected it with O. E. *oleccan*, to flatter. Cp. *olhtnunge* (*olhnung*), St. Kath. (ed. Morton), l. 1502.

23. *hindre*. See note to *hinderful*, p. 238.

26. *loueð*, estimateth, praises. See note on *unluued*. The substantive *lof* = price, estimation, occurs on l. 26 infra. Its ordinary meaning is praise. Cp. *allow*, from *allaudare*.

36. *bisaid* = *biseid*. Not in Bosworth or Stratmann. Is it a compound of O. E. *sægan*, to throw down?

P. 215, l. 14. *lehtrie*; ? *letre* = the slower ones: or is it a verb corresponding to O. E. *leāhtrian*?

P. 217, l. 9. *haue* = possession. Not in Bosworth. Cp. O. E. *haveles*, *hafles* = poor, destitute.

19. *neng*; ? *ueuge* [wrake] = take vengeance. This word *neng* occurs in Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 135, l. 29, where it seems to be a contraction for *naleng* = no longer.

*bi mine wrihte*, according to my desert. See Old Eng. Hom. First Series, p. 69.

4 from bottom. *ioponen*. So in MS.; read *iopened*. Cp. *onopini*, p. 219, l. 4.

P. 219, l. 3. *on was leid* = ? *on wam was leid*.





## APPENDIX.

THREE THIRTEENTH-CENTURY HYMNS TO  
THE VIRGIN AND GOD,

WITH MUSICAL NOTES FOR TWO OF THEM,

FROM MS. 54, D. 5. 14 IN CORPUS CHRISTI COLLEGE, OXFORD.

Although these hymns have no direct connection with the Homilies, yet as Early English verses with musical notes are so rare in early MSS., the first opportunity is taken of issuing the present specimen, with a photolithograph, a transliteration of the old music by Mr. Alexander J. Ellis, and a representation of it in modern notation and words by Dr. E. F. Rimbault.

## I. HYMN TO THE VIRGIN.

[MS. 54, D. 5. 14, leaf 113, back ; before A. D. 1300.]

|   |                |  |
|---|----------------|--|
| <b>E</b> DI beo þu heuene quene<br>folkes froure & engles blis.<br>moder unwemmed & maiden elene<br>swich in world non oþer nis.        |                | Blessed<br>be thou,<br>Heaven's<br>queen ;               |
| On þe hit is wel eþ sene<br>of alle wimmen þu hauest þet pris.<br>mi swete leuedi her mi béne<br>& reu of mé 3if þi wille is.           | 4<br><br><br>8 | <br><br><br>hear my<br>pray and<br>have pity<br>upon me. |
| Þu astege so þe daiȝ rewe<br>þe deleð from [daiȝ] þe deorke nicht.<br>of the sprong á leóme newe<br>þat al þis world haueð ilizt.       | <br><br><br>12 | Thou art the<br>day-spring<br>ushering in<br>the day.    |
| nis non maide of pine heowe<br>swo fair. so sschene. so rudi. swo bricht.<br>swete leuedi of me þu reowe<br>& haue merci of þin knicht. | <br><br><br>16 | No one is so<br>fair as thou.                            |

Thou art the  
blossom  
sanctified by  
the Holy  
Ghost for  
man's salva-  
tion.

I, thy man,  
cry to thee  
for mercy.

Thou art  
earth fit for  
the good seed  
sown by the  
Holy Ghost.

Bring us out  
of the  
Eve-brewed  
sorrow.

Mother of  
all virtues,

shield me  
from the  
devil, and  
reconcile me  
to thy Son.

Thou art of  
David's kin  
and hast no  
equal.

Bring us into  
eternal joy.

God ordained  
that thou  
shouldst be a  
maid im-  
maculate,

Spronge blostme of one rote  
þe holi gost þe reste upôn.  
þet wes for monkunnes bote.  
& heore soule to alesen for on.

20

Leuedi milde softe & swote  
ic eie þe merci ic am þi mon.  
boþe to honde & to fote:  
on alle wise þat ic kon.

24

Þu ert eôrþe to gode sede  
on þe liȝte þe heouene deūȝ.  
of þe sprong þeō edi blede  
þe holi gost hire on þe seūȝ.

28

þu bring us út of kare. of drēde  
þat Eue bitterliche us breūȝ.  
þu sschalt us in to heōuene lede:  
welle swete is þe ilke deūȝ.

32

Moder ful of þewes hende.  
Maide dreiz & wel itaucht.  
ic ém in þine loue bende  
& to þe is al mi draucht.

36

þu me sschild ȝe from þe feonde  
ase þu ert freō. & wilt. & maucht.  
help me to mi liues ende:  
& make me wið þin sone isauȝt

40

Þu ert icumen of heȝe kunne  
of dauid þe riche king.

nis non maiden under sunne  
þe mei beō þin eueni[n]g.  
ne þat swo derne louiȝe kunne  
ne non swo swete of alle þing.

44

þu<sup>1</sup> bring ús in to eche wunne:  
i-hered ibeō þu swete þing.

48

Swetelic<sup>2</sup> ure louerd hit diȝte  
þat þu maide wið-ute were.

<sup>1</sup> [þi loue ús brouchte in margin.]

<sup>2</sup> [Seoleudliche i.e. treowe in margin.]

|                                      |    |                |
|--------------------------------------|----|----------------|
| þat al þis world bicluppe ne miȝte   |    | and shouldst   |
| þu sscholdest of þin boseme bere.    | 52 | bear a son     |
| þe ne stiȝte. ne þe ne priȝte.       |    | without pain.  |
| in side. in lende. ne elles where.   |    |                |
| þat wes wið ful muchel riȝte :       |    |                |
| for þu bere þine helere.             | 56 |                |
| Ðo godes sune aliȝte wolde           |    | When God's     |
| on eôrþe al for ure sake.            |    | Son would      |
| herre teȝen he him nolde             |    | come to earth, |
| þene þat maide to beon his make.     | 60 | he could not   |
| betere ne miȝte hé þaiȝ hé wolde     |    | find a sweeter |
| ne swetture þing on eôrþe take.      |    | thing than     |
| leuedi bring ús to þine bolde :      |    | thou wast.     |
| & sschild ús from helle wrake. AMEN. | 64 | Lady, shield   |
|                                      |    | us from        |
|                                      |    | Hell's ven-    |
|                                      |    | geancee !      |

## II. HYMN TO THE VIRGIN.

[Corpus MS. 54, D. 5. 14, leaf 116, back.]

|  |    |                     |
|--|----|---------------------|
| ¶ Moder milde flur of alle.              |    | Flower of all,      |
| þu ert leuedi swuþe treówe.              |    | on thee it is       |
| bricht in bure & eke in halle.           |    | best to call.       |
| þi loue is euer iliche neówe.            | 4  |                     |
| on <sup>1</sup> þe hit is best to calle. |    | to                  |
| swete leuedi of me þu reowe.             |    | <sup>1</sup> MS. on |
| ne let me neuere in sunnes falle :       |    | Let me never        |
| þe me ȝarked bale to breówe.             | 8  | fall into sin.      |
| Riche quene & maiden bricht.             |    | Rich queen,         |
| þu ert moder swuþe milde.                |    | my hope is          |
| min hope is in þe daz & nicht.           |    | ever in thee.       |
| þat þu me sauchte wid þine childe.       | 12 |                     |
| for þu nult noþing bote richt.           |    | Keep me             |
| swete leuedi þu me sschilde.             |    | from evil           |
| þat ic non þing mid unricht.             |    | works.              |
| wurche þe werches þe beoð towilde.       | 16 |                     |
| Swete leuedi ic bidde þe.                |    | Sweet Lady,         |
| quen of heouene þer þu ert in.           |    | besech thy          |
|  |    | Son to keep         |

me from the  
endless and  
joyless pain  
of hell.

bisech þin sune par cherite.  
þat he me sschilde from helle þin. 20  
for þer nis nouþer gome ne gleô.  
auȝ þer is þine widute fin.  
swete leuedi sschild þu me!  
þat min soule ne cume þer in. Amen. 24

## III. HYMN TO GOD.

[Corpus MS. 54, D. 5. 14, leaf 66.]

It behoves us  
to speak and  
sing of the  
Creator of all  
things.

¶ Hit bilimpeð forte speke to reden & to singe.  
Of him þe no mon mai at reke king of alle kinge.  
He mai binde & to breke. he mai blisse bringe.  
He mai luke & unsteke. michte of al þinge. 4

Thou, O God,  
art our  
Heavenly  
Father.

¶ Vroure & hele folkes fader heôuenliche drichte.  
Alle þing þet is & was is on þine michte.  
þu ȝifst þe sunne to the daiȝ. þe mone to þe nichte  
þine strengþe non ne mai telle. ne þin michte. 8

Hallowed be  
thy name!

¶ Iherd ȝe beô þin holi nome in heôuene & in eôrþe.  
þu sscope êld. & wind. & water. þe molde is þet feorþe.  
Of wham we alle imaked beoð þat is þe holi eôrþe.  
þu þe wost al ure þoucht! louerd drauȝ us neôr þe. 12

Draw nearer  
to us!

Triune God,  
thou who  
knowest our  
needs, bless  
us.

¶ Fader & sune. & holi gost. on god in þrimnesse.  
inne þe nis lac ne lest. auȝ alle holinesse.  
Vre neode wel þu wost. & ure unkunnesse  
in þine hond is michte mest! louerd þu vs blesce. 16

Let us come  
into thy holy  
kingdom.

¶ Let vs louerd comen among þin holi kineriche.  
ihesu crist þin elpi sune. þe is þe seolf iliche.  
he vs bouchte wið his blod of þe feôndes swiche.  
& of bitter helle fur! & of þe fule smiche. 20

Let thy will  
be done on  
earth; as in  
heaven.  
Bind the  
devil.

¶ Al swo is in heouene heȝ. in eôrþe beo þin wille.  
holi drichte swete. & dreȝ. in heldes. & in hulle. 22  
ne let þu neure eumen vs neȝ þene feond þe is swo ille.  
Ach bind him honden. fet. & þeȝ! & let him ligge stille.

- ¶ Vre daz wunelich bred louerd þu vs sende. [lf. 66, back.]  
 þat bred of hele & of lif ihesu crist þe hende. Give us our  
 þat bréd þe monkun haueð ibroucht út of feondes bende. daily bread.  
 he beo vre help. & ure red. to ure liucs ende. 28
- ¶ Fader for 3if vs ure gult. & eke alle ure sunne. Forgive us  
 Al swo we doð þe us habbeð igruld to freómede. & to our trespasses  
 kunne. and bring us  
 bring ús ut of worldes wo in to alle wunne to eternal  
 for hér beoð werkes swiþe unwreste! & þewes swiþe bliss.  
 þunne. 32
- ¶ Bring ús ut of wo & kare. & of feondes fondinge. Deliver us  
 wicke is here ure fare & úre wunizinge. from woe and  
 mid wicke speche & false sware & mid lesinge. the devil's  
 þu ert hele. & help. & lif. & king of alle kinge. temptation. 36  
 thou King of  
 Kings.

[The above (on leaf 66) is over an earlier copy of the same poem, very faintly written, and most of it illegible: the lines legible are the following:—

Hit bilimpeð f . . . . . to reden & to singe  
 . . . . . alle kinge  
 He may binde and to breke he may blisse bringe  
 . . . luke . . . . . þinge 4  
 . . . . . drichte  
 Alle þing þet iss & was his . . on þine michte  
 þu 3ist þe soune to þe d . . mone to þe nichte  
 þine strengþe non ne may telle ne þin michte 8  
 . . . . . beo þin holi . . in . . eorþe  
 . . . . . is þet fearþe  
 of . . we alle i makede . . is þe holi eorþe  
 þu þe wost alle ure þoucht lauerd draz hus neore þe 12  
 Fader & sone & hali gast . . . god . . nesse  
 . . þe nis lac ne lest . . . holinesse  
 . . nede wel þu wost & ure onkunnesse  
 . . þine hond is miete mest louerd þu hus blesse 16  
 let us louerd commen among þin holi kyneriche  
 ih . . . þin elpi sune þat iss þe seolff iliche  
 He us bocte mid his blod off þe feondes sswelche  
 And of bitter helle fur . & of þe fule smyche . che 20  
 . . . . . wille  
 . . . . . hulle 22  
 [Only a few letters of the next nine lines are legible.]  
 . . . . . swiþe þunne 32  
 . . . . . fondinge  
 Wicke is here . . . . . & ure wunizinge  
 mid wicke speche & false sware & mid lesinge  
 þu ert hele . & help . & lif . & king of alle kinge. 36



# A Thirteenth-Century Hymn to the Virgin,

From MS. 54, D. 5. 14, in Corpus Christi College, Oxford.

*Put into modern notation by E. F. Rimbault, LL.D.*

TREBLE.

TENOR.

Bless - ed be thou hea - ven's queen-e,

Peo-ple's com - fort and an - gels, bliss, Mo-ther un - stained and

maid - en clean-e. Such in world none o - ther is.

On thee it is well eas - y seen, Of all wo - men thou

hav - est the prize. My sweet la - - dy hear my

pray - er and rue on me if thy will is.

This little hymn-tune, in harmony of two parts, is most interesting as showing the state of the art in the thirteenth century. It bears a great resemblance in character to the well-known "Sumer is icumen in," and to a song called "Fowles in the frith," both of about the same date. The likeness is partly owing to all these specimens being in the key of F, with the half-tone for the leading note. It is somewhat difficult to account for the frequent use of a tonality which sounds so modern to our ears, and one so opposed to the theory of the old church chants. It is only by a thorough examination of the remains of the music of this early period that we could arrive at any satisfactory conclusion. The Music has been somewhat difficult to decipher, in consequence of the vagueness of the notation at this early period of composition; and the errors of the scribe are sometimes not a little confusing. However, by the aid of the two parts (the one correcting the other), I have been enabled to give the modern musician a tolerably correct interpretation of what was meant. Since writing it out, I have been favoured with an interpretation by Mr. Snell, of Corpus Christi College, which has been of the greatest use to me, especially in the reading of the *ligatures*.

E. F. R.



In hoc suu hruene quene folios f engles vus. moder uipet med f mai  
 den elene spich in portu non oher uis. On he hte is pel eplene of alle pinnen pu  
 hauest hoc ps. in spore lauadi her in bene f rou of me zel hi wille is. In alle  
 so he daz roge he deled fto he den he uicht. of he sping a leuue nepe hat al his  
 wold hauesd uirt. uig no made of pme hege. sp o faw. so sch ene. so rudi. spochet.

# A Thirteenth-Century Hymn to the Virgin,

From MS. 54, D. 5. 14, in Corpus Christi College, Oxford.

*Transliterated and Annotated by Alexander J. Ellis, F.R.S., F.S.A.*

1 2 3 4 5

Ed - i heo þu he - ue - no quen - e folk - es  
 þu a - ste3 - e so þe dai3 rew - e þe - de - leð

6 7 8 9 10

fro - ure & eng - les blis mod - er un - wem - med &  
 from þe deork - e nicht of .. þe sprong .. an

11 12 13 14 15 16

maid - en clen - e swich in world non oþ - er nis  
 leom - e new - e þat al þis world ha - ueð i - lizt.

17 18 19 20 21 22

on þe hit is wel eþ sen - e of all - e wim - men þu  
 nis non maid - e of þin - e heow - e swo fair swo sschen - e swo

23 24 25 26 27

ha - uest þeo pris mi swet - e le - ue - di her mi  
 rud - i swo bricht

28 29 30 31 32

ben - e & ren of me 3if þi will - e is.

## ANNOTATIONS.

The bars are numbered at the end of each for convenience of reference. The only divisions in the original correspond to the double bars 8, 16, 24, 32. The other bars are placed on the principle which determined the barring of the *Cuckoo Song* (*Early English Pronunciation*, p. 426), and is thus explained in a letter from Mr. William Chappell to me (15 March, 1868), referring to that song: "It is in *perfect time*, in which a long note is to be taken as if dotted, unless followed by a short note. (This time was called perfect because it thus acquired the value of three short notes, and three was considered perfect because emblematic of the Trinity; 'Common Time' was called *imperfect*). When more than one note is found to one syllable, it either is or is intended to be in *ligature*." The ligature answers to the modern *slur*. Mr. Chappell referred me to the following work, which I have followed as much as possible: "*Fratris Walteri Odingtonii de Speculatione Musice*," of which the MS. is at Cambridge, and, according to Burney (2, 156), is described thus in the 4to catalogue of 1777; "410. 25. N. Codex membranaceus in 4to, Seculo xv. Scriptus." This MS. is printed at full in pp. 182-250 of "*Scriptorum de Musica Medii Ævi novam seriem a Gerbertina alteram collegit nuncque primum edidit E. de Coussemaker e Galliæ imperiali instituto, ex Austriæ imperiali et Belgii regia Academiis, e Londini regia antiquariorum societate &c. &c. Parisiis apud A. Durand via dicta, Rue des Grès-Sorbonne, 7, 1864.*" In the British Museum, press mark 7895 f. To this and to the transcriptions in Coussemaker's "*L'art harmonique aux xii et xiii siècles*, 4to, Paris, 1865," Brit. Mus. 7896 g, I refer for the justification of the above transliteration, in which I have endeavoured to give as exact a representation of the old music in modern notation as it was possible for me to effect, following the ancient authorities conscientiously as an antiquary, without making any pretence to be a musician.

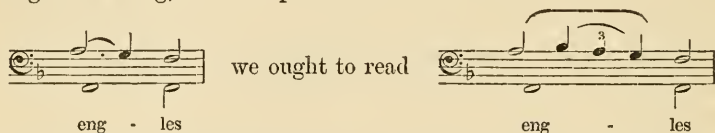
In Odington (De Coussemaker, p. 213) the different marks and liga-



tures, are drawn and described. The first mark in the Jesus College MS. (see photolithograph) is that which Odington calls *virga*, the second *punctum*, and the third, so far as I can judge, *semivocalis*. The upper mark over the word *folkes* (bar 5), seems to be an inverted *semivocalis*, and is at least so translated by De Coussemaker (*L'art harmonique*, p. ix). The mark over *hit* (bar 18) and *me* (bar 30) is that called *flexa* in Odington. *Flexa* and *semivocalis* should of course be different. I have followed De Coussemaker in the *semivocalis*, making it two notes, of which the first is dotted. The following is Odington's description of these marks: "Morosa longa vocatur que prius *virga* dicitur nota . . . . velox vero vocatur brevis que prius *punctus* figura scilicet quadrata" (p. 235). "*Semivocalis* medietate sui temporis transfert ad aliam vocem que dicitur *semivocalis* descendens" (p. 214). "Ligatura est plurium notarum contractus ut quia quidam cantus organici sunt sine litera, notis conjungunt propter brevitatem ligaturarum. Alia ascendens, alia descendens. Ascendens est cujus secundus punctus altior est primo;" then follow the examples *semitonus*, *gutturalis*, *pes resupinus*, which not occurring in this piece of music need not be noticed, "descendens e contrario," and the first example is our *flexa* (p. 242). As to the mark in the MS. over *leuedi* (bar 26), Odington says: "Sunt et alie compositiones notarum ad predictas diverse, sed his habent cognosci et per modum in quo sunt, ut ista," then the mark just mentioned is quoted, "in primo modo valent longam imperfectam, in tertio et quinto longam perfectam" (p. 245). Now this is in the fifth mode, as already mentioned, which Odington describes (p. 238) as proceeding "per omnes longas," and is perfect, because in triple time. I have therefore interpreted as in the 4th bar of the *Cuckoo Song*, according to Mr. Chappell's directions, who in his letter to me of 11 March, 1868, says of this bar: "There is one variation from Burney and from Hawkins in my copy, for which variation I have good authority. They jig the three notes upon the word 'in' (Sumer is icumen *in*), I make them equal." Over the words *unwemmed and* (bar 10) we have a *semivocalis* followed by two *puncta*. In this case, as the *semivocalis* takes the place of a *virga* in length I have been obliged to consider the two *puncta* as representing *virgae*, as they would have done if following a *virga*, and consequently to divide the *semivocalis* as a dotted crotchet followed by a quaver.

There is still one mark concerning which I am in doubt. On refer-

ring to the mark in the MS. over *froure* (bar 6) it will be seen to consist of a *punctum* closely followed by a *semivocalis*. I have entirely neglected the *punctum*, considering it as a scribe's error, but I may be altogether wrong, and it is possible that instead of



This is a point for the consideration of musicians who are also antiquaries, like M. de Coussemaker. I content myself with drawing attention to it. There is a mark over the double bar (8), which seems to me merely an accidental blot, and I have therefore entirely neglected it.

At the end of bars 8 and 16 I have introduced a minim rest, but this was not necessary in bar 24, as the next line of the poetry beginning with an unaccented syllable (contrary to the regular rhythm), the bar is filled up by a corresponding minim.

Bar 22 in the MS. has only three *puncta* over the words *wimmen pu*. This I regard as a mere error of the scribe, who omitted the tail to the first, if indeed the tail has not disappeared in the photograph, having been too faint in the MS. I have not seen the MS., but I know from the examination of other xiii th century musical MSS., that this is a possibility. It will be seen that there is a sort of a cross stroke to the *punctum* over *wim*—— in the second part. Perhaps there was a tail to the *punctum* over *folk*—— in bar 5, and the shape of the *punctum* looks as if one had been intended, but had been cut short or obliterated not to interfere with the *l* immediately below. At any rate there should be a *virga* on account of the *semivocalis* above. The tail is again omitted to the *punctum* of the first voice over *mod*—— bar 9, which is corrected by the second voice.

Bar 23, over the words *hauest peo*, presents several difficulties. The upper part has two *puncta* and a *virga*. This I presume must be an error for a *virga* followed by two *puncta*, the regular form for three minims, as already shewn; but see notes on bar 31 and the signatures. Then there is an inverted *semivocalis* in the second part, occupying the position of a *virga*. This I have treated as in bar 10, as already explained.

Bar 27, over the words *her mi*, has two *virgae* in both parts. This

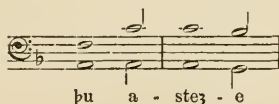
is a perfect impossibility in the fifth perfect mode, hence I have taken the liberty to correct the second *virga* into a *punctum*, and have transliterated the bar by a semibreve and minim as usual. But see bar 31.

Bar 31, over the words *pi wille*, presents the same anomaly as bar 27, and I have corrected it in the same way. Yet another explanation suggests itself, namely that the last *virga* in bars 27 and 31 were meant to convey the notion of *rallentando*, or slackening the time previous to the final note. This of course is very common at the end of a strain. Now bar 23 (in which the final *virga* occurs in the first part only, and therefore must be wrong, as one part could not slacken time without the other) is the last bar but one of the song independently of the *refrain* or *burden*, and bar 31 is the last bar but one of the whole piece of music. In both cases slackening time would be likely. But this does not apply to bar 27, where the two *virgae* would apparently imply a sudden transition from perfect ( $\frac{3}{2}$ ) to imperfect ( $\frac{2}{2}$ ) time. But still a pause on *bene* is quite admissible.

Hence I throw out as an alternative transliteration the placing of a pause mark  $\frown$  over the final notes of bars 23, 27, and 31.

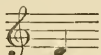
Bar 32, over the word *is*, has in the MS. a longer head to the *virga* in the second part than in the first, like the figure of Odington's "duplex longa . . . que duas valet longas perfectas" (p. 235). Of course it should be in both parts, to be intelligible. I have simply dotted the semibreve in this bar. It might also have a pause mark over it.

In the MS. it will be seen that bar 32 has a double bar after it, indicating the end of the piece of music. But it is immediately followed by some notes which I have not transliterated. In the second voice there is a blot to begin with, which I neglect. The following notes are



This makes a slight variation from the commencement of the piece of music in the singing of the second stanza. But the variation is so slight, that, the transition of the third bar not being marked, I have

neglected it in the text, and have written the words of the second stanza under the notes of the first. The other words of the second stanza, with the exception of the *refrain* or *burden*, are not written to music, but occupy the last two lines of the photolithograph.

The music is for two voices. It is written on two staves, which for the first line of the MS. consist of four lines each. But these two staves do *not* form a single staff of eight lines. This is shewn in the first line by the letter C placed on the second line of each staff, whereas if the staff had been continuous, one of these two Cs must have fallen on a space. The C clef is the well-known signature of the tenor voice, and the first or upper voice is within easy compass of a tenor. It would also, taken an octave higher, be within tolerably easy compass of a soprano, though one note  which occurs in

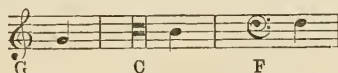
bars 7, 15, 19, and 31, but only as a passing note, is full low. A soprano must have been sung by either a boy or a woman, artificial men-sopranos not having been usual in England. The women are out of the question. Old songs are generally for adult males only. Hence I consider that the first voice was a tenor. The second voice has also the C clef. But it could not have been of the same pitch as the first, or otherwise, at the first note the second voice would top the first, and at the second note the voices would cross. Hence I conclude that the second C was an octave lower than the first, and indicated bass. Although the original is written on two staves, I have thought it best to transliterate it into "short score," on the bass staff only, indicating the two parts by the direction of the tails of the notes, as usual.

In the original the first line of the music has the two signatures C and the sign  $\flat$  placed on the space after the first C, shewing that B is to be  $B\flat$  throughout. The scribe has not taken the trouble to write the  $\flat$  on the space below the second C, but of course it must be understood. The key is therefore F, and it has the modern final cadence, and not that of the usual chants. The time ( $\frac{3}{2}$ ) is not marked, being sufficiently indicated by the form of the notes.

In the second line of the music the scribe employs two staves of three lines each, which also are not continuous. There was no necessity for using any particular number of lines (as the modern five), but either three or four were used according to the compass of the music

to be noted, and often varied in consecutive lines. The value of the lines was shewn by the signatures. In the second line the first C is omitted, but the *b* is retained, and now falls on the first instead of the second space, shewing that the B*b* occupied this space, and hence that the upper line of the upper staff had been omitted. In the lower staff C appears on its first (instead of second) line, shewing that the upper line had been omitted. The *b* again is left out. It should be remembered that *b* is only a form of *b*, and that in the original scale B was always *flat*. In German musical notation to the present day B represents the English B*b*. When B natural had to be marked, the letter H was employed, as it still is in Germany. The small written form of *h*, with second stroke descending (see *heune*, *her*, in the photolithograph of the hymn), still used in German handwriting, is the musical sign, *h* or *natural*. And the natural doubled *h* (the two marks being written rather over each other) gave rise to the modern *sharp*.

In the third line of the MS. two staves of three lines are again employed. The *b* on the first space is the same as in the second line. The first note on this upper staff is a *punctum*, which ought to have been a *virga* (see observations on bar 23), and it falls below the lowest of the three lines, so that if it had been a *virga* its tail would have run into a lower staff, and might have confused the singer, especially if the C had been written on the top line of the second staff, as in the last case. Hence possibly, firstly, the tail of the *virga* was omitted, and the last note of the bar received a compensating tail, for after the first note the running of tails into the second staff would not have caused confusion; and, secondly, instead of writing the usual C, which would have been dangerous, an A is written on the second line of the staff, which determines the value of the notes equally well, although it is not one of the recognised signatures. The three usual signatures, which are still retained, though in such strange disguises that their relations to the old capital letters are scarcely intelligible, are



The reader who is not accustomed to old musical notation will excuse this lengthy justification of every point in my transliteration, and will see that, however strange and indeterminate the old notation may appear to our ignorant modern eye, it had a well-known determinate sense for the singers regularly instructed in its use.



I turn to the words of the song and the mode in which I have placed them under the notes.

In the first stanza I have strictly placed every syllable of the original (which I have as usual transliterated into Roman letters with the exception of þ, ȝ and ȝ) under the note or ligature to which it is most plainly and unmistakably referred in the MS., as may be seen in the photolithograph. Leaving the second stanza for the present, let us observe what this teaches us for the metre and pronunciation of the original. It is in this respect a trustworthy contemporary document, like the *Cuckoo Song* and *Prisoner's Prayer* transliterated and considered in my *Early English Pronunciation*, pp. 426 and 432. Written out as an ordinary poem, with translation annexed, this stanza runs thus—

|                                |   |                                 |
|--------------------------------|---|---------------------------------|
| Edi beo þu heuene quene        |   | Happy be thou heaven queen,     |
| folkes froure and engles       |   | folk's comfort and angel's      |
| bliss.                         | 2 | bliss.                          |
| moder unwemmed and maiden      |   | Mother immaculate and maiden    |
| clene                          |   | clean                           |
| swich in world non oper nis.   | 4 | Such in world none other ne-is. |
| On þe hit is wel eþ sene       |   | On thee it is well easily seen  |
| of alle wimmen þu hauest       |   | Of all women thou hast the      |
| þeo pris.                      | 6 | prize.                          |
| mi swete leuedi her mi bene    |   | My sweet lady hear my boon      |
| and reu of me ȝif þi wille is. | 8 | And rue of me if thy will is.   |

First, *beo* 1 (the subjoined figures refer to the numbering of the lines) is a monosyllable, and as *be* is also common, we conclude that it had the sound often written *baï* or *baö* in English dialects, with the *ea* of *bear*, followed by a faint sound of *-e(r)*, or *-o*. Similarly for *þeo* 6, generally written *þe*.

Next, the final *-e* were pronounced at least in verse when it was sung (as they still are under such circumstances in French) except before a following vowel. We have a separate note to the last syllables of *heuene* 1, *quene* 1, *folkes* 2, *engles* 2, *clene* 3, *alle* 6, *hauest* 6, *swete* 7. In the case of *froure* and 2, *e* falls out before *a*, absolutely, probably as in French, and not merely theoretically as in Italian. In bar 6 I have separated the syllables *fro-ure* and, putting *ure* and (pronounce *u* as *v*, as the *u* was an *f* in the Anglo-Saxon word *frofre*) to one note, to be read *vrand*. In *sene* 5, probably the *e* was pro-

nounced in reading, as the word occurs at the end of a line, and ought to rhyme with *quene* 1, *clene* 3, in which the *-e* was pronounced. But it so happened that l. 6 irregularly began with an unaccented syllable. Had that syllable begun with a consonant, it is easily seen by *heueue*, bar 3, what would have been done in bar 20; the first semibreve would have been made into two minims of the same pitch. But in bar 20, as in the case of *bene* 7, bar 28, it so happened that this following irregular unaccented syllable began with a vowel, and hence we have *-e* elided before it in singing, thus *sen-e of* = *senof*, bar 20, and *ben-e and* = *benand*, bar 28. This was much easier for the singer, and avoided open vowels. In *wille* 8, the *-e* is regularly elided both in the verse and music, bar 32, before *is*, read *will-e is* = *willis*. Every case of final *-e* in the first stanza is therefore accounted for.

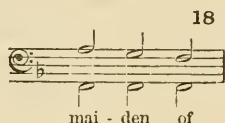
Next it becomes clear that measures of three syllables each were distinctly recognised. There is no attempt to procrusteanise them by the excision of a syllable, or to slur over the obnoxious item by a grace note. In *heueue quene* 1, we have the measure | *hēuēnē* | *quēnē*, with a distinct note to each syllable. Again, *mōdēr ūn* | *wēmmed* *ānd* | 3; *of* | *āllē* | *wīmnen pū* | *hāuēst pēo* | *pris*, 6; | *mī* | *swētē* | *lēučdī* | *hēr mī* | 7, all shew the same resolute recognition of these accentual dactyles in a metre of accentual trochees. This is of the utmost importance for the appreciation of older versification.

Stanza 2 will run thus, omitting the two last lines, which, forming a *refrain* or *burden*, are not written twice in the MS. :

|                                  |                                 |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| pu asteze. so pe daiȝ rewe       | Thou arosest; as the day beam   |
| pe deleš from pe deorke          | that separateth from the dark   |
| nicht. 10                        | night.                          |
| of pe sprong an leome newe       | Of thee sprang up gleam (light) |
|                                  | new                             |
| pat al þis world haueš ilizt. 12 | that this word hath lighted.    |
| nis non maide of pine heowe,     | Ne-is none maid of thy hew,     |
| swo fair. so sschene. so rudi.   | So fair, so shiny, so ruddy,    |
| swo bricht. 14                   | so bright.                      |

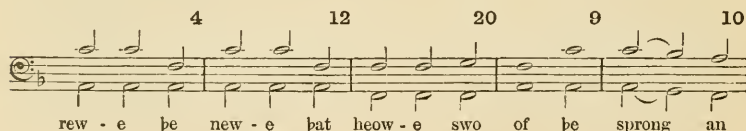
It is seldom that the notes for a first stanza will exactly suit a second, especially where trissyllabic measures are allowed to intrude. The notes always require "humouring," as every singer well knows. But the fitting of the words to the notes in the first stanza readily shews in what this "humouring" has to consist.

As regards the final *-e* in *asteȝe* 9, whether we take the notes of bar 2, or the other version noted on p. 265, this *-e* is furnished with a distinct note. So also *deorke* 10, bar 7; *leome* 11, bar 11; *pine* 13, bar 19; *sschene* 14, bar 22. In *maide* 13, bar 18, *e* is elided before *of*, read *mai-de of* = *maidof*. Observe also that the "poet" has quietly used *maide* 18 for *maiden* 3, in order to obtain this elision, and although for the verse *maiden* would have answered here, by introducing a trissyllabic measure, it would have occasioned much unnecessary humouring for the notes. For what now stands, bar 18, we should have had



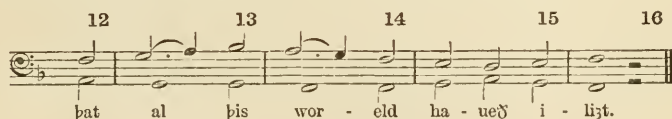
Compare bar 22, where precisely the same passage occurs for precisely the same reason.

Now then we can understand how to sing *rewe* þe 9, 10, bar 4, and *newe* þat 11, 12, bar 12; *heowe* swo 13, 14, bar 20. All three arise from the "poet" beginning a line with an unaccented syllable, whereas the music went on the theory of commencing with an accented syllable. In bars 9, 10, exactly the contrary effect is wanted. We must evidently read



Lastly, we may note that where the "poet" has been careless in his rhythm, the "composer" has taken the liberty of correcting him. Thus, line 5: *On þe hit is wel eþ sene*, would naturally require the speaker to give most force to the italicised syllables, making *wel* conspicuous but *eþ* stronger. This destroys the "swing." So the composer has quietly: *On þe hit is wel eþ sene*, which would be detestable in speech. This is quite a common trick in hymn and ballad setters; but then hymns and ballads so often sin against poetry that it matters little. We cannot so much complain of line 8: and *reu of me ȝif þi will' is*, as many persons would bring out *þi* with equal strength. The *me* and *is* are less defensible. In line 9: *þu asteȝe; so þe daiȝ*

*rewe*, is rendered very uncomfortable by the stress on *so* and the absence of stress on *dai*3. But the "poet" had introduced a trissyllabic measure, and the "composer" could not help. But how inappropriate to sing *heuene* 1, with its two last very inconspicuous syllables, and so *the dai*3 9, with the heavy *dai*3, to the same notes, bar 3 ! In line 11, of *þe sprong an leome newe*, becomes *of þe sprong an leome newe* ! And in line 12, where the "poet," according to the MS., seems to have taken the great liberty of changing his accentuation : *þat al þis world haueð ilizt*, the "composer" makes him say, *þat al þis world haueð ilizt*. Now this is so atrocious that I suspect a mistake in the MS. The form of *world* is *weoreld* in Orrmin, and *weoreld*, *woreld* in *Lazamon*. Suppose that the scribe forgot the *e*, and forgot to write it above as a correction, as he has done in *hewe*<sup>o</sup> 13 ; see the last line of the photograph. Restore it, and the verse becomes : *þat | al þis | woreld | haueð i | lizt*, which is at once rhythmical. The music would require an alteration only in bar 15, introducing three notes (a *virga* and two *puncta*, as in bar 3) instead of two (a *semivocalis* and *punctum*) ; so that this line of the second stanza would be sung, as I am disposed to believe was really meant, in the following manner :



Of course in the parallel passage to the same notes, *world* 14 need not be *woreld*, and cannot be so with the present notes. But to have *world* in one place and *woreld* in another is quite consonant with ancient habits : thus in the *Cuckoo Song*, *growep*, *blowep*, *bletep*, *stertep*, *vertep*, are all found with a note to *ep*, but we have also the harsh *springp*, and the easier *thouþ*, the last placed to an unaccented note.

A. J. E.

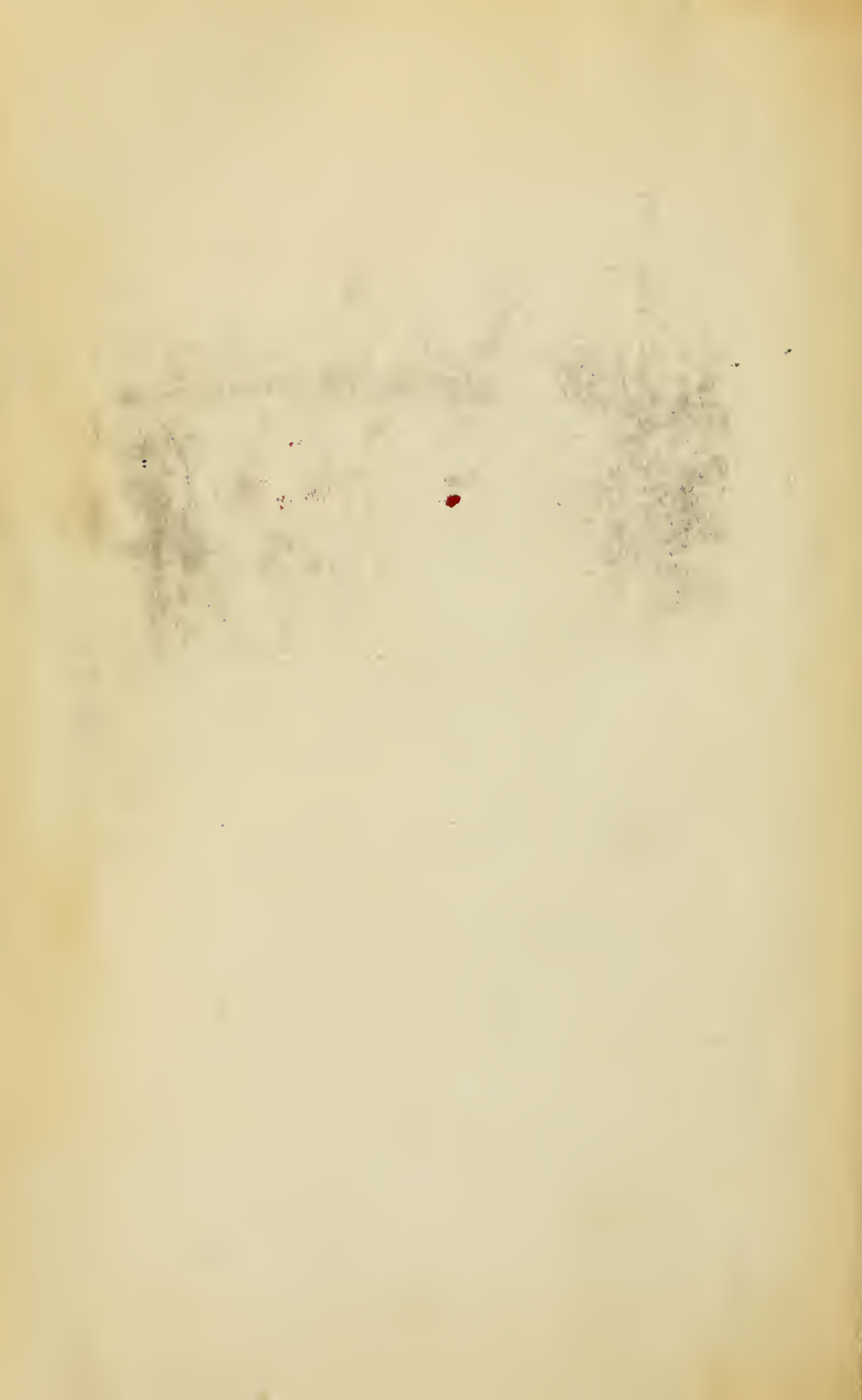












PR Early English Text  
 1119 Society  
 A2 [Publications]  
 no.29 Original series. no. 29,34,53

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
 CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

CIRCULATE AS MONOGRAPH



